

REPLIES

CONNECTED WITH THE

REORGANIZATION

OF THE

ARMIES OF INDIA.

Vol 3

INFANTRY

- 1.—RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION OF CORPS,
- 2.—MILITARY CODE AND RULES OF DISCIPLINE,
- 3.—ORGANIZATION, PROMOTION AND REWARDS,
- 4.—EUROPEAN OFFICERS,

WITH

PRECIS ON THE FOUR PARTS ATTACHED.

1105
Dhananjayrao Gadgil Library



GIPE-PUNE-014345

MV41.2.M57t

A857.3

14345

RE-ORGANIZATION
OF
ARMIES OF INDIA.

CLASSIFICATION.

The heads of enquiry in the Court's Despatch may be classed as follows :—

1. **The Recruiting and the Composition of Corps.**
2. **The Military Code and Rules of Discipline.**
3. **Organization, Promotion and Rewards.**
4. **European Officers.**

PRECIS
OF THE
REPLIES TO THE QUESTIONS ON INFANTRY.

RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION OF CORPS.

No. 173.

FROM

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL H. M. DURAND, C. B.,
On Special duty with the Governor General.

TO

THE RIGHT HON'BLE THE GOVERNOR GENERAL OF INDIA,

ALLAHABAD 4th September, 1858.

MY LORD,

I HAVE the honor to submit a *Precis* of the replies to the series of questions, having reference to the re-organization of the Native Infantry of the Bengal Army.

2. From the importance of the subject, and its pressing nature, it did not seem desirable to delay the submission of the *Precis* until those for the Infantry Branches of the other Presidencies should be complete.

3. I beg to call your Lordship's attention to the postscript appended to the replies of the Punjab Committee. Sir J. Lawrence, Brigadier General Chamberlain and Colonel Edwards therein state their conviction, that unless the European Soldier be placed on a footing more consonant with the advancing civilization of the English people, difficulty will be felt in maintaining a largely increased force of British Troops in India. The measures they recommend are, the removal, as far as practicable, of the restrictions upon the number of married Soldiers in a regiment, changes with respect to spirit rations, spirits sold at the canteens, and the substitution of beer and porter; the necessity of aiming to provide the Army with well educated and thoughtful Commanders of regiments; the present position of Chaplains in India and the crying necessity for its amelioration; an increase to the ecclesiastical establishment proportionate to the larger number of British troops, and to the extension of the limits of the Presidency; finally the imperative necessity for a careful and conscientious selection of Chaplains. As the *Precis* upon the re-organization of the Native Infantry of the Bengal Army afforded no opportunity of adverting to these suggestions of the Punjab Committee, and as they are all of manifest importance, I venture in this form specially to call your Lordship's attention to the earnest representation of Sir J. Lawrence and his associated colleagues.

I have the honor to be, &c.

(Signed) H. M. DURAND, *Lt.-Col., Engineers,*
On Special duty with the Governor General.

RE-ORGANIZATION OF THE ARMIES OF INDIA.

PRECIS

Of Replies to Questions having reference to the Native Infantry of the Bengal Army.

THE Punjaub having furnished a large part of the Native Army now existing and which fills the gap of the revolted Bengal Army, it was important to obtain particular information with respect to the Punjaub troops.

Sir J. Lawrence, Brigadier General Chamberlain and Lieutenant-Colonel Edwardes having sent full replies upon the subject specially referred to them, and that subject being one under present circumstances of great interest, it seems advisable to begin this digest of replies with the observations of the abovenamed Officers, to whom, for the sake of brevity, the designation of the "Punjaub Committee" will henceforward be applied. As the Committee has also furnished answers upon the general questions in their relation to the re-organization of the Bengal Army, without restriction to the Punjaub Forces, though, with frequent reference to the paper devoted to the latter. The digest will, when touching upon the opinions of the Punjaub Committee, bring their special and their general views together.

Similarly the independent opinions of other authorities consulted will, where concurrence admits of such a course being pursued, be grouped together, and the names of the Officers will be given in the margin, so as to facilitate reference to their original manuscripts.

 INFANTRY.

THE RECRUITING AND THE COMPOSITION OF CORPS.

THE PUNJAUB COMMITTEE REPLY.

QUESTIONS

ANSWERS.

1.

Firstly.—Mahomedans of independent countries beyond our frontier, such as Cabul, Candahar, the Afreedee Hills, Swat Boney, &c."

2.

Secondly.—Trans-Indus Mahomedans, British subjects from the Peshawur valley, Kohat, &c."

Thirdly.—Cis-Indus Mahomedans (these are three broad distinctions which should be carefully observed)."

Fourthly.—Seikhs."

Fifthly.—Hindoo hill races, which come under two classes, viz ; those of the Jummoo Independent Hills, known as the Dogra Rajpoots, and the Rajpoots who are British subjects residing in the hills between the Ravee and Sutlej."

Sixthly.—A sprinkling of Hindostanees, 1,295 in the eleven Regiments, of whom 288 were Mahomedans and 1,007 Hindoos."

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ *Seventhly*.—470 Goorkhas.”

3.

“ By the practice of the force, sweepers, Muzzubees (or sweeper Seikhs), Mosulees (or Mahomedan sweepers) and the lowest Mahomedan and Hindoo classes generally, such as those laid down in the Standing Military Regulations, Section XXXI., part 2, para. 6 were excluded. There were also no Christians in the force, originally there were some few Eurasian Christians (fifers and buglers) transferred from the Native Infantry of the Line, but being very few in number, and having no respectable associates, they fell into bad habits and disrepute, and were for this reason remanded to their original Corps, since which there have been none.”

4.

“ No class should be excluded from the Native Army. But though we ourselves may and ought to rise above caste, we cannot practically ignore it so long as the natives themselves socially maintain it. If low caste men, sweepers, &c., be promiscuously enlisted in the ranks, one great political object which we have in view (*viz.*, the counterpoise of races) will not be attained, for assuredly the low caste men, true to their traditions, will submit in every thing to the higher castes in the Regiment; and if their good conduct and Military smartness raise them to rank, it will only bring them superior pay and not give them that influence over their Military subordinates which discipline requires; at least we think that a great change must previously come over the Native Army on the question before the lowest castes can be usefully associated with the highest castes in one Corps. Moreover we believe that the Native Soldiers already in the ranks, would be disgusted if recruits, whom they considered unfit associates, were suddenly forced upon them in large numbers. We are aware that the armies of Madras and Bombay shew all classes mixed together. We do not know how this works practically.

5.

“ It would be possible for the European Officers, following the vent of their own wishes and feelings to imagine that sweeper Subadars (for instance) were really the Commanders of their men, and yet for that command to extend no farther than the parade-ground or the orderly-room and to cease altogether in the lines and interior economy of the Regiment. But assuming that all caste prejudice has really been broken down in these armies, we would observe, firstly, that in them the majority of the community, or in other words public opinion, is indifferent to caste, while here the community is bigotted in its favor; and secondly, that the mixed system has in them happily grown up from the beginning, so that high caste men, who now enlist in those armies, do it with their eyes open and of their own accord, led either by the difficulty of getting service elsewhere, or by some peculiar circumstances; whereas the caste system has unhappily grown up and been indigenious in the Bengal armies from the beginning, and has in them the same strength as the mixed system in the sister presidencies. However strongly

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ then we may feel the tyranny of caste, and however resolved we may
 “ be to do all in our power to overthrow it, yet sound wisdom requires
 “ that we should not conceal the practical difficulties, but set them can-
 “ didly forth and then endeavour to meet them, and this especially
 “ because the low castes themselves are not prepared to help us and seize
 “ the freedom we wish to give them. We have heard of a small guard
 “ of the Bombay army, on detached duty, making their own Jemadar, a
 “ man of low caste, carry on his head the bundle of their clothes, &c.,
 “ to which the Jemadar, away from his European friends, submitted as a
 “ matter of course, and whether that anecdote be true or not, we have
 “ seen during the last year, that when a Regiment of Native Soldiers in
 “ the Bengal army mutinied, the whole of the low caste camp-followers,
 “ tentpitchers, grooms, grass-cutters, sweepers, &c., went off with them
 “ like a flock of sheep, and thereby lost their service, unable to resist
 “ the habitual slavery of their race. For these reasons, our advice would
 “ be, that we introduce the new system gradually by having separate
 “ Regiments for the lowest castes,* into which any native physically fit

* In the newly raised Punjaub Regiments there are two entirely composed of Muzzubee, i. e., sweepers of the Seikh religion. They are Pioneers and are doing well.

“ should be admitted ; that a certain number
 “ of higher caste men be admitted into these
 “ lower caste Regiments, if for want of ser-
 “ vice they apply for it, as the best means of
 “ bringing about voluntary close association,
 “ and that similarly a certain number of the lowest caste men be admissible
 “ into high caste Regiments, where the Commanding Officer sees that it
 “ can be done without offence ; but we should at this stage deprecate the
 “ forcing of any fixed proportion or number of lowest caste men into the
 “ existing Regiments of the force ; lest in doing justice to one class, we
 “ be felt (wrongly or rightly) to be doing injustice to another.”

“ Before leaving this question, it seems necessary to explain ; firstly,
 “ that though for the sake of contradistinction, we have spoken of the
 “ Punjaub Regiments as high caste Regiments, yet, in point of fact, they
 “ would not be so considered by natives, as the Hindoo soldiers in them
 “ are generally Soodras ; and secondly, that in native estimation there
 “ is the widest difference between low caste and lowest-caste men, which
 “ ought not to be overlooked. The Soodra is a low caste man in the eye
 “ of the Brahmin and Rajpoot, but the two latter have no objection to
 “ serve with the former. Whereas a sweeper is by all three considered
 “ to be an outcast.”

“ The Punjaub Committee in its answers to the four first questions,
 “ applied to the whole Bengal Army, state that of that Army “ three-
 “ fourths perhaps are Brahmins and Rajpoots of Oudh and Behar, and the
 “ rest Gwalas and Aheers of different districts, Mahomedans of Oude and
 “ Behar, a few Hindoos from Rohilcund, a few Seikhs, and fewer Goor-
 “ khas ; that Part 2, Section 31 of the Military Regulations detail those

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

superior castes of natives which are eligible for the ranks. They exclude all inferior castes, and make no mention of Eurasians or Christians, neither of whom were in practice admitted to the ranks, though Eurasians were employed in the bands, and as drummers and fifers."

After referring to the observations already quoted upon the enlistment of excluded castes in the Punjaub Forces, the Punjaub Committee proceeds as follows:—"To which we would add our strong conviction of the duty and wisdom of bringing as many Christian natives into the service as possible. The Karens of Pegu are a Christian race, and should be freely enlisted, and next to them we would desire to see aboriginal races, like the Sontals, Bheels, &c., and segregated tribes, such as the Boondelas and Gondas, made available as counterpoises; probably few of these secluded people would like to go far from their houses at first, but the provincial system which we have proposed entirely meets their present case, and in time as the service became appreciated, they would probably go to any part of India. Again the Eurasians, who have been so long a reproach to us, should now be elevated by enlistment and proper care. We would advocate the collection of all Christians, Natives and Eurasians together in separate corps, and not disperse them in the Hindoo and Mahomedan ranks, where, in peace, they would have no influence and be exposed to petty annoyances, and, in any rebellion, would fall victims and be lost to the State. To each Christian native corps there should be an ordained Christian teacher and pastor, either European or Native."

From the replies of the Officers noted in the margin, it appears that the Native

Commander-in-Chief.
Major General Birch.
Lieut General Sir P. Grant.
Major Genl. Sir J. B. Hearsey.
Brigadier Coke
Brigadier Troup.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Brigadier Steel.
Colonel Mayhew.
Colonel Burn.
Colonel Shuldham.
Major Genl. Sir J. Cotton.
Major Genl. Sir J. H. Grant.

Infantry of the Bengal Army was composed of—

Mahomedans.
Brahmins of every denomination.
Chuttryas.
Rajpoots.
Gwallahs.
Kaits.
Aheers.
Jats.

and that some few low caste men, such as Mallees, Kachees, Gurreeahs (*i. e.*, shepherd,) had crept into corps. After the conquest of the Punjaub the enlistment of Seikhs and Punjabee Mahomedans and Hindoos was allowed to the amount of 200 to a Regiment, as the Military Regulations under the head of enlistment, part 2, paras. 5 and 6, run as follows: "5.—Hindoos, Mahomedans, Seikhs are eligible for recruits." "6.—Especial care, however, must be taken to reject all men of inferior castes such as Bunneeahs, Kyeths, Naees, Thamoolies, Gurrereeahs, Lodhs, Bhojeeas, Kahars, Mooraees, Kandoos, Mallees, Kachees, and any other habitually employed in menial occupation. The only castes left were Brahmins, Gwallahs and Aheers. .

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The districts from which the Infantry was drawn were, many of the men from Oudh, from North and South Behar, especially the latter, principally from Shahabad and Bhojepore. From the Dooab of the Ganges and Jumna; from Rohilcund; a few from Bundelcund, and since the conquest and annexation of the Punjaub, a proportion from that province.

The Adjutant General, Colonel Mayhew, gives in the accompanying return the races and castes of which the Native Army was composed on the 1st April 1858. Although it does not enter into the detail of the inferior castes of Hindoos now in the ranks, the return is useful as shewing the broader features of the composition of the army, a year after the commencement of the great revolt of 1857. It will be observed that in classification, Colonel Mayhew's return has recourse in part to a Geographical grouping, and that it anticipates some of the recommendations as to recruiting tracts :—

Return shewing the Races and Castes of which the Native Army was composed on the 1st April 1858.

CORPS.	European Commissioned Officers.		NUMBER OF EACH RACE AND CASTE																				Total.
	European Commissioned Officers.	Non-Commissioned Officers.	Christians.	Mussulmans.	Brahmins.	Rajpoots.	Hindoo of inferior description.	Seikhs.	Punjabees.	Hindoostanees.	Cis-Sutledge.	Trans-Indus.	Hill States of Nepal.	Hazara Tribes.	Afghans.	Goorkhas.	Hillmen.	Mhairs.	Mhawats.	Eheels.	Moorgurs, Grasseah and other predatory tribes.		
Artillery,	6	4	2,241	...	552	77	88	445	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,162
Light Cavalry,	26	3	1,259	25	624	344	231	35	*	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	1,259
Infantry, (Regular,)	248	47	21,928	486	3,590	6,205	6,404	4,326	135	192	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	590	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	21,928
Infantry, (Irregular,)	240	29	42,715	20	1,853	1,532	2,911	3,821	3,504	15,286	896	2,270	2,867	358	23	32	271	3,677	566	915	803	223	41,828
Cavalry, (Irregular,)	94	0	10,703	41	3,831	350	549	181	833	2,401	1,219	167	467	19	...	105	29	2	...	...	...	.....	10,194
Artillery, (Irregular,)	10	6	998	...	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	495	38	15	5	...	...	...	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	553
Sebundy Sappers and Miners,	1	2	209	...	2	18	179	10	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	209
Total,	625	91	80,053	572	10,452	8,526	0,362	8,818	4,472	18,374	2,153	2,452	3,339	377	23	137	890	3,679	566	915	803	223	77,133
N. B.—Aggregate of Corps, the races of which are not shewn on this return,																						2,920	
Grand Total,																						80,053	

(4)

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,
 Head Quarters,
 Allahabad, 13th August, 1858.

(Signed) W. MAYHEW, Lieut. Colonel,
 Adjutant General of the Army.

Besides the lowest and menial castes of Hindoos excluded from the ranks of the Bengal Army by Regulation, there was a practicable exclusion of the races occupying large tracts of country; such as Rewah or Bughailcund, Rajpootana and Central India, besides races scattered over many different parts of India, such as Goojurs, Mewattees, Jats, Ranjheers, Affghans of border tribes, Belooch and others. Sir J Hope Grant notes that the sepoy who fought for Clive were chiefly of low caste; and he expresses an opinion that the Bengal Army did not at first become Brahmanized by any order of Government, but simply by Recruiting Officers over a series of years confining their choice to the largest, handsomest, and cleverest looking men, who are undoubtedly the high castes. That these gradually came to preponderate, and then that they exercised their powerful influence to keep away all low caste people, and finally that the custom became the rule, and the low castes were altogether excluded.

The races hitherto excluded, or neglected, and among whom enlistment might, with advantage, be extended, are stated as follows:—

Rajpoots of Rewah Territory.
„ of Rajiesthan.
„ of Rajpootana.
„ of Central India.

Goojurs, Koormees, Passees, Rajbhurs, Jats of Hansie, Hissar and Bhurtpoor country.

Rangurs.
Mahrattas.
Mahomedans.
Mahomedans of Agricultural class.

Mewattees, Thekantees, Mahomedans of the Punjab, Affghans of border tribes, hill tribes of Cachar Munnéepoories, Burmese, Karens and Sonthals. Although there is no difference of opinion as to extending enlistment over such comparatively little worked fields as the foregoing, there is a wide discrepancy upon the subject treated at length and considered with care by the Punjab Committee, viz., the enrolment of the lowest castes and their introduction into the ranks of the army.

Brigadier Coke is of opinion that the lower classes of Hindoos such as Bemurrahs, Chumars, Sweepers, &c., should be excluded, as they will not fight, and throw a slur on the whole Native Army. He thinks that Sweepers might fight but does not hold it desirable to entertain them; and he remarks that Muzzubee Seikhs, originally of the Sweeper caste have been raised from their position by being admitted to take the Pakul, and by being employed as soldiers by the great Maharajah of the Punjab, Runjeet Sing.

Colonel Burn would also continue to exclude the lowest castes from our ranks, though he thinks a Regiment or two of Mehters (Sweepers) might be tried as Pioneers.

Colonel Burn considers they are not to be trusted either as soldiers or Policemen, and that their enlistment to the exclusion of the better classes will give very general disgust

to the whole nation. He is of opinion that caste cannot be put down by merely elevating the lower orders; that the latter are as much wedded to the distinctive privilege of their class, as the Brahmins or Chuttrees, and are so completely under the dominion of the upper classes, that no discipline would induce them to break the bonds of caste and release themselves from its influence. That if the higher and better orders of the Hindoo races are not in future to be trusted, he does not see how the smallest reliance can be placed on the lower and less educated classes; that these last in their present degraded condition will, Colonel Burn fears, prove themselves utterly unworthy of trust.

Colonel Mayhew notes the fact that Lord William Bentinck when Commander-in-Chief attempted to introduce the inferior castes into the army, but did not meet with support, and that subsequently the measure was dropped, vide G. O. by the Governor General, 31st December, 1834. Colonel Mayhew is of opinion that practically Commanding Officers have carried the custom of excluding low caste men too far; but that the lowest tribes will, he apprehends, be found totally wanting in the spirit necessary to make good soldiers, and never will be fit for promotion to the smallest command in consequence of the servility almost inherent in their social position.

Sir J. Hearsey.
Sir S. Cotton.
Sir P. Grant.
Brigadier Troup.
Brigadier Steel.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Colonel Shuldham.
Lieut. Colonel Macpherson.

The Officers noted in the margin abstain from making any positive remarks upon this subject, but when enumerating the neglected races and castes from whence recruits might advantageously be drawn, they omit the names of the lowest castes.

Taking a contrary view, Sir J. Hope Grant observes that we have the very high authority of Colonel Skinner (who warned us 40 years ago) for employing any other castes. That the men who defended Bhurtpoor against Lord Lake were unknown in our army ranks; that the Passees of Oude always employed by high caste Talookdars when any thing desperate had to be done were quite shut out from our ranks, that the Kunjurs (Gypseys), Nutts and Sweepers, all fine material and highly recommended by Colonel Skinner, would not even have been *touched* formerly by our *high caste* European Officers, that besides these there are many other classes that might with great advantage be employed; among others that the Mullah, or waterman race make excellent soldiers.

The Officers who concur in this opinion that none, not even the lowest classes, should be excluded, are entered in the margin.
Colonel K. Young.
Major Williams.

The Commander-in-Chief remarks that the field from which recruits were obtained was too limited, and that he thinks men should be taken of every caste or of no caste (if there are such people) and from every district, and that there cannot be too great a diversity.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5 & 6.

Commander-in-Chief,
Major General Birch, C. B.
Colonel Burn.
Brigadier Troup.
Colonel Mayhew.

The chief agency seems to have been that of Native Officers and men, who, when they went on leave to their villages, were instructed to bring back with them young men fit for recruits.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

It appears that formerly recruits offered themselves in such numbers at the Head Quarters of Regiments, even when stationed at a distance from the recruiting district, that no special agency was employed, it being seldom necessary to send out parties for the purpose. It is remarked that Regiments thus became family cliques, and that Native Officers took bribes to stand security, and that thus inferior looking men got into the service.

With respect to the precaution taken when recruits were enlisted, it would seem that most Officers were aware of none except such security as the *ipse dixit* of a sepoy of the Regiment or a Native Officer vouched in behalf of the recruit; some Officers quote the Regulations containing the form originally introduced in the Punjab, but afterwards prescribed for the whole army, but this was only acted upon in the Punjab, and was impracticable in Oude and other independant States, so that it was a dead letter or nearly so in the Bengal Army. The Punjab Committee observes that in future the form of attestation by the Local Civil Authorities prescribed by the Regulations for British subjects should be rigidly enforced, having become a more valuable check than ever.

The following answers apply to Question 7, with respect to which it is therefore unnecessary to recapitulate what has already been stated, though at the same time the further remarks of Sir J. Hearsey, corroborated as they are by those of Brigadier Troup, deserve attention. The former notes that the custom of Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers standing security that the men presented were good and proper recruits for the service, led to a corrupt system, which he thus describes:—"This opened a *trade or profit* to the Native Officers, "they sold their interest, *their recommendation or good word*, and made "not the least hesitation in telling falsehoods, so as to get the candidate "enlisted. The Native Officers sold their interest, making the recruit " (if he could not give sufficient money) bind himself down by oath to "serve these Native Officers as *menials* for a certain term of years. "All this was kept secret from their European Officers, every imaginary precaution was taken as laid down under the head of Enlistment "in the Military Regulations but no European Officer can overcome "the tergiversation of a native."

Brigadier Troup after saying that he does not know what was the practice generally throughout the Army, adds, that though convinced that had the orders for Registry of Recruits been rigidly carried out instead of being in most instances slurred over by the Local Authorities, the result would have been most beneficial. Yet that he had so little

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

faith in this precaution, that in the Regiments he commanded, he super-added another. This was a Committee of Native Officers aided by the Regimental Pundit and Moulvie to examine all recruits enlisted in the Regiment. He adds with regret, that notwithstanding all these precautions, he found that he had been imposed upon in many instances as regarded the recruit's caste and place of residence.

8.

The Punjab Committee can suggest no improvement for the Punjab force, but for the Bengal Army they suggest that " a relative proportion of the respective castes should be fixed and adhered to; and the prescribed attestation of Magistrates should be invariably obtained; but these precautions will be of little use, unless a proportionate share of promotions be given systematically to each race in the Corpse; some races are more astute and obsequious than others, and if allowed, become masters of the Regiment."

Sir J. Hearsey and Colonel Mayhew advocate the total exclusion of Brahmins; the former Officer recommends that no Mahomedans of Hindostan Proper be entertained. Colonel Mayhew, that town-bred Mahomedans be excluded. Sir J. Hearsey is of opinion that in the Regular Infantry of the Bengal Army, all recruits should come from districts and countries new to the old provinces from whence recruits have hitherto usually been drawn. Colonel Shuldham would greatly restrict the number of Brahmins and Mahomedans, and would have greater care taken in ascertaining the connections, castes, and villages of the recruits, and in all possible cases would require of recruits that respectable natives stood their securities.

Colonel Burn does not see that the material at our disposal affords much room for improvement. He considers that the future Native Army of Bengal, in order to work well, must be composed of entirely a new set of men, and that none of the old leaven should be left to impregnate the new mass; that every man who has been suspected and had his arms taken from him should be dismissed, for that such men can never again serve with credit, as they will not be trusted by their Officers and will feel ashamed and degraded. For the new army, he would enlist all fighting classes, whether Mahomedans, Hindoos, or Seikhs in due proportions, being careful only as regards their physical fitness for the service; and he apprehends no danger in this arrangement if the paramount race, the Europeans, are maintained in proper proportion to the Native auxiliaries. Brigadier Coke likewise would enlist from all tribes and castes that will fight, so also Colonel Farquharson, giving preference to the agricultural and pastoral races.

Sir P. Grant is of opinion that every man physically fit should be eligible for enlistment without distinction of race, tribe, or district, and that it would be well sometimes to employ European instead of native agency in recruiting.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Sir S. Cotton thinks it very possible that recruiting depôts under well selected European Officers might be established with great benefit for the purpose of recruiting from the various tribes and castes throughout the country, a view which is also taken by Brigadier Troup, who proposes three permanent depôts, with an experienced Commandant and Surgeon and two European Serjeants to each; one at Buxar to provide all corps at and below Benares; one at Lucknow, to supply all corps at and above Allahabad as far as Umballa; and another in the Punjaub, to supply all corps stationed there and at Ferozepore. He points out how, by this simple arrangement, the army would, at a trifling expense, be kept complete with efficient men, and the State avoid the expense of paying for more men than are actually necessary to complete the army. He thinks that the service should be thrown open to all tribes and castes without distinction, with the exception of Christians, of whom he would like to see a separate corps, feeling certain that a corps of native Christians would answer very well.

Major Williams would have carefully selected European Officers sent into the districts to recruit and select from the rural population rather than from the more corrupt inhabitants of towns, and the Officers charged with this duty should not trust too much to their subordinates.

Sir J. Hope Grant would not recognize caste, but take all races and castes; he however proceeds a step further than those who advocate the same absence of distinction as to castes, for he would make all recruits mess together.

The Commander-in-Chief would do away with all allusion to caste in any general recruiting regulations, and would have physical fitness the main point looked to. He would admit all castes to the service, but thinks it would perhaps be a wise plan to have Regiments of separate castes, as well as Regiments of mixed castes; and the latter to be composed of every religion and creed.

Major General Birch sees no occasion for much alteration and is adverse to the admission of low caste men into the Native Army; because; 1st, discipline cannot be maintained where a low caste Commissioned or Non-Commissioned Native Officer crouches with his forehead to the ground before a Brahmin sepoy.

2dly. To ally ourselves with the lowest castes is to separate ourselves more thoroughly than at present from the chiefs and respectable classes of the country, and to exasperate, not to diminish, prejudices.

3dly. He doubts whether the advocates of lowest castes would like to serve with a Regiment of *Domes* or *Hullal Khores*.

4thly. That to enlist largely lowest castes is to proscribe Brahmins and other high castes, and respectable Mahomedans—the best soldiers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5thly. The experiment of trusting the Military defences of the country to men deficient in self-reliance from the depressing influence of caste, would be extremely hazardous.

6thly. That our disregard of the prejudice of caste will not induce the natives to do so.

7thly. The argument drawn from the Madras and Bombay Armies is not applicable; the social state and the feeling of caste being different in Bengal from the other Presidencies.

8thly. The mutinies were not occasioned by caste influence, but from mistaken fears for their religion; all religions combining against us,—which refutes the notion that any one caste stirred up the rebellion more than another.

9thly. The turbulence of Brahmins may be controlled by not enlisting too many of them, but sees no wisdom in adopting measures with the avowed object of annihilating caste which is utterly ineradicable by any measure we could adopt. Major General Birch coincides with the General Order of 31st December 1834, and sees no occasion for further concession. “The Governor General of India in Council is pleased to direct that all objections to men belonging to the respectable classes of the native community or preference amongst such classes, on account of caste or religion, shall cease to operate in respect to their admission into the ranks of the Bengal Army.”

9 to 11, The Judge Advocate General of the Army, Colonel Keith Young, gives the oath sanctioned by authority, the first oath that administered to the Sepoy of the late Bengal Army came into operation when the Articles of War of 1796 were established. The second oath that administered to Seikh recruits was first published to the Army in General Orders of the 7th October 1853. Colonel Young observes that in practice the words “I will go wherever I am ordered, whether by sea or land,” have been introduced into the first form of oath administered to recruits in General service Regiments.

The first form of oath runs as follows:—

“ I, A. B., Inhabitant of _____ Village _____ Pergunnah
 “ _____ Subah _____ son of _____ do swear that I will never
 “ forsake or abandon my colors; that I will march wherever I am directed
 “ whether within or beyond the Company’s Territories; that I will impli-
 “ citly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave
 “ myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful servant of the Company,
 “ and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penal-
 “ ties described in the Articles of War which have been read to me.”

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The second oath for Seikh Recruits runs as follows:—

“ I ——— Inhabitant of ——— son of ——— swear by the
 “ Gooroo Grunth Sahibjee, and if I tell a falsehood, may the Gooroo
 “ Grunth Sahib cause misfortune to descend upon me ; that I will never
 “ forsake or abandon my colors, that I will march wherever I am di-
 “ rected, whether within or beyond the Company’s Territories ; that I will
 “ implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing
 “ behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful servant of the
 “ Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to
 “ the penalties described in the Articles of War which have been read
 “ to me.”

With respect to the utility of these oaths, the Judge Advocate General thus expresses his opinion:—

“ I am doubtful as to any advantage that is likely to occur from swearing in recruits.
 “ The results of the last year have clearly shewn how entirely powerless any form of oath
 “ has been to secure the fidelity of the Sepoy. All have alike gone.—Those who, it may be
 “ presumed, from education or from superior intelligence knew well the importance
 “ to be attached to an oath, as well as the more ignorant who regarded it probably as
 “ a mere form to be forgotten as soon as it was made. I can scarcely believe that the
 “ oath has kept one Sepoy true to his allegiance, no disgrace attaches in their mind
 “ to breaking it. The disgrace rests only in the punishment, and there is no advantage
 “ in the administration of an oath that might not, I believe, be equally gained by
 “ simply declaring to the Sepoy at the time of his enlistment, that he was expected to
 “ obey implicitly his superiors and to go wherever he was ordered, whether by sea or
 “ land, and that no objection made by him hereafter would be received as an excuse
 “ for disobedience. If however it is considered desirable that the formality of swearing
 “ in recruits should be observed, I think it will be well to introduce the form in use in
 “ the General service Corps, and to lay down clear and defined rules for the manner
 “ in which the oath is to be administered and the period after enlistment when it is
 “ to be taken.”

The Punjaub Committee are of a similar opinion with the Judge Advocate General, for they fear that in practice no oath will bind ; that the unconscientious will boldly disregard it, and the conscientious find such loopholes as, that fidelity to their colors and their oath was kept by taking the colors with them when they mutinied, or that the water they were sworn on came out of a well in the lines and not from the Ganges ; and so it was no oath at all, or that no oath taken by an Infidel is binding.

The Punjaub Committee would however still have recruits sworn in, because it is necessary to have some solemn engagement to which to appeal, but in the spirit of Act V. of 1840, they would substitute for all heathen or Mahomedan oaths, an oath before Almighty God ; they would simplify the oath to the fewest possible words with the utmost possible scope, thus:—“ I ——— Inhabitant of ——— Village ——— Pergun-

"nah _____ District _____ Province _____ do swear before Almighty God
"that I will be a faithful Soldier and servant of the British Government; that I will
"march wherever I am directed, and will obey all the orders of any European Officer."

The Adjutant General, Colonel Mayhew, and the Officiating Quarter Master General, Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson, would add to the existing form of oath the words "by sea or land," but Colonel Mayhew would have the oath very distinctly explained to each recruit before he is sworn in, which "should never be till he has become accustomed for several months to the service and at drill."

Brigadiers Steel and Farquharson likewise suggest the addition of the words "by sea or land," but Brigadier Steel would further introduce a specific engagement "to work at, or form entrenchments in presence of an enemy when required:" whilst Brigadier Farquharson would not restrict this part of the engagement so narrowly, but would have the recruits swear to do any thing, such as dig trenches, make roads, cut jungles, build lines, &c., during peace or war. Menial work as a right to be excluded, which is against the religion of the Asiatic.

Colonel Shuldham suggests that every recruit be called on to swear that he is not a "Bhugut," and that he never will become a "Bhugut" while on the effective branch of the service. Colonel Shuldham states that the Sepoys who are Bhuguts, remain in Hospital for weeks after they are cured, because they will not take sufficient nourishing food to recover their strength.

Sir J. Hearsey considers that as many tribes are likely for the future to be enlisted for the Bengal Army, investigation should be made of the kind of oath which each tribe holds to be most binding, and would have such oath administered. In this opinion, Sir J. Hope Grant concurs; for he remarks, "the only hold as far as conscience goes (and this "is of the very slightest) you can have on the recruit, is to swear him according to his "religion, and not by one form of oath or one made up according to our ideas."

Major Williams observes upon this subject that neither solemn affirmation nor oath would in general prove binding on the men if disposed to mutiny. He suggests however a written agreement signed and sworn to in as solemn and binding a form as possible, and according to the respective creeds of the enlisting parties. He considers that mere solemn affirmation has little or no hold on a Native, and that a statement required to be made on oath bears a very different aspect to them from one made on solemn affirmation alone; but that a written agreement has almost a greater hold on a Native than a simple oath, as he is more careful to comprehend what he signs and swears to.

Brigadier Coke considers that it is high time that all oaths were done away with, as a bad soldier will never be bound by an oath, and a good one does not require one; he states that the 1st Punjab Infantry has been raised nine years, and that no man in it was ever sworn in or ever heard of the Articles of War; that they obey their Commanding Officer, go where they are ordered, and have shown like the rest of the Punjab Corps, how they can fight wherever they have been employed; that if they disobey orders, they are flogged, and that till something of the Bengal Line folly crept into the Punjab Force which, had it

been carried out by Commanding Officers, would have ruined the Force; Non-Commissioned Officers and men were summarily dismissed, when they were found from vice or temper, to be unfit for the service. Brigadier Coke deems the Commanding Officer the only fit judge of these matters and says: "Let Native Soldiers have only one master, their Commanding Officer, and they will be good and obedient soldiers; let them find that the Brigadier is one master, the General a second, and the Commander-in-Chief a third, they will obey no master. To all Officers who have thought on this subject or who have experience of the Native character, this truth is so self-apparent, that I can only imagine one reason why it has not been acted on, and that is, that the Madras Mutiny has not been forgotten, and that Government doubt the loyalty of their European Officers."

Sir P. Grant and Sir J. Cotton consider the existing form of oath as good and binding as it is possible to make it. Colonel Burn proposes the adoption of the second or Seikh oath, with alterations to suit all classes. Major General Birch proposes a form of oath taken from that for European Recruits for Her Majesty's service, modified to suit the Native Recruit.

"I——do make oath that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty, Her heirs and successors; that I will as in duty bound, observe and obey all the Generals and Officers set over me, and that I will willingly proceed by land or sea wherever my services may be required."

The Commander-in-Chief observes that we seem to be the only people in the Country who think the oath of consequence; that the Sepoys evidently do not, and that any improvement in the wording of the oath appears to be a matter of much indifference.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

With reference to the first of these questions, the answers chiefly point to the Eastern Coast of the Bay of Bengal as a possible recruiting ground for Marine Corps, Mughls, Chittagong Mahomedans, Karens, Burmans, Natives of the Malay Peninsula and of the Eastern Archipelago are accordingly enumerated, the Dacca and other Boatmen and the Sonthals are also adverted to, but Colonel Shuldham remarks that the men of Chittagong were thought deficient in courage.

13.

Sir J. Hearsey with reference to the second of these questions, No 13, states that "two Regiments in the Bengal Infantry were formerly called Marine Corps. The men were expressly enlisted for service beyond sea. This innovation was introduced at the earnest solicitation of my father, Colonel Andrew Wilson Hearsey, during the Governorship of Sir John Shore, afterwards Lord Teignmouth, or in the period of the first Governor Generalship of Lord Cornwallis. Infantry Regiments had been formed by volunteers to proceed to sea to Madras, unfortunately the transport in which half a Regiment of Sepoys foundered in a Typhoon and was never heard of again. This caused a great dread for sea voyages and innumerable objections were

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ raised regarding *caste prejudices*, and these said *caste prejudices* have
 “ been ever since thrown in our teeth when the sepoy's of the Bengal
 “ Army were disinclined to obey any order or act in any country they
 “ disliked to go into.”

Beyond noting, the two Battalions formerly considered as Marine Corps, though both the appellation and their specific duties have fallen into disuetude, the answers throw little light upon the subject, but the Punjaub Committee advocates the formation of Marine Corps raised from the races of sea-faring habits.

Both the Commander-in-Chief and Major General Birch doubt whether Marine Corps would be of use to the service.

14.

The opinions of the Punjaub Committee are as follows:—“ This
 “ is a very important question, but after mature consideration and with re-
 “ ference to the events of the past year, we come decidedly to the con-
 “ clusion that Regiments of Native Infantry should be provincial in their
 “ composition and ordinary sphere of service, as we cannot do without
 “ a large Native Army in India; our main object is to make that army
 “ safe, and next to the grand counterpoise of a sufficient European Force,
 “ comes the counterpoise of natives against natives. At first sight it
 “ might be thought that the best way to secure this would be to mix up
 “ all the available military races of India in each and every Regiment,
 “ and to make them all general service corps. But excellent as this
 “ theory seems, it does not bear the test of practice. It is found that
 “ different races mixed together do not long preserve their distinctiveness,
 “ their corners and angles and feelings and prejudice get rubbed
 “ off, till at last they assimilate and the object of their association to a
 “ considerable extent is lost. To preserve that distinctiveness which is
 “ so valuable, and which while it lasts makes the Mahomedan of one
 “ country despise, fear, or dislike the Mahomedan of another corps,
 “ should, in future, be provincial and adhere to the geographical limits
 “ within which differences and rivalries are strongly marked. Let all
 “ races, Hindoo or Mahomedan, of one province be enlisted in one Regiment
 “ and no others, and having thus created distinctive Regiments,
 “ let us keep them so against the hour of need by confining the circle
 “ of their ordinary service to the limits of their own province and only
 “ marching them on emergency into other parts of the empire with
 “ which they will then be found to have little sympathy. By the system
 “ thus indicated two great evils are avoided; firstly, that community
 “ of feeling throughout the Native Army and that mischievous political
 “ activity and intrigue, which results from association with other
 “ races, and travel in other Indian provinces; and secondly, that thorough
 “ discontent and alienation from the service which has undoubtedly
 “ sprung up since extended conquest has carried our Hindoostanee soldiers
 “ so far from their homes in India Proper. There can be no ques-

15.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ tion that a contented servant is better than a discontented one. Un-
 “ fortunately we have tried too much hitherto to purchase the content-
 “ ment of our Native Armies by increased pay, batta, &c. This has not
 “ answered its purpose and has produced many evils. It has enriched
 “ the sepoys but not satisfied them. Nothing can reconcile natives to
 “ long absence from their homes where they leave their wives and lands.
 “ The sepoys felt they were being coaxed into foreign* service and got
 “ both angry and insolent with a sense of power. We believe that what
 “ is called (general service) has been prominent among the causes which
 “ undermined our once faithful army. If then in future, we keep our
 “ Regiments moving ordinarily in a circle about their homes, we shall
 “ add greatly to their real happiness and consequently their loyalty; and
 “ be able to get rid of all mischievous increases of pay. Fewer men will
 “ also suffice, for the furloughs will be shorter and in fact, we believe,
 “ that the service will thus be rendered more safe, more economical,
 “ and more popular.”

The Punjab Committee having thus laid down the general principle of Provincial Regiments, proceed to explain that, not to deprive the State of the advantage and precaution of having a few foreign Regiments in every Province, they would also have about a fourth of the Regiments of each Province stationed in the next adjoining Province, and relieved every two or three years by another fourth.

In the Punjab, the Committee would allow one-third, because the Punjab frontier Trans-Indus requires Regiments peculiarly equipped and organized, and it is desirable that they should not be moved. Again it is desirable that the Goorkha Regiments at Jutog, and in Hazara and the Guides in Eusufzye should be Locals. This leaves only the 16 Regiments in the interior of the Province from which to detach Corps for service in the North-West Provinces or Oudh. As 15 out of 31 Punjab Regiments will, on this plan, never leave that Province, it is thought that a third of the 16 interior Corps may well take a tour of more distant duty for three years at a time, which would give each of them six years uninterruptedly in their own Province.

Brigadiers Coke and Farquharson are also for Provincial recruiting for separate Corps. The former Officer (vide general remarks introductory to replies) is of opinion that corps should be raised of separate classes and tribes;—thus Seikh Corps to be composed of Seikhs and no admixture of any class with them; Brahmins and Rajpoots in other Corps, Gwalahs and other lower caste Hindoos in other Corps, but no Sweepers or Chumars to be enlisted. Hindoostanee Mussulmen in separate Regiments, Goojurs separate, Pathans, Cis and Trans Indus with Punjabee Mussulmen separate, Dograhs in separate Corps, as the Gorkhas are at present. His scheme therefore is that of Provincial recruiting for Corps of homogeneous composition as to races and tribes. Colonel Farquharson's appears to be exactly the same.

Brigadier Steel and Colonel Burn also consider that it would be advantageous to restrict the recruiting of each Infantry Corps to a prescribed District or Province and

* That is any where very distant from their own homes.

Colonel Burn instances the jealousy between the Oude and Behar men taken advantage of at Lahore where the Behar men were separated from those from Oudh.

Major Williams would have each Corps raised in a prescribed District, but if so, should serve as little as possible in that District, and he quotes Rule 7 of the Police Manual for the North-West Provinces, in which it is laid down as a general rule that "it is better not to have too many of any one District serving therein, as localities would prevent them acting so efficiently against their own countrymen."

Sir S. Cotton, referring to his plan for the re-organization of the Native Army in which Corps of the Irregular portion of the army are of the strength of 400, states that if such were the case, "there would be no objection to their being raised and recruited in Districts not to remain there but for general service." But if Corps were stronger than 400 men, Sir S. Cotton thinks a counterpoise should be preserved by enlistment from several parts of the country.

Sir J. Harsey would have Corps of distinct tribes, but provided the distinctiveness of tribes were kept, deems it immaterial from what districts the recruits came, the more distant from each other, the better.

Sir P. Grant is opposed to restricted recruiting in prescribed Districts and much prefers general enlistments. Colonel Mayhew considers that a mixture of tribes of the same *faith* is very desirable, and that Corps should be raised for general service by recruiting all over the country, without restrictions to Districts.

Brigadier Troup, Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson, Colonel Shuldham are in favor of recruiting over a wide area, and Sir J. Hope Grant advocates the same course as necessary to the exclusion of Caste.

The Commander-in-Chief would have no fixed rule, and thinks that Corps should differ as much as possible. One be of all castes, one be of some particular caste, one from a particular District, another from every District, and of every caste, uniformity in such matters, His Excellency deems dangerous, and it is added that when Corps consist of various castes, these might often with advantage be formed in separate Companies.

Major General Birch objects to the restrictions of Corps to a particular District, on the ground that it would prevent their being employed at any great distance from those Districts, and would deprive them of the power of recruiting where they might be serving or in any contiguous district. He advocates recruiting over a wide and unlimited area to enlarge the field of selection and guard against combination.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

16.

The Punjab Committee are of opinion that some Corps should be homogeneous, but that most Corps should be mixed, of the races prevailing in the respective Provinces, and they refer to the condition of the Punjab Force, in which there are already three homogeneous Corps, *viz.*, one Regiment of Goorkhas and two Corps of Muzzubbee Pioneers, this is exclusive of the Nusseeree Goorkha Battalion which does not belong to the Punjab Force.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Committee state that if more Regiments of Goorkhas could be obtained, they would be glad; but that it appears impracticable and that more Muzzubbee Corps are not required. Hence they do not recommend any more homogeneous Regiments for the Punjaub; but that all the other Provincial Corps should be mixed, some being in the proportion observed in the new Punjaub Corps, viz :—

Mahomedan Company,	4
Seikh ditto,	4
Hill Rajpoot ditto	2
	10

Others having a predominant element thus;—

Seikhs Company,	5
Mahomedan ditto,	3
Hill Rajpoots ditto,	1
Hindoostanee ditto,	1
	10

Or Mahomedan Company,	5
Seikhs ditto,	3
Hillmen ditto,	1
Hindoostanee ditto,	1
	10

Again, in one Corps the whole of the Mahomedans might be Pâthans of the Trans-Indus; though this should be quite exceptional. In another Regiment they might be all Punjaubbee Mahomedans and from the Cis-Indus and so on.

The views of Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson coincide with those of the Punjaub Committee.

The Adjutant General, Colonel Mayhew, is of opinion that so far as Hindoos, Mahomedans, Seikhs and Goorkhas are concerned, Regiments should decidedly be homogeneous. He asserts that the admission of the three latter only partly in the old Infantry Corps of the Bengal Army quite neutralized their influence as counterpoises to Hindoo predominance of feeling throughout the Infantry, whilst in the Cavalry and Artillery, the Mahomedan ascendancy prevailed from the same cause.

“Brigadier Coke would have each Corps of one tribe or caste, and his reasons are “that in a rising of the Mussulmen, you would always have Seikhs, Dogras, Goorkhas, “and Hindoo Corps to depend on, and *vice versa*. By mixing the castes in one Corps, “they become amalgamated and make common cause which they never do if kept in separate Corps.”

“Hindoos and Mussulmen are natural enemies, the same with Seikhs, yet the result of mixing them in one Corps has been to make them all join against Government and not only the Soldiers but through them the Hindoo and Mussulman Zemindars were incited to make common cause, which they never would have done had the races been kept in distinct Corps. Our endeavour should be to uphold in full force the (for us fortunate) separation which exists between the different religions and races, not to endeavour to amalgamate them. *Divide et impera* should be the principle of Indian Government.”

“Brigadier Steel advocates the homogeneity of Corps upon similar grounds, *viz.*, that association creates a fellow feeling in Corps; a fact which has been proved in the quarrels between Corps; in such squabbles and fights the *esprit de corps* set aside the considerations of tribe or caste.” Colonel Steel therefore to prevent community of interest would keep each Corps and Department as separate and unconnected as possible.

Brigadier Troup likewise pronounces in favor of homogeneous Corps.

Colonel Burn would not separate the Mahomedans and Hindoos of Hindoostan; but he would have distinct Regiments of Seikhs, and with the latter, he would not amalgamate the Mangah and Cis-Sutlej Seikhs, but keep them separate. He observes that when Seikhs were first admitted into our Army, he advocated their being kept in distinct Regiments and that the late mutiny has confirmed him in the correctness of that opinion.

He notes that the Seikhs belonging to the mutinous Corps in Delhi, went with them, and that nothing would induce them to break this unnatural alliance and join their countrymen who were fighting in our ranks. They remained with the rebels throughout the siege. Colonel Burn advances the conduct of the Goorkhas who have always been kept distinct, as a contrast to that of the Seikhs, during the mutiny, and as proving with what advantage this distinction of races may be worked upon for the maintenance of our authority.

With the exception of Goorkhas and Pathans, Brigadier Farquharson would not have Corps homogeneous; and Colonel Shuldham is of the same opinion, except that for service in the Straits, a Mussulman Corps would be most efficient.

Both Sir P. Grant, and Sir J. Hope Grant are strongly opposed to homogeneous Corps and in favor of their being composite, so also Major General Birch who regards homogeneity as favorable to combination for evil purposes, and as calculated to perpetuate distinctions. Whereas though strongly opposed to the admixture of high castes with very low castes he equally deprecates the separation between one caste and another, among those which we know by experience to admit of union together into the ranks of our Native Regiments.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

The Punjaub Committee would have both homogeneous and composite Companies, as both systems have their advantages. The men are happier in homogeneous Companies, but the Committee consider it a question whether mixed Companies are not the better check.

The Committee deem that there is safety in a variety of systems, and that the army should be no more homogeneous in system than in race.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Sir J. Hearsey would have each Company homogeneous, no caste *prejudices* to be allowed, and the name, the very word, caste, to be abolished in the Army, but he observes that if tribes are mixed, they will act together and that many of the Seikhs joined the Poorbeas in the late mutinies, because the Poorbeas were more numerous, but that as soon as they were separated and not overawed by the Brahmins and Mahomedans, they proved true and faithful to their salt and to the Government.

On similar grounds, Sir S. Cotton advocates homogeneous Companies. Brigadier Farquharson and Major Williams concur in this point. Brigadier Coke is of opinion that the next best thing to having the whole Corps of one caste is to have each Company of one caste, and that tribes and castes should not be mixed in the Companies. Brigadier Troup is also of opinion that tribes and castes should not be mixed up, but he remarks that unless the whole Regiment be homogeneous, it would be utterly impossible to preserve the Companies of men of one tribe and caste, as removals from various causes would require to be frequently made from one Company to another on account of promotion and various other circumstances.

Brigadier Steel, who dwells equally upon the impolicy of mixed races and castes, also adverts to the necessary intermingling of Companies in the performance of duty.

On the other hand, Colonel Burn is of opinion that if distinctions are made in Regiments by dividing the men into classes or tribes, quarrels will be incessant, and if Corps are severally recruited from particular Districts, he advocates that all the fighting classes of that District be admitted without distinction and mixed up in the Companies as has been the practice hitherto.

Neither Sir P. Grant nor Colonel Mayhew are in favor of homogeneous companies, but prefer them composite.

Sir J. Hope Grant, and Colonel Berkeley who concur in the non-recognition of caste, are also opposed to homogeneous Companies, and in favor of composite ones, as not involving the necessity of purposely recruiting to keep up one class of men in a Company. Major General Birch is also opposed to homogeneous Companies, as not tending to the improvement of discipline and a common interest; and as calculated to perpetuate the antagonism of castes and tribes, and as rendering more difficult the Regimental appointments, such as Commissioned Officers, Non-Commissioned Officers, Drill Instructors, Pay Havildars, &c.

18.

Colonel Keith Young makes one answer to questions 14, 15, 16, 17 and 18, and would like to see all plans fairly tried. He thinks that it

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

would be very desirable to have some corps recruited entirely from certain castes or certain districts. For instance, Corps exclusively composed of Sikhs, Rajpoots, Gwallas, Beelooches, Goorkahs, Punjaubees, Oude men and Bhajpoorees; and again, he would have other Regiments in which the Companies were similarly composed, the Regiments thus containing men of all castes and from all Districts, but the Companies being men entirely of one caste or one District.

He considers that the latter organization would be found preferable for the mass of the Native Army, as Corps exclusively composed of one caste or recruited in one District would have too much of nationality about them; and he conceives that it would be neither politic nor prudent to encourage national Regiments, except to a very limited extent. Some Regiments, Colonel Keith Young would have composite throughout, as in the present Bombay and in the late Bengal Army.

Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson expresses opinions very similar to those of Colonel K. Young, but is careful to state that he would exclude the lowest castes from his composite corps.

Brigadier Coke objects to composite Corps, and Brigadiers Steel and Troup, who also prefer homogeneous Corps, answer question 18 by the one (Colonel Steel) adverting to the proportions laid down by Regulations, whilst the other (Colonel Troup) recommends three equal proportions. Major Williams is also for equal proportions, and Sir S. Cotton likewise advocates one-third Sikhs, one-third Pathans, and one-third Hindoos. Sir P. Grant is also in favor of maintaining as far as possible equal proportions.

Major General Birch says, "I would entertain few Brahmins and " would restrict Mussulmans, Rajpoots and Sikhs to one-third of any " Regiment in which they were entertained. I mean that there should " not be in any Corps more than one-third of its complement consisting " of Mussulmans; nor Rajpoots, nor Sikhs, but these tribes together " might unobjectionably form half of any Regiment, or more than half."

19.

Sir J. Hearsey, Brigadier Steel and Colonel K. Young are of opinion that Police Corps should not be raised in the District in which they are to serve. Brigadier Steel and Major Williams would have the machinery for recruiting Military and Police Corps kept perfectly distinct. Major Williams, Brigadier Farquaharson and Colonel Shuldham would allow the recruiting for both to be carried on in the same Districts, so also would Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson.

Sir P. Grant.
Brigadier Troup.

The Officers noted in the margin are strongly in favor of general enlistment over the widest area, both for Military and Police Corps.

Colonel Burn, in connection with a proposed organization for the Infantry of the Bengal Army, would have Police Corps that are not

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

for Local Police duties recruited or filled up by drafts from the Corps of the line. By which system the active service Corps would be really efficient Regiments, and the Police Corps would be composed of well disciplined and steady old soldiers, in every way suited for the duties of a Military Police.

Sir S. Cotton under the impression that Police Corps should never be armed, trained or disciplined like Corps of the Army, considers that they might advantageously be raised in the Districts in which their employment lies.

20.

In reply to this question the general opinion is in favor of their being kept perfectly distinct, and that Police Corps should not be regarded as nurseries for the Corps of the Line. The exceptions are Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson, who, if necessary or expedient would draw men from the Police Corps, and Colonel Shuldham who would also occasionally, when there was an emergent call for men, have recourse to the Police Corps. Brigadier Farquharson, who objects to the measure as a general rule, would in time of war sanction volunteering.

Colonel Burn, instead of making the Police Corps nurseries for the Corps of the Line, would make the Line Corps nurseries for the Police.

21.

The Officers noted in the margin regard the present system as meeting all requirements and as open to little serious objection.

Commander-in-Chief.
Major General Birch.
Lieut.-Col. Macpherson.
Colonel Shuldham.
" Burn.
Punjab Committee.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigadier Steel.
Colonel Mayhew.

Sir P. Grant, instead of exclusively employing Native Agency would sometimes employ European Agency in recruiting.

The Officers who advocate Depôts under selected Officers are given in the margin, and their reasons are that the system will supersede the "bhaebundees" tendency heretofore so baneful to the service, and which still obstructs the introduction of new feelings into the Native Army; that the Army would at a very trifling expense, be always kept complete with efficient men and the State avoid the expense of paying for more men than are actually necessary; that a Depôt in the heart of its own recruiting Province would admit of the men leaving their families there, and that when a Regiment had suffered in the Field, or in Foreign service, it would be an indulgence to the men if it were sent to its own District and Depôt to recruit. Brigadier Steel would form the Depôts

At Buxar for Bhojepohs.
Allyghur for Jats.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Bulundshur for Goojars.

Meerut for Mewattees.

Mynpoorie for Rajpoots, who could also be raised
at preceding station.

Umritsur for Seikhs.

Guzarat for Punjabees.

Rawul Pindie for Eusafzaees.

Jounpore for Rajcoomars,

and at any other places where there are distinct races of Military character and taste. Brigadier Troup restricts his proposal to three Depôts: viz., Buxar, Lucknow and one in the Punjaub.

Sir J. Hearsey would depute European Officers selected as good linguists and for a knowledge of the native character, in charge of recruiting parties, otherwise there will be deceit and roguery. He would have very little if any recruiting in Hindoostan Proper, or in our old Districts, or in Oude, for he apprehends that the men in these being the relatives and connexions of mutineers and pensioners who have been executed, transported, or had their villages burnt and estates escheated, *will always be ready to turn traitors through revenge.*

Major Williams also advocates the deputation of selected Officers upon the duty of recruiting.

Brigadier Coke would entrust the recruiting to the Commanding Officer of Corps. Sir J. Hope Grant would likewise hold the Commanding Officer responsible.

22.

The general opinion is in favor of a distinct agency, and of leaving the recruiting for Police Corps to the discretion and supervision of their own Commanding Officers. Brigadier Troup alone is of opinion that the same agency might be used, whilst Colonel Burn's proposal of Line Corps being the nurseries of the Police Corps, puts aside this question.

The Commander-in-Chief would have the recruiting carried on separately.

Major-General Birch is so strongly of opinion adverse to Police Corps as armed and trained Military bodies, that he cannot contemplate the recruiting for them.

23.

The general opinion though variously stated, concurs in the view expressed by the Punjaub Committee that the existing rules only require to be enforced. Those who advocate the institution of Recruit Depôts

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

would hold the Officers Commanding responsible for the correctness of the Descriptive Rolls sent with Recruits to Corps, and for ascertaining by frequent visits to his District that the Local Civil Authorities pay proper attention to the correct attestation of Recruits and to the accuracy of the returns as to their caste, employment and residence; a duty represented to be slurred over.

The Commander-in-Chief deems it to be a matter of little moment.

Major General Birch would have the precautions above stated carefully observed and copies of all Registers of Recruits made by the Civil Authorities transmitted to the Adjutant General's Office, as also copies of Regimental Registers of Recruits and of Kindred Rolls. He remarks that in the late mutinies the non-existence of these Rolls and the destruction of those with Regiments proved very inconvenient.

24.

Here again opinion is practically unanimous that the same precautions should be taken with Recruits for Police Corps as are adopted with Recruits for the Line, or rather should be adopted for the latter.

Major Williams quotes the instructions issued to the Officers of the Military organized Police of the North-west Provinces, *vide* Rules 8, 9, 10, 11, and 12, from which it appears that strong able bodied men irrespective of castes, high or low, if recommended by the Civil Authorities and approved by the Civil Surgeons, may be taken from the ages of 18 to 35 years for the Police; that no one caste or tribe is to predominate; that Native Christians are readily to be taken if of good character; that the enlistment is for service in any part of India; and that with the view of gaining good men, parties of influence and good character bringing 100 good men are to have the rank of Jemadar with liberty to recommend 2 Havildars and 2 Naicks.

The Commander-in-Chief is of opinion that it is a matter of little moment.

25.

In the precis of the answers to the first series of questions, this subject has been very fully treated, and the opinions of the Punjaub Committee to which they refer have been quoted *in extenso*. It is unnecessary here to recapitulate their objections to the introduction of foreign coloured mercenaries, a measure to which they are entirely opposed as in contravention of our policy of administering India as far as practicable for the profit and advantage of its inhabitants and as increasing the difficulty of finding employment for the races, traditionally and habitually Military in character and occupation, without aiding to solve the problem how these races are to be disposed of.

26.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Officers noted in the margin are likewise very strongly opposed to a measure which they consider as probably equally costly with, and far less efficient than, the employment of European Troops; that the recruiting would be very difficult and supply of men limited, whereas India furnishes sufficient and fit men if well selected, and as affording no security, such foreign colored mercenaries being proverbially treacherous, and from the prejudice and sympathy of color, certain to make common cause against the European race.

Commander-in-Chief.
Major-General Burch.
Sir P. Grant.
Colonel Mayhew.
Brigadier Troup.

The Officers noted in the margin advocate the measure as expedient, and would have such foreign mercenaries formed into separate Corps and to consist of Malays, Chinese, Tartars, Africans, Burmese and men of the Eastern Archipelago. Sir J. Hearsey limits his concurrence in the utility of the measure, to the enrolment of Christians of all Tropical or very hot countries including Malta, Sicily, Naples, the Ionian Islands, Maderia and the Brazils.

Sir J. Hope Grant.
Colonel Berkeley.
" Burn.
Major Williams.
Lieut. Col. Macpherson.
Brigadier Steel.
" Coke.
" Farquharson.
Colonel Shuldham.
Sir S. Cotton.

Colonel K. Young would enlist such foreign colored mercenaries and would have them in Corps organized in all three modes, viz., the Regiment homogeneous, the Companies of a composite Regiment homogeneous and the Regiment composite throughout.

27.

Those who advocate the measure look to the assistance of Governors, Consuls, and European Residents to aid the Officers selected for the duty of raising Corps of Foreign Mercenaries. Brigadier Steel observes that the Dutch raised Corps in one Colony for the service of another, that they had Malay Corps in Java and Amboynese Corps for Java; and Japanese Corps for Ceylon, and so on.

28.

The objections to this proposal are numerous and very decided in their opinions. The Punjaub Committee consider it would be a mis-application of European power.

29.

Colonel Burn is of opinion that any such compulsory amalgamation is bad. Voluntary friendship between the two classes he would encourage, but would not attempt any unnatural combination of men of such totally distinct habits, and deems that it would certainly be looked upon by the Native Soldiers in its true light, as a coercive measure. Sir P. Grant says "on no account should a Company or Companies of Europeans form a component part of Native Regiments, always and under all circumstances keep your Europeans in distinct and separate Regiments."

30.

31.

QUESTIONS.

32.

ANSWERS.

Colonel Mayhew considers that the close admixture of the European with the Native Soldier will lower the former in the eyes of the latter, and that as the idiosyncracies of the two races are incompatible, they should be kept as distinct as possible. Sir J. Hope Grant, Colonel Berkeley, Colonel K. Young, Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson, Brigadiers Steel, Farquharson, Coke, Troup, and Major Williams are all clearly and strongly opposed to such an organization of Native Regiments, and Sir S. Cotton himself, an advocate for attaching Native Troops as auxiliaries to European Corps, objects to so small a body of Europeans as one or even two Companies forming part of a Native Regiment, and holds that the efficiency of the Europeans would in this manner be utterly sacrificed, and that they would speedily deteriorate both in character and discipline.

The advocates for such an organization are, Sir J. Hearsey and Colonel Shuldham. The former would have the flank Companies Europeans, and two Serjeants to each Battalion Company. Colonel Shuldham only approves of the adoption of this organization in the event of that in question 37 not being carried into execution. In that case, he would have the flank Companies Europeans armed with rifles, and would further have a Serjeant to each Company of the Battalion.

Sir J. Hearsey would have the Barracks of such European Companies on the flanks of the Lines of the Native Companies, so also would Sir S. Cotton and Brigadier Troup if the organization they object to, were adopted: but Colonel Shuldham would have the Barracks of the two Companies together and in rear of the centre.

Sir J. Hearsey and Colonel Shuldham are of opinion that such detachments would not seriously complicate Commissariat arrangements; Sir S. Cotton thinks they need not do so; but Brigadiers Farquharson and Troup and Colonel Berkeley are of the contrary opinion.

The advocates of this organization would arm the European Companies with Enfield rifles.

Sir P. Grant remarks upon question 32 that he cannot too strongly condemn such admixture. The Commander-in-Chief is also of opinion that they had better be kept separate, and Major General Birch, who advocates their being kept entirely distinct, urges that the prestige of the Europeans would be much lowered and injured by close association; that they could not be armed alike; that in his opinion Jails, Treasuries, Guns and Arsenals should be guarded by Europeans to the exclusion of Natives, and that if the two were associated in the same Regiment, it would not do to make such a distinction of duties and trusts. Moreover that the clothing would be different and the effect on parade extremely uncouth.

QUESTIONS.

33.

The Punjaub Committee would arm the Native Infantry with a light musket and bayonet on frontiers where Hill tribes are to be kept in order, that they might have two grooved rifles, but never the Enfield or any weapon equal to that in the hands of the European Troops. Brigadier Coke concurs in opinion with the Punjaub Committee.

Sir S. Cotton would arm the native auxiliaries of his scheme of organization like the Europeans with the Enfield Rifle; but the Irregular Infantry, which he proposes he would arm with the two-grooved rifle or common musket.

Commander-in-Chief.
Major General Burch.
Sir P. Grant.
Brigadier Steel.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Colonel K. Young.
Lt Col Macpherson.
Colonel Burn.
Major Williams.
Sir J. H. Grant.
Colonel Berkeley.
Sir J. Hearsey.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Brigadier Coke.
Commander-in-Chief.

The Officers noted in the margin would arm the Native Infantry with the common percussion musket and bayonet. Colonel Shuldham with this weapon or with fuzils, as muskets are heavy. On the other hand, Brigadier Troup would arm them with the Enfield Rifle.

The Punjaub Committee would arm the Police with a percussion carbine and sword, and the Officers whose names are in the margin propose the same.

34.

Others advocate the Police being armed with common percussion muskets, the supply of caps being regulated. Major Williams and Colonel K. Young limit this to the Military Police; the former Officer proposing to arm the Cantonment and City Police with clubs, and Burkundauz with swords; whilst Colonel K. Young would give swords and spears to those not belonging to the Military Police.

Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson proposes the fuzil, with which weapon Sir S. Cotton would also arm the Police when the population was armed, though when these were disarmed, he would only allow swords to be carried by the Police.

Colonel Steel would give the Police a musketoen or cut down musket, spear and bamboo to those who are for ordinary watch and ward and a sword to detectives.

35.

Upon this question the Punjaub Committee observe that "there can be no advantage in a leather stock, light coat and trowsers, which fetter the free use of the legs. In the late Native Army, in a really well dressed Regiment, a sepoy could neither stoop to the ground nor take rest in his accoutrements. Some improvements have recently been effected in the European Soldiers' dress; but much remains to be done before they get the full use of their limbs and the greatest possible ease in a hot climate."

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Commander-in-Chief.
Major Genl. Birch.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir J. Hearsy.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Brigadier Steel.
Brigadier Coke.
Colonel K. Young.
Colonel Shuldham.
Lt. Col Macpherson.
Colonel Mayhew.

The Officers whose opinions tally with that of the Punjaub Committee, in considering that no advantage arises from the close imitation of the dress of the European Soldier, are marginally given.

Sir P. Grant however states his opinion as follows:—"Formerly, before the Bengal Army destroyed and disgraced itself, and having regard to what I know was the feeling of the men, I should have urged that the dress of the Native Soldier ought always to be assimilated to a certain extent to that of the European Soldier." Colonel Burn considers that the advantage of dressing the Native like the European Soldier is to prevent concentration of fire upon the European Troops when in action, but that a looser and easier dress would be preferred by the natives and also by the Europeans in this very hot climate. Brigadier Troup too is of opinion that the advantages of similarity of dress counter-balance the disadvantages.

36.

Commander-in-Chief.
Major General Birch.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigadier Coke.
Sir J. H. Grant.
Colonel K. Young.
Lt. Col Macpherson.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Colonel Shuldham.
Major Wilhams.

The reply of the Punjaub Committee is "in a loose tunic with open throat, no stock, a good thick turband that will ward off sun, or cold, or blows, and loose pantaloons without a single button, fastening round the waist by a string." This is the dress of the Punjaub Corps and is preferred too by the Officers marginally noted.

Colonel Berkeley.
Colonel Mayhew.
Colonel Burn.
Brigadier Steel.

Others are in favor of the Zouave dress.

Brigadier Troup is of opinion that the Native Soldier of the Regular Army should both in dress and in every thing else, as far as the system can be made applicable to natives, closely imitate the European Soldier in every thing.

Sir P. Grant says, "Now that the Bengal Native Infantry have forfeited all claim to have their wishes or feelings on the point considered, and as it does not affect their efficiency, I would no longer seek to assimilate them with the European Soldier in either dress or equipments. I propose that henceforward the dress of the Bengal Sepoy shall be a dark blue Cotton Mirzaie, quilted with Cotton for the cold season, blue Jungheas and a Pugree of any color wound round the head in a uniform regimental pattern, a blanket great Coat or Cloak. Shoes as formerly worn, and black or brown leather, instead of Buff accoutrements. For the hot season white Cotton Mirzaie and Jungheas; all else as in the cold season."

QUESTIONS.

37.

ANSWERS.

The reply of the Punjaub Committee shall be given in their words
 “ To this we are all opposed, though not on the same grounds ; Sir John
 “ Lawrence and Brigadier General Chamberlain think that the wider the
 “ European and Native Regiments can be kept apart, the better, and that
 “ any improvement in smartness or drill which the Native Regiments
 “ might acquire from association would be more than counterbalanced by
 “ familiarity with the vices and defects of too many of the European Soldi-
 “ ery, which still leave so much to regret even after the ameliorations and
 “ improvements of late years. * Colonel Edwardes would not apprehend
 “ the above evil consequences, but he joins the other members in thinking
 “ the proposed combination impracticable on the following grounds. In
 “ the first place the management of a European Regiment is totally differ-
 “ ent from that of a Native Regiment, and we can foresee nothing but incon-
 “ venience from the Colonel of a European Regiment (who must necessari-
 “ ly be the senior Officer) controlling the system of the Commandant of the
 “ Native Corps. Secondly, it would be embarrassing to have two Regi-
 “ ments thus inseparably tied together and would greatly complicate the
 “ relief. Thirdly, it would nullify all the proposals for Provincial Battali-
 “ ons; a certain number of Native Troops are however necessary with Eu-
 “ ropean Troops to relieve them from exposure to the sun and leave as
 “ many Europeans available as possible. Brigadier General Chamberlain
 “ and Colonel Edwardes think therefore, that instead of as heretofore, draw-
 “ ing the Sepoys haphazard from the Line it would be better permanent-
 “ ly to attach one or two Companies of Sepoys * to each Regiment of Eu-
 “ ropean Infantry, care being taken that high caste Natives should not be
 “ enlisted for this duty, but those races who would most readily fraternise
 “ with the European. Sir John Lawrence however does not think that
 “ any thing would be gained by such an arrangement, and would rather
 “ adhere to the ordinary practice.”

The proposal made by Brigadier General Chamberlain and Colonel Edwardes are in accordance with the opinion and suggestion of Colonel Keith Young, who replies to this question by deprecating having any large body of Natives intimately associated with European Troops, and by proposing to have a Native Company raised from the class which supplies the cook boys, attached to each European Regiment of Cavalry and Infantry in the service. To each Cavalry he would attach two European Officers selected from their knowledge of the language, and would have the Companies to consist of 100 Privates and such complement of Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers as may be decided upon for the Native Corps of the Line. He considers that such Companies would save Europeans from much exposure, and take numerous duties which otherwise necessarily employ European Soldiers, and that the class distinct from other Natives,

* To be commanded by Subalterns of the European Regiments.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and accustomed to intimate contact with European Troops would continue as they have done during the late disturbances, to regard themselves as part and parcel of the Corps to which they belonged.

Sir P. Grant is strongly adverse to the permanent association proposed in question 37, deeming it "most inadvisable that the Native Soldier should have the opportunity which close and permanent association would give him of seeing the European Soldier in the degrading position and state in which unhappily the latter too often exhibits himself in quarters." Brigadier Troup carries his objection even further than this, for he expresses an opinion that such permanent association with the Native would in the course of a short time so demoralize the European, that he would only be so in name, and the maintenance of discipline or any thing like it would be impossible.

Sir J. Hope Grant.
Brigadier Steel.
" Coke
Lieut.-Col. Macpherson.
Colonel Mayhew.
Major Williams.

The Officers marginally noted are also adverse to the scheme, and Colonel Mayhew remarks that recent experience shows that admixture has not worked well, generally that the practice is to be discontinued in the Artillery and that it should not be introduced into other branches.

Colonel Burn considers the proposal better than that of flank Companies of Europeans, but doubts if it will work well. Sir J Hearsay on the contrary gives preference to the scheme of having European Flank Companies and observes that Europeans kept separate cause Natives to stand in greater awe of them.

The Officers who approve of auxiliary Native Corps in close and permanent association with European Regiments are marginally noted; both Colonel Berkeley and Colonel Shuldham propose however to raise the auxiliaries to two Corps, so as to form a complete Brigade, but Colonel Shuldham adds a Light Field Battery of European Artillery. Sir S. Cotton who considers that the arrangement proposed would prove eminently successful, instances the good feeling which springs up between the European and Native Corps brigaded together for a long period in Afghanistan, and adverts to his scheme of Army organization in which he recommends the proportion of 2 Europeans to 1 Native incorporating the two races.

The reply of the Punjaub Committee is that there is both a certain analogy and encouragement and also certain differences in the two cases; that the Gun Lascars and Native Drivers economize European power and have been found not only convenient and useful in ordinary wars, but singularly faithful in the late exceptional crisis, when their loyalty was put to the severest imaginable test; but that the Gun Lascars and Native Drivers are not highly disciplined, drilled and armed with offensive

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

weapons as the Native auxiliary Regiments or Companies with a European Regiment would be, and that so far the latter would be a new experiment.

Generally the opinions are that there is no analogy and no encouragement to be drawn in favor of auxiliary Native Corps from the association of Gun Lascars and Native Drivers with European Artillery men; that during the late mutiny neither Drivers nor Lascars could be trusted, and that when they proved less rebellious than other Native Troops, it was probably owing to fear and being armed with swords quite useless, and that the Artillery should have no Native Drivers but be European exclusively. Brigadier Troup considers that there is no analogy whatever, the two cases being in no way parallel, as the duties of the Gun Lascars and Drivers, are perfectly distinct from those of the Artillery men, and they never come in collision with each other, which is quite different to being mixed up on an equality upon duty. Sir S. Cotton also deems the two cases not analogous, but instances the Peshawur Light Horse as being in point. The Corps consists of three troops, two of which are Europeans and the third Native, the latter being composed of men of the Punjaub and of the Peshawur and Hazara Districts, trained in every way as Dragoons. Sir S. Cotton confidently says that this Corps is as fully efficient as our wholly European, and that the most cordial feeling exists between the two races.

The Commander-in-Chief also considers that there is no analogy; an opinion also expressed by Major General Birch.

39.

There is not much variety of opinion upon this point. Brigadier Farquharson under the supposition of two European Regiments being quartered together would have their Barracks in the centre with the Artillery between them. Sir S. Cotton would have the European Barracks in the centre and Native on the flanks.

Colonel Burn would have the barracks apart from the lines, the social habits of the two races being so contrary, and Colonel Shuldham would have them sufficiently near to check an emeute, but sufficiently separate to prevent all intimacy.

The Punjaub Committee considers the matter important with so small a body, and would place a Barrack for the two Companies wherever most convenient.

40.

The Punjaub Committee have partly answered the question in reply to No. 39, but they add that they all think that if an auxiliary Native Corps were attached to a European one, it would end in the delegation of most important duties to the sepoy, such as Magazine Guards, &c., which ought always in future to be confined to Europeans.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Brigadier Steel considers that the European character is not sufficiently careful or suspicious, and that the system would be unfavorable to vigilance and diminish the awe entertained for Europeans; Brigadier Troup and Major Williams and Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson also deem the system unfavorable and calculated to lessen the awe which is an element of strength.

Sir J. Hearsey is of opinion that the awe maintained would be the same if his proposal were adopted.

Sir S. Cotton, Colonel Berkeley and Brigadier Farquharson regard the system as favorable, as also does Colonel Shuldham with the proviso that all intimacy must be prevented.

Colonel Burn takes a distinct view of the question which in his opinion hinges much upon the facility of intercommunication between the native and the European, his answer is that "a close association of the two races if founded on friendship would be favorable to that vigilance which has become essential, a friendly warning of what was going on at Meerut on the 10th of May 1857, would have prepared the European troops for immediate action; at present the European and Native Troops are unable to communicate from a want of knowledge of each others language. I would encourage in every way the acquisition of English in our Native Army. It would sooth the inhuman cruelty that is inherent in the native mind; so sensible were the Romans of the influence of language over manners, that it was their most serious care to extend with the progress of their arms, the use of the Latin tongue. Britain should follow this example and teach the English language throughout her Indian empire. The maintenance of that awe of European Troops which is an element of strength can only be upheld hereafter by having every where a sufficient European Force ready and armed with authority to put down at once any rising either of the Native Army or of the native population."

The Commander-in-Chief does not think that the adoption of the system would have much effect one way or the other, but his Excellency sees no particular advantage from it.

Major General Birch is of opinion that the nearer such association as is involved in the proposed system, the greater the detriment to the prestige of the European Soldier.

41.

The Punjab Committee consider that Auxiliary Corps would be at all times embarrassing and inconvenient.

Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson deems the objections to the arrangement so great as to outweigh partial advantages, and Brigadier Troup though he thinks that it would never work better in time of war

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

than in peace, considers that it would never answer. Colonel Burn considers that the existing system of Brigading Native and European Troops together is better than the forced alliance of the proposed arrangement under contemplation. Brigadier Steel holds that in camp it would work unfavorably.

On the other hand, Sir S. Cotton and Colonel Berkeley think the arrangement would answer equally well in peace and war. Colonel Shuldham apprehends no difficulty and Brigadier Farquharson who is of opinion that the two Battalions need not be always kept together, deems the arrangement applicable to the requirements of the service.

The Commander-in-Chief observes that it might be made to dovetail, but that sometimes inconvenience would arise from the European Regiment being always attended by its auxiliary Native Corps.

Major General Birch considers that in peace there would not be much difference, but that in war the service would certainly be benefited by the mutual attachment of the two Corps, and by the emulation of the Native Corps, and he exemplifies it by the feeling which existed between the 40th Foot and 2nd Grenadiers and the 13th Foot and the 35th Native Infantry.

42.

The Punjab Committee observe in reply that "under the former system in which the Native Army so greatly overbalanced the European one, it was not desirable to develop the Native Military talent and self-reliance. It was politic under such circumstances for instance, to promote sepoys by seniority and not by merit, and to keep the command of companies in the hands of European Officers. But if the re-adjustments and reforms in the Indian Army which we have advocated, be carried out, we need not any longer be under the lamentable necessity of debilitating our Native Troops. We can then strive to make them vigorous and effective, contenting ourselves with the reservation of the Artillery and latest improvements in the rifle for the European Troops and the certainty that whenever a Native Regiment, however efficient, mutinously separates itself from its European Officers, it will find that it has lost its most vital principle."

Sir P. Grant considers that "it is most desirable that Native Troops should not be trained to feel that they are entirely dependent upon European Troops for support. But I do not hesitate to assert (in opposition to the oft expressed opinions of Sir John Malcolm and other distinguished Officers) that (most providentially as I think) it is alone through the instrumentality of their European Officers that Native Troops are ever imbued with a spirit of confidence and self-reliance on service: and the Native Troops in our service so officered will always be immeasurably superior to any Asiatic enemy to whom they may be opposed.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“Efficiently commanded and well led by British Officers, Native Troops will always, my experience tells me, acquit themselves with credit independently of European support. But they have no confidence whatever in the very best Native Officers, and deprived of their European Officers (as I think it will be admitted, late events have abundantly made manifest) except behind walls or other protection, Native Troops are a mere armed Rabble.”

In favor of fostering a spirit of confidence and self-reliance among the Native Troops are the Officers marginally noted.

Lieut. Col. Macpherson.
Brigadier Farquharson.
" Steel.
" Troup.
" Coke.
Colonel Burn.
Sir J. H. Grant.

The Quarter Master General would have the Native Army small, but well trained. Brigadier Troup is of opinion that the system of auxiliary Battalions must be unfavorable to the acquisition of confidence and self-reliance by the Native Troops. Brigadier Coke's answer contains matter of grave import. He says "I am of opinion that Native or any other Troops, who have no self-reliance, would be worse than useless in the hour of trial. I would do every thing in my power to give self-reliance to Native Troops. I do not mean by self-reliance a mutinous and insubordinate spirit. Nothing can be more mutinous and insubordinate than an English mob, but this does not make them self-reliant; witness the way in which a Policeman walks into the midst of a violent Chartist mob and carries off his man. A mutinous and insubordinate Army can only exist with a timid and weak Government. No arrangement of Troops, no amount of want of self-confidence will save an Army under these circumstances, for they will soon find that their own want of self confidence does not equal that of their rulers. I hope I shall always see Native Troops rely on Europeans for aid and support in the hour of danger, believing them to be their superiors in bodily strength physical and moral courage; but I do not think we have in many cases since the late rebellion increased this feeling, and if it is not strenuously exerted, our Northern Soldiers will not long continue to believe in the name alone."

Colonel Berkeley and Major Williams would have Native Troops trained to have confidence in their European Officers.

Sir S. Cotton thinks the development of confidence and self-reliance in Native Troops fraught with danger to the State, and would check their growth by his proposed system of organization. Those who are of the opinion that the encouragement of such qualities in Native Troops is impolitic are marginally noted.

Sir J. Hearsey.
Colonel K. Young.
" Shuldham.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Colonel Shuldham supports this view by the remark that when the tug of war comes, Native Troops always look up to the European Troops, and that at other times, it signifies little whether they have self-reliance or not.

Colonel Mayhew considers the question from a wholly different point of view, and expresses his conviction that the permanent association in the same Corps of European and Native Soldiers, would have the effect of making the expensive and needy Englishman, dependent on the rich and usurious Hindoo, to whom he would find himself constantly bound by debt, and thus a spirit dangerous to discipline would be fostered in spite of the utmost care of the ruling powers.

This might, Colonel Mayhew adds, certainly be obviated in a measure by the frequent change of the Native portion of a Corps from its European base, but the amalgamation would thereby be weakened and retain none but its worst features.

Major General Birch says that the Native Troops, should be taught to rely on the European Troops. He thinks their association to the extent he proposes, would foster the sentiment. But that a more intimate union would be prejudicial to the reliance of the Native Troops on the European.

The Commander-in-Chief observes that they must be trained to act occasionally with no Europeans save their own Officers; that there is no fear of their looking down upon European Troops, but that we should never again rely upon their *feelings* of dependence on Europeans, or on any other of their supposed *feelings*, but place it altogether out of their power to do serious mischief which his Excellency believes to be by no means incompatible with getting good service out of them.

1 & 2. The races, tribes, and castes, of which the Bombay Army is composed, Lord Elphinstone states, to be chiefly Concanese, Deccanees, and Hindostanees in the Regular Army. There are three Battalions of Beloochees and two more are being raised, two Batteries of Bheels, a third being raised, and one Corps of Kolees. All castes are professedly admitted, but most Commanding Officers have hitherto given the preference to the higher castes.

The districts whence these races come are the Southern Concan, all parts of the Deccan, Oude, and the neighbourhood of Cawnpore and Delhi, Scinde and Beloochistan, Kandeish, and the Hills of Guzerat, the Kolees from the Nassick District.

3 & 4. No tribes or castes are excluded by regulation, but hitherto scarcely any recruits have been obtained from Guzerat and few from the Southern Mahratta country. The Bheels, Kolees, Beeruds and other

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

aboriginal tribes, are virtually excluded from the Regular Army. But if local enlistment were adopted and insisted upon, recruits might be obtained from districts which now furnish none. Hindoos and Mussulmans of Guzerat might be largely enlisted; also the Kolees of Guzerat a very fine race. The Beloochees are being enlisted now for foreign service but the Bheels are not likely to do so.

8.

His Lordship advocates the system of local and separate enlistment for each Regiment and refers to his minutes of the 16th and 22nd May last. He doubts whether any Brahmmins should be enlisted, their religious influence over their comrades of inferior castes being inconsistent with Military discipline and with safety.

12.

The present Marine Corps is composed of Mussulmans and low caste Hindoos. His Lordship considers that the so called Native Portuguese chiefly Roman Catholic fishermen, of whom there are a large number in Salsette and the Concan would form a very good Native Marine Corps, but they probably would not enlist in a Corps chiefly composed of Hindoos and Mussulmans.

14 to 18.

Lord Elphinstone considers that upon enlistment in particular districts exclusively more than upon all the other conditions together depends our future safety in India, where races are distinct as Bheels, Kolees, Beloochees, &c., he would form them into distinct Corps; where the population is mixed, all might be enlisted indiscriminately. Particular castes should not have a preponderance, but if each Corps is enlisted in a separate district and Brahmmins are not admitted, the preponderance of caste is comparatively indifferent.

19.

The Police should be enlisted from the same districts as the Army; and as the former receive less pay, the better sort of recruits would enter the Army.

20.

His Lordship would decidedly keep the Army and the Police quite distinct, having a lower standard for the latter and men of the different stamp.

25.

With the exception of a few African Artillery men for stations where Europeans cannot exist without risk of life or health, Lord Elphinstone would have no foreign mercenaries, but would rely rather on the Natives of the country. But it might be advisable to entertain for a time some Regiments of Africans and Malays to serve in notoriously disaffected districts, where to raise Troops or to quarter Regiments which might become disaffected would be inexpedient.

28.

His Lordship cannot possibly conceive an arrangement more calculated to exhibit in the strongest light our distrust of Natives and our own weakness, than the having a company or companies of Europeans as part of a Native Regiment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

33 & 34.

If there be any choice, he would give the best arms to the European Soldier; but he would not even on this point shew any distrust of the Natives. The Police might be armed with a light fuzil or musket, and a short sword or knife which would be useful both as a bayonet and as a separate weapon.

37 to 40.

Lord Elphinstone believes that Local European Regiments would be the greatest of all possible mistakes, and therefore does not enter on the question of attaching Native Corps to European Corps. He considers such association would decidedly impair both.

42.

His Lordship observes that we must have Native Troops and that it is better that they should be competent and self-reliant than good for nothing which would be the case, if they are taught to depend on European support; our policy, he remarks should be to create an Army which we can rely upon, and then to make it as good as we can.

3 & 4.

Sir W. Mansfield states that there are tribes and castes excluded from enlistment, and from which good recruits might be obtained, but he does not specify any.

11.

He considers an enlistment oath to be of no avail.

14 & 15.

He would have each Corps raised and recruited in a particular district if possible, excepting exceptional Corps like the Guides, and these he would not limit to any district.

16 to 18.

He would not have Corps homogeneous, as a general rule, but the constitution of Corps might vary in this respect, he would have Companies homogeneous, and distribute the races as equally as circumstances will permit.

19.

He would recruit for Military and for Police Corps in the same districts, with little or no difference in their engagement respectively. He would make Irregular Infantry and Police Corps convertible terms, both doing the same duty in war and in peace.

20.

He would not regard Police Corps as nurseries for the Army Corps, but he would render all Native Troops liable to a Police duty if requisite and *vice versa*.

21 to 24.

He would hold the Commanding Officer responsible for the enlistment of recruits, under the orders of the Commander-in-Chief, and would have nothing to say to the Local Authorities further than to get their assistance in obtaining the men. And as for the Army, so likewise for Police Corps.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

25.

He considers it inexpedient to enlist Natives of other tropical countries. The Africans, he observes are the only people worth enlisting, but to do this, is forbidden by imperial policy.

28.

Sir W. Mansfield would not let a Company of Europeans form part of a Native Regiment.

33 & 34.

He would arm the Native Infantry, with the percussion musket and the Police also.

35 & 36.

He considers close imitation of the dress of the European Soldier for the Native unnecessary, but for the sake of comfort and for the activity of the Soldier, he thinks the dress of the French Zouave might be advantageously considered. Tight Jackets and Shakoos he would abandon for ever, and substitute for them a loose tunic and a Pugree, with very loose Trowsers or Pajjammahs.

37.

He approves much of the suggestion that every local European Regiment shall have a Native Irregular Regiment attached to it.

38.

He considers the association of European Artillery men with Gun Lascars and Drivers to present an analogy with that arrangement and to encourage its adoption, and remarks that so far as he knows, the Drivers and Lascars belonging to the (European ?) Batteries have not mutinied.

39 to 41.

He would dispose the barracks and Lines of the two associated Corps in line as a Regiment of two Battalions; he thinks such an arrangement would be favorable to that vigilance which has become essential, and to the maintenance of the awe of European Troops which is an element of strength. He does not see how the moral question of awe can be affected by the arrangement after recent occurrences, as there will not be much intimacy under any circumstances. With regard to the requirements of the service in peace and war, he remarks that this is to be judged of after being tried, but he foresees no difficulty. The Native Battalion might be detailed for any length of time, but with the certainty always before it of returning to the European Battalion.

42.

He considers that the spirit of confidence and self-reliance will be much enhanced by being constantly in contact with Europeans. The Native Troops will not fight the worse when away from their European Comrades, because they have acquired a feeling of self-reliance by constant success in their company.

No. 1. THE RECRUITING AND COMPOSITION OF CORPS.

INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

1. What are the races, tribes or castes of which the Infantry of the is composed ?
2. What districts are the several races, tribes and castes drawn from ?
3. Have any races, tribes or castes, been excluded from enlistment, either by the Regulations, or the practice of the
4. Are there any races, tribes or castes hitherto neglected, or excluded from the field of enlistment, from whom recruits might with advantage be drawn for the
5. What agency is employed for the enlistment of recruits in the Districts ? -
6. On enlistment of recruits, what precautions of registry and other forms are observed before the Local Authorities of Districts ?
7. When recruits are enlisted in Cantonments, or taken from the families of Sepoys or the followers of Regiments, what precautions, if any, are taken ?
8. What alterations should be made in existing Recruiting Regulations, and practice, relatively to races, tribes or castes (with a view to improve the future composition of the Infantry of the Native Troops in the)
9. What are the words of the oath administered to the recruit on his entering the ranks of the
10. How long has this Form been in use in the
11. Can you suggest any improvement in the wording, or matter of the oath administered to the
12. Are there any races, tribes or castes in the of seafaring habits ; and could Marine Corps be formed from such races, tribes or castes ?
13. Has the any Marine Corps ; and if so, of what strength, and whence recruited ?
14. Should each Infantry Corps be raised, each in a prescribed district, and be recruited there, and there only ?

15. Or should each Corps be recruited over a wide area, in fact, without reference to districts?

16. Should each Corps be homogeneous as to race, tribe or caste?

17. If a Corps is not homogeneous will it be desirable that the Companies of which it is composed should be, so far as may be possible, homogeneous, each Company consisting of men of one tribe or caste? Or should the tribes and castes be mixed up in each Company?

18. If Corps are not homogeneous; but composite, in what proportion should the races, tribes or castes, be entertained?

19. If separate Corps are to be maintained for Military and Police purposes, should the recruiting for both be allowed in the same District, or kept to separate Districts, or should Police Corps be recruited from a wide area without reference to Districts?

20. Would you regard Police Corps as nurseries from which men might be drawn for the Army Corps?

21. What agency should be employed for recruiting

22. Would you employ the same kind of agency for recruiting for Police Corps, or a distinct agency?

23. What precautions should be taken before the Local Authorities, or through their instrumentality, in connection with recruits for the Army of

24. Should similar or different precautions be taken in connection with recruits for Police Corps in

25. Will it be expedient to enlist Natives of other tropical countries, equally qualified for service in India with the Natives of the Country, and if so, should they be formed in separate Regiments, or in Companies, or otherwise?

26. If recourse be had to recruiting in other tropical countries, which are the countries and races to be preferred?

27. What would be the best agency to employ for such recruiting?

28. Should a Company or Companies of Europeans form a component part of Native Regiments?

29. If so, should such Company or Companies be enlisted for this special purpose; or be composed of men selected from European Corps serving in India, or be integral portions of European Corps, and subject to periodical relief?

30. Where should the Barracks of such Companies be placed relatively to the Lines of the Native Troops?

31. Would such Detachments seriously complicate Commissariat arrangements?

32. How should such Companies be armed? with similar or different weapons from the Native Troops with whom they would be associated?

33. How should the Native Infantry of the be armed?

34. How should Police Corps in be armed?

35. Do the advantages of making the dress of the Native Soldier a close imitation of that of the European Soldier counterbalance the disadvantages?

36. How should the Native Infantry of the be dressed, with a view to the comfort and efficiency of the Native Soldier?

37. It has been proposed that to every European Local Regiment, a Native Irregular Regiment, officered from that European Regiment alone, should be attached. What is your opinion upon this proposed combination of an European and an auxiliary Native Regular or Irregular Corps of Infantry in close and permanent association?

38. Do you consider that the association of European Artillerymen, with Gun-Lascars, and Native Drivers, present any analogy with such an arrangement, and any encouragement to adopt it?

39. How would you dispose the Barracks and Lines of the two associated Corps?

40. Would such a system be favorable or the reverse to that vigilance which has become essential, and to the maintenance of that awe of European Troops which is an element of strength?

41. How would such an arrangement dovetail with the requirements of the Service, in peace and war?

42. Is it desirable that the Native Troops should acquire a spirit of confidence and self-reliance, or be systematically trained to act in dependence upon European support, and which sentiment would be fostered by the system of auxiliary Native Battalions in permanent association with European Corps?

THE RIGHT HONORABLE LORD HARRIS, GOVR. OF FORT St. GEORGE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Madras Army is composed of
Mahomedans,
Brahmins or Rajpoots.
Mahrattas.
Telingas or Gentoos.
Tameehans.
Pariahs.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2. Mahomedans are drawn from all parts. Telingas, chiefly from the Northern Circars, Tameelians, &c., from Central and Southern Carnatic, Mysore, Ceded Districts, Madura and Tinnevelly.
3. No race, tribe, or caste has been excluded from enlistment by Regulation. It has been an object to maintain a due proportion, so that no one caste should preponderate over another.
4. With the sanction of Government an order was published in December last, fixing the caste proportions as follows :
1-4th Tameelians of various castes, from the Carnatic and Ceded Districts.
1-4th Telingas and other Hindoo castes from the Northern Circars.
1-4th Mahomedans from various parts.
1-4th Natives of lower castes or without recognized caste.
5. Recruiting parties under European and Native Officers, chiefly the latter. When it is inconvenient to detach parties, Recruiting for particular Corps is carried on by Officers Commanding Stations, under orders from Army Head Quarters. There are also Recruiting Depôts.
6. A descriptive Register is taken by the Recruiting and the examining Medical Officer, showing the recruit's name, age, height, country, village, caste, color, &c., and is forwarded monthly to the Regiment.
If the party is under a Native Officer, the candidate is taken for approval to the nearest Commanding or Staff Officer.
The party is generally composed of Natives of the District in which the Recruiting takes place, and they bring in relatives, acquaintances, &c.
7. No special precautions beyond enquiry as to character and fitness.
8. I would not recommend any at present.
9. The words of the oath are :—" I Private do solemnly
"affirm in the presence of Almighty God, that I will serve the
"Government with truth and loyalty, and that I will faithfully
"obey the orders of all Officers set over me. I do also further affirm
"that I will never abandon these Colors, and that I will defend
"them with my life."
10. It has been substantially the same for the last fifty years.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11.

It is only probable that any alteration would render the oath more binding.

12.

There are a few on the Western Coast, and also on the Eastern, of seafaring habits ; but it is very doubtful whether Marine Corps could be formed of them. Some enroll themselves as Lascars on board Steamers, &c., but many of these come from other countries.

13.

No.

14.

I think not.

15.

Yes.

16.

Certainly not.

17.

No.

18.

Answered in Question 4.

19.

In my opinion, the distinction between Police and Military Corps should, as a general rule, be so complete in regard to the description of men of which each should be composed, that recruiting for both might be allowed in the same Districts.

20.

I consider that the Police Corps require a superior description of men to that suitable for the Army Corps ; they could not therefore serve as nurseries for the Troops.

21.

No other agency than that mentioned in reply to Question 5 can be employed with advantage.

22.

A distinct agency.

23.

No change in this respect appears desirable ; beyond perhaps, when practicable, an enquiry of the village authorities as to the candidate's really being what he states himself to be.

24.

The system for forming the Police Corps for the Madras Presidency is now under consideration.

I have no doubt it will vary from that employed for the Army in some respects.

25.

I should doubt the expediency, but if determined on, I would prefer separate Regiments.

26.

I have no experience except of Africans ; they would probably answer.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

27.

Agencies could be established at the British Settlements.

28.

29.

30.

31.

32.

33.



I am entirely opposed to the arrangement suggested.

As at present, with the percussion musket, which is superior to any thing in use with other Native Troops.

Notwithstanding the fidelity of the Madras Army, a judicious policy seems to require that the European alone should be armed with the Enfield or Rifle musket.

34.

With a Constable's Staff for ordinary duty, with a carbine and short sword for special service.

35.

I have no doubt that the Native Soldiers prefer being dressed like the Europeans.

36.

The great desideratum is to originate a suitable costume for the latter.

37.

I would keep the European and Native Regiments entirely distinct.

38.

No.

39.

I would attempt nothing of the sort.

40.

In my opinion unfavorable.

41.

In a very unsatisfactory manner.

42.

We cannot preserve—even if we attempt different systems, for the Military and for the general population. There can be no question that our policy tends to improve the nature of the natives morally, intellectually and physically.

THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD ELPHINSTONE, GOVERNOR OF BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The races are chiefly Concanees, Deccanees and Hindoostanees in the Regular Army. We have three Battalions of Beloochees, and are raising two more. Two Battalions of Bheels, and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

are raising a third, and one Corps of Kolees. All castes are professedly admitted, but most Commanding Officers have hitherto given the preference to the higher castes.

2.

The Concanees chiefly from the Southern Concan. The Decanees from all parts of the Deccan. The Híndoostanees from Oude and the neighbourhood of Cawnpore and Delhi. The Beloochees from Scinde and Beloochistan. The Bheels from Khandaish, and the new Corps from the Hills of Guzerat. The Kolees from the Nassick District.

3.

None are excluded by the Regulations. In practice, hardly any recruits have been hitherto obtained from Guzerat, and few from the Southern Mahratta Country. The Bheels, Kolees, Beeruds, and other aboriginal tribes are virtually excluded from the ranks of the Regular Army.

4.

I have no doubt that if the system of local enlistment were adopted and insisted upon, recruits might be obtained from those parts of the Presidency which at present furnish none. For example, I see no reason why the Hindoos and Mussulmans of Guzerat should not be much more largely enlisted in the Bombay Army. The Kolees too of Guzerat are a very fine race, and might, I believe, be induced to enlist for general service. This Government has just ordered the Beloochees to be enlisted for general service; hitherto they have been only engaged for service in Scinde, but one Battalion volunteered for the Persian War, and another went to Delhi. It is doubtful whether the Bheels will engage for general service. They are a very shy race, and under any conditions enlistment goes on very slowly with them.

5.

I believe that recruits are brought on by their comrades, when they return from furlough, but recruiting parties are also sent from Regiments.

6.

See Jameson's Code, third Appendix, Page 182, Section 46, Article 214.

7.

I am not aware of the details upon this subject.

8.

I advocate the system of local and separate enlistment for each Regiment in preference to the general and indiscriminate enlistment of men for the whole Army in the same Districts. Upon this point I beg to refer to my Minutes of 14th and 22nd of May, appended to my former paper of replies. I doubt if any Brahmins should be enlisted, the religious influence they possess over the inferior castes seem to be inconsistent with Military discipline, and even with safety.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

9.

"I A. B., Private in the — Regiment do swear that I will not abandon my colors, but will always defend them to the utmost of my power, and that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War which have been read to me."

10.

Since the 11th April 1807.

11.

If any oath is to be retained, the Sepoy should be required to swear allegiance to the Queen.

12.

The present Marine Corps is chiefly composed of Mussulmans and low caste Hindoos. The so-called Native Portuguese, chiefly Roman Catholic fishermen, of whom there are a large number in Salsette and the Concan, would, in my opinion, form as good a Native Marine Corps as could be raised, but I doubt their willingness to enlist in a Corps chiefly composed of Hindoos and Mussulmans.

13.

This has been answered in the reply to the previous question. The Marine Corps is of the same strength as that of a Regiment of the Line.

14.

I have already given my opinion upon this point. I attach the utmost importance to it. I believe that upon this, more than upon all the other conditions together, depends our future security in India.

15.

Answered in the foregoing reply.

16.

Where races and tribes are so entirely distinct as the Bheels, Kolees, Beloochees, &c., I think that they should be formed into distinct Corps. In districts where the population is mixed, and people of different tribes and castes are found in the same village, it would be desirable to enlist all indiscriminately.

17.

My answer to this question may be inferred from the foregoing. There can be no inconvenience in mixing up people enlisted from the same District, and speaking the same language.

18.

It may be as well to prevent any caste having the preponderance, but if each Corps is enlisted in a separate District, and if there are no Brahmins, this is a matter of comparative indifference.

19.

I would enlist them from the same Districts. As the Police receive less pay than the Army, and have constant hard work, the better sort of recruits would enter the Army.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

20

Most certainly not. It is of the utmost importance to keep them as distinct as possible ; besides I would have a lower standard for the Police, and would have men of a different stamp altogether.

21.

Under the system which I have explained in my Minutes of 14th and 22nd May, probably no special agency would be required ; each Regiment would return periodically to the District in which it was recruited or to its neighbourhood, and the Regimental Head Quarters would be the Recruiting Depôt.

22.

I am not aware that any particular agency is required ; there appears to be always abundance of recruits for Police Corps.

23.

I am not aware that any precautions are necessary in this Presidency. I presume that the precautions here alluded to are intended to prevent the enlistment of Mutineers or disaffected men.

24.

Answer as above.

25.

With the exception of a few African Artillerymen for stations where Europeans cannot exist without risk of life and health, I would have no foreign mercenaries. I would prefer relying upon the Natives of the country. But it may be advisable for a time to entertain some Regiments of Africans and Malays for service in notoriously disaffected Districts, where it would neither be expedient to raise Troops or to quarter Regiments raised in other parts of the country which might become infected with the disaffection of the inhabitants.

26.

I have no knowledge of the Natives of other tropical countries, but the Africans in the West India Regiments and the Malays in the Ceylon Rifle Regiments are said to be excellent Soldiers.

27.

I have no knowledge which would enable me to answer this question.

28.

I cannot possibly conceive an arrangement more calculated than this, to exhibit in the strongest light our distrust of the Natives and our own weakness.

29.

I leave this question to be answered by those who advocate the measure.

30, 31 & 32.

I leave these questions to be answered by those who advocate the measure.

33.

If there is any choice, I would of course give the best arms to the Europeans, but I would not even on this point show any distrust of the Natives.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

34.

I would arm them with a light fusil or musket, or a short sword or knife, which would be useful both as a bayonet and as a separate weapon.

35.

I should say not. It appears to me that it would be preferable to dress them in an uniform better suited to native habits.

36.

I cannot answer this in detail, but I think a looser and a more Native style of dress than the present would be better.

37.

Believing that local European Regiments would be the greatest of all possible mistakes, I do not enter into this question.

38.

It is sufficient to recall to Col. Durand's recollection the conduct of the Drivers of the Bengal Battery at Mhow last year.

39.

Needs no reply.

40.

Nothing in my opinion would be more calculated to impair both.

41.

I leave this question to be answered by those who advocate the measure.

42.

We must have Native Troops, and it is better that they should be competent and self-reliant than good for nothing, which would be the case if they are taught to depend upon European support. Our policy should be to create an Army which we can rely upon, and then to make it as good as we can.

HIS EXCELLENCY GENL. THE HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I am informed, almost exclusively, Hindoostanees from Behar and the Doab, except that of late years, a proportion of Seikhs and Punjaubees have been introduced; that is, Regiments in the Punjab were told to complete vacancies by enlisting Seikhs and Punjaubees, not exceeding two hundred in number per Regiment.

The principal castes of Hindoos in the Army were Brahmins, Rajpoots and Aheers. The Hindoos form the great majority, only from 100 to 200 men in a Regiment being Mahomedans.

2.

This appears to have been answered in No. 1.

3.

Yes, several of the lower castes were not allowed to be enlisted.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

The field from which recruits were obtained was too limited. I think men should be taken of every caste or of no caste (if there are such people) and from every District. There cannot be too great a diversity.

5.

I am informed that generally there was no difficulty in obtaining recruits without special agency. The men who went on leave brought back recruits to a considerable extent, and when Regiments were in certain localities men flocked for enlistment.

6.

Those ordered by Regulation.

7.

No special precautions were considered necessary nor does any good appear to have arisen from any of the precautions taken, as referred to in the preceding question.

8.

All allusion to caste in any general recruiting regulations, should, in my opinion, be done away with, and physical fitness be ordered to be the main point to be looked to. I mean that all castes should be admitted to the service, but it would perhaps be a wise plan to have Regiments of separate castes, as well as Regiments of mixed castes. For instance, Rajpoot Regiments, Mahomedan Regiments, Brahmin Regiments, &c., &c.; in the mixed Regiments recruits should be taken from every religion and caste.

9.

That prescribed in the articles of war.

10.

I have no idea.

11.

Appears to be a matter of much indifference. We seem to be the only people in the country who think the oath of consequence. The Sepoys evidently do not.

12.

Doubtless from all I have heard, a Marine Corps could be formed if such is wanted.

Whether it would be of use, proportionate to its expense, is doubtful.

13.

I am told not.

14.

Some might be, more might not. There ought to be no fixed rule, Corps should differ as much as possible. One be of all castes, one be of some particular caste. One from a particular District, another from every District, and of every caste. Uniformity in such matters is dangerous. When Corps consist of various castes, they might often with advantage be formed in separate Companies.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

15.

Appears to have been answered in No. 14.

16.

Ditto ditto ditto.

17.

Ditto ditto ditto.

18.

Ditto ditto ditto.

19.

The Police should be recruited generally in their own District, without excluding men of other Districts.

20.

Certainly not. The discipline and system of the Police must be different from that of the Line.

21.

No special agency would be found requisite, Commanding Officers would be perfectly able to keep up their Corps, save in the case of Regiments being taken from some particular District, and stationed elsewhere. In such cases a small Regimental Depot, where recruits would be received, might be desirable in the proper District of the Corps.

22.

The recruiting should be carried on separately.

23.

It seems to be a matter of little moment.

24.

It seems to be a matter of little moment.

25.

It is believed they would cost too much to be used to any extent, and that the recruiting would be very difficult, and the supply of men willing to enlist limited.

26.

Answered in No. 25.

27.

Ditto ditto.

28.

They had better be kept separate I think.

29.

Answered in No. 14.

30.

Ditto ditto.

31.

Would be inconvenient.

32.

If they were associated with Native Troops, they should be armed with a superior weapon to that given to the Natives.

33.

With ordinary percussion muskets.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

34.

A light percussion musket fusil or carbine.

35.

It is doubtful whether there are any advantages whatever ; probably the reverse would be the more advantageous of the two to a certain extent.

36.

With a loose dress or tunic, loose trowsers and turbans. The tunic and trowsers of light material in summer, and of some warm cloth in winter.

37.

It might be tried as an experiment, but there does not seem to be any advantage promised from it. It might perhaps consider itself entitled not to be employed, except with its European Corps, which would be a great disadvantage.

38.

There appears to be no analogy. The European and Native Regiments, it is presumed, would stand in line together, share danger alike, and perform much the same duties. The Drivers and Gun-Lascars are looked upon as inferiors by the Gunners, and consider themselves so.

39.

If such a Corps were established, the Lines and Barracks should be near each other, but separate.

40.

I do not think the adoption of the system would have much effect one way or the other, but I can see no particular advantage from it.

41.

It might be made to dovetail, but sometimes inconvenience would arise from it, if, as a matter of course, a European Regiment was always attended by its own Native Regiment.

42.

They must be trained to act occasionally with no Europeans save their own Officers.

There is no fear of their looking down upon European Troops, but we should never again rely upon their feelings of dependence upon Europeans or on any other of their supposed feelings, but place it altogether out of their power to do serious mischief, which I believe to be by no means incompatible with getting good service out of them.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT.-GENL. SIR H. SOMERSET, G. C. B., K. H., COM-
MANDER-IN-CHIEF, BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Christians, Mussulmans, Hindoos, Jews, Seikhs, men drawn from every part of India without reference to race, tribe or caste, and fit to bear arms.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 2.** The Deccan, Concan, Hindoostan, (Northern Provinces) for the most part, the Punjab, Malabar furnishing a small quota, Guzerat and Kutch, but few in number.
- 3.** No.
- 4.** Kulees and Bheels have perhaps been neglected. It remains however to be tested, whether they will, as is the custom under the Bombay Presidency, proceed wherever called upon to serve, but none have been excluded.
- 5.** Of parties composed of a Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, and men of the Regiment requiring to be recruited. Lately with great success, a European Officer from each Regiment has been detached, and succeeded well or the reverse according to the activity and intelligence of the Officer.
- 6.** The Government General Order by the Bombay Government of the 5th May 1855, No. 539, contains the Regulations on this head.
- 7.** No precautions are taken if the enlistment take place in the Cantonment where the Regiment happens to be located, but if at another Station, the man is examined by a Committee of Officers, and if found fit, Registers are forwarded, one to the Officer Commanding his Regiment, the other to the Adjutant General of the Army. The same precaution is taken with respect to the Sepoy's Family.
- 8.** Alterations are not required. It is requisite only to make Officers Commanding Regiments individually responsible that none but eligible recruits are entertained without reference to race, tribe or caste.
- 9.** "I. A. B., Private in the ——— Battalion ——— Regiment, do, "swear that I will not abandon these colors, but always "defend them to the utmost of my power, and that I will impli- "citly obey all the orders of my Commandant, and in every "thing behave myself as becomes a Soldier and faithful servant "of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I "will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War which "have been read to me."
- 10.** Since April 1857.
- 11.** The oath appears clear in its wording, and to contain all that is required.
- 14.** No, I think not, the measure would not be politic. The Bombay Army under existing Regulations can enlist only within

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

its own limits, and but few recruits can be had from Candeish, Guzerat, Cutch, and other Districts. Restricted to the Deccan, Northern and Southern Concan, including the Sawunt Warree, the Bombay Army is in my opinion likely to become a Maharatta-clique.

15.

Recruits should be taken from all parts of the country, excepting perhaps Oude, until we ascertain the cause of the mutiny without reference to race, tribe or caste. Brahmins should be excluded the service, both Civil and Military.

16.

No. It should be a promiscuous mass of all races, tribes and castes.

17.

No, the Companies should not be homogeneous, but like the Regiment, composed of all castes.

18.

This must wholly depend upon the facility given to enlistment. If Commanding Officers are permitted to enlist where they please, care should be taken that the Companies are composite, not homogeneous.

19.

Military Corps from all Districts if possible, the Police from the particular Pergunnah in which it is serving.

20.

I think not. Commanding Officers should be held wholly responsible for the recruitment of their respective Corps.

21.

The agency should be left entirely to Commanding Officers.

22.

Distinct.

23.

If thoroughly acted up to, nothing more is required than existing Regulations which are clear and distinct.

24.

The recruiting for the Police should be local.

25.

I am quite averse to enlisting Natives of any other tropical climate for service in India. I am convinced it would be impolitic.

26.

I am not acquainted with any, except the Natives of South Africa, none of whom would enlist or enrol themselves for permanent service in India.

27.

I conceive it could only be done through the Government of the Colony.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 28.** I conceive this measure objectionable and unadvisable.
- 29.** I am averse to mixing Europeans with Natives in any way.
- 30.** Answered above.
- 31.** Ditto ditto.
- 32.** Ditto ditto.
- 33.** With the percussion arms at present in use.
- 34.** Wholly dependent on political considerations, but when the Mutiny shall have been put down; the country people disarmed, and complete Police arrangements organized, this body should be armed with a sword and truncheon only.
- 35.** The disadvantages have been removed by the abolition of the chaw stock and knapsack, tunic, loose trowsers and Kil-marnock form an excellent dress, imitation has the advantage of uniformity only.
- 36.** If you do not adopt the Native dress entirely, dress them as they now are.
- 37.** I am very doubtful about the expediency of this, the Native Regiments may be brigaded together at one Station, but I do not suggest or approve of any amalgamation.
- 38.** Gun Lascars are adviseable and necessary, but I would have no Native Drivers.
- 39.** The European Barracks should be entirely separate from the other lines.
- 40.** I do not approve of association beyond occupying the same Cantonment.
- 41.** Not at all.
- 42.** The Native Troops have confidence in themselves, but I would brigade them together in all operations. I am of opinion that, associating the Native Troops with Europeans would have a bad effect, and is not advisable further than brigading them together in the Field.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUT.-GENL. SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, FORT ST. GEORGE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Mahomedans, Brahmins, Chuttrees, Rajpoots, Seikhs, Gwallas and Aheers, are the races, tribes and castes of which the Bengal Army was composed.
2. Chiefly from Oude, a few from the Punjab, and the rest from Bhojepore and the Doab.
3. Men of the inferior castes, habitually employed in menial occupations, were not eligible for enlistment in the Bengal Army, either by Regulation or practice.
4. Yes, I consider and I speak from experience, having made the experiment, that recruits might with great advantage be drawn from amongst the following races and tribes, hitherto neglected and excluded, *viz.*, Mewaties, Runghurs, Goojars and Jats. They make excellent Soldiers under strict discipline and judicious management.
5. Native Officers and men proceeding on furlough generally brought back with them recruits in sufficient numbers to supply deficiencies. If this service failed, the agency of recruiting parties under Native Commissioned or Non-Commissioned Officers was resorted to.
6. The Officers or Non-Commissioned Officers Commanding the recruiting party was required to ascertain from the Local Authorities of Districts that the recruits were really what they represented themselves to be.
7. The Soldier who presented a man for enlistment was held answerable for the correctness of all particulars connected with the candidate for service.
Note—Having no records or official documents to refer to relating to the Bengal Army, I have answered the foregoing small questions entirely from memory.
8. Every man, physically fit, should be eligible for enlistment without distinction of race, tribe, caste or district, and I think it would be well sometimes to employ European instead of exclusively native agency in recruiting.
9. I do not recollect the words of the oath with sufficient precision to enable me to answer this question.
10. I think the form of oath was modified when the new Articles of War for the Native Troops were introduced in 1845-46, but I am not certain.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11.

From my recollection of the wording and matter of the oath, I think it was as full and binding as it was possible to make it.

12.

Yes, in the S. E. portion of the Province of Bengal Proper, in the Districts of Chittagong, Dacca, &c., races and tribes of seafaring habits were to be found in considerable numbers, and the old Marine Regiment, the 1st and 2nd Battalions of the 20th Native Infantry, was composed exclusively of those classes.

13.

There is no Marine Corps at present in the Bengal Presidency.

14.

I am opposed to District Corps being formed for a Regular Army, and much prefer general enlistment.

15.

Answered in the reply to the preceding question.

16.

Composite, not homogeneous, Corps are the most desirable in my opinion.

17.

Neither would I have Companies homogeneous, but mix up tribes and castes in each Company, and as much as possible in equal proportion.

18.

As much as possible in equal proportions.

19.

In my opinion, recruiting for Corps either for Military or Police purposes, should be general throughout the country, and not restricted to separate or particular Districts. The more the different classes and races are mixed, so that no one tribe unduly predominate the less chance there will be of combination against authority.

20.

Most decidedly not.

21.

See reply to No. 8.

22.

Police Corps should be, I think, recruited exclusively by Police Corps.

23.

See reply to 6.

24.

Similar precautions are desirable.

25.

I am strongly opposed to the expedient of enlisting the inhabitants of other tropical climates for service in India, for I am convinced that, as a general rule, the black man will always fraternize with the black man against the white man, and if the Natives of other tropical climates are, as I believe them to be,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

composed of better stuff for Soldiers than are the Natives of this country, it is to my mind an additional argument against enlisting them for service in India.

26.

Africans *who are not Mahomedans* are to be preferred, if recourse is had to recruiting in other tropical climates.

27.

I have no information or experience that enables me to say what is likely to prove the best agency to employ for such recruiting.

28.

On no account should a Company or Companies of Europeans form a component part of Native Regiments; always, and under all circumstances, keep your Europeans in distinct and separate Regiments.

29.

Answered in 28.

30.

Ditto ditto.

31.

Ditto ditto.

32.

Answered in 28, and will now add that I cannot express in sufficiently strong terms my condemnation of the admixture of European with Natives referred to in 28, 29, 30, 31, and 32.

33.

Native Infantry never should be armed with a firelock superior to the ordinary percussion or musket. Never put into the hands of a Native Soldier an Enfield Rifle or weapon of a similar superior description.

34.

I would arm Police Corps also with percussion muskets. Natives cannot manufacture caps, and therefore it is only while the caps last (and it is easy to regulate the supply), that the percussion musket can be turned against us.

35.

Formerly, before the Bengal Army destroyed and disgraced itself, and having regard to what I know was the feeling of the men, I should have urged that the dress of the Native Soldier ought always to be assimilated to a certain extent to that of the European Soldier.

36.

Now that the Bengal Native Infantry have forfeited all claims to have their wishes or feelings on the point considered, and as it does not affect their efficiency, I would no longer seek to assimilate them with the European Soldier in either dress or equipments. I propose that henceforward the dress of the Bengal Sepoy shall be a dark blue cotton mirzie, quilted with cotton for the cold season, blue jhungeas and a pugree of any color wound round the head in a uniform regimental pattern, a blanket great coat or cloak, shoes as formerly worn, and black or brown leather instead of buff accou-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

treatments. For the hot season, white cotton mirzies and jhungeas ; all else as in the cold season.

37.

My opinion is strongly adverse to the association in quarters of Natives with Europeans proposed in this question ; mixing Europeans and Natives in just proportions on field service is very advisable and advantageous to both, but I think it most undesirable that the Native Soldier should have the opportunities which close and permanent association would give to him, of seeing the European Soldier in the degrading position and state in which unhappily the latter too often exhibits himself in quarters.

38

I do not consider that the association of Europeans with Gun Lascars and Native Artillery Drivers presents any analogy with the arrangement proposed in the immediately preceding question (37), nor any encouragement to adopt it.

39,40&41. Do not seem to me to call for any reply with reference to my answers to 37 and 38.

42.

It is most desirable that Native Troops should not be trained to feel that they are entirely dependent upon European Troops for support. But I do not hesitate to assert (in opposition to the oft-expressed opinion of Sir John Malcolm and other distinguished and experienced Officers) that (most providentially as I think) it is alone through the instrumentality of their European Officers that Native Troops are ever imbued with a spirit of confidence and self-reliance on service, and the Native Troops in our service so officered will always be immeasurably superior to any Asiatic enemy to whom they may be opposed.

Efficiently commanded and well led by British Officers, Native Troops will always, my experience tells me, acquit themselves with credit, independently of European support. But they have no confidence whatever in the very best Native Officers, and deprived of their European Officers (as I think it will be admitted late events have abundantly made manifest) except behind walls or other protection, Native Troops are a mere armed rabble.

HIS EXCY. LIEUT.-GENL. SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF,
FORT St. GEORGE.
MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

A General Order of the 3rd December 1857, prescribed that the Madras Native Army shall be composed of the following races, tribes and castes in the proportions of each specified, viz. :—

1-4th Tameelians of various castes from the Carnatic and Ceded Districts.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1-4th Telingas and other Hindoo castes from Northern Circars.

1-4th Mussulmans from various parts.

1-4th Natives of lower castes or without recognized caste.

2.

This question is partly answered in reply No. 1 ; the following is a list of the Countries, &c., of the different castes of which the Madras Army is composed as taken from the Inspection Return for Infantry.

COUNTRY OR DISTRICT.

Northern Circars.

Central Carnatic (Madras, Vellore) &c.

Southern Carnatic (Trichinopoly).

Baramahal.

Ceded Districts.

Mysore.

Tanjore, Madura and Tinnevely.

3.

All men physically fit for Soldiers, and of the prescribed age, without distinction of race, tribe or caste, are eligible for enlistment in the Madras Army ; there is no exclusion either by Regulations or practice.

4.

Reply to 3 answers this.

5.

The only agency employed in the Madras Army for the enlistment of Recruits, consists of selected Recruiting parties under European or Native Officers, chiefly the latter, detached from the Head Quarters of Regiments or from Recruiting Depôts of which latter there are four formed within the last few months. The Officer in charge of a Recruiting party on arrival in the District selected, generally breaks his Detachment into smaller parties, or sends out intelligent men singly into different villages.

Occasionally the Officer Commanding a particular Station is however directed to recruit a certain number of men for particular Regiments, which he does by enlisting men who present themselves on the spot.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6.

Candidates presenting themselves for enlistment to a Recruiting party, when at a Station where there is a Medical Officer or Subordinate, are examined by him, and if passed, he enters their names in a Roll showing the recruit's age, height, chest measurement, caste, color, particular appearance, marks, scars, &c., native country and village. Men pronounced fit are considered enlisted from date of examination, and these Rolls are forwarded monthly to the Regiment by the recruiting Officer. If candidates are taken where there is no Medical Officer, they are examined at the first Station where one is to be found. Should the party not be under a European Officer, then the recruits are taken to the nearest Commanding or Staff Officer for approval, and are considered as enlisted from the date they were provisionally entertained.

7.

No particular precautions are taken in the case of men enlisted at Regimental Head Quarters, beyond ascertaining their physical fitness for the service. These men are generally brought forward by some one in the Regiment, and after inquiry as to character, &c., are submitted for the Commanding Officer's approval. All recruits enlisted into a Regiment are carefully examined by the Medical Officer, and reported on by the Inspector General annually in his confidential report.

8.

No alterations appear to be called for in the existing Recruiting Regulations. Until December last, Mahomedans and Hindoos were enlisted in equal proportions, the proportions are now as indicated in the reply to 1, and the composition of the Army is not, I think, susceptible of further improvement.

9.

The words of the oath or solemn affirmation administered to each recruit under the colors of the Regiment when he has completed his Drill, and is fit to join the Ranks are—

“I Private, do solemnly affirm in the presence of Almighty God, that I will serve the Government with truth and loyalty, and that I will faithfully obey the orders of all Officers set over me. I do also further affirm that I will never abandon these colors, and that I will defend them with my life.”

10.

The above form of oath has been in use in the Madras Army for the last thirty years and upwards.

11.

It does not occur to me to suggest any change in the wording or matter of the oath.

12.

There may be a few on the Western Coast, as there are some at Madras, but they are not I believe in sufficient numbers to admit of Marine Corps being formed. A few enrol themselves as Lascars on board steamers and sailing vessels.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 13.** There is no Marine Corps in the Madras Presidency.
- 14.** I am opposed to District Corps being formed for a Regular Army, and much prefer general enlistments.
- 15.** Answered in the reply to the preceding question.
- 16.** Composite not homogeneous Corps are the most desirable in my opinion.
- 17.** Neither would I make the Companies homogeneous, but, as at present, mix up the tribes and castes in each Company.
- 18.** The proportions in which the races, tribes and castes should be entertained are specified in reply to No. 1.
- 19.** In my opinion recruiting for Corps for Military purposes should be general throughout the country, wherever suitable recruits can be had, and not restricted to separate or particular Districts. For Police Corps however it is advisable to recruit in particular Districts, because in some parts, Malabar and Canara, Rajahmundry, the Goomsoor country, and Sumbulpore for example, all, save the inhabitants of such localities, are sure to be prostrated by disease when employed in those quarters.
- 20.** Most decidedly not.
- 21.** It does not seem to me that any better agency than the present can be employed to recruit for the Army.
- 22.** Police Corps should, I think, be recruited by Police Agency exclusively.
- 23.** I do not think it necessary that any precautions should be taken before the local authorities in connection with recruits for the Army; on the contrary, imposing forms and restrictions would add to the difficulties of procuring recruits, which already are much felt in this Presidency.
- 24.** In recruiting for Police Corps, reference to the local and Civil authorities is advisable, with a view to ascertaining the previous character of candidates for enlistment, and that they really are what they represent themselves to be.
- 25.** I am strongly opposed to the expedient of enlisting Natives of other tropical countries for service in India, for I am convinced that, as a general rule, the black man will always fraternize with

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the black man against the white man. And if the Natives of other tropical climates are, as I believe them to be, composed of better stuff for Soldiers than the Natives of this country, it is to my mind an additional reason against enlisting them for service in India.

26.

Africans who are not Mahomedans are to be preferred if recourse is had to recruiting in other tropical climates.

27.

I have no information or experience to enable me to say what would be the best agency to employ for such recruiting.

28.

On no account should a Company or Companies of Europeans form a component part of Regiments. Always, and under all circumstances, keep your Europeans in distinct and separate Regiments.

29.

Answered in 28.

30.

Ditto ditto.

31.

Ditto ditto.

32.

Answered in 28. I cannot express in sufficiently strong terms my condemnation of the admixture of Europeans with Natives referred to in 28, 29, 30, 31, and 32.

33.

Native Infantry never should be armed with a firelock superior to the ordinary percussion musket. Never place a long sighted rifle or weapon of that superior description in the hands of a Native Soldier.

34.

I would arm Police Corps also with percussion muskets. Natives cannot manufacture caps, and therefore it is only while the caps last (and it is easy to regulate the supply), that the percussion musket can be turned against us.

35.

The dress of the Native Soldier ought always to be assimilated, to a certain extent, to that of the European Soldier.

36.

Scarlet tunics and Oxford mixture trowsers, as worn by Europeans, is the dress prescribed for the Madras Army, and I do not think that these articles of equipment are susceptible of improvement; they conduce to the comfort and efficiency of the Native Soldier, and he likes the dress and is proud of it.

The head dress and sandals of the Madras Army are unsightly, and in many respects, are objectionable, but I have satisfied myself by personally communicating with the Native

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Soldiers of all ranks, that they entertain a rooted dislike both to shoes and to any head dress less native in form and material than the present. I have therefore uniformly declined to countenance any such changes, for I cannot perceive the wisdom of making an Army dissatisfied to gain a point, which after all is of no real or substantial importance.

37.

My opinion is strongly adverse to the *permanent* association in quarters of Natives with Europeans proposed in this question. Mixing Europeans and Natives together in just proportions on *Field Service* is very adviseable and advantageous to both, but I think it most undesirable that the Native Soldier should, by close and permanent association, have opportunities of seeing his European comrade in the degrading position in which, unhappily, the latter too frequently exhibits himself in quarters.

38.

Native Artillery Drivers have, I hope, been for ever abolished, and I do not consider that the association of Europeans with Gun Lascars present any analogy with the arrangement proposed in the immediately preceding question 37, or any encouragement to adopt it.

39,40 & 41. Are answered by my replies to 37 and 38.

42.

It is most desirable that the Native Troops should not be entirely dependent upon European Troops for support. But I do not hesitate to assert (in opposition to the oft-expressed opinion of Sir John Malcolm and many other experienced and distinguished Officers) that (most providentially as I think) it is alone through the instrumentality of their European Officers that Native Troops are ever imbued with a spirit of confidence and self-reliance on service—and that Native Troops in our service so officered will always be immeasurably superior to any Asiatic enemy to whom they may be opposed.

Efficiently commanded and well led by European Officers, Native Troops will always acquit themselves with credit independently of European support. But they have no confidence whatever in the very best Native Officers, and deprived of their European Officers, as late events have abundantly shown, except behind walls or other protection, they are a mere armed rabble.

LIEUT.-GENL. SIR M. CUBBON, COMMISSIONER OF MYSORE AND COORG.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Madras Army is composed chiefly of Hindoos of the following castes, a few are of Rajpoot families, who settled long ago in the South of India; a few also are Bengallees or men from

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Oudh and the North-West Provinces, and the rest of the Hindoos may be classed as Gentoos, or those who use the Teloogoo language, and Malabars, or those who use the Tamil language—the former come from the Districts of the Northern Circars, and the latter, among whom are included all Hindoo castes, as well as Christians and Pariahs, come from the Southern Provinces of the Madras Presidency. The Hindoos altogether number about two-thirds of the Army, the remaining one-third being Mussulmans. In some Regiments the proportion of Mussulmans is only one-fourth, but in those Regiments which were raised in Mysore, the Mussulmans out-numbered the other castes.

- 2.** The Gentoos, or those who speak Teloogoo, come from the Northern Circars. They are fine looking and smart, cleanly parade men, but they are soft in constitution and in heart, and do not undergo fatigue like the men recruited from the Southern Districts. The Malabars come from the Southern Districts; Chingleput, North and South Arcot, Trichinopoly, Salem, Madura, Tanjore and Tinnevely, comprising those portions of the country which were formerly called the Southern Poligars. The men derived from these countries are black in complexion, of middling stature, well knit, and of great strength in comparison to their size; both physically and constitutionally, they are capable of undergoing great fatigue in making long and continuous marches; are hardy and of high courage when acting in a body. Both Gentoos and Malabars are docile and easily disciplined. The Mussulmans recruited from the Southern Provinces are preferred to the Pathans, or those who are recruited in the Hyderabad and Kurnool countries and in Cuddapah. The latter have not the stamina, nor are they so amenable to discipline as the former.
- 3.** No tribes or castes are excluded from enlistment in the Madras Army.
- 4.** None.
- 5.** Both European and Native Officers are sent out into the Districts with recruiting parties, but more frequently the latter.
- 6.** See General Regulations.
- 7.** Ditto ditto.
- 8.** It does not appear that any change is necessary.
- 9.** See Articles of War.
- 10.** Ditto ditto.
- 11.** Ditto ditto.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

The fishermen of the Coromandel Coast are doubtless employed in voyages in coasting vessels, and in vessels which trade to the Straits, Burmah, and to the Tenasserim and Chittagong Coasts. On the Western Coast there are sea-faring men among the Moplas, and indigenous people of that province. A Marine Corps might be formed from such men, though the use of such a Corps in the Madras Presidency is not apparent.

13.

There is no Marine Corps in the Madras Presidency.

14.

If Corps were to be recruited, each in a prescribed District, secret combination would be likely to be got up in such Corps, therefore such restricted recruiting is not advisable.

15.

It is better that every Corps be recruited from a wide area for the reasons shown in the foregoing answer.

16.

There are several objections to each Corps being homogeneous as to race, tribe or caste. On certain festivals it would be necessary to give the whole Regiment leave, and there would be no one left for duty. Regiments thus formed would ever be jealous of each other, the high caste Regiments would presume upon their superiority of caste, and look down upon the lower caste Regiments, and treat them with arrogance, which the latter would certainly resent, and there would be constant conflicts. At present all are mixed, and stand in the ranks together, ranged according to their size, but irrespective of caste, and there are never any caste disputes, which would be of constant occurrence with homogeneous Regiments of different castes stationed together. This system would also have the effect of congregating too many men of "one mind," which in itself is an insuperable objection.

17.

The same objections exist to making Companies homogeneous as to making Regiments, so the peace of a Regiment would be constantly disturbed by jealousies and brawls between the high caste and low caste Companies, a distinction which would have to be carried out to the minutest details. There would be high caste and low caste quarters in the lines; high caste and low caste bazaars and shops, a high caste and a low caste well, and so on *ad infinitum*.

18.

Perhaps no better proportions can be formed than those which already exist in the generality of Regiments in the Madras Presidency, *viz.*, two-third Hindoo and one-third Mussulman.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

19.

Recruiting for Police Corps should be carried on from a wide area, without reference to Districts. Indeed it would be preferable that a Police Corps should not be recruited in the District in which it is destined to be employed ; for there should be no local influences or partialities allowed to have existence in a Police Corps ; a topographical acquaintance with the country, and a knowledge of the character of the people would be easily acquired after a short period of service in the District.

20.

Police Corps might be regarded as nurseries from which drafts might be made for the Line, though it is suspected that few would leave a Police Corps for the Line, especially if the Police Corps is chiefly recruited from the District in which it is serving ; this may be added as an additional reason for recruiting for the Police from distant Districts.

21.

The present system seems to answer very well.

22.

The same as has been recommended in answers 19 and 20, that Police Corps be recruited from a wide area of Districts.

23.

The present precautions, are, if any thing, over strict.

24.

In a modified and somewhat relaxed degree.

25.

The requirements of the Madras Presidency do not appear to call for such a scheme. Rumours have prevailed at different times that the Government intended to recruit from foreign countries, and it is consistent with my knowledge, that this impression caused great agitation not only in the Native Regiments but throughout the country.

26.

Ditto

ditto

ditto.

27.

Ditto

ditto

ditto.

28.

The system here suggested would have the effect of distributing European Troops in small numbers over a wide extent of Territory, and in every place where a Native Regiment is stationed in the proportion of one European to nine armed and disciplined Natives, without counting the population. No position could be conceived which would be more favourable to a great Sepoy conspiracy ; and after recent events, who can tell but that such a distribution might in itself invite such a conspiracy. It seems that no precaution as to locality of Barracks or armament of these European Companies, could avert their destruction when the time came for the conspirators to strike the blow. The system would operate as a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

constant irritant upon the minds of the Sepoys, as showing our distrust of them, and it would be an invitation to them to conspire for the destruction of the European, as the opportunity could not be more fairly offered to them.

29.

Is disposed of by the answer to 28.

30.

Ditto ditto.

31.

Ditto ditto.

32.

Ditto ditto.

33.

The present musket is good enough, though it would be better if it were somewhat lighter. But the Sepoy does not complain of the weight of his present musket; his great grievance is the present knapsack, relieve him of that, and he will consider it as great a boon conferred upon him as if the Government had given him a considerable increase of pay. When the knapsack was first introduced into the Madras Army, it was a small and convenient pack; the present knapsack, or its like, was introduced in 1817, and it is the curse of the Native Army. More men have been invalided and pensioned from the chest foundering action of the knapsack than ever would have been from the ordinary risks of the service. The knapsack is looked upon as the bane of the service, and were it to be removed altogether, it is certain that the Sepoys of the whole Army would greet the measure as a great boon, and the service would instantly become much more popular than it has recently been, and plenty of recruits would be found. Why should not this be done at once?

34.

Police Corps might be armed with the fuzil and sword bayonet formerly used by the Native Regiments of Light Infantry with black belts.

35.

They do not, as the Native Ungreka approximates somewhat to the tunic now introduced into the Royal Army. A modification of the two would make a convenient, and at the same time, Soldier-like dress for the Native Troops; loose trowsers of the shape now in use in the British Army called "peg top" are very well adapted for the Native Infantry; as for the turban, wonderful to say, the Madras Sepoy seems attached to the present muster, but the Native muslin turban of a uniform shape would be far more acceptable, and in every respect far preferable.

36.

Answered by the foregoing. The shoe which has been recently introduced into some Corps in lieu of the sandal is hateful to the men, as an approximation to the European costume, and less easy to the foot, and ought to be abolished.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

**37, 38, 39,
40, 41 and
42.**

I can see no necessity for the system indicated in these paragraphs. The power and authority of the Government, and the safety of European Corps would, I conceive, be best secured by massing the latter in such Stations as might be considered most desirable, together with a small number of Native Troops, as might be sufficient for the ordinary duties ; and by distributing the Native Army throughout the country in single Stations and Detachments ; this arrangement would be highly acceptable to the Native Troops by relieving them of much of the irksomeness of the profession, by enabling them to live at less expense and to attend more to their families, while the difficulty and danger of communication would render it almost impossible to organize a general conspiracy. It would also bring the Officers into closer communication with their men, and increase their influence. When required for service, the Troops would be easily collected, and easily instructed in field manoeuvre. Of the danger of quartering any considerable body of Natives with Europeans we have received some very severe lessons on the Madras Establishment, and I can say from my own personal experience, that such an arrangement was looked upon with peculiar favor by enemies of our rule.

MAJOR GENERAL SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B., CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

- 3.** Yes.
- 4.** Yes.
- 11.** An oath is of no avail.
- 14.** Yes if possible, excepting exceptional Corps like the Guides.
- 15.** Certain Corps such as Guides, &c.
- 16.** Not as a general rule. But the constitution of Corps in this respect should vary.
- 17.** By Companies.
- 18.** Should be distributed as equally as circumstances will permit.
- 19.** In the same districts perhaps there should be little or no difference in the engagement of the two sets of men. I believe that Irregular Infantry and Police Corps should be convertible terms, and liable to do the same duty in war and during peace ; practically this is the case in times of war when the Police have received any instructions.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

20. No, but I would render all Native Troops liable to a Police duty if requisite and *vice versa*.
21. The Commanding Officer should be responsible for the enlistment of recruits.
22. The Commanding Officer should be responsible for the enlistment of recruits.
23. Leaving it altogether to the Commanding Officer under the orders of the Commander-in-Chief. I would have nothing to say to any local authorities beyond calling on them for assistance in obtaining the men.
24. I recognise no difference.
25. Inexpedient. The Africans are the only people whom it will be worth while to enlist. To do so, is forbidden by reasons of imperial policy.
28. No.
33. With the ordinary percussion musket.
34. Ditto ditto.
35. Close imitation is unnecessary.
36. With a view to the comfort and *activity* of the Soldier, the dress of the French Zouave might perhaps be studied to advantage with this object. But indeed one dress is as good as another, if stiff head-dresses and tightness be avoided. Tight jackets and shakos should be forgotten for ever, and a loose tunic or round long-waisted jacket and a pugree substituted. The trowsers or peejamas cannot be too loose.
37. I very much approve of this suggestion.
38. Yes—as far as I know the Drivers and Lascars belonging to the Batteries, have not mutinied.
39. In line as in a Regiment of two Battalions.
40. In my opinion favorable. I do not see how the moral question of awe can be effected by it after recent occurrences, there will not be much intimacy under any circumstances.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

41.

This can only be told after the experiment has been tried. I do not see that any difficulty could arise. The Native Battalion might be detached for any length of time, but always with the certainty before it of returning to Head Quarters, *i. e.*, the European Battalion.

42.

The spirit of confidence and self-reliance will be much enhanced by being constantly in Communication with Europeans.

This is a matter of "morale," produced by mere success in arms, and not of training.

They will not fight the worse when away from their European comrades, because they have acquired a feeling of self-reliance by constant success in their Company.

MAJOR GENL. R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B., SECY. TO GOVT., MILY. DEPT.
BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

They consist of Mussulmans, Brahmins, Chuttees, Rajpoots, Gwallas, Aheers, and a great variety of Hindoo castes besides.

2.

I am not able to answer this question. There are men of all tribes and castes which are admitted into the Army to be found in every District in which we recruit.

3.

Extract General Regulations of the Bengal Army published in 1855:—

Sec. XXXI, Clause 6.—“ It is not considered desirable to have too large a proportion of Brahmins in any Regiment; but in other respects Commanding Officers when enlisting Hindoos of the respectable classes, are not to be biassed in favor of any particular religion or caste, special care however must be taken to reject all men of the inferior castes, such as Bunneeahs, Kyeths, Naees, Telees, Themolees, Gurrereas, Ladhs, Bhojoahs, Kahars, Mooraees, Kanders, Malees, Kachees, and any others habitually employed in menial occupations.

Clause 7.—“ The number of Punjabees in a Regiment is never to exceed 200, nor are more than 100 of them to be Seikhs.”

4.

Goojars, Jats, Gwallas, Boat-men, the men along the right bank of the Indus, and from Bundlecund might with advantage be more numerously entertained. But they are not excluded.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

Parties are sent from Regiments to recruit in Districts with the sanction of the Commander-in-Chief—Native Officers and men proceeding on furlough are made use of to bring back with them recruits.

6.

Native Officers are required by the Regulations to take each recruit after enlistment to the Tehseeldar in whose jurisdiction the village he belongs to is situated, in order that the Tehseeldar may inquire and verify that his name, caste, parentage and residence have been duly stated. Lists with the Tehseeldar's signature are to be shown to the District Officer, that he may satisfy himself and record that the returns are formal and correct. A nominal Roll in a prescribed form will then be prepared by the District Officer and handed to the Recruiting Officer for delivery to the Commanding Officer of his Regiment. General Regulations, Section 31.

7.

They must be well known in the Regiments to which their relatives are attached. They are subjected to surgical examination. But as to registry, I do not believe that any particular precautions are taken. Few recruits are entertained in this way I believe.

8.

I see no occasion for much alteration. It is now the fashion to advocate the admission of low caste men. I confess to entertaining an opinion adverse to their admission into the Native Army, and I beg to state some reasons for this opinion.

In the first place I cannot conceive the possibility of maintaining discipline in a Corps where a low caste Non-Commissioned or Commissioned Officer will, when he meets off duty a Brahmin Sepoy, crouch down to him with his fore-head on the ground—I have seen this done—The Sepoy thus treated is the master of the Officer.

Secondly. To ally ourselves with the lowest castes is to separate ourselves even more thoroughly than we are already separated by our religion and customs from the Native Chiefs of the Country, and from the very numerous respectable tribes. The prejudices of caste can never be diminished, but will be exasperated by our doing so.

Thirdly. I doubt whether those who most strongly advocate the enlistment of the lowest castes, would themselves like to serve with a Regiment of *Domes* or *Hollul Khores* exclusively so formed.

Fourthly. I would not proscribe from our ranks Brahmins and other men of high caste—their numbers should be kept within moderate limits. But if we enlist largely among the lowest castes, it will amount to a practical exclusion of the highest classes of Hindoos and the most respectable Mahomedans—the best Soldiers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Fifthly. However we might for other branches of the public service make use of men of low castes, to trust the Military defence of the country to them would be very unwise, because extremely hazardous. It is yet to be seen how such men would behave in the hour of danger. I fear they would quail before a Native enemy showing a determined front. The depressing influence of caste cannot but render such men deficient in that self-reliance which is an indispensable quality in a Soldier.

Sixthly. It will not be a willing service that men of respectable castes will render to us, if associated with men of low castes. They will enlist, because they desire to gain a livelihood and not from any predilection for Military employment and it will be a very difficult thing to maintain the due observance of caste prejudices between one set of men and another in the same Regiment, whose mutual forbearance is one element of the internal well-being of every Corps. I have heard this idea scouted as one unworthy of our attention, but nevertheless it appears to me to be one of which we cannot set aside the consideration—It is one thing to look with pity or surprise, or even with condemnation on the system of caste, and no one is more alive to its disadvantages and its demoralizing tendencies than I am. No favoritism would I tolerate as respects any one of them—even-handed justice should be unhesitatingly administered among them all; and discipline enforced with entire impartiality. But it is quite another thing to throw aside all consideration for the prejudices of caste, and to attempt to amalgamate races which are antagonistic and abhorrent the one to the other. There is nothing like caste in any other country, and no analogy whatever to be drawn from the fusion of races and tribes of other countries as a guide for us here.

But one thing is certain, that our disregarding the prejudice of caste will never induce the Natives themselves to disregard them, and that after all is the main point.

Seventhly.—The argument from the case of the Madras and Bombay Armies, where castes are fused together to a certain extent, does not appear to me to militate with any force against the views I venture to entertain. The differences of castes are much more marked in the Bengal Presidency, and the state of the community at large is different from that of the communities of the other Presidencies.

Eighthly.—The mutinies have *not* been occasioned by the influence of caste. Fears for their religion from a firm, though mistaken, persuasion that the British Government intended to compel them to become Christians, have universally prevailed alike among Mahomedans and Hindoos. But the different races and those whose

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

religious persuasions would, under ordinary circumstances, keep them widely asunder, have united in rebellion against our authority, a fact that clearly proves the hold of religious persuasions on the Native mind, but refuses the notion that any one caste more than another has stirred up the rebellion.

Ninthly.—The turbulence of the Brahmins may be controlled by not enlisting too many of them, and by the strict and judicious exercise of command over those who are admitted into the ranks. But beyond this I see no wisdom in adopting measures, with the avowed object, utterly unattainable by any measure we could adopt. I fully coincide in the propriety of the General Order issued by Lord William Bentinck on the 31st of December 1834, in these words:—"The Governor General of India in Council is pleased to direct that all objections to men belonging to the respectable classes of the Native Community, or preferences among such classes, on account of caste or religion, shall cease to operate in respect to their admission into the ranks of the Bengal Army." Further than this I see no occasion for concession.

9.

Oath.—"I, A. B., inhabitant of Village Pergunnah Subah son of do swear, that I will never forsake or abandon my colors, that I will march wherever I am directed, whether within or beyond the Company's Territories, that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War which have been read to me."

10.

It was established by Government Regulation, dated 8th of August 1796.

11.

I would propose that the following oath should be adopted henceforward. It is taken from the oath for European recruits for Her Majesty's Service, and is modified to suit the Native recruit. "I do make oath, that I will be faithful and bear true allegiance to Her Majesty, Her heirs and successors; that I will, as in duty bound, observe and obey all orders of the Generals and Officers set over me; and that I will willingly proceed by land or sea wherever my services may be required."

12.

I think not, that is, with any prospect of advantage to the service.

13.

No, unless it be the old 20th Regiment of two Battalions now numbered 25th and 40th, of which the latter still bears the old designation of "Murriam-ka-Pultan," *i. e.*, Marine Regiment. But these

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Regiments are not the only ones of their kind now. There are besides them, the 47th, 65th, 67th, 68th, all liable to be sent beyond sea.

14.

I do not see how this could well be done, unless we restricted ourselves to having very few Regiments, nor do I see any advantage in it. Practically, Recruiting Parties do, to a great extent, go to the same Districts continually to obtain Recruits, and in this way Regiments come to have a large proportion of men from such Districts; but they are not exclusively so composed by any means. But to restrict particular Regiments to particular Districts has this objection, that it would prevent their being employed at any great distance from those Districts, and it would deprive them of the power of recruiting where they might be serving, or in any contiguous District however eligible might be the recruits there obtainable.

The Goorkha Regiments are however, an exception—These can only be recruited from the Hill Districts, and I would keep them distinct in every way. But they cannot serve in the Plains.

15.

I think the area for recruiting for each and every Regiment should be unlimited, in order to guard against combinations of men of particular localities, and to enlarge as much as possible, the field of selection, with exception of the Goorkha Regiments and Corps, such as the Assam, and Sylhet and Arracan Battalions.

16.

I think not. If men of one tribe or caste are likely to combine for evil purposes, the tendency to such combination would be greatly increased, and facilities towards it would be furnished by homogeneous organization of Regiments. I would not have any Regiment recruited exclusively from any particular District, even though all the races or castes in such district were freely admitted into it. But the objection to homogeneity of castes in Regiments is much stronger than that which applies to recruiting exclusively from particular districts; in as much as such an organization would hold up to observation the distinction of castes and perpetuate those distinctions, whereas on the contrary, the blending of castes should be a principal object in the organization of our Native Army, while I am strongly opposed to the admixture of such heterogeneous elements as men of high and men of low castes. I would equally strongly deprecate any measure which would directly encourage the separation between one caste and another, among those which we know by experience to admit of fusion together into the ranks of our Native Regiments.

17.

I think the tribes and castes should be indiscriminately intermingled in the several Companies. The pitting of one Company against another would not tend to the improvement of discipline;

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and that blending in one common interest would be lost which it is so desirable to establish in a Regiment where different castes or tribes to be placed in distinct Companies the antagonism of castes and tribes would be perpetuated. Besides which there are Regimental appointments, such as the Commissioned Officers, the Non-Commissioned Officers, the Drill Havildar and Drill Instructors, and under certain circumstances, Pay Havildars of Companies, for which the whole Regiment competes ; but the selection would be exceedingly difficult if the tribes and castes were placed in distinct Companies.

18.

I would entertain few Brahmins, and would restrict Mussulmans, Rajpoots and Seikhs to one-third of any Regiment in which they were entertained. I mean that there should not be in any Corps more than one-third of its complement consisting of Mussulmans, nor Rajpoots nor Seikhs, and these tribes together might unobjectionably form half of any Regiment or more than half.

19.

I perceive no reason for restricting recruiting, whether of Military or Police Corps, to particular districts.

20.

No, I think not. There is this objection that such men would come into the Army Corps with higher expectations as to position and rank than would be palatable to the Corps into which they entered. The prizes in a Regiment should be kept for its own best men to the exclusion of outsiders.

21.

I would as heretofore, employ the agency of Recruiting Parties sent from Regiments.

22.

I am so strongly of an opinion adverse to Police Corps as armed and trained Military bodies, that I cannot contemplate the recruiting for them.

23.

The precautions already taken as stated above, should most carefully be continued. But copies of all Registers of Recruits made by the Civil Authorities should be transmitted to the Adjutant General's Office, and copies of all Regimental Registers of recruits, and of all kindred Rolls should also be deposited in the Adjutant General's Office. In the late mutinies the non-existence of these Rolls and the destruction of those with Regiments has proved very inconvenient.

25.

I am not disposed to recommend introducing recruits from other countries. They would be very expensive, very troublesome probably, and would disappoint us in the end. I think India itself furnishes sufficient men, and men sufficiently good, if well selected without going abroad for recruits.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

28.

No, I think not. I would keep European and Native Regiments entirely distinct, and they will work together in Cantonments and on service, all the better for it. The prestige of the dominant class, the Europeans, would be much lowered and seriously injured, if they were formed into Regiments with the Natives. Moreover they could not be armed alike—and I am strongly of opinion that the Jails, the Treasuries, the Guns and Arsenals should be guarded by Europeans to the exclusion of Natives. Now it would never do to make this distinction of duties and trusts if the races were attached to one and the same Regiment.

Another reason for not mixing them up is that their clothing should be different, of which the effect on parade would be extremely uncouth.

31.

No.

32.

It is not expedient to arm Natives with the Enfield Rifle—It is necessary to arm the Europeans with them. This is one capital reason for not mixing them together in Regiments.

33.

With the percussion musket.

35.

I have always thought it a great mistake to dress Native Soldiers like Europeans.

36.

In unghas or tunics covering the hip with trowsers tied and turbans, and this is a strong reason for not mixing Natives up with Europeans, who must be differently dressed of course.

37.

I think it highly desirable that each European Regiment should have a Native Irregular Regiment attached to it. But I would not officer the Native Regiment from the European—I would not exclude any particularly well qualified Officer of the one from being attached to the other; but I would select Officers for the attached Irregular Regiment from the whole line. It is essential, I think, that a Native Irregular Regiment should have its own Commandant to look up to, and this would be defeated if, as I take the question to imply, it were merely officered from the European Corps, the Commanding Officer of the latter being also Commanding Officer of the Irregular Corps. I would place the latter under the Commanding Officer of the European Corps as a sort of Brigadier (without increasing his Command allowance), but it would be really commanded by its own Commandant.

38.

No—the Gun Lascars and Native Drivers are quite on another sort of footing.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

39.

I would adopt the arrangement that heretofore has been adopted. I do not think it at all desirable that the Native Irregular Corps should be brought into any closer contact in Cantonments with the European Corps than has heretofore been the case. And when marching out into Camp, the relative place of the two Corps in the lines they are leaving can make no difference.

40.

The nearer the association such as is involved in the proposed system, the greater the detriment, in my opinion, to the prestige of the European Soldiery.

41.

In peace there might not be much difference in the intercourse between the European and the Native Corps.

In war it may certainly be looked for, that the Service would be benefited by the mutual attachment between the two Corps, and the emulation by the Native of the excellencies of the European Corps as exemplified at Candahar, where the 40th Foot and the 2nd Grenadiers served closely together, and at Jellalabad, where the 13th Foot and the 35th Native Infantry learned to attach themselves the one to the other.

42.

The Native Troops should be taught to rely on the European Troops. I think their association to the extent I have described would foster that sentiment. But if more intimately brought into union, I fear the sentiment fostered would be prejudicial to the reliance of the Native Troops on the European.

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

BENGAL NATIVE ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 and 2.

Three-fourths perhaps are Brahmins and Rajpoots of Oude and Behar, and the rest Gwalas and Aheers of different districts, Mahomedans of Oude and Behar, a few Hindoos from Rohilcund, a few Seikhs and fewer Goorkhas.

3.

Part 2 Section 31 of the Military Regulations details those superior castes of Natives which are eligible for the ranks. They exclude all inferior castes, and make no mention of Eurasians or

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Christians, neither of whom were in practice admitted to the ranks, though Eurasians were employed in the Bands, and as Drummers and Fifers.

4.

We would refer generally to our Answer No. 4 regarding the Punjaub Forces ; to which we would add our strong conviction of the duty and wisdom of bringing as many Christian Natives into the Service as possible. The Karens of Pegu a Christian race, should be freely enlisted—and next to them we would desire to see aboriginal races like the Sonthals, Bheels, &c., and segregated tribes such as the Boondeelas and Gonds, made available as counterpoises. Probably few of these secluded people would like to go far from their homes at first ; but the provincial system which we have proposed entirely meets their present case ; and in time, as the service became appreciated, they would, probably go to any part of India. Again, the Eurasians who have so long been a reproach to us, should now be elevated by enlistment and proper care.

We would advocate the collection of all Christian Natives and Eurasians together in separate Corps, and not dispersing them in the Hindoo and Mahomedan ranks, where in peace they would have no influence and be exposed to petty annoyances, and in any rebellion would fall victims, and be lost to the State.

To each Christian Native Corps there should be an ordained Christian Teacher and Pastor, either European or Native.

5.

Small Recruiting Parties, who bring in their own relatives and friends, and thus make the Native Army one great fraternity.

6.

See the Military Regulations, containing the Form originally introduced in the Punjaub, but afterwards prescribed for the whole Army. But we believe that in most Regiments the Form is almost a dead letter. In future it should be rigidly enforced ; for it is a more valuable check than ever.

7.

Chiefly the recommendation of men in the Service, who were considered guarantees.

8.

A relative proportion of the respective castes should be fixed and adhered to, and the prescribed attestation of Magistrates should be invariably obtained. But these precautions will be of little use unless a proportionate share of promotions be given systematically to each race in the Corps. Some races are more astute and obsequious than others, and if allowed become Masters of the Regiment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 9.** See Military Regulations.
- 10.** We do not remember, and have not the General Orders at hand to refer to.
- 11.** See Answer under this head for the Punjaub Troops.
- 12.** We do not know personally, but should think so, and would advocate it.
- 13.** None that we know of.
- 14 & 15.** For a full reply to these two Questions, see our accompanying Punjaub Paper.
- 16.** Some should be so, but most Corps should be mixed of the races prevailing in the respective Provinces (See the Punjaub Answer.)
- 17.** Both ; for each system has advantages, and there is safety in variety of systems. The Army should be no more homogeneous in system than in race.
- 18.** Having under Questions 14 and 15 fully given our reasons for advocating a Provincial system for the Native Army ; we will only add here :—*1st.*, that Regiments of Native Infantry should be Provincial, every Regiment being composed of the races of the respective Province ; but not all containing the same proportions of races ; on the contrary all varying as much as possible ; each with a different element predominating, and the predominating element in no case exceeding one-half of the Corps (see the changes rung on the Punjaub races, in Answer 16 for the Punjaub) *2ndly* that Regiments of Military Police should not be Provincial, but Local, composed of the races of a particular district, and the districts counterterminous.
- 19.** See Answer 19 for the Punjaub.
- 20.** Ditto ditto.
- 21.** None other seems required than Recruiting Parties of the races required, and men on leave. The variety of races to be introduced in future will render recruiting easy.
- 22.** The same.
- 23.** The existing rules quoted in Answer 6 only require to be enforced.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 24.** The same.
- 25, 26 & 27.** To this introduction of foreigners we are entirely opposed, see our reasons stated in full in Answer 14 with our letter of 26th June 1858.
- 28.** As stated in our Punjaub Answer, we think it would be a misapplication of European power.
- 29 to 32.** Consequently require no answer.
- 33.** With a light musket and bayonet. On frontiers where Hill tribes are to be kept in order, they might have two-grooved rifles ; but never the Enfield, or any weapon equal to that in the hands of the European Troops.
- 34.** With a percussion carbine and sword.
- 35.** There can be no advantage in a leather stock, tight coat and trowsers which fetter the free use of the legs. In the late Native Army, in a really well-dressed Regiment, a Sepoy could neither stoop to the ground nor take rest in his accoutrements. Some improvements have recently been effected in the European Soldiers dress ; but much remains to be done before they get the full use of their limbs, and the greatest possible ease in a hot climate.
- 36.** In a loose tunic with open throat, no stock ; a good thick turband that will ward off sun or cold, or blows ; and loose pantaloons without a single button fastening round the waist by a string.
- 37.** We are decidedly opposed to this. See our reasons in Answer 37 of the Punjaub Paper.
- 38.** See our Answers 38 in the Punjaub Paper.
- 39.** Ditto ditto.
- 40.** Ditto ditto.
- 41.** Ditto ditto.
- 42.** Ditto ditto.

PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.

PUNJAUB TROOPS.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

1stly. Mahomedans of independent countries beyond our frontier, such as Cabul, Candahar, the Afreedee Hills, Swat Boneyr, &c.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2ndly. Trans-Indus Mahomedans, British subjects from the Peshawur Valley, Kohat, &c.

3rdly. Cis-Sutlej Mahomedans (these are three broad distinctions which should be carefully observed).

4thly. Seikhs.

5thly. Hindoo Hill races which come under two classes, *viz.*, those of the Jummoo independent Hills, known as the Dogra Rajpoots, and the Rajpoots who are British subjects residing in the hills between the Ravee and Sutlej.

6thly. A sprinkling of Hindoostanees ; 1295 in the 11 Regiments, of whom 288 were Mahomedans and 1007 Hindoos.

7thly. 470 Goorkhas.

2.

Answered in No. 6.

3.

By the practice of the Force, sweepers Muzzabees (or sweeper Seikhs) Mossullees (or Mahomedan sweepers) and lowest Mahomedan and Hindoo classes generally, such as those laid down in the standing Military Regulations, Sec. XXXI. Part 2, Para. 6, were excluded. There were also no Christians in the Force. Originally there were some few European Christians (Fifers and Buglers) transferred from the Native Infantry Regiments of the line ; but being very few in number, and having no respectable associates, they fell into bad habits and disrepute, and were, for this reason, remanded to their original Corps, since which there have been none.

No class should be excluded from the Native Army. But though we ourselves may and ought to rise above caste, we cannot practically *ignore* it, so long as the Natives themselves socially maintain it. If low caste men, sweepers, &c., be promiscuously enlisted in the ranks, one great political object which we have in view, (*viz.*, the counterpoise of races) will not be attained, for assuredly the low caste men, true to their traditions, will submit in every thing to the higher caste in the Regiments ; and if their good conduct and Military smartness raise them to rank, it will only bring them pay, and not give them that influence over their Military subordinates which discipline requires. At least we think that a great change must previously come over the Native Army on the question, before the lowest castes can be usefully associated with the highest castes in one Corps. Moreover, we believe that the Native Soldiers already in the ranks, would be disgusted if recruits, whom they considered unfit associates, were suddenly to be forced

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

upon them in large numbers. We are aware that the Armies of Bombay and Madras show all classes mixed together. We do not know how this works practically. It would be possible for the European Officers, following the bent of their own wishes and feelings, to imagine that sweeper Soobahdars (for instance) were really the Commanders of their men; and yet for that command to extend no further than the parade ground, or the orderly room; and to cease altogether in the lines and interior economy of the Regiment. But assuming that all caste prejudice has really been broken down in those Armies, we would observe—

1st. That in them the majority of the community, or in other words, public opinion, is indifferent to caste, while here the community is bigotted in its favor; and 2ndly—That the mixed system has in them happily grown up from the beginning, so that high caste men who now enlist in those Armies do it with their eyes open, and of their own accord, led either by the difficulty of getting service elsewhere, or by some peculiar circumstances; whereas the caste system has unhappily grown up and been indigenous in the Bengal Armies from the beginning, and has in them the same strength as the mixed system in the sister Presidencies. However strongly then we may feel the tyranny of caste, and however resolved we may be to do all in our power to overthrow it, yet sound wisdom requires that we should not conceal the practical difficulties, but set them candidly forth, and then endeavor to meet them, and this especially because the low castes themselves are not prepared to help us and seize the freedom we wish to give them. We have heard of a small guard of the Bombay Army on detached duty, making their own jemadar, a man of low caste, carry on his head the bundle of their clothes, &c., to which the jemadar, away from his European friends, submitted as a matter of course, and whether that anecdote be true or not, we have seen, during the last year that, when a Regiment of Native Soldiers in the Bengal Army mutinied, the whole of the low caste camp followers, tent pitchers, grooms, grass cutters, sweepers, &c., went off with them like a flock of sheep, and thereby lost their service; unable to resist the habitual slavery of race. For these reasons our advice would be that we introduce the new system gradually, by having separate Regiments for the lowest castes,* into which any Native physically fit should be admitted, that a certain number of higher caste men be admitted into these low caste Regiments, if for want of service they apply for it, as the best means of bringing about voluntary close association; and that similarly a certain number of the *lowest* caste-men be admissible into high caste Regiments where the Commanding Officer sees that it can be done without offence; but we would (at this stage) deprecate the

* In the newly raised Punjab Regiments there are two entirely composed of Muzzubees *i. e.* sweepers of the Seikh religion. They are Pioneers, and are doing well.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

forcing of any mixed proportion or number of lowest caste men, into the existing Regiments of the force, lest in doing justice to one class, we be felt (wrongly or rightly) to be doing injustice to another. Before leaving this question it seems necessary to explain; *Firstly*—Though for the sake of contra-distinction we have spoken of the Punjab Regiments as high caste Regiments, yet in point of fact they would not be so considered by natives, as Hindoo Soldiers in them are generally Soodras; and *Secondly*—That in Native estimation there is the widest difference between low castes, and lowest caste-men; which ought not to be overlooked. The Soodra is a low caste man in the eyes of the Brahmin and Rajpoot, but the two latter have no objection to serve with the former; whereas a sweeper is by all three considered to be an outcast.

5.

Recruiting parties—the friends and relatives, and men on leave at their homes.

6.

British subjects are attested by the local Civil authorities according to the form originated in the Punjab, and since adopted by the Commander-in-Chief for the whole Native Army. Subjects of independent States cannot be attested; but are usually introduced by trustworthy servants of Government.

7.

Security is taken from some responsible party, and his registry is attested by the same form as others.

8.

We can suggest no improvement.

9 & 10.

Originally no oath was administered; but about two years ago, on this being brought to the notice of Government, though it was not deemed advisable to subject the old Soldiers to an oath after so long a period, orders were issued that all new recruits should be sworn according to the oaths laid down in para. 33 of Section XXXI. of the Military Regulations.

11.

We fear that in practice no oath will bind. The unconscientious will boldly disregard it. The conscientious will find such loopholes as the following:—“We swore fidelity to our colors and we kept the oath, for when we mutinied we took the colors with us.” “The water we were sworn on came out of a well in the lines, and not from the Ganges, so it was no oath at all” or “no oath taken to an Infidel is binding.”

Yet it is necessary to have some solemn engagement to appeal to, and therefore we would still have recruits sworn in. But in the spirit of Act V. of 1840, we would substitute for all Heathen or Mahomedan oaths, an oath before Almighty God. We would also simplify the oath to the fewest possible words, with the utmost possible scope thus:— “I inhabitant of Village
Pergunnah District Province, do swear before

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Almighty God that I will be a faithful Soldier and servant of the British Government, that I will march wherever I am directed, and will obey all the orders of my European Officers."

12 & 13. No answer required.

14 & 15. This is a very important question, but after mature consideration, and with reference to the events of the past year, we come decidedly to the conclusion, that Regiments of Native Infantry should be provincial in their composition and ordinary sphere of service. As we cannot do without a large Native Army in India, our main object is to make that Army safe, and next to the grand counterpoise of a sufficient European force comes the counterpoise of Natives against Natives. At first sight it might be thought, that the best way to secure this would be to mix up all the available Military races of India in each and every Regiment, and to make them all General Service Corps, but excellent as this theory seems, it does not bear the test of practice. It is found that different races mixed together do not long preserve their distinctiveness; their corners and angles and feeling and prejudice get rubbed off; till at last they assimilate, and the object of their association to a considerable extent is lost; to preserve that distinctiveness, which is so valuable, and which, while it lasts, makes the Mahomedan of one country despise, fear or dislike the Mahomedan of another, Corps should in future be provincial, and adhere to the geographical limits within which difference and rivalries are strongly marked. Let all the races, Hindoos or Mahomedans, of one province be enlisted in one Regiment, and no others; and having thus created distinct Regiments, let us keep them so against the hour of need, by confining the circle of their ordinary service to the limits of their own province, and only marching them on emergency into other parts of the Empire with which they will then be found to have little sympathy. By the system thus indicated two great evils are avoided; *Firstly*, that community of feeling throughout the Native Army, and that mischievous political activity and intrigue which results from association with other races and travel in other Indian Provinces; and *Secondly*, that through discontent and alienation from the service which has undoubtedly sprung up since extended conquest has carried our Hindoostanee Soldiers so far from their homes in India Proper. There can be no question that a contented servant is better than a discontented one; unfortunately we have tried too much hitherto to purchase the contentment of our Native Armies by increased pay, batta, &c. This has not answered its purpose; and has produced many evils. It has enriched the Sepoys but not satisfied them; nothing can reconcile Natives to long absence from their homes, where they leave their wives and lands. The Sepoys felt they were

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

being coaxed into foreign* service, and got both angry and insolent with a sense of power. We believe that, what is called "general service" has been prominent among the causes which undermined our once faithful Native Army. If then in future we keep our Regiments moving ordinarily in a circle round about their homes, we shall add greatly to their real happiness and consequently their loyalty;† and be able to get rid of all mischievous increases of pay. Fewer men will also suffice, for the furloughs will be shorter, and in fact, we believe that the service will thus be rendered more safe, more economical, and more popular.

It may be asked whether a difficulty would not arise in getting provincial Regiments to move on foreign service in an emergency. But we are convinced that under efficient and popular Commanders (whom no mercenary Troops can dispense with) the men would cheerfully march when necessary to repulse a foreign enemy, or put down a distant rebellion; satisfied in their own minds, that at the close of the war they will again return with honor to their own Province.

Having above laid down the general principle of provincial Regiments, we would explain that, not to deprive the State of the advantage and precaution of having a few foreign Regiments in every Province, we would also have a proportion of the provincial Regiments stationed in the next adjoining Province. As a rule, one-fourth of the Regiments of each Province might be thus absent for two or three years at a time, and then return and be relieved by another one-fourth. But in the Punjaub we would allow one-third for the following reasons:—The Punjaub frontier, Trans-Indus, requires Regiments peculiarly equipped and organized, and it is desirable that they should not be moved. Again it is desirable that the Goorkha Regiments at Jutog, the Goorkha Regiments in Hazara,

* i. e. Anywhere very distant from their own homes.

† It is an old saying that to learn the heart of a people you must go to their ballads, proverbs and games; in the capitals of Delhie and Lahore it is a common thing to see a delighted crowd of Natives collected round a showman with a monkey. This monkey has a red Jacket, and is evidently of the Military Caste. He is called Muror Khan. The showman is supposed to be a recruiting Officer, and he begins by offering to Muror Khan a stick, which stands for a Musket, and seven Rupees a month, if he will enlist and march to Cabul. Muror rejects the offer, with all the pantomime of disgust, and throws away the stick, which the showman again and again offers him raising the terms from seven to twenty Rupees but always with the same result, at last the showman is convinced that the recruit will not take foreign service and leave his wife (another monkey named Zoohoorun) at any price, so he changes his tone and again presenting the stick says, "well then will you take 12 annas a month and serve at Delhie or Lahore" as the case may be. Muror Khan immediately rushes at the stick, accepts the service, dances about, with the most ridiculous antics and gestures of delight, and finally sits down with folded arms upon a little stool in an attitude of supreme content; the sympathy of the bystanders is evinced in roars of laughter and approbation, and it is clear that every man of them is of the same mind as Muror Khan.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and the Guides in Usufzye should be locals. This leaves only the 16 Regiments in the interior of the Province, from which to detach Corps for service in the North West Provinces or Oudh, and as 15 out of the 31 Punjab Regiments will never leave that Province, a third of the 16 interior Corps may well take a tour of more distant duty for three years at a time, which would give each of them six years uninterruptedly in their own Province.

16.

There are already in the Punjab the following homogeneous Corps :—

Regiment of Goorkha	...	...	...	1
Muzzubee Pioneers	...	...	...	2
				<hr/>
Total	...	...	...	<u>3</u>

A second Goorkha Regiment (the Nuseere Battalion usually stationed at Jutog) does not belong to the Punjab Irregular Force, and is at present serving in Hindoostan, therefore we do not count it here. If more Regiments of Goorkhas could be obtained, we should be glad ; but it appears impracticable, and more Muzzubee Corps are not required, hence we do not recommend any more homogeneous Regiments for the Punjab, but that all the other provincial Corps should be mixed, some being in the proportion observed in the new Punjab Corps, viz. :—

Mahomedan Companies	...	..	.....	4
Seikh Ditto	...	...	...	4
Hill Rajpoot Ditto	.....	...	.....	2
				<hr/>
Total	...	...	...	<u>10</u>

others having a predominant element. Thus :—

					<i>Companies.</i>
Seikhs	..	...	...	...	5
Mahomedans	...	...	...	..	3
Hill Rajpoots	...	...	...	.....	1
Hindoostanees	...	...	...	...	1
					<hr/>
Total	...	...	...	...	<u>10</u>

Or—

					<i>Companies.</i>
Mahomedans	...	..	...	..	5
Seikhs	...	...	...	.....	3
Hillmen	...	...	...	...	1
Hindoostanee	...	...	...	.....	1
					<hr/>
Total	...	...	...	...	<u>10</u>

QUESTIONS

ANSWERS.

Again in one Corps the whole of the Mahomedans might be Pathans of the Trans-Indus, though this should be quite exceptional. In another Regiment they might be all Punjabee Mahomedans from Cis-Indus and so on.

17.

Both systems have advantages ; the men are happier in homogeneous Companies ; but it is a question whether mixed Companies are not the better check ; we would therefore have both. There is advantage in a variety of systems.

18.

Answered in No. 16.

19.

Keeping in view the conditions and proportions of races already laid down, recruiting for the Army and Police may go on in the same districts, as no danger can ensue. In raising Police the principle should be that three-fourths should be men of the district or counterminous districts, and one-fourth foreigners.

20.

No, certainly not, keep them as distinct as possible.

21.

No other than that already described in Answer 5.

22.

The same.

23.

The existing rules quoted in Answer 6 should be rigidly enforced.

24.

The same.

25,26&27.

Answers not required.

28.

Certainly not, it would be a misapplication of European power.

29 to 32.

Answered by No. 28.

33.

The frontier and Hill Regiments should all have light two-grooved rifles, so as to be superior to the mountain tribes, but inferior to our own European Troops, who should of course always have the most effective weapons known. The Regiments in the interior of the Punjaub should have a light musket and bayonet.

34.

With a percussion carbine and a sword ; at present they have heavy muskets, a bayonet and a sword. The more lightly the Police are equipped the better.

35.

No reply required.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

36.

As at present, *viz.*, with a loose tunic, no stock, a turband and loose pantaloons fastened round the waist by a string, not by buttons.

37.

To this we are all opposed, though not on the same grounds. Sir John Lawrence and Brigadier General Chamberlain think that the wider the European and Native Regiments can be kept apart the better, and that any improvement in smartness and drill which the Native Regiments might acquire from association would be more than counterbalanced by familiarity with the vices and defects of too many of the European soldiery, which still leave so much to regret even after the ameliorations and improvements of late years. Colonel Edwardes would not apprehend the above evil consequences, but he joins the other members in thinking the proposed combination impracticable on the following grounds. In the first place the management of a European Regiment is totally different from that of a Native Regiment, and we can foresee nothing but inconvenience from the Colonel of a European Regiment (who must necessarily be the senior Officer) controlling the system of the Commandant of the Native Corps. *Secondly*—It would be embarrassing to have two Regiments thus inseparably tied together and would greatly complicate the reliefs. *Thirdly*—It would nullify all the proposals for Provincial Battalions. A certain number of Native Troops are however necessary with European Troops to relieve them from exposure to the sun, and leave as many Europeans available as possible. Brigadier General Chamberlain and Colonel Edwardes think therefore that, instead of as heretofore, drawing the Sepoys haphazard from the line, it would be better permanently to attach one or two Companies of Sepoys* to each Regiment of European Infantry, care being taken that high caste Natives should not be enlisted for this duty, but those races who would most readily fraternise with the European. Sir John Lawrence however does not think that any thing would be gained by such an arrangement and would rather adhere to the ordinary practice.

38.

As may be gathered from the last answer, we think there is both a certain analogy and encouragement, and also certain difference in the two cases. The Gun Lascars and Native Drivers economize European power, and in practice have been found not only most convenient and useful in ordinary wars, but singularly faithful in the late exceptional crisis, when their loyalty was put to the severest imaginable test. But the Gun Lascars and Native Drivers are not highly disciplined, drilled, and armed with offensive weapons as the Native auxiliary Regiments or Companies with a

* To be commanded by Subalterns of the European Regiment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

European Regiment would be, and so far the latter would be a new experiment.

39.

The one or two Companies could be placed in a Barrack of their own wherever most convenient; with so small a body the matter is not important.

40.

Answered partly in No. 39. But we all think that if an auxiliary Native Corps were attached to a European one, it would end in the delegation of most important duties to Sepoys, such as Magazine Guards, &c., which ought always in future to be confined to Europeans.

41.

We consider that auxiliary Corps would be at all times embarrassing and inconvenient.

42.

Under the former system, in which the Native Army so greatly overbalanced the European one, it was not desirable to develop the Native Military talent and self-reliance. It was politic under such circumstances, for instance to promote Sepoys by seniority and not by merit, and to keep the command of Companies in the hands of European Officers; but if the re-adjustments and reforms in the Indian Army which we had advocated be carried out, we need not any longer be under the lamentable necessity of debilitating our Native Troops,—we can then strive to make them vigorous and effective, contenting ourselves with the reservation of the Artillery and latest improvements in the rifle for the European Troops, and the certainty that whenever a Native Regiment, however efficient, mutinously separates itself from its European Officers, it will find that it has lost its most vital principle.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. B. HEARSEY, K. C. B., COMMANDING PRESIDENCY
DIVISION.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Of Brahmins }
Kashtryas } Of many denominations,
Rajpoots,
Gwallahs,
Aheers,
Jats,

and some few low caste men, such as Mallees, Kachees, Gurrenbahs (*i. e.* Shepherds), &c., &c., have crept into Corps. *Vide* Military Regulations, Enlistment, Part 2nd, Natives.

Para. 5. Hindoos, Mohamedans, Seikhs are eligible for recruits.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Para 6. Especial care however must be taken to reject all men of *inferior castes*, such as Bunneahs, Kycths, Naees, Thomolees, Gurrerees, Lodhs, Bhojeeas, Kahors, Moorarees, Kandooos, Malees, Kachees, and any others habitually employed in menial occupations.

The only castes left were Brahmins, Kashtryas or Rajpoots, Gwallas and Aheers.

2.

From North and South Behar, *especially the latter*, principally from *Allahabad*, Bhojepore, the Dooab of the Ganges and Jumna Rivers, Rohilcund, many from Oude, and some from Bundelcund.

3.

Bughaelcund or Rewah, peopled by Chandael Rajpoots, has given but few recruits to the Bengal Native Infantry. I have travelled much in that Province and never saw finer or more muscular men. The reason why we have so very few of the inhabitants of Bughaelcund in our Infantry I know not. I have also observed that there are but few Rajpoots from Rajhestan and Rajpootana, enlisted in the ranks of the Bengal Native Infantry ; perhaps the drill and clothing are irksome to these warlike and independent races of men.

4.

Yes ; besides the Rajpoots of Bughaelcund or Rewah, of Rajhestan and Rajpootanah, the Hill tribes from Cachar even to the Hazarah Mountains North of Rawul Pindie, and close to Hossein Abdool, and who have only recently found service under our Government as Infantry Sepahees, there are Goojars, Mehwaties, inhabitants of Reehawatte, Mohamedans of the Punjab, Jats of Hansi, Hissar, and of the Bhurtpoor Country, Ranghurs, Belooches, the Tribes of the Damun-i Koh or Solymance Hills, and others who inhabit the Thuls of the Punjab rivers, also the Mohamedans of the Districts of Mooltan and the Daood Pootra Bhawalpoor.

5.

The great agency was that of Native Officers and men ; when they went on their periodical furlough to their Villages, they were told to bring back with them young and strong youths fit for recruits to their Regiments, because family cliques, nay Native Officers, took tithes in money, to give security, and thus got inferior-looking men into the Service.

6.

Vide Military Regulations, Section 31, Page 217, in which all on the subject is fully laid down.

7.

The Native Commissioned, Non-Commissioned Officers, or Sepahees, on presenting these recruits, usually want security that the men were good and proper men and fitting for the Service.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

This opened a trade of *profit to the Native Officers*. They sold their interests, their *recommendation* or good word, and made not *the least hesitation* in telling falsehoods so as to get the candidate enlisted. The Native Officers sold their interests, making the recruit (if he could not give sufficient money) bind himself down by oath to serve these Native Officers as *menials* for a certain term of years. All this was kept secret from their European Officers. Every imaginary precaution was taken as laid down under the head of "Enlistment" in the Military Regulations; but no European Officer can overcome the tergiversation of a Native.

8.

No Brahmins, no Mohamedans of Hindoostan Proper, should be entertained in the Regular Infantry of the Bengal Army. All recruits should come from Districts and Countries *new to the old Provinces* where recruits have been usually drawn from.

9.

This question is fully answered under the head Enlistment in the Military Regulations, Section 31, Para. 33.

10.

The general Military Regulations of the Bengal Army were corrected and published in 1855, under an order of the other Commander-in-Chief, Head Quarters, Simla.

11.

As many tribes are likely, for the future, to be enlisted for the Bengal Army, investigation should be made of what kind of oath each tribe holds to be most binding, and such oath should be administered.

12.

None that I am aware of. I believe the sea-faring population residing between voyages at Calcutta, come mostly from the Eastern Archipelago or the Malay Peninsula. These serve on board the Ships as Tindals and Lascars; Marine Corps of seafaring habits might be formed from them, but of this I cannot speak with certainty.

13.

Two Regiments in the Bengal Infantry were formerly called Marine Corps; the men were expressly enlisted for service beyond Sea. The innovation was introduced at the earnest solicitation of my father, Colonel Andrew Wilson Harsey, during the Governor Generalship of Sir John Shore, afterwards Lord Teignmouth, or in the period of the first Governor Generalship of Lord Cornwallis. Infantry Regiments had been formed by Volunteers to proceed by Sea to Madras. Unfortunately, the Transport on which was half a Regiment of Sepoys foundered in a typhoon, and was never heard of again. This caused a great dread of sea voyages, and innumerable objections were raised regarding caste.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Prejudices have been ever since thrown in our teeth when the Sepoys of the Bengal Army were disinclined to obey any order, or act in any Country they disliked to go into.

14.

In my opinion each Regiment should be formed of Companies with only one tribe of men in them. These to be recruited from such tribes, but it matters not what District they dwell in ; the more distant from each other the better.

15.

It matters not how wide the area is, if the tribes are the same of which the Company is to be composed.

16.

No ; each Company of a Regiment should be homogeneous, as a race or tribe ; caste should not be allowed ; it should be totally ignored.

17.

The Companies should each be homogeneous ; no caste *prejudices* to be allowed ; the name, the very word caste, should be abolished from the Army. If tribes are mixed, they will act together. Many of the Seikhs joined the Poorbees in the mutinies because the former were more numerous, but as soon as they were separated and not overawed by the Brahmins and Mohamedans, they proved true and faithful to their salt and to the Government.

18.

Answered above ; each Company separate, and promotions, &c, &c., to go separately and entirely in it. No *Commissioned Officers*, only Non-Commissioned, but *with more pay*. (*Vide my general remarks in answer to Classification and Re-organization of the Indian Armies.*)

19.

Police Corps may be raised as *Militia* of all tribes ; caste notions to be abolished ; *to be under Martial Law* ; a very plain and simple Code to be published and sanctioned ; the Officer Commanding to have great power and no appeal from his decision, if he acts wrong, to lose his appointment. A Corps of Police raised in one district to serve in another to prevent collusion ; to be moveable from one District to another as desirable ; to have small *plain bore* carbines and sword and shield as arms : after firing the carbine, a sling to be attached to it, so as it can be thrown across the back, and the sword and shield used,—*the latter gives the Hindoostanee much confidence* ; only to have ten rounds of ball and twelve gun caps per man in pouch ; no more ; those expended, the sword must come into play. They can be recruited over as wide a District as possible. *They should not be Inhabitants of the District they are serving in.* Sir Charles Napier had many Seikhs serving as Police in Scinde.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

20.

No ; keep them quite distinct.

21.

Very little, if any, recruiting in Hindoostan Proper, or in our old Districts or possessions, or in Oude. The men in them being the relatives and connexions of the Mutineers and Pensioners, who have been executed, transported, or have had their Villages burnt and Estates escheated, *will always be ready to turn traitors through revenge*. Officers should be sent on Recruiting parties, otherwise there will be deceit and roguery. The Officers should be good linguists, and selected for their knowledge of the Native character.

22.

I would leave much to the Commanding Officer of the Police Corps ; he will not have European Officers to spare to go on Recruiting parties. The Magistrate of District from which the Corps was raised could assist, taking good care the families of the recruits he sent were well known. They should be registered in presence of the recruit, and stand security for his good conduct ; this would be a material guarantee for his good behaviour.

23.

The recruits should be taken before the Civil Authorities of the District, with their parents or *blood* relatives ; their Long Roll or Description Roll minutely taken ; the Roll—Father, Mother, Brothers and other relatives, their standing in the Village or Town to which they belong or in which they were born. The recruit should be present when these Rolls were being registered, and he should be made to understand that his parents and relations were standing security for his faithful and good conduct, and that if he proved untrustworthy, punishment would fall on his relatives as well as on himself, as also on his wife and family and children if he has or may have any. Their place of abode, *their holdings* of land, all should be registered ; they are always well known in his Village or Town of residence, and should be entered into a Register Book, with date of enlistment, &c., to be kept in the Magistrate's Office for reference when required.

24.

The same exactly. The Magistrates or Civil Authorities to have separate Register Books for Police Corps.

25.

Christians of all tropical Countries, or of those Countries which are subject to great heat of temperature, *viz.*, Malta, Sicily, Naples, the Grecian or Ionian Islands, Madeira, Brazilians, Natives of our West India Islands, Christian Africans such as serve on board of our Men-of-War or Merchant Vessels ; all kinds and descriptions of Christians, who from infancy have endured great or high temperature, should be sought for and enlisted to serve in India as Soldiers. These men could bear a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

campaign in the hot winds and rains without much mortality or sickness. I believe Christian Malay Cingalese, Karens (from Pegu) Native Christians of the Peninsula of India, (there are many in Travancore, Tinnevely and other Districts of the Madras Presidency) Jews (there are many in Native ranks of the Bombay Army) or all Christians, no matter what Church, whether Nestorian or otherwise, so as to be as independent as possible of Hindoos or Mohamedans. We must show them practically that we can rule them and keep them in subjection with Armies of Native Christians, as well as British Europeans, that our Recruiting Districts for such men are inexhaustible, as well as for Englishmen. It would be good policy to do so.

26.

Christian Africans, Christian Inhabitants of the Indian Archipelago, Christian Chinese, &c., from the Phillipines, Malay Christians, Ditto Hottentots, Kaffiaris, nay South American, Christian all, *but they must be Christians*, and then trust can be reposed in them.

27.

The Consuls, the European Residents (the Missionaries perhaps), the Government of such British Colonies where the kind of recruits required could be procured. European Officers of Her Majesty's Service could select them when present, and a Board of Medical Officers could examine and pass them as constitutionally fit and being free from any personal defect.

28.

Certainly. The flank Companies, *viz.*, the Grenadier and Light Companies, should be European, *that is to say Britons, of all Corps, Christian or of other creeds or religions*, and two British Serjeants to each Battalion Company.

29.

The men should be selected from European Corps, steady, sober men, and as good colloquists as can be had; some slight benefit in rations or pay might be allowed. The two Serjeants for each of the Battalion Companies of these Native Christian Corps, should be taken from the flank Companies, and thus cause great promotion to Non-Commissioned Officers in them. No relief to the two European Companies; they should be a component part of each Corps.

30.

On the right flank of the lines or huts of the Native Soldiers, but a short distance from them; the Christian Companies of Natives altogether; the Mohamedans and Hindoos separate from them, but only at a short distance and in the same line.

31.

As our Commissariat is now carried on, I should certainly say not.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

32.

Europeans, with the Enfield Rifle, and also with Colt's Revolvers. African and other *Christians*, when formed into Companies, might be armed in the same manner. Natives, *i. e.*, Hindoos and Mohamedans, with light fuzils and bayonets. When in Cantonment no balled ammunition in pouch, and no caps ammunition. Stores of all kinds, treasure and valuable documents, to be kept in proper and secure *pucca*-roofed or bomb-proof buildings and under lock and key, erected in a fortified square, in which a portion of the two British Companies should always be on duty, and have proper quarters erected for them. In this square a proper proportion of European Artillerymen should be also quartered or on duty, and 9-Pounder Guns or even 18, should be mounted on the Bastion, a good Ditch and Drawbridge and Gates well protected by Outworks.

33.

With light fuzils and bayonets.

34.

With small carbines (light only), only ten rounds of ball ammunition in pouch, and twelve caps; no bayonet, a sword and shield instead.

35.

In my opinion there is a *great disadvantage* in dressing Natives in the European uniform. It confines their limbs, and the muscles of the body are restrained and cannot have full play. The very best of all dresses would be a copy of the Algiers Zouave dress. I am of opinion that the Zouave dress is the very best dress also for European Troops serving in such a hot climate as India.

36.

As a Zouave.

37.

I prefer two European flank Companies to a Native Regiment (Christians if you can get them) or to a Regiment composed of tribes of men. Europeans kept separate cause Natives to have awe of them.

38.

I am decidedly of opinion there ought to be *no Natives, Hindoostanees or any other tribes*, in the Artillery, not even *Syce Drivers*, certainly no Golundauze or Lascars. The defeat at Chinbut (near Lucknow) of the late lamented Sir Henry Lawrence was mainly caused by the *treachery and defection of his Syce Gun Drivers*. If Europeans cannot do these duties, they ought to be done by Christian Africans or even Hindoostanee Christians

40.

I have answered this question by my opinion of the proper formation of *Companies* of Regiments and of the *necessity of Officers visiting the lines or huts* of their men at least twice a day. The *awe* of European Troops would remain the same at present.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Natives would not dwell within some distance of their Barracks.

41.

As I have laid down, I should think very well.

42.

To be trained systematically always to act in *dependence* or leaning on European support, *never to be permitted to lead an assault or to make the first attack, always to follow*, and to be made to look up to Europeans, as much, very much superior to them in personal gallantry and in endurance in "*Solidarite*." The Companies, especially with each Corps, should be a pattern, a *noble example*, whether on duty, in their lines or barracks, on parade, on active and actual service in the field. *They should feel convinced* of the very great superiority of British Troops.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS, BY SIR J. B. HEARSEY, ON THE 1ST HEAD OF INQUIRY IN THE CLASSIFICATION.

I am strongly of opinion that recruiting should cease in Oude, the Dooab of the Ganges and Jumna, in Shahabad or Boujepore and in Rohilcund and Bundelcund, that no Soldiers from those Districts should remain in the Regular Army of Bengal.

That recruiting from the Punjab of Seikhs, Punjabee Mussulmans, Hill tribes of Kumaon, Ghurwal, Sirmoor, Bushaiher, Chumba, Lahore, the Dogras of the Lower Cashmere Hills, men from the Hills of Murrie and the Hurrareh Hills, even the wild tribes of the Kohat, Kybarees, Momunds, and the Hill tribes of the Damun-i-Koh, the tribes that herd Cattle on the banks of the Punjab rivers, the Jats of Hansie, Hissar, the Doond Pootras of Bhowalpore, the inhabitants of the Shekawat Country, the Rajpoots of Rajpootana, the Beloochees, all might be entertained for the Regular Army.

No more Brahmins, no more Mussulmans, of Hindoostan *Proper*, to be entertained in the Regular Native Force.

Each tribe should be formed into Companies of eighty men strong; no two Companies of the same tribe in a Regiment; this would cause emulation between Companies on service, nay on parade. I have found the lower tribes of Hindoostanees, such as Aheers (Shepherd), Gwallahs, *i. e.* (Herdsmen), and all others more pertinacious regarding caste prejudices than any other. They have an idea it gives them more consequence, it certainly serves as an excuse for idleness, and their refusing to do many acts of duty, in a Military sense, such as they would not scruple to do if they were not in the Army.

Even recruits, when enlisted, should be sworn (in the manner most binding to his tribe) to do the duties of a Soldier in all situations;—to use the spade, the shovel and the pick-axe as the Sappers and Miners do; to work in Trenches and on Fortifications when required so to do, as also to make and repair Roads, build Barracks, thatch or tile them; in fact to be able to put themselves under cover, when required to do so, without adventitious aid. Caste to be entirely *ignored*, and set aside. Any Soldier refusing to work, because it interfered with his caste, to be tried by Court Martial, and sentenced to be flogged, or transportation for life. This acknowledgment of caste prejudices has always been *the* weak point of the Bengal Army, and should *now* once for all be denounced.

All Native Soldiers to be enlisted for general service, to embark for foreign service at a moment's notice, and to serve in any part of the world where they may be required, for as long a period as it suited the Government, whether not relieved in three or in ten years.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. HOPE GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDING OUDE FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

Thirty-one thousand Sepoys alone belong to two Districts in Oude, called Byswarra and Banod, lying East of the Cawnpore and Lucknow road along the Ganges.

3.

Certainly, nothing lower than an Aheer was, as a rule, taken; lower castes were quite excluded. The Sepoys who fought for Clive were chiefly low castes. I do not think the Bengal Army became Brahminized at first by any *order* of Government, but simply by Recruiting Officers, over a series of years, confining their choice to the largest, handsomest, and cleanest-looking men, who are undoubtedly the high castes. Gradually these came to preponderate, then they exercised their powerful influence to keep away all low caste people, and finally the custom became the rule, and the latter were altogether excluded.

4.

Unquestionably we have the very high authority of Colonel Skinner, (who warned us forty years ago) for employing many other tribes. The men who successfully defended Bhurtpore against Lord Lake were unknown in our Army ranks. The Passees of Oude, always employed by "high caste" Talookdars when any thing desperate had to be done, were quite shut out. The Kanjars (Gipseys) Nutts and Sweepers, all fine material and highly recommended by Colonel Skinner, would not even have been *touched* formerly by our *high caste* European Officers, and besides, there are many other

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

classes that might, with great advantage, be employed. The Mullah or Boatmen race make excellent Soldiers.

5. I can't answer this precisely.

6. I can't answer this.

7. Ditto.

8. I would not recognize caste in the Army, but would enlist any man, high or low, who wished to become a Soldier, make them mess together, and do any work that a Soldier is called upon to perform.

9. I am sure that I do not know ; any form of oath is quite useless.

10. Don't know.

11. The only hold, as far as conscience goes, (and this is of the very slightest) you can have on the recruit is to swear him according to his religion, and not by our form of oath, or one made up according to our ideas.

12. Certainly, the Mullah or Boatmen race are as hardy, if not the hardiest in India ; extreme alterations of heat and cold do not affect them ; they will stand half the day in June, or half the night in December, up to their middle in water, with perfect impunity. They make first-rate Soldiers.

14. I would recruit the Corps over a wide area. You can never exclude caste without.

15. Answered, No. 14.

16. Ditto.

17. I would not purposely recruit to keep up one class of men in a Company.

18. Answered, No. 17.

19. In my opinion the whole Bengal Army ought to be composed of Police Corps or Irregulars on the system of the Punjab Regiments.

20. Answered, No. 19.

21. Hold Commanding Officers strictly responsible, and let them adopt their own means.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

22.

As above.

23.

Have the Register Roll of each recruit copied and verified by the Civil Officer, in order that he may be able to lay his hand on the man or his house whenever necessary.

24.

Answered above.

25.

Certainly, and I would always keep them perfectly distinct from Natives of this Country.

26.

Kroomen from the West Coast of Africa, and Malays from the Straits, also Chinese from the Straits.

27.

This I can't answer.

28.

Certainly not.

33.

The old smooth-bore musket.

35.

It does not.

36.

In loose kurkee rung tunics and trowsers, and the turban.

37.

I do not see the advantage of a Native Irregular Regiment attached to an European, and at all events I would not have the Native Regiments officered from the European. I would have them perfectly distinct.

38.

I would not allow a Native to be an Artilleryman, nor would I allow Native Drivers.

42.

If the Native or any Troops have not a certain degree of confidence and self-reliance, they will not be very efficient, and I would not train them to act in dependence on European support.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B., COMMANDING PESHAWUR DIVISION.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Bengal Native Infantry Regiments of the Regular Army were composed chiefly of Natives of the Upper Provinces of Hindoostan, Hindoos and Mussulmen, with a small proportion of men from the Punjab.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Hindoos consisted of Brahmins, Rajpoots, Gwalas, and other inferior castes. The Mussulman portion comprised Pathans, Seikhs, Syuds and Moguls. The Punjabees consisted of Seikhs and Punjabee Mussulmen.

The following is the average proportion of classes in Native Corps of the Bengal Army of 1,140 Natives, the Christian Drummers and Musicians being excluded :—

Brahmins	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	$\frac{7}{24}$
Rajpoots	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{4}$
Inferior Hindoos...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{6}$
Mussulmen	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{6}$
Punjabees	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	$\frac{1}{8}$

2. Lucknow, Goruckpoor, Rohilcund, Allahabad, Benares, Jaunpore, Arrah, Agra and the Punjab.
3. Yes. All inferior castes, who were employed in menial occupations. Vide Para. 6, Section 31, Military Regulations. Musbee Seikhs were also excluded from enlistment. Men were rarely entertained who did not come from the Districts mentioned in reply to Question No. 1. Recruits from other parts were not discouraged, but seldom presented themselves for entertainment.
4. It is very likely that the Burmese, Karens, and Sonthals might be employed with advantage. Good Soldiers might also be drawn more extensively from the Hill tribes surrounding the Peshawur and Kohat Districts, as well as from the Derajat.
5. Recruiting parties, the Civil Authorities affording them aid.
6. The instructions contained in Paras. 19, 20, 21, 22 and 23, Section 31, of Military Regulations, seem to afford all the information that can be desired on this head.
8. It is very possible that Recruiting Depôts, placed under the Command of well-selected Officers, might be established with great benefit for the purpose of recruiting from the various tribes and castes throughout the Country.
9. Vide Para. 33, Section 31, Military Regulations, to which a slight addition is made to the purport that the recruit binds himself to serve beyond the sea, agreeably to G. O. C. C., dated 30th July 1856.
10. I know not exactly, but certainly for upwards of twenty years.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 11.** No! I think the form is as good as can be drawn out.
- 12 & 13.** I am unable to give a satisfactory answer to these questions.
- 14.** In a plan for the re-organization of the Native Army, which I have submitted for the consideration of the Governor General, I have suggested that Corps of the Irregular portion of the Army may be with advantage reduced to 400, and if such be the case, there would be no objection to their being raised and recruited in districts not to remain there, but for general service.
- 15.** If Corps should be stronger than 400, I then think a counterpoise should be preserved by enlistment from several parts of the Country.
- 16.** If not more than 400 they may be so with safety, provided that Corps of different tribes or castes are cantoned together so as to have the counterpoise by Regiments.
- 17.** I think the unanimity with which the Native Army has mutinied should be sufficient to prove the necessity of carefully avoiding a mixing up of castes and tribes in each Company.
- In such a system it is a well-known fact that the Seikhs and Mussulmen became, to a certain extent, converts to Hindooism.
- If castes are not kept distinct in Regiments, they should certainly be so in Companies.
- 18.** I think that as Mussulmen are much more fanatical and dangerous than the Hindoos, they should never exceed one-third of a Regiment. I should propose, therefore, one-third Seikhs, one-third Hill Pathans or Punjabee Mussulmen, and one-third Hindoos of Hindoostan. If the Kareens or Burmese were employed, it would perhaps be expedient to embody them in different Regiments.
- 19.** Under the impression that Police Corps should never be armed, trained or disciplined like Corps of the Army, they might, I think, very advantageously be raised in the Districts in which their employment lies; but Police Corps must, in my opinion, be organized on principles totally different from those on which Corps of the Army are formed.
- 20.** Decidedly not!

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

21.

I think Recruiting Depôts would prove the most efficient means by which good recruits would be obtained.

22.

Police Corps, if kept in the Districts in which they were raised, could recruit for themselves.

23.

I think all recruits for the Army, as far as possible, should be derived from the Countries or Districts under the control of the Government, and then every measure should be taken by which the apprehension of deserters may be ensured.

The rules already laid down by Government regarding the registry of recruits, and for the verification of their Descriptive Rolls, if strictly carried out, contain all that is necessary on this head.

24.

The principles of the rules above alluded to might be made applicable to Police Corps, although, if the latter are recruited in their own Districts, the rules might be a good deal simplified.

28.

In the scheme for re-organization which I have submitted, I have strongly recommended that 500 Natives should be permanently embodied in every European Corps, so that there might be a proportion of one Native to two Europeans in which the Natives would be harmless to do mischief, but at the same time would be most valuable auxiliaries. I will not enlarge upon the many great advantages of this scheme, having detailed them at length in my despatch; but I cannot but again urge the importance and usefulness of the measure upon Government. I cannot in any way recommend that so small a body of Europeans as one or even two Companies should form the portion of a Native Regiment. In this small proportion, the efficiency of the Europeans would, in my opinion, be utterly sacrificed. They would speedily deteriorate in both character and discipline.

29.

The concluding part of the foregoing Para. will be deemed a sufficient reply to this.

30.

I should recommend that the Barracks of the Natives, incorporated with Europeans, as I have proposed, should be situated on the flank of the Europeans.

31.

In the plan I have proposed the Commissariat arrangements need not be interfered with in any way.

32.

Considering the Native Soldiers associated, as I have proposed, with the Europeans, to be thoroughly reliable, I would recommend their being armed with the same weapons as the Europeans.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

33.

All the Irregular Infantry might be armed with the two-grooved rifle or common musket.

34.

In Districts where the population is disarmed, a tulwar would be amply sufficient for a Policeman, with a few fire-arms retained in the Chokey; but where the population remains armed, as in the Peshawur Valley, the Police Corps must be armed with a musket or fuzil.

36.

I can conceive no dress better suited to the Native Army than the present costume of the whole of the Punjab Force, which consists of a loose coat and pantaloons of linen or drill dyed kakee for the summer, and a suit of drab cloth or "burruck" for the winter.

37.

I believe this arrangement would prove eminently successful. The permanent association of the Native with the European Soldier would be productive of the best results, as a proof of which, one need only look back to the excellent feeling which sprung up between European and Native Corps after being brigaded together for a long period in Affghanistan. I have already recommended that the proportion of two Europeans to one Native should be adopted in incorporating the two races, and I still think this the best calculated to ensure a reliable and efficient organization.

38.

I don't think that sufficient analogy to the proposed arrangement exists in the association of European Artillerymen with Gun Lascars and Native Drivers to draw any inference as to the results of its operation. But the Peshawur Light Horse—a Corps organized under my own orders and superintendence—affords excellent illustration of what may be expected from the admixture of the European and Native Soldiers. This Corps consists of three Troops, two of which are European and the third Native, the latter being composed of men of the Punjab and of the Peshawur and Hazara Districts, trained in every way as Dragoons. I may confidently say that this Corps is as fully efficient as one wholly European.

The European finds the Native a valuable help-mate and is kind to him, while the Native is proud in being associated with the European and emulates him in every thing. The most cordial feeling exists between the two races.

39.

I think the Natives should be placed on the flanks of the Europeans.

40.

Highly favorable.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 41.** Neither in peace nor in war do I see any obstacle in carrying out the arrangement. On the contrary, I believe in all times and under all circumstances, it will be found highly advantageous to the Service.
- 42.** A spirit of confidence or self-reliance on the part of the Native Troops would be, in my opinion, fraught with danger to the State ; every effort, therefore, should be made to check the growth of such a feeling, and nothing would do this more effectually than by keeping a smaller proportion of Natives than that of Europeans in each mixed Regiment.

MAJOR-GENERAL JAMES BELL, COMMANDING PEGU DIVISION.

MADRAS INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** Mahomedans, Teloogoos, Tamils, Mahrattas, Brahmins, Pariah ; the three last comparatively few.
- 2.** From all in the Madras Presidency, I have known Recruiting parties sent into the Districts of Bengal or Hindoostan, but not for many years past.
- 3.** None that I am aware of ; all that are thoroughly fit for the ranks are taken and enrolled, whatever their caste may be.
- 4.** I am not aware of any excepting Rohillas, a very numerous class in the Hyderabad Territories ; they are a strong, able-bodied race of men ; if disciplined, would, I have no doubt, make good Soldiers.
- 5.** There are now Recruiting Depôts ; but hitherto the practice has been to enlist men either through the agency of friends in the Regiment, or to send Recruiting parties into the Districts.
- 6.** None whatever. When a man is enlisted, he is enlisted on the Rolls of the Regiment without any other record.
- 7.** The only precaution is to make sure of the man offering himself being of good character, for which his friends readily become responsible.
- 8.** None as far as I know regarding the Madras Army.
- 9.** "I Private, do solemnly affirm, in presence of Almighty God, that I will serve the Government with truth and loyalty, and that I will

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

faithfully obey the orders of all Officers set over me. I do also further affirm that I will never abandon these colors, and that I will defend them with my life."

10.

I am not aware that there has ever been any other form.

11.

I cannot suggest any thing that would embrace more than the present oath.

12.

I am not aware of any.

13.

None.

14.

No, I think the more general the better.

15.

Certainly.

16.

Certainly not.

17.

I think all should stand as they do on the Rolls.

18.

Say the Corps is 800 bayonets, the proportions should be—

Mussulmen	...	...	...	...	...	...	300
Tamil and Teloogoo	...	...	..	...	...	...	400
Other Tribes	...	...	...	...	...	...	100

19.

I think no restriction is advisable, though too many should not be taken from any one place.

20.

The present plan has been found to answer so well that it would be a pity to interfere with it.

21.

The order is not to recruit, excepting through the Depôts, of which there are three;—one at Ellore, a second at Trichinopoly, and the third at Vizagapatam,

22.

I am not prepared to give an answer to this.

23.

I do not think any such precaution is necessary beyond giving any aid in their power to Recruiting parties sent into their Districts.

24.

I am not prepared to offer an opinion as regards Police Corps, there being none in the Madras Presidency.

25.

This could not be done without great additional expense, and I think the Madras Presidency affords as good a field for recruit as any other tropical Country.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

28.

This I do not think would answer ; they would have no habits or feelings in common, and such an arrangement would, I have no doubt, be regarded by the Natives with jealousy, as implying suspicion of their loyalty to the State.

31.

They certainly would, and require so many separate Commissariat Establishments.

33.

Percussion arms ; perhaps ten men per Company might have the Enfield Rifle, although this should first be well considered in reference to certain contingencies.

34.

This would depend on the organization of such Corps.

35.

I think they do.

36.

I think the tunic, which has been sanctioned, is all that could be desired ; the only other alteration that I could wish to see is the turban ; but the men seem so attached to the one now in use that it would not be advisable to make it now without the fullest consideration, and then only under the recommendation of a mixed Committee of experienced European Officers.

37.

I think they should be kept, as they are, entirely separate. If together, the Natives would be looked upon and used as the mere drudge of the European ; they would never cherish that feeling of pride which is so essential to the smartness and efficiency of the Soldier.

38.

No, I do not.

40.

I think not. Natives regard European Regiments with all the respect as Soldiers that appears to be necessary ; any amalgamation beyond having a due proportion of European to Native Troops would, I think, soon direct many suspicions and bad feelings on the part of the latter.

41.

Not, I think, to the advantage of the Public Service. They would feel the inferiority from the way they would be looked down upon in times of peace, and that being the case, it would be impossible to hope for much from them as auxiliaries in time of war.

42.

The more a spirit of self-confidence be instilled into the Native Soldier, the more efficient he will be. The reverse would,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

I think, be the case were the plan of auxiliary Native Battalions to be established.

MAJOR-GENL H. G. ROBERTS, COMMANDING RAJPOOTANA FIELD FORCE.
BOMBAY INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Hindoostanees, Mahrattas and Mahomedans Of the first a large proportion are Brahmins, the remainder Rajpoots, Herdsmen and Cultivators. Amongst the Mahrattas are many Brabmins, the remainder principally Cultivators. The Mahomedans of India who enlist are invariably of the Soonee persuasion. Besides the above, there are, in most Regiments, Purwarries, Moochees and some Jews.
2. The Hindoostanees are principally recruited in the Provinces of Oude, Delhie and Allahabad. The Mahrattas are from the Concan, the Southern Mahratta Country, the District of Sattara, some from Candeish, and a few from the neighbourhood of Poona. The Mahomedans are recruited in all parts of India. The Purwarries are from the Concan and Deccan, as also the Moochees and Jews.
3. None by the Regulations.
4. Beloochees and Seikhs are admitted in very limited numbers, which might be increased with advantage to the Service.
5. Officers Commanding Regiments send Recruiting parties to the Districts from which they wish to draw recruits. None other but Regimental agency is employed.
6. The Recruit's Registry is filled up from his own description. He is then taken before the Patell of his Village, who verifies the Registry. The Patells of Villages are bound to keep a Registry of all men who enlist from their Villages.
7. None further than ascertaining by examination that they are fit for the Service, and the security of relations that they are of good character.
8. The only alteration I would propose would be the exclusion of the Poorbeeahs, and an increased enlistment of Seikhs and Beloochees.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

9.

I A. B., Private in Regiment Native Infantry, do swear that I will not abandon these colors, but always defend them to the utmost of my power, that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every way behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful Servant to the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War, which have been read to me.

10.

Probably from the period of the Articles of War first being put in force.

11.

Experience has shown that no form of oath is binding ; but as it is necessary that an oath should be ministered, in order that the contract of service should be legalised, the present form of attestation will suit as well as any other.

12.

I believe not. Tribes follow trades and professions peculiar to themselves, and seldom quit them.

13.

Yes, it consists of 10 Companies, has three European Officers and a Surgeon, 20 Native Officers, 50 Havildars, 50 Naicks, 20 Drummers, and Fifers, and 800 Privates, with usual establishment. It is composed of Mahomedans, Purwarries and other low caste men, who are drawn from Bombay, Surat and Concan.

14.

No ; the course, in my opinion, is decidedly objectionable. Police are the only Corps that should be so raised.

15.

There cannot be too wide an area for recruiting. There should be as great diversity of creeds and races collected in a Regiment as it is possible to make.

16.

Certainly not.

17.

Certainly not. Races should be mixed up in Companies as well as in Regiments. I have often seen a Brahmin stand long in the ranks between a Purwarrie and a Moochee. I would treat all Soldiers according to their value as Soldiers without any reference to their castes.

18.

There should be as many tribes or castes as recruits may be procurable from, and each should be well-balanced, including Jews and Christians.

19.

Recruits for the line should be enlisted throughout the Country. Police Corps would be more efficient if recruited in the Districts where they are intended to serve. They should be encouraged to have their families with them.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 20.** No, they should be kept distinct.
- 21.** The same as at present in existence in Bombay. Recruiting parties detached from Regiments under the orders of the Commanding Officer.
- 22.** The same description of agency.
- 23.** The Local Authorities should be bound to keep a Registry of all men recruited from their particular Districts.
- 24.** Police Recruits should be registered in a similar manner to those of the Line.
- 25.** I cannot speak of the qualifications of Natives of other tropical Countries.
- 26.** My experience does not enable me to say.
- 27.** The appointment of Recruiting Officers.
- 28.** Certainly not.
- 29.** Answered above.
- 30.** With my views, none would be requisite.
- 31.** Such an arrangement would require an increased Commissariat Department, but need not necessarily complicate it.
- 32.** I would not recommend such Companies; but if they are raised, they should be armed with the Enfield Rifle.
- 33.** With nothing superior to the present musket.
- 34.** With percussion fusil.
- 35.** I think not.
- 36.** A loose tunic with collar; pantaloons very loose over the hips and loins.
- 37.** It does not suit my views, that there should be any association between European and Native Corps.
- 38.** I object to Native Drivers or Native Lascars. They might produce the most disastrous consequences to us by their infidelity. Half castes or Native Christians would not be objectionable.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 39.** I would have no such association.
- 40.** Answered above.
- 41.** It would be objectionable and embarrassing in every way.
- 42.** The Native Troops should be trained apart from Europeans. They should be taught self-reliance, as without it Soldiers are worthless.

BRIGDR.-GENL. JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF, SCINDE
IRREGULAR HORSE.

BOMBAY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** Nearly all the races, tribes, &c., of the Bombay Presidency, with the exception of Parsees ; and a considerable proportion of those of Hindoostan Proper.
- 2.** All the Districts of the Bombay Presidency, and from Hindoostan Proper.
- 3.** Yes ; occasionally enlistment has been ordered to be confined to certain races and districts.
- 4.** I think it would be far the best proceeding to take no notice of any questions regarding race, tribe, &c., but to entertain men with consideration of their individual fitness.
- 5.** No special agency ; the business is managed by Regimental Commanding Officers.
- 6.** None that I am aware of.
- 7.** Ditto ditto.
- 8.** I would leave all such arrangements wholly to the Commanding Officers, and enlist men solely with respect to individual fitness.
- 9.** I have not a copy of the oath, but it is well known.
- 10.** Since 1798, I believe.
- 11.** I think that all such oaths are bad in principle, and that it would be far better to use none whatever.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

Yes, the greater part of the inhabitants along the whole Coast are such.

13.

Yes, there is a Marine Battalion, which is, I believe, 800 strong. Its ranks are filled with Concanees, Purwarees and Soorties. These men are most efficient for the particular service required of them.

14.

Each Corps should have a permanent Head Quarters, and there, of course, recruits would be generally entertained.

15.

In enlisting men nothing should be considered but their fitness, morally and physically, for the work required of them; all such matters should be left wholly to Regimental Commanders.

16.

No race, tribe, caste, &c., should be acknowledged or attended to in any way; the sole question should be the qualities of the men as men only, and with reference to the performance of the duties on which they were to be employed.

17.

This question is replied to in the last answer. No questions relating to tribe, caste, &c., should be entertained for one moment; such distinction should not be acknowledged at all.

18.

Distinctions of tribes, castes, &c., should neither be attended to or acknowledged in any way.

19.

The Police should be wholly distinct from the Army, and Policemen should not be encouraged or allowed to consider themselves as Soldiers.

Nothing seems to me to be of more mischievous effect than such a practice. I would leave all such questions as to recruiting wholly to the discretion of individual Commanding Officers.

20.

No, assuredly not. Nothing could be more mischievous to both Services; the Policemen should be Constables, and as little combative as possible.

21.

No special agency is employed; none seems necessary, but, on the contrary, its employment would, in my opinion, be hurtful.

22.

I would leave all such matters to be managed by individual Commanding Officers.

23.

None whatever; all should be left to the discretion of Commanding Officers. No regulations, no precautions will suffice to supply the want of intellectual activity on the part of Commanding Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

24.

The only precaution required in all cases is that care should be taken to choose proper European Commanders, to whose discretion all details should be left.

25.

The only question with regard to the entertaining men in the Service should be, whether they are fit for the Service or otherwise. All recruits should be considered as men only without any acknowledgment of differences with respect to country, religion, tribe, caste, &c.

26.

Answered above.

27.

All recruiting arrangements should be left wholly to Commanding Officers.

28.

No; a Native Indian Soldier should never be associated, if possible, with any Europeans but gentlemen. He should, as far as it can possibly be managed, never see an European in any but a superior position, none not possessing higher and nobler attributes than his own.

29.

None, but the utterly degraded; the very offscourings of Eastern society would take service under such an arrangement, which, in my opinion, would prove utterly ruinous to our power.

31.

Helplessly so; but if the arrangements were attempted, there would be an end to our Indian Empire at once.

33.

All Infantry should be armed alike, with short double-barrelled small-bored rifles.

34.

This must depend wholly on the particular work to be done. The Police in the towns are best armed with sticks only.

35.

There are no advantages whatever to be counter-balanced. The dress and equipments of our English Soldiers are ludicrously absurd. The dress and accoutrements of the London Fire Brigade is probably the best model for the Soldier's equipment. Certainly the only principle which can in such matters be wisely adopted is to study the bodily comforts, protection, and freedom of action of the men, without the least regard to any thing but power and efficiency.

36.

The best dress for a Soldier in India is a loose broad cloth tunic with plenty of pockets in it like a shooting coat, loose cloth trousers to button round the ankle, and a good cotton cloth pugree. In the hot season, in the day time, light cotton

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

clothing, of the like make, should be adopted ; pipe-clay knapsacks and cross-belts should be wholly abolished.

37.

This arrangement would answer admirably, if the Commanding Officer of the European Regiment was a man who understood how to treat properly respectable Natives, and if he felt a pride in his Native Soldiers, otherwise it would signally fail, and at best is quite unnecessary.

38.

No! The Gun Lascar arrangement is excellent ; but the Lascar is considered and treated wholly as an inferior being, and such treatment would exclude from our ranks all the best Soldiers in India. The men of the Scinde Irregular Horse always fraternize most readily with English Soldiers, wherever and whenever they meet each other, and they associate on terms of *perfect equality*. I have known a Sowar knock a stout European down with his fist when the man had been insolent to him, and yet neither party made any complaint ; but their comrades on each side pronounced all fair, and the men shook hands over it, and by way of proving restored friendship, the English Soldier handed over to the Mussulman his short clay pipe to smoke, which he did readily, and they passed it backwards and forwards from mouth to mouth without the least scruple. This is a most common practice among them when they meet European Soldiers, yet they are perfectly good Mussulmans, and are highly respected by all classes of Natives. They delight in taking care of English Soldiers whenever they require their aid, and they take care of a drunken European as if he were one of their own children. They conduct themselves very much like the French Zouaves.

39.

The arrangement seems objectionable, wherefore this question need not be entered on.

40.

There is no real strength which is not founded on national law. Both our European and Asiatic Soldiers will always be more efficient and most faithful in proportion as we strive more and more to cultivate their individual powers as men, and to make them respect themselves.

42.

It is certain that all Soldiers should be trained to habits of self-reliance as much as possible, and it is quite clear to me that with properly selected Officers, and with a proper organization, our Native Indian Army may be made as powerful, as true, as completely trustworthy, as any Europeans on earth. Nothing has failed us now except our own foolish work. We have persisted, for a long series of years, in opposing every law of nature in our treatment of our Asiatic Soldiers, and having systematically

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

destroyed health and living force throughout our Army, we need not be surprised that it has fallen to pieces.

Had we striven to cultivate and to develop living power instead of crushing it under blind regulation, all would have been sound, healthy and strong; all would soon become so now if true principles were adopted.

I annex a scheme for the re-organization of the Native Indian Army which, in my opinion, cannot fail of complete success if adopted at once.

BRIGDR.-GENL. JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF, SCINDE
IRREGULAR HORSE.

SCINDE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

All the races and tribes of the Country, except the Hindoos of Scinde, who never bear arms. There is also a mixture of all classes of men from other Countries in the ranks of the Police.

2.

All the neighbouring Countries and Provinces.

3.

No.

4.

No; individual fitness alone has been considered; no objections are even made on the score of tribe, caste, &c.

5.

The candidates offer themselves; no agency is requisite.

6.

No special precautions are adopted or found requisite; the usual registry, &c., take place.

7.

None.

8.

Ditto.

9.

None used in the Scinde Horse or in the Local Corps that I am aware of.

11.

All such oaths are futile, and tend to induce the recruits to suppose that it is only an oath which binds him to truth. I hold all such practice in utter contempt, and have never adopted or permitted them in the Scinde Horse, but have rather endeavoured to make the men feel, that nothing can be more true than truth, nothing more faithful than fidelity. If a Soldier be base enough to rebel against his Officer, he will not be bound by any oath.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

There are great numbers of Fishermen and Boatmen in Scinde They are a fine race of men, but as yet they have never enlisted, they are much attached to home.

13.

No such Corps in Scinde.

14 to 17.

Every Infantry Corps should have a permanently fixed Head Quarters, which should never be changed, and there all recruiting should be carried on, the recruits being entertained without the least regard to race, tribe, caste, &c., &c., or to any considerations but those of individual character and qualifications. In time the very best recruits are those born and bred in the Regiments, and all the men's families settle at Regimental Head Quarters wherever their Native Country may be.

18 and 19.

Nothing can give greater strength and security than this arrangement. Under it, the Corps proceeds on service with full confidence that their families are left in the enjoyment of every comfort and protection, and that they are well cared for, however long the absence of the Regiment, and however distant the service on which it may be employed.

Pensioners should be mustered with their Regiments, and reside at Regimental Head Quarters, and when the Regiment might proceed on service, an Officer and a small Detachment should always be left at Head Quarters.

No difference of tribe, caste, &c., should ever be acknowledged ; individual fitness should alone be considered.

20.

No. The Policemen should never be taught to look on themselves as Soldiers ; they should not be combative.

21.

No special agency is required.

22.

I would leave all such matters wholly to Commanding Officers.

23.

None.

24.

None required.

25.

No.

26.

Arrangements altogether objectionable.

27.

Ditto ditto.

28.

Certainly not.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 29.** The arrangement is utterly bad in principle ; it is therefore useless to discuss details.
- 30.** Ditto ditto.
- 31.** Hopelessly so.
- 33.** All Infantry Soldiers should be armed with short double-barrel rifles.
- 34.** According to the work Scinde required of the men in each particular locality ;—the Rural Police with common muskets ; the Town Police with staves.
- 35.** There are no advantages whatever ; the disadvantages are very great. This question is answered in detail above.
- 36.** Ditto ditto.
- 37.** Answered above.
- 38 to 42.** All these questions are answered above.

SCHEME FOR THE RE-ORGANIZATION OF THE INDIAN ARMY, BY BRIGADIER
GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.

The Queen of England formally to assume the style and title of Empress of India, and to be proclaimed accordingly.

The Armies of the several Indian Presidencies to be henceforth styled the Royal Armies of India.

In each of these Armies, the whole of the European Officers of the Cavalry and Infantry, and the European Officers of the Artillery and Engineers, above the rank of Colonel, to be formed into one general gradation list, in which, under ordinary circumstances, all will rise by seniority.

Rank in this list to be the only permanent rank, all Regimental and other rank being temporary only, and to continue only so long as Officers may be serving with Regiments, or be otherwise employed in a Military capacity.

In case of Officers being promoted for good service, &c., by the Queen, they are to take their places in the general gradation list according to the dates of their promotions,

and are to enjoy every advantage exactly as if they had risen to such places by seniority only. This general gradation list to be styled the "unemployed list." All the Officers borne on it, who may hold no special appointments, will reside in India at such places as the Government may direct, but will have no public functions to perform.

A fourth Presidency, to be styled the North-West Presidency, and a fourth Army to be formed, our present Bombay and Bengal Armies together being divided into three equal parts for this purpose.

Ultimately the whole Establishment of European Officers may probably be somewhat less than at present; but under the proposed arrangements the number of Officers in the whole general list of each Army can readily be adjusted in practice to meet the demands of the public service; when these shall have been correctly ascertained, no further changes will probably be requisite.

For an Army of the strength of the present Army of Bombay, the following Establishments might be proper :—

Battalions or Regiments.	Colonels.	Lieutenant-Colonels.	Captains.	Lieutenants.
Artillery 5	5	10	50	50
Engineers 4	4	8	40	40
Cavalry 3	3	6	30	30
Infantry 33	33	66	330	330
Total 45	45	90	450	450

Generals... .. 5	} The ranks of Major and Ensign to be abolished.
Lieutenant-Generals 10	
Major-Generals ... 15	

The several ranks of Officers, while unemployed in India, to receive pay as follows :—

General... ..	Rupees	1,500	per mensem.
Lieutenant-General	"	1,200	" "
Major-General	"	1,000	" "
Colonel	"	600	" "
Lieutenant-Colonel	"	400	" "
Captain	"	300	" "
Lieutenant	"	200	" "

These rates of pay to be allowed to Officers wherever residing by permission in India, and the like number of pounds per annum to be allowed to each when absent from India on leave to Europe or elsewhere.

The option of retiring on full pay of the rank attained to in the general list to be allowed after thirty years, and on half pay after twenty years.

Leave of absence to be granted at the discretion of the Local Governments.

Subscriptions to Military and all other Funds to cease to be compulsory.

A distinct and separate Civil Service to be prospectively abolished.

Officers, while unemployed or employed in Civil capacities, are not to be in any way subject to the authority of the Commander-in-Chief of the Army, or to Military rule or etiquette.

All candidates appointed to the Indian Service to be educated at a Military College in England, and to reside at such College for at least two years, and not more than four years.

The minimum age for admission to be fourteen, and the maximum eighteen years.

The course at the College to include full instruction in Mechanical and in Physical Science generally, and in Political Economy, also Riding, Rifle Practice, and Hardy Exercises.

The residence at the College to be free of all pecuniary charge to the Cadet, unless he declined proceeding to join the Service in India in due course, in which case, to cover all cost to the State, he should pay at the rate of £100 per annum for the period during which he has resided at College.

From the general list formed as above-mentioned, Officers are to be selected for every species of public employment, Civil and Military.

For each Native Infantry Regiment the establishment of English Officers may be as follows :—

1 Colonel	... ..	Rupees	600	per mensem.
1 Lieutenant-Colonel	... ..	"	400	" "
2 Captains, (to be each Adjutant and Quarter Master)	... ..	"	300	" "

The pay assigned to each being in every case Staff pay, to be drawn in addition to the pay due to each according to his rank in the general list. But though an Officer may hold a lower rank in the general list than that which is assigned to his position in a Regiment or in other Military employment, the temporary rank is always to hold good for precedence and command during the period of employment.

For the Cavalry, the like Establishment of Officers may be allowed, with one hundred Rupees extra pay to each rank, to cover the cost of horses and other expenses.

FOR A BRIGADE OF ANY STRENGTH.

						<i>Staff Pay.</i>		
1	Major-General	...	...	...	...	Rupees	1,000	per mensem.
1	Captain, Major of Brigade	...	...	...	...	"	400	" "

FOR A DIVISION.

1	Lieutenant-General	...	...	..	...	Rupees	3,000	per mensem.
1	Lieutenant-Colonel, Adjutant-General	...	.....			"	400	" "
1	Lieutenant-Colonel, Quarter-Master General	..	...			"	400	" "
1	Captain, Aide-de-Camp	...	...	...	.....	"	300	" "
1	Major-General, Adjutant General of the Army	...				"	1,500	" "
1	Major-General, Quarter-Master General	...	.....			"	1,500	" "
1	Colonel, Deputy Adjutant General	...	...	..		"	500	" "
1	Colonel, Deputy Quarter-Master General	...	.....			"	500	" "

Proper Office Establishment, &c, to be allowed to Commanding and Staff Officers, Company and Troop allowances and contracts as usual.

All Officers, when absent on leave beyond the Division in which they may be serving, are to receive unemployed pay only, and if other Officers act for them when absent even within the Division otherwise than on duty the Officer, acting for the absentee, is to receive his Staff pay in addition to his own.

Officers of the rank of Captain in the general list are to be considered eligible for selection to fill any of the Regimental ranks or other appointments. Lieutenants on the general list are not to be considered eligible for higher Regimental or other Military appointments than that of Lieutenant-Colonel.

At their own request, and with the approval of the Regimental Commanding Officer, unemployed Officers may be attached to do duty with Regiments or Departments without extra pay.

The recommendations of Officers Commanding Regiments with respect to the appointment of Officers to fill vacancies in their Corps or to their removal therefrom to the unemployed list, in consequence of proved incapacity, &c, are to be attended to; all enlistments, discharges, promotions to, and reductions from all ranks, of Native Officers, and Soldiers, are to rest with the Colonels of Regiments, and are to be signified by them with reasons, &c, if necessary in Regimental Orders.

Articles of War for Native Indian Troops to be entirely abolished.

Colonels Commanding Native Indian Regiments are to have full Magisterial authority over all ranks of Natives of India in their Regiments, followers as well as Soldiers, such powers to extend to the award and infliction of imprisonment with hard labor for a period of seven years without the confirmation of higher authority being required; to

imprisonment for fourteen years, subject to the confirmation of the General Officer Commanding the Brigade ; to transportation and capital punishment, subject to the confirmation of the General Officer Commanding the Division.

Regimental Lieutenant-Colonels and Captains are likewise to exercise Magisterial powers under the control of the Colonels Commanding their Regiments, and to such extent as he may think proper to authorize.

In all cases involving the award of a graver punishment than three months' imprisonment with hard labor, the infliction of corporal punishment above twenty-five lashes, or of a fine above 50 Rupees, regular proceedings of the trials are to be recorded in full, to be laid before the General Officer Commanding, when required.

Cases of less serious nature may be dealt with summarily, on due investigation, by the Commanding Officer at public Regimental Orderly Room. A record of all such proceedings is to be entered in a proper book kept for that purpose, and preserved among the Regimental records for the inspection of General Officers.

Colonels of Regiments are to be held strictly and solely responsible to their superior Officers and to the State, but not to the Native Indian Soldiers, for the propriety of all such proceedings.

Permanent Head Quarters to be established for each Native Indian Regiment, and complete Carriage for every Corps to be always kept up ready for a march at a day's warning.

For the European Infantry the Establishment of Officers per Regiment may be—

1 Colonel... ..	Rupees 600	per mensem.	
2 Lieutenant-Colonels, each	„ 400	„ „	
10 Captains, each	„ 300	„ „	
1 Adjutant	„ 300	„ „	} To rank above the Lieutenants.
1 Quarter Master	„ 300	„ „	
10 Lieutenants, each	„ 200	„ „	

The Officers of Artillery and of Engineers each to be borne in a separate list, up to the rank of Colonel inclusive, and thereafter to be incorporated in the general list of the whole Army ; the senior Colonel of Artillery or Engineers, when senior in the Army, being promoted to Major-General as vacancies may occur.

Unemployed pay to be the same for all Arms.

Employed pay, whether Regimental or Ordnance, &c., to be allowed as for the Cavalry.

Each Battalion of Artillery to have Field Officers and Staff as for an European Regiment, the numbers of Captains and Lieutenants being adjusted according to circumstances to the number absent on leave and the number required for the Ordnance Department and other Artillery Staff duties. All Artillery Officers in India to be considered as "employed" when not on leave.

In the Ordnance Department the rank and pay of the various grades to be adjusted as follows :—

Senior Commissary	As Colonel.
Senior Deputy Commissary	As Lieutenant-Colonel.
Commissaries of Division	As Captains.
Assistant Commissaries	As Lieutenants.
Commandant of Artillery—Major-General	1,100 Rupees per mensem.
Major of Brigade—Captain... ..	500 Rupees per mensem.
Inclusive of Horse allowance.	

No difference of pay between Horse and Foot Artillery.

Engineer Officers attached to the Engineer Corps or holding other Military appointments to be on the same footing as Artillery Officers ; but the duties of Engineer Officers in India are generally purely Civil, and their salaries, &c, should be adjusted, specially for each appointment.

In all appointments other than Military, Officers will receive their unemployed Military pay in addition to such emolument as may be assigned to them in their Civil capacities, and when absent on leave, or on any account other than public duty beyond the range of their immediate superior, they will receive only the unemployed rates of pay.

FROM

BRIGDR.-GENL. JOHN JACOB, C. B.,

TO

SIR CHARLES TREVELYAN, K. C. B.

Jacobabad, 24th March 1858.

MY DEAR SIR CHARLES,

I am obliged by your letter of the 3rd February, which reached me to-day.

With respect to the English Army, I almost entirely agree with your doctrines. It is certain that that Army can never be in a sound condition until purchase be wholly abolished.

If this were done, and the free action of public opinion admitted, no member of the Service being prohibited or discouraged from publishing discussions of facts or ideas, a Mutiny Act would scarcely be requisite, and the flower of all England would press forward to fill the ranks, while every man of every grade might be free to retire from the Service whensoever he thought proper.

Let these reforms be made, establish fixed permanent Head Quarters for each Regiment in its Native Country, allow men to rise, as a matter of course, when fit for promotion by merit, from among the private Soldiers to the highest grades, and the business is done.

Each Regimental Head Quarters would be a Military Nursery and School of the best possible description.

The arrangements there should be such as to make every one as comfortable, and as little under unpleasant restraint as possible, consistently with the object in view. There all recruits would be enlisted and trained, invalids and veterans would return there for health and repose, wives and families would reside there in peace and comfort, while their husbands and fathers were on service elsewhere, and the service men could, with the greatest possible ease and advantage, be relieved, in a body, every one, two or three years; the latter period should never be exceeded, I think; at the same time individual members of the Regiment might continually be passing to and fro as convenience or the wants of the Service might require. I need not, however, enlarge on these details, for you will readily perceive how the arrangement would develop itself.

This would make all England warlike and ready to serve; the Soldier would cease to be separated entirely from the Citizen, and the whole male population would probably, in time of need, be ready, able, and willing to take to arms.

As to the Service in India especially, the enormous errors which exist every where, with respect to the true principles of Indian administration, almost appal me. It seems quite impossible to cause a glimpse of the truth to be seen; even the great broad facts which in the administration of this Frontier, and in the construction of the Scinde Irregular Horse, have been shown to all the world for the last ten years and more, are still called Utopian theories of mine, and denied existence even by our next neighbours in the Punjab.

The proposal to hold India by the bodily power of English Soldiers, by force of muscles, instead of by force of brains, which seems at present to be universally accepted, appears to me so enormously unwise, that I feel certain that if the attempt be actually made, it must result in the total ruin of the Empire. Nothing seems more certain than that we can only hold this great Empire of India by our moral superiority. The inhabitants of India are not barbarians. Science, knowledge, social condition, administrative wisdom, &c. &c., were in India, under Akber, very far in advance of the state of things in England under Elizabeth.* No amount of mere brute force could coerce two hundred millions of such people. The influx of large numbers of the lowest class of Englishmen, of ten thousands of English bodies with very little English mind on them, will, more than anything else, tend to destroy the reputation and the reality of our superiority as moral beings; coarse, vice and brutal manners, as the Oriental esteems them, will be then chiefly apparent to the Asiatics as the characteristic attributes of Englishmen, who will thus very soon be hated and despised. The idea of holding India by an Army of English private Soldiers appears to me to be so intensely absurd, that it is difficult to deal with the question with becoming gravity. We could hardly obtain recruits for the Crimea: how can we expect, under the present system, to obtain them for this Country in great numbers? Without the assistance of large numbers of Native Indian Troops, an Army of Europeans could not move or subsist in the Field; the Enemy would only have to keep a little out of the way at first, to leave the Englishmen to follow their own strange devices, and they would all die;—aided by knapsacks, cross-belts and pipe-clay, the sun and the climate would do the business most effectually. Indeed, the helplessness and ignorance of the Officers and men of Royal Troops in this Country, at first, is often ludicrous, while it should be remembered that they would then, under the new arrangements, have no association with the Regular Native Army to aid their inexperience, and that the wants and habits of the Englishmen are entirely different from those of the people of the Country, so that no amount of force would enable them to help themselves to what they required.

Again, seasons frequently occur (I have known many such) when every man is disabled by fever : at such times our Military Force would be annihilated, we having no regular Native Indian Army, and having wilfully placed the people in the position of conquered Enemies, restrained by physical force only, instead of their being as now generally our fast friends.

But after all what is it that has failed us in India, and caused all this outcry for European bodies ?

Not the people, for they have generally remained quiet and even friendly ; not the Native qualities even of the Sepoys in our ranks, who have been murdering our women and children, for those of our Native Indian Soldiers who most nearly remained in the state of raw material, who had imbibed the least of what we have been pleased to call regular discipline, have behaved the best. Our Regulation men have rebelled.

Nothing indeed has failed us, nothing turned against, but our own rotten work.

We have systematically degraded and corrupted the European mind in India, and especially in Bengal have destroyed all its commanding power over the regular Sepoy, while, at the same time, for a quarter of a century past, we have been flattering the Sepoys, and petting them most when they most deserved severe punishment : we have been perpetually telling them that they are the finest fellows on earth, instead of really making them decent people, and raising them in the scale of being. Lastly, we were always afraid to tell the disorderly Bengalees they were wrong, and instead of correcting what was amiss with them, we always forced the other Armies, whose men were true and well-behaved enough, to "assimilate with the practice in Bengal," however absurd such a practice might be.

We can depend absolutely, with certainty and safety, on the power for good which goes out from our own minds, and which we have accumulated in the minds of our Asiatic Soldiers. Such power never has failed and never can fail us at our utmost need ; but if we give forth no such power, we shall find none at our service in the Sepoy when we require it.

Our Regulation system has merely corrupted the raw material of our Native Army, made the men think us afraid of them, and made them strong only for evil. A system equally ill-adapted to the nature of the men would have made murderous and mutinous ruffians even of Europeans, as this has done with the Asiatics.

There are many millions of men among the Natives of India fitted to make as good and faithful Soldiers as any men on earth. There is no fault justly to be found with the raw material.

The men of the Scinde Irregular Horse, Natives of the districts around Delhie, are quite as trustworthy as are European Soldiers ; yet such ignorance prevails with regard to these matters, that even now in organizing my third Regiment, it was actually proposed to alter the construction of the Scinde Horse, to "assimilate it with the practice in Bengal !" The fact is that the system now prevailing in the Service, destroys all healthy growth of mind, wherefore no wisdom is to be found anywhere to be brought to bear

on our Indian administration. It is quite clear to me that the Army of India must be a Native Indian Army, that great numbers of European private Soldiers are not required for India, and would even be injurious to our rule.

What European Troops we have other than Artillery should be massed at certain places where the climate is favorable, and whose position might enable the Troops readily to be despatched to any part of the Empire requiring their presence. The European Regiments permanently belonging to, and forming part of the Indian Armies, should have their Regimental Head Quarters in India.

The seat of the Indian Government should be removed from Calcutta, and established either in Bombay or at Agra. Either place has some peculiar advantages.

A new Presidency should be formed, which should have a separate Government, Army, &c., &c., while the Supreme Government should have no connection with any Presidency in particular.

The new Presidency should be the North-Western Presidency, and it might include the Punjab, Scinde, Cis-Sutledge, Seikh States, Bhawulpore and the Thur, also Delhie and the Districts adjoining. The Indian Presidencies would then be Bengal, Madras, Bombay and Lahore, with the Supreme Government at Agra or Bombay.

Forty thousand European Infantry would be ample for all India. Of these I would quarter ten thousand at Kurrachee, as the best and most convenient Station in all India for European Troops ; five thousand might suffice for the Bombay Presidency, and a like number for Madras ; ten thousand for Bengal, and the remaining ten thousand I would place at Simla.

The whole of the Artillery in India should be European, with the exception of a few Troops and Batteries formed for special service in particular localities where European Troops could not live, such as the frontier of Scinde.

The strength of the Artillery in India should be increased ; all the Native Artillery in the Armies of the three Presidencies should be replaced by Europeans, the Gun Lascars attached to whom should be replaced on their old footing as they were in 1823, a full and complete Company of Gun Lascars being attached to each European Company. These men are most useful, and save the European Artillerymen from fatal exposure and fatigue, while they themselves are not of a class ever to become dangerous to us.

In each Presidency there should be a full Regiment of European Sappers and Miners, all the men of which should be good Artificers, Surveyors, &c., each Company of European Sappers having a Company of Natives attached to, and working with it. Such Corps would be invaluable for the superintendence and execution of public works

For the new Presidency of Lahore, the Artillery might consist of six Battalions of the usual strength, and one Brigade of four Troops of Horse Artillery. These four Troops, with 12 Field Batteries, should always be kept complete, fully horsed, and manned for field service.

The Reserve Artillery might be chiefly posted at Kurrachee and Lahore, at both which places there should be grand Ordnance Depôts.

A Native Army for each Presidency might be formed and organized, as described by me in the printed scheme for the re-organization of the Indian Army, &c.

The total strength of the Native Troops should not, I think, be much reduced.

No alteration as to numbers appears requisite in the Madras Army, and the three Armies of the other Presidencies might about equal in numbers the old Armies of Bengal and Bombây together.

For all internal public duties, such as Jail Guards, &c., a properly organized Police should be employed, something similar to that which has been found to answer so well in Scinde.

The Frontier Field Force so often recommended by me, should be embodied for service in this quarter, and no other Troops are required for Scinde.

Some room should be found for common sense in the Audit Department, and the paralyzing effect of centralization should be partly remedied by a system of local audit.

If these recommendations were followed, and the principles set forth in my letter to Sir J. Lawrence of the 12th December last were acted on, and carried out in practice, our Indian Empire would speedily be brought into the soundest and strongest condition possible.

The greatest dangers to which that Empire is now exposed are the consequences of European violence and folly.

If we attempt to govern by brute force, or by patronizing Christian Priests, Bishops, and Missionaries, we shall inevitably bring about absolute ruin.

It seems to me that to introduce our State religion at all into our rule in the East is a very great and fatal error. The Government of such an Empire, which comprises hundreds of millions of men, holding twenty different faiths and creeds, to which they are attached as to their lives, cannot consistently, with any sort of justice, patronize or acknowledge any one of those creeds rather than another. The only safe, honest and righteous course is, as a Government, entirely to ignore all.

No Priest of any religion should be appointed, patronized, or directly paid by the State. Let private persons, communities or congregations make their own arrangements to provide for their respective spiritual wants, and all will be well, while the most fearful and deplorable mischief must, and will, assuredly ensue from the contrary proceeding.

I am sending to my friend Captain Pelly, now in England, some correspondence, which may, I think, interest you, and I requested that a copy may be made and sent to you. The letters will show you what can be made, under the most difficult circumstances, even of the Hindoostanees of Delhie,—fathers, brothers, and sons of the Sepoys of Bengal.

I hope that you read my letter in reply to Colonel Sykes' remarks in the *Times*. The whole essence of the matter in question consists in the fact that I have been working on those attributes which are common to us, and to the Sepoys as men, and which lead towards the highest moral nature. I have endeavoured to cultivate and to aid in the development of these common attributes, and those in which we differ have retired out of sight.

I have, &c.,
(Signed) JOHN JACOB,
Brigadier General.

BRIGADIER W. HILL, COMMANDING HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

INFANTRY HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Mussulmen, Rajpoots, Chetries and Brahmins, with some portion of Mussulmans and Hindoos from the Deccan; but of the various races in the Infantry, the Hindoostan Hindoo race predominates as three to one.
2. The men composing the Regiments of Infantry in the Hyderabad Contingent are from Hindoostan generally, and they come from the same Districts from whence they are drafted for the late Bengal Army, *viz.*, Oude, Delhie, Rohilcund and Benares, but not below the latter.
3. Officers Commanding Regiments have generally preferred men of high castes in their Regiments to any other; both in studying the appearance of the Sepoys, and from a general belief that they make the best Soldiers; but none have been excluded from other classes.
4. Other races, though not excluded, have not been preferred so much, for the reasons given in the last Paragraph.
5. Ten per cent. of the men proceed yearly to Hindoostan on leave as in the late Bengal Army, and their relations and *bhaie-bunds* have been permitted, by Commanding Officers, to accompany the men on leave back to their Regiments at the conclusion of their leave, and in this manner recruits have been obtained for the Hyderabad Contingent.
6. As recruits are obtained in the manner adverted to in the last Paragraph, no Local Authorities are applied to for a Registry of the men on leaving Hindoostan.
7. None is taken. Their relationship, or being a *bhaie-bund* of the man who knows him, is considered sufficient voucher for his being entertained as a Sepoy.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8.

Orders were issued, at the close of last year, to cease recruiting men from Hindoostan for the Hyderabad Contingent. Commanding Officers were directed to enlist Deccan men, and from any other races which might hereafter afford good material for Soldiers. This is most desirable, so as to prevent any combination in Regiments, as well as to introduce another element in the Commissioned and Non-Commissioned ranks.

9.

"I _____ son of _____, Inhabitant of _____, Town of _____ the Pergunnah of _____, of Sobah, of _____ swear that I will never abandon my colors; that I will march whithersoever I may be ordered to go; that I will obey the orders of my superior with my heart and soul, and without hesitation, and that in every matter I will behave myself as a good and true Soldier."

10.

Ever since the Nizam's Army was disciplined.

11.

Though I have inserted the oath which is now administered to the Infantry of the Hyderabad Contingent, I think it very important that there should be an order of Government directing that it should be thoroughly understood that the Troops of the Hyderabad Contingent are to be employed on general service in all the Provinces under British rule as well as beyond their limits, should the exigencies of the Service require it.

The Troops of the Hyderabad Contingent have not hitherto drawn batta while marching, or while employed on Field Service, which has been a matter of grievance to the men, and I think justly so; and while other Troops in the Field draw batta, the Hyderabad Contingent Troops, even when employed with them, are excluded from drawing any remuneration while marching. This induces men to be discontented, and I think with reason. I would therefore recommend that there should be an order of Government to the effect that, whilst marching or on Field Service, Carriage for the Native Officers and Men should be supplied at the public expense according to a scale to be fixed upon.

12 and 13.

No reply required.

14.

Men should be enlisted from among any races or castes who may offer themselves as willing to be entertained as Soldiers.

15.

This is answered in Paragraph 14.

16.

Certainly not.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

All tribes and castes should be mixed up in each Company of a Regiment, in order that a spirit of rivalry and emulation should be cultivated among the men. That general bond of union as to particular interests and prejudices should not be recognized at all, and by this means I believe a strict discipline will be maintained, when every man in the Regiment will be encouraged to look for promotion by his own merit and good conduct in obtaining the good-will of his Commanding Officer.

18.

Two to one in favor of the Hindoo to the Mussulman ; all other tribes should be enlisted as they offer themselves for service.

19.

The recruiting for the Military should be kept entirely distinct from the Police, as they are under separate Authorities.

20.

Certainly not.

21.

There are men enough and more in the Deccan of various races to supply the Hyderabad Contingent with recruits, and they constantly present themselves at the Stations for enlistment. Should it ever be found necessary, a Recruiting party from a Regiment should be sent into the Country to obtain men.

22.

A distinct agency, as the Regiments for each branch are so totally distinct from each other.

23.

A man who offers himself for a recruit is interrogated by the Commanding Officer of a Regiment as to his Country and connections, and being aided by the Medical Officer in ascertaining his physical fitness for a Sepoy, he is chosen without any further precautions, and none are required.

24.

Similar precautions should be taken with regard to the men who offer themselves for the Police.

25 to 27.

No replies required.

28 to 32.

Ditto.

33.

With the usual Infantry percussion arm.

34.

With the carbine, pouch-belt, pouch and sling bayonet, or sword belt made of leather. The carbine is preferable to the musket, which is too large and unwieldy, whereas a carbine is handy for close quarters when a Policeman is required to quell tumults and petty disturbances in the Villages.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

35.

No reply required.

36.

With the loose tunic; each man to have two—one made of broad cloth for cold and wet weather, the other of a light or cotton fabric. The pouch and belt and waist bayonet belt to be made of tanned leather. Pipe-clay to be abolished as a useless expense, as it ruins the leather. The newly-invented Military ventilating helmet is the best head-dress for the European Officer, and the Kilmarnock forage cap, now in use in the Hyderabad Contingent, is well-suited for the Sepoy.

37 and 38.

No replies required.

39 to 42.

Ditto.

BRIGADIER W. HILL, COMMANDING HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

INFANTRY OF THE MADRAS ARMY,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Mussulmen, chiefly from South Arcot and adjacent parts; Telegoos, from the Northern Division; Tamulians, from the Malabar Coast, Tranquebar; Pariahs, a low and numerous class, also Native Christians, many of whom are now Sepoys in the Native Army. There are from 40 to 50,000 Native Christians in the District of Tinnevely, from among whom extensive drafts might be made, to introduce more of this particular class into the Native Infantry.

2.

From all the Districts and Divisions of the Presidency of Madras South of the River Kistnah.

3.

Many Regiments in the Infantry have for many years always recruited from certain Districts. Commanding Officers have used their own discretion in obtaining drafts of men either from the Northern or Southern Division of the Army; but no particular races or castes have been excluded by order. For some years past, since the Stations of Cuttack, Saugor, Mhow and Jubbulpore have been occupied by Madras Troops, Hindoostan men have been entertained, where the Regiments were stationed.

4.

East Indians might, with advantage, be drafted into Native Regiments of the Line, and even incorporated in them; but they should be kept as a separate Company in the Regiment they may enlist into.

5.

It has been customary for Commanding Officers to recruit for themselves according to their own discretion and judgment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6.

No precautions are observed, generally speaking. The Commanding Officers send Recruiting parties into the Districts, from which Regiments have been in the habit of getting drafts of men. The families and connections of the recruits are usually known to the Recruiting party. Physical fitness, however, is generally what is looked for in recruits, but no registry is taken.

7.

Such men as are to be entertained are made to appear before the Medical Officer of the Regiment, who reports upon their physical fitness for the duties of a Soldier. If the man is healthy, he is enlisted, and no other precautions are taken.

8.

Recruiting has become somewhat difficult of late years in the Madras Presidency ; and it is very difficult, at the present time, to obtain recruits to complete the establishment of Infantry Corps from 800 to 1,000 strong, agreeably to a recent Order of Government.

The difficulty of procuring men may be accounted for, first, by the Country South of the Kistnah having become settled down, the inhabitants of this part of the Country have not been engaged in war as their countrymen have in Upper India, and it may be said they are losing their warlike habits, for seldom is an armed man seen South of the Kistnah or in the Northern Division of the Presidency of Madras. Another cause, I think, is the great demand for labor of all kinds in consequence of emigration, which has annually drawn away thousands from the South.

The great difficulty of even procuring men as "Dooly Bearers" in the Commissariat Department, has recently been reported to the Government of Madras, though formerly there was not the slightest difficulty ever found in procuring this class of men for the use of the Army.

With a view to the future improvement in the composition of the Native Army, I would suggest that one Company in each Regiment of Infantry should be East Indians. This is an increasing and influential race in the Madras Presidency, and if well-fed and clothed, they would be found to be a good substitute for the Europeans. Native Christians likewise from Tinnevely might be drafted into Regiments in larger numbers than they are at present.

9.

" I Private, do solemnly affirm, in the presence of Almighty God, that I will serve the Government with truth and loyalty, and that I will faithfully obey the orders of all Officers set over me. I do also further affirm, that I will never abandon these colors, and that I will defend them with my life."

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

Since it has been an organized Army.

11.

The oath prescribed in the Articles of War for the Native Army is the same in the Presidencies of Bengal, Madras and Bombay, and it is a singular coincidence that the present form of oath has bound the Native Army of Madras to go wherever their services may be required, which was just the reverse of the feeling throughout the late Bengal Army.

It appears to me, however, desirable that it should be clearly specified, and fully understood, by every recruit, who may hereafter be enlisted, that it should be for general service in any part of the British dominions, or beyond them, when necessary, either by sea or land, as the case may be.

12.

The late Captain Biden, Master Attendant at Madras, had constant applications made to him by destitute East Indians to send them to sea. As an experiment, a scheme was proposed by this gentleman, and private contributions were raised at Madras to support these youths. As many as 70 or more were thus maintained, and a Naval School was formed by Captain Biden; as occasions offered, the young men were embarked on ship board, and apprenticed for long voyages.

On their return to Madras, the Committee of the Naval School ascertained that the muscular development and growth of these Eurasians clearly proved that, when properly fed and clothed, they possessed equal physical strength and frame with the Europeans; and that they were fully as capable to endure hardships. The Madras Government did not consider it expedient to support this novel scheme; and as the Bombay Government declined to receive any of these young men for their Naval Service, on the ground that they had an abundant supply of East Indians for employment in that Presidency, the Naval School was at length abandoned.

13.

There is no Marine Corps at Madras; but the previous answer will show that, if thought advisable, one could be raised of East Indians.

14.

No Regiment should be recruited in any one particular place.

15.

Recruit without reference to Districts; safety will be found more in a mixture of *racés*, than having regard to different castes.

16.

Certainly not; unless whole Corps of East Indians should be raised; and as they form so numerous a body in the Presidency

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

of Madras, this might be done, and it would be of great advantage to entertain them if they are fed and clothed exactly as Europeans.

17.

The men of every Company should be mixed up as much as possible. This will infuse a spirit of emulation, and prevent any combination for evil, among each class or caste, in the different Companies.

18.

In the Madras Presidency, the Mussulmen recruiting fields are gradually failing ; many of this class are becoming cultivators, while those obtainable are chiefly inhabitants of Cities, consequently the worst men who can be entertained, as they are sure to have imbibed fanatical prejudices, so that I would not recommend more than one-fourth of the Army to be Mussulmen, and as great a mixture of other races and castes as possible.

19.

An organized Police Corps, especially when mounted, will require very good men, and they should be entertained wherever they can best be had, irrespective of the wants of the Army ; and there is no reason why they should not be taken from the same Districts as the recruits who are obtained for the Army.

20.

They should be quite distinct, as they will be separate from the Army.

21.

A recent order of the Madras Government has sanctioned " Recruiting Depôts " in various parts of the Presidency in lieu of Régiments recruiting their own men. This, I am of opinion, is a great mistake ; and it would be well to abolish the Depôts ; they are unnecessary and expensive. It is for the interest of the Officer Commanding the Depôt to look to numbers and not to quality in selecting men ; as Commandants are paid in proportion to the number of men they entertain at Head Quarters ; it should be left entirely to Commandants of Corps to recruit for their own Régiments, and they should be allowed to send out small parties whenever they require men, and this without reference.

22.

A distinct agency.

23.

No precautions seem to me necessary. The answer to question 6 shows the method adopted to enlist recruits, which answers well.

24.

It would be better, if possible, only to enlist men for the Police whose characters are known to the Local Authorities.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

25.

The only races qualified for the Military service, are the Malays and the South Africans. There is a difficulty in entertaining Malays, even for the Ceylon Rifles, and none could be expected, therefore, for the Madras Army. Sierra Leone would be a wide recruiting field for the Army; and an agency, especially for that purpose, would obtain such certain annual supplies of recruits as would, I conceive, render it very advisable to raise a few Corps for the Madras Presidency of this particular race, as they are known to be excellent Soldiers, expert marksmen, and would doubtless be true to the Government at all times, as they would enjoy the same advantages of pay and pension as the Native Army are entitled to.

26.

This question is replied to in the last Paragraph.

27.

An agency should be established at Sierra Leone for the purpose of enlisting men, and a regular Depot should be formed at Madras, to receive the men on landing, from which they could be drafted to the different Regiments as required. An Officer would be the best agent to employ.

28.

From the experience I have had in the command of Europeans, I am confident that having European Companies in Native Regiments would never answer. The habits and discipline of European Troops are so entirely different from the Native Infantry, and so much tact and experience of the European character are required in maintaining a strict discipline over them, I am quite sure that it would be injurious both to the European and Native Soldier to make the Europeans a component part of a Native Regiment.

29 to 32.

As my opinion has been expressed as opposed to the introduction of Europeans to form a component part of Native Regiments, I need not give any replies to these numbers.

33.

With the percussion musket now in use.

34.

With the carbine, pouch-belt, pouch, sling bayonet, or sword belt, made of brown tanned leather, which is very serviceable. The carbine is preferable to the musket, which is too heavy and unwieldy, whereas a carbine is handy for close quarters, when Police are required to quell tumults and petty disturbances in Villages. A carbine can be held in one hand, while the other is used in collaring a man; and a musket is so heavy, the Policeman would be hindered in doing his work effectually.

35.

It does not counterbalance the disadvantage to the Native Soldier.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

36.

I would recommend an entire change in the uniform of the Native Army. The present dress being an imitation of the European, is inconvenient, and a trouble to the Native, and from its tightness, is much disliked by them. I have heard that it prevents many good men from joining our ranks. A semi-native dress would be the best, and most popular among all the Natives of the Army of Madras as follows—

A turban neatly and uniformly tied,—red would be the most uniform colour ; a red “chupkun” or “ulkalic,” rather short, loosely made, with piping and cuffs, the color of the facings ; a loose sort of Turkish trowsers of woollen or cotton material, according to season ; a pair of shoes or native sandals. The white summer clothing at present in use by Regulation, should be at once abolished, substituting for it the karkee ulkalic, and trowsers in the hot season.

I would recommend that the above clothing should be issued by the Government in the following manner—

Two suits of the karkee clothing one year, and cloth the next with turban.

This would not cost more than the present clothing, and would be a great saving to the Sepoy, who has now to purchase a number of necessaries in addition to his Native clothes, such as white jackets, cotton trowsers, stocks, cap covers, &c., which have helped to ruin the Army, by keeping them constantly in debt to provide those necessaries in addition to their Native clothing. A Sepoy's kit, on joining his Regiment, amounts to 16 Rupees which should be paid for by Government.

I would suggest that the knapsack be abolished, and that each man should provide himself with a coarse canvas bag to carry, at his own expense, any little additional kit he may require, which would be very small, as the dress now recommended would, in a great measure, avoid the necessity for the Sepoy having any private kit.

The Irregular Cavalry, Police and Sebundies, take a pride in their uniform, which is partially Native, and always wear it ; and the Infantry would do the same, if permitted to have the same kind of uniform.

The carpet and cloak should be carried by the men as at present.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The "haversack" should be made of the "karkee" cloth. I believe this proposed costume, if properly introduced, would do more to improve the Military tone and bearing of the Sepoy than any thing else.

37.

I am decidedly of opinion that the proposed combination of an European and an auxiliary Native Regular or Irregular Corps of Infantry, in close and permanent association, is quite impracticable. I speak from the experience of having risen in the Madras Fusiliers, and having Commanded that Regiment, that the most unremitting and undivided attention is required of an Officer in the Command of an European Regiment, and he would have no time to attend to the discipline of an auxiliary Corps

The daily duties connected with the Command are laborious, and very responsible in maintaining strict discipline.

The interior economy of an European Regiment is complicated, and so much tact and judgment are required to enable a Commanding Officer to become acquainted with the habits and character of the men, which includes the moral government of the entire Regiment, that I have known Officers, whose whole previous service had been with Native Corps in the Madras Army, and were well qualified for the Command of a Native Corps, totally fail when put in Command of an European Regiment.

38.

The Artillery arm of our profession is so important in India, that I would not recommend any Natives to be associated with the Europeans.

The Gunners should all be taught to ride, and act as Drivers also.

39.

There is no necessity whatever for the Regiments of European Infantry and the Native Regiments being near each other at all.

40.

The very presence of European Troops in the same cantonment with a Native Regiment will be sufficient at any time to overawe the Natives.

It had been necessary to keep Native Regiments at some of the single Stations, purely because there has been no Military Police in the Country ; but there will be no necessity for this when the Police are organized, and perform those duties which have heretofore fallen upon the Native Army.

I believe it would have a most overawing effect to have larger bodies of European Infantry, in addition to European Cavalry and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Artillery, stationed near each of the largest Cities, *viz.*, Hydrabad, Nagpore, Bangalore ; two Regiments European Infantry, one Regiment Cavalry, two Troops Horse Artillery at each, to keep up that vigilance which has become essential from experience; at each of the other Stations, one European to one Native Regiment; and if the Station is large, two Native Regiments. This would prevent any likelihood of combination on the part of the Native Troops, and there would be such an overawing mass of European Troops, assembled at our largest Cities, as would crush on the instant any rising among the population, should such ever be attempted.

41.

I have given my opinion in Para 37, that it is impracticable to associate an European and Native Regiment under one Commander.

42.

I do not think it desirable, nor do I think it possible, they could acquire such a spirit of confidence and self-reliance, as to enable the Native Troops to act without European support.

I have frequently had Native Troops under my Command during the recent war in Pegu, and in the time of danger, they have no self-reliance, they have no confidence in themselves; they must be led by Europeans. I have found that even a private Soldier placed among Natives has had the desired effect of establishing confidence among them, and that from the Native Officer downward, all have depended upon the European, and I think this feeling of dependence upon Europeans should be encouraged. It is a mistaken notion to suppose that Native Troops will act independently of Europeans, for they never have done so when any difficulties have had to be overcome.

This has been constantly observed in the Field, and there is no doubt that the Native Troops can only act in dependence upon Europeans.

BRIGADIER J. STEEL, COMMANDING AT UMBALLA.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Hindoos, Mussulmans, Seikhs and Goorkhas.

2.

From Behar, Oude, the N. W. Provinces and the Punjab.

3.

Yes. Bunneahs, Kyeths, Naees, Thelees, Tomoolies, Gunneahs, Lodhs, Bhoogwahs, Kahars, Moralls, Kandoos, Mallees, Kuchees, and any others habitually employed in a menial capacity. See Regulations 1855, Page 215, Para. 6.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4. Yes, Kyeths or Writers, Naees or Barbers, Gummarhers or Shepherds, Kuchees or Gardeners, or Cultivators of Vegetables, and some others of the excluded classes, that may be deemed eligible.
5. No particular agency ; occasionally Levies have been raised, but Corps generally obtain recruits through the medium of their own men ; sometimes a Native Officer is detached for the purpose of recruiting.
6. None that I am aware of.
7. The *ipse dixit* of some individual of the Corps as to caste, &c.
8. Corps should be raised and recruited from particular defined Zillahs, and bear the name of that Zillah, and formed from the general class of respectable landholders of those Zillahs both in Oude and the N. W. Provinces, as well as in Behar.
9. The words of the oath are in Regulations of 1855, Page 220. It has been of the same tendency during the present century.
10. See No. 9.
11. I would suggest for the word "*march*," "that I will proceed, " either by land or by sea, wherever I am ordered, and that I will "engage to work at or form entrenchments in presence of an "enemy when required."
12. Yes, Mugs in Chittagong and Arracan, as well as Mussulmans in the Provinces at the mouths of the Ganges.
13. Formerly the two Battalions of the 20th or Marine Regiment N. I, when they took the duties at Penang and the Straits of Malacca, alternately were recruited at Chittagong and Provinces at the mouth of the Ganges bordering on the sea. Previous to 1857 there were seven Foreign Service Corps of the same establishment as the other Corps of the Line, without any difference as to proportion of castes. Their conditions of service are different only in agreeing to go to sea, and this could be extended to any limit ; but the condition must be fully understood at the time of forming the Corps.
14. It would be advantageous, and excite emulation.
15. See above.
16. Yes ; they should be of one race, tribe and caste, as far as practicable. Association creates a fellow-feeling in Corps, which has been

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

found in their quarrels between two Corps; and the *esprit d' Corps* sets aside all thoughts of tribe or caste in such squabbles and fights. To prevent a community of interest likely to lead to union, I would keep each Corps and Detachment as separate and unconnected as possible in every way, as far as every feeling and interest is concerned.

17.

Companies are so much intermingled in the performance of their several duties, that the above answer applies equally to any distribution of tribe or caste in different Companies in the same Corps.

The Seikhs were not exempt from it during the late crisis. To avoid union, I would make them as antagonistic as possible.

18.

One-tenth has usually been the proportion of Mahomedans in each Corps of the Line, and latterly 200 Punjabees, of whom not more than 100 Seikhs were directed to be entertained in each Corps. They would be better in separate Corps, and less likely to unite for any improper purpose. See Regulations 1855, Page 215, Para. 4.

19.

The machinery for raising and recruiting Corps of the Line and Police Battalions, should be as separate as possible for their efficiency. Police Corps should be raised in other districts than those in which they are to be employed, or they will continually be engaged in intrigues about the Courts, instead of attending to their proper duties; even as Jail Guards they will not be so efficient, if in the same Zillah, in the performance of their duties on the prisoners.

20.

There may be exceptional cases; but, as a general rule, it would be objectionable.

21.

Depôts for recruiting could be formed—at Buxar for Corps composed of Bhoghpooreeahs or inhabitants of Behar, at Allygunge for Jats, Boolundshuhur for Googras, Meerut for Mewattis. Rajpoots could also be raised at those Stations as well as at Mynpoorie, and Umritsur for Seikhs, Goozerat for Punjabees, Rawul Pindie for Eusufzyes, Jounpore for Rajcoomars, and any other place where there are distinct and separate tribes of a Military character and taste.

22.

Certainly not, for reasons before given. A distinct agency should be employed.

23.

Through the Putwaries of Villages to testify to the correctness of the location of the individual seeking employment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

24.

The Putwarrie should be called on to certify his identity, but through some separate agency.

25.

Most expedient, and to compose separate Corps.

26.

Malays, Kaffirs, Abyssinians, Mugs.

27.

A Recruiting Depôt at the Cape of Good Hope or Natal, at Aden, and at Malacca and Arracan. The Dutch raised Corps in one Colony for the service of another. They had Malay Corps in Java, and Amboguese Corps for Java, a Javanese Corps for Ceylon, and so on. The Arracan Battalion of Mugs may be considered a Foreign Service Corps, or equivalent to one

28.

Not desirable. The habits of our European Soldiers are not such as to render it advisable to bring them in too close contact with men who differ from them in every feeling and social habit.

29.

Ditto ditto.

30.

Ditto ditto.

31.

Ditto ditto.

32.

Europeans should have the Enfield Rifle in all situations.

33.

With percussion muskets.

34.

Protective Police could be armed with musketoons or cut-down muskets with percussion locks, for Jail guards, Escort duties, &c., but for ordinary Ward and Watch purposes, a spear and bamboo would be adequate. Detective Police should have only a tulwar.

35.

The practice of assimilating Native Corps to Europeans has not been beneficial.

The kakhee now adopted for Europeans should not be allowed to a Native Corps or Police.

36.

With the national colors *a la Zouave*; the coat to be scarlet, and the pantaloons as loose pijjamahs.

37.

See reply No. 28.

38.

A Corps of Native Infantry amalgamated with European Soldiers would be in a different relative position to European Artillery and Gun Lascars.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

39.

See reply No. 28.

40.

The association of a European with a Native Infantry Regiment would not be advantageous. The European character is not sufficiently careful or suspicious, to be of any avail in such a position, and the system would be unfavorable to that vigilance which has become so essential. It would diminish that awe of European Troops which is an element of strength.

41.

In Camp, not very favorably

42.

Any Native Corps worthy of engagement should feel a spirit of confidence, so as not to require the presence of Europeans to enable them to act efficiently.

FROM

BRIGADIER J. STEEL,

Commanding, Umballa,

TO

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL H. M. DURAND, C. B.,

On Special duty with the Governor General.

Dated Umballa, 24th August 1858.

SIR,

I HAVE the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter No. 162, dated the 20th Ultimo, and in reply to submit the following facts that came under my observation in support of the opinions expressed by me in the answers to some of the queries transmitted in my letter of the 6th July last, connected with the Re-organization of the Bengal Army, as proposed in your letter No. 84 of the 16th June last.

In addition to the answers to Para 17 of the first head of enquiry, I would add, I do not think the influence of caste has much to say in the rivalries of Corps. I have known fights of one Regiment with another arising from the merest trifles with individual members, gradually accumulating till nearly the whole Corps became involved, and most violent in abusing and attacking each other with all sorts of weapons, and their determination to screen each other was equally maintained by the same Corps.

In fact in such cases they exhibit as much *esprit d' Corps* as any British Regiment in the Service, without any reference whatever to caste or other distinction.

I was present at a quarrel that took place between two Regiments at Dacca in 1810-11. We, the Officers of the 2nd Battalion 15th Native Infantry, to which I was attached, placed implicit confidence in the reports of our own men, and believed them to

be unjustly accused of misconduct, but were ordered to sleep in the Lines of the Corps and have an hourly roll call, without avail. A Court of Enquiry sat for three weeks, but could come to no conclusion.

Eight months afterwards, I went out on Command, and walking out one evening with an Orderly behind me, I asked him what the disturbance had been about. He observed, with a smile, you had a Court of Enquiry. I said they had ascertained nothing. He said how could they, we were all of one story, and the other Corps were the same, how could they find out any thing? He then, asking me not to say he was my informant, told me the real story. That a recruit of the 15th Native Infantry had been turned out of a house of ill-fame, near a Guard of the other Regiment, by the Sepoys of it. The recruit then went up into the Chowk of the City, where he met with some Sepoys of his own Corps; he told them, and they nine of them went and attacked the offending Sepoys, who again, with increased numbers, drove off our Sepoys, and attacked small parties of our Corps and stragglers, whenever they met them in the City. This was resented by parties of our Sepoys who went out for the purpose, and the fighting went on in that way for the remainder of the day and night, notwithstanding an hourly roll call, for which they returned, and again went out. This state of things was put a stop to when the Court of Enquiry sat.

The Natives of our Army had as high an opinion of themselves and their prowess and capabilities as any Army in the world. When the Light Infantry Volunteer Battalion mutinied in Java in 1816, it became known, on the Court of Enquiry which I superintended, that the men of the Corps had been boasting of their prowess, and one Native Non-Commissioned Officer, in the presence of the whole Court of the Emperor, after showing off some gymnastics, touched the muscle of his arm, holding it up, and said—“That is what maintains the British in India.”

In continuation of my answer to question No. 4, regarding promotions and rewards, I have to add, that in the 62nd Native Infantry, a test was established, before a Sepoy could obtain the position of a Non-Commissioned Officer, that he should be able to put a squad through all the sections of the drill laid down for their instructions, as well as the manual and platoon exercises.

In answer to question No. 8, I would add, the European Non-Commissioned Officers of the Sappers and Miners Corps, when at Meerut, were difficult of control; withdrawn from comrades, having nothing to do all day during the hot weather, not knowing how to pass their time, too frequently resorted to the bottle, were difficult of control, and in consequence of the paucity of Officers present with the Corps, when any faults were committed that required more notice than being placed in arrest, recourse was obliged to be had to the Station Authorities for that purpose. This, of course, affects the authority of a Commanding Officer.

To question No. 10.

When the Police Battalions were formed in 1844, a certain number of Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers and Sepoys were transferred from Corps of the Line, to aid in their formation. In 1847, it was found they had been established on a scale too expensive, and it was desired to reduce the pay of the Native Officer. To accomplish this it was necessary to get rid of the men that had been transferred from Corps of the

Line. This was done, and promotions and nominations made from those that had been raised for the Battalion. Soon after, the Havildar Major was one of them, who spoke to me and said that I should be careful how I entrusted any of them with money. I replied are they not the same class of people as those that came from the Line? Yes, he answered, but they are not entitled to pension, which makes a great difference, and under those circumstances a man gives up nothing who makes away with a sum of money.

This shows the value the Natives attach to our Invalid Pension Establishment.

In reference to the 11th Para. under the head of European Officers, I would add, that at Bhurtpore, in 1826, Lieutenant-Colonel Faithful, Commanding the 33rd Native Infantry, volunteered to Lord Combermere the services of his Corps to dig in the trenches, but nothing was said about the extra batta that had been usually given, and as is customary to Pioneers when working. When the men were ordered to march down for that purpose, they stood fast. A Court of Enquiry was ordered. They recorded complaints of supercession by young Drill Instructors being promoted over their heads, and something about the Hospital, but never said a word about the batta.

The 41st Regiment Native Infantry, to which I belonged, were a few days afterwards on duty in the trenches. General Regnil, in passing, said he wished a place excavated for concentration of the storming party, but he could not get men to do it. I replied, if they would give the batta usual, our men would do it. He said he would guarantee the batta, and the men of the Corps set to immediately to do what was required, and each succeeding Corps did the same.

In dealing with Sepoys in all mercenaries, care should be taken not to depart from any custom that had been previously established, more particularly of a pecuniary allowance

In Pioneers, when working in Roads or in Trenches, a

Subadar	gets	5	0	0	annas per diem as Batta.
Jemadar	"	4	0	0	" "
Havildar	"	2	0	0	" "
Naick	"	1½	0	0	" "
Sepoy	"	1	0	0	" "

Silence on the subject of this batta no doubt caused any hesitation at Mooltan or wherever it may have occurred. If employed in public works, it might be advisable to give a little increase on the above allowance.

I was in the Light Infantry Volunteer Battalion in Java in 1814. The Government had a superabundance of Copper coin in all the Treasuries and a great scarcity of Silver. They ordered that the Troops should be paid in Copper one-third, on which 10 per cent. was to be added, but this was not equivalent to the difference of the value of Silver and Copper in the Bazar. An Officer, Captain Macleod, going away on duty, had to pay the 3rd Company first. The Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers received their pay. The first Sepoy that was called said he was a "sonaut sicca ka nokur, pieça ka nokur nuheen," and he declined receiving it. He was ordered into confinement; the next Sepoy did the same, and so did the third. The Officer then sent the Company to their

Lines, and reported the circumstance. Major Dalton immediately ordered the Officers to parade their Companies, and see if they all refused. I immediately went to my Company, and talked of the disgrace of such conduct, and told them the pice and batta had been received by other Corps on the Island, &c. &c. It ended by their saying what was to become of the three men just placed in confinement. I said if they are released, will that induce you to take the pay? They said, yes. The men were released, the Corps took their pay, and nothing more was heard on the subject.

This shows the system of adhesion that has existed in the Native Army; the men were frightened at the prospect of their having to march the next day to another Station, on which Major Dalton had decided if they would not take their pay.

I regret that indisposition has prevented my forwarding this sooner.

I have, &c.,
(Signed) J. STEEL, *Brigadier*,
Commanding, Umballa.

BRIGADIER C. TROUP, COMMANDING AT BAREILLY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Generally of Brahmins, Rajpoots, Gwallas, and Mahomedans; there are some others of inferior caste, but the proportion is comparatively small.
2. Chiefly from the Province of Oude, Buxar, Bojpore and Arrah; but many, although not in such numbers, are drawn from Agra, Etawah, Mynpoory, Cawnpore, Allahabad, Azimgurh, Jounpore, Benares and Ghazeepore.
3. Yes, many have been excluded both by the Regulations and by the practice of the Bengal Army.
4. I think there are several.
5. Excepting when necessary to send out Recruiting parties, which is seldom required. The bulk of recruits were brought by the men of the Regiment returning from temporary leave or furlough; but many of the relations of the men come of themselves from their homes, to be enlisted in the Regiment in Cantonments.
6. If the enlistments are made by Recruiting parties, each recruit, on enlistment, should be taken to the Tuhseeldar of the District in whose jurisdiction the Village he belongs to is situated, that the Tuhseeldar may verify the name, caste, parentage and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

residence of the recruit. Lists of recruits, with the Tuhseeldar's signature, should be shown to the District Officer, from which he should prepare a nominal roll of recruits and hand it over to the Recruiting Officer for delivery to the Commanding Officer of the Regiment. If the enlistment is made at Regimental Head Quarters, the Adjutant has to prepare Monthly Rolls in duplicate for each District, of all recruits, and forward them to the District Officer, who keeps one copy for registry in his Office, and returns the other, duly verified, to Regimental Head Quarters.

7.

I am not aware that by the Regulations of the Service any precautions are directed, nor do I know what was the practice generally throughout the Army, and although I am quite convinced that, had the orders for the registry of recruits been rigidly carried out, instead of being, in most instances, slurred over by the Local Authorities, that it would have been most beneficial in its results; so little faith had I in it, that in the Regiments I commanded, I had, in addition to the registry, a Committee of Native Officers, aided by the Regimental Pundit and Moulvie, to examine all recruits enlisted in the Regiment, and as I never took one who could not get a man of the Corps to be his security, I held him responsible for the recruit until he was dismissed drill and joined the ranks. This Committee was relieved weekly, and after the recruit had been passed by it as to caste, parentage, place of residence, &c., his descriptive roll, with the name and company of his security, was entered in a book kept for the purpose, signed by the President of the Committee, and by the Surgeon of the Regiment that he was fit for the Service. I regret to state, however, that notwithstanding all these precautions, I found that I had, in many instances, been imposed upon as regarded the recruit's caste and place of residence.

8.

I am of opinion that there should be three permanent Recruiting Depôts, with a Commandant of experience, a Surgeon and two European Serjeants to each, established for providing the Infantry of the Native Troops in the Bengal Army with recruits,—one at Buxar to provide all Corps at and below Benares; one at Lucknow to supply all Corps at and above Allahabad, as far as Umballa; and another in the Punjab, to supply all Corps stationed there and at Ferozepore, so as to make the Depôts efficient without being expensive. I would suggest that each Depôt should have a certain number of men from each Regiment in their Circle, always present at the Depôt, and that each Commanding Officer should, on the 1st of each month, forward to the Officer Commanding the Depôt of his Circle, a Return showing the number of men wanting to complete his Regiment on that date. On receipt of this Return the Commandant of the Depôt would, from amongst the men present belonging to the Regiment at the Depôt, detach a sufficient number to

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

procure the recruits required, and as soon as they were brought in, passed by the Surgeon, and duly registered, they should, under the care of the suitable number of the men of the Regiment present at the Depôt, be forwarded on to their Regiments. By this simple arrangement, the Army would, at a trifling expense, be always kept complete with efficient men, and the State would never be put to the expense of paying for more men than was actually necessary to complete the Army, added to which, the system would have the good effect of giving a certain portion of deserving men extra leave. Those on duty from Corps at the Depôt would not, of course, be entitled to any extra batta as far as regards races, tribes and castes, with the exception of Christians, who, in my opinion, should never be allowed to serve in the ranks amongst Natives. I think the Service should be thrown open to all tribes and castes without distinction; in fact, so long as a man is in other respects considered fit for the Service, his caste or tribe, with exception of Christians, should be no bar to him, although I should be glad to see separate Corps of Native Christians, who, I feel certain, would answer very well.

9.

“I Inhabitant of Village Pergunnah
Province, son of do swear that I will never for-
“sake nor abandon my colors, that I will march wherever I am
“directed, whether within or beyond the Company’s Territories,
“that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders and in
“every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and a faithful
“Servant of the Company, and in failing in any part of my duty
“as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of
“War, which have been read to me.” The above oath is adminis-
tered to all recruits in front of the colors in presence of the Regi-
ment paraded for the purpose. The time for administering the
oath is when the recruit has been dismissed drill, and previous to
his joining the ranks as a Soldier, the Articles of War being first
read to him.

The following oath is the one administered to Seikh Soldiers—

“I Inhabitant of son of swear by
“the Gooroo Grunth Sahibjee, and if I tell a falsehood may the
“Gooroo Grunth Sahibjee cause misfortune to descend upon me,
“that I will never forsake,” &c, &c, as above.

10.

I really cannot tell; but as far as my memory serves me, I am not aware, excepting for General Service and Seikh Regiments, that there has been any change in the oath of allegiance administered to the recruit since I have been in the Service.

11.

I think the oath should run thus:—

“Do swear that I will never forsake nor abandon my colors,
“that I will serve in any part of Her Majesty’s dominions, and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“cheerfully embark on board of Ship whenever required to do so, “that I will implicitly obey all orders of my superiors,” &c., &c.

12.

I am not aware that there are any seafaring tribes in the Native Infantry of the Bengal Army, nor am I aware of the existence of any in the Bengal Presidency.

13.

I am not aware that the Bengal Presidency has any Corps of the description indicated

14.

Most certainly not.

15.

They should be recruited over the wide area without any reference to Districts.

16.

Homogeneous, most certainly.

17.

No, I do not think the tribes and castes should be mixed up, but homogeneous, but unless the whole Regiment were so, it would be utterly impossible to preserve the Companies of men of one tribe and caste, as removals from various causes would require to be made frequently from one Company to another on account of promotions, and sizing, equalizing, &c

18.

If not homogeneous but composite, the races, tribes or castes should, as far as possible, be kept in three equal proportions.

19.

In my opinion, there can be no possible objection, the nature of the services being perfectly distinct, to their both recruiting in the same District. I feel confident that it would make both the Police and all Corps more efficient if they were recruited from a wide area without reference to Districts, and with this view, the less they are allowed to serve in the vicinity of their homes, the better.

20.

Most certainly not ; the nature of the Services are so totally different, that the Policeman would contract habits and ideas which would quite unfit him for a Soldier, he would be always more or less discontented, and would not readily bend to discipline.

21.

The agency recommended in answer No. 8.

22.

I would employ exactly the same agency.

23.

Exactly the same as at present in force, *vide* answer No 6, with this difference, that the Depôt Officers should be held responsible that the Registry of the recruit as regards parentage, caste and residence, should be real and not fictitious as it is at present.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

24.

I think not ; the same precautions should be adopted for both

25.

I do not think it would be expedient to enlist Natives of the tropical Countries, nor do I know of men equally qualified for service in India with the Natives of the Country ; should it, however, be deemed advisable to try the experiment, there can be no doubt that Africans would be the best ; but it is a question if they would stand the climate a bit better than our European Soldiers, or if they are fit to be trusted one bit more than the Natives of the Country, for they are found to be most treacherous. added to which they would be quite as expensive as the European Soldier, in which case I think we are far better without them. The experiment, however, might be tested by raising one Regiment of them on trial, and if after a fair trial it was found to answer, the number might be increased. They should, I think, be formed in separate Regiments.

26.

The Caffres from the Cape in preference to any other race.

27.

I should think the Governor of the Cape could arrange, through the Civil and Military Authorities there, for getting any number of recruits of this description, and would be by far the best agency.

28.

No, most certainly not.

29.

I feel quite certain that either of the plans would never be found to answer ; the European and Native Soldier should be kept distinct as a Regiment

30.

On the flanks of the Lines. Native Lines should, in my opinion, always be in the centre, and if the proportion of one European Soldier to every two Natives is maintained in all situations, the Army will be a very efficient one.

31.

They would ; but there are more serious objections to the proposal, in my opinion, than the mere complication of Commissariat arrangements.

32.

Both should be armed alike

33.

With the Enfield Rifle.

34.

With the common detonating musket at present in use.

35.

It does.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

36.

I am of opinion that the Native Soldier of the Regular Army should both in dress and every thing else, as far as the system can be made applicable to Natives, closely imitate the European Soldier in every thing.

37.

I cannot think that this plan would ever be found to answer. My opinion is, that such permanent association with the Native would, in the course of a short time, so demoralize the European, that he would only be so in name; the maintenance of discipline or any thing like it would be impossible, and I must say I should be very sorry to see the proposal put in practice.

38.

Certainly not: the two cases are in no way parallel; the European Artilleryman has nothing whatever to do with the Gun Lascar or Driver; he never sees him excepting on parade, and even there, their duties are so perfectly distinct, that they never come in collision with each other, but this is quite different to their being mixed up on an equality on duty, which is what I understand from the preceding question, the detrimental results of which would be more than I can possibly explain in the mere answer to a question.

39.

To carry on the object in view which, with very much deference, I consider a very erroneous one, they should be as close together as possible.

40.

It would not be favorable, but the very reverse; instead of raising the Native to the standard of the European by the arrangement, it would humiliate the European and bring him down to the level of the Native, by which that awe of European Troops, which at present exists and which it would be well to foster, for doubtless it is a great element of strength, would, from the intimate and continued association, in a very short time, be entirely done away with.

41.

In my opinion the arrangement would never be found to meet the requirements of the Service, although it would doubtless work better in time of war than in peace.

42.

Surely it cannot be for a moment doubted but that the permanent association with European Corps would produce the latter sentiment if the Native Soldier is systematically trained with the European one. When separated from him, and obliged to act without him, he would be found of little use, for he would have no dependence upon himself, whereas, were he taught to acquire a spirit of confidence and self-reliance, without being dependent on European Troops, he would fight all the better when required to act with them.

BRIGADIER P. GORDON, COMMANDING AT BENARES.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Brahmins, Rajpoots, Mussulmen, Aheers, Seikhs
2. Hindoos, chiefly from Oude and Behar, the Districts of Allahabad, Cawnpore, Mynpooree, and Etawah; Mussulmen, from Hindoostan generally, and the Punjab; Seikhs, Trans and Cis-Sutlej States.
3. By Military Regulations, Article 6, Section XXX., Bunneahs, Kyeths, Naees, Thelees, Thumolees, Gurrereeahs, Loadhs, Bhojooahs, Kahars, Mooraees, Kandoos, Malees, Kachees.
4. Yes; Kyeths, all cultivators of the soil, laborers and craftsmen, especially carpenters and blacksmiths; ought, in my opinion, to be eligible as recruits if physically fit. -
5. Where much below complement, Recruiting parties are, by permission, sent into the most favorable Districts for recruiting, *viz.*, Behar and Oude. But except on return from foreign service, this was seldom or ever necessary for Corps stationed in the Provinces, as men returning from furlough always brought recruits back with them in sufficient numbers to keep the Regiment complete.
6. All recruits are ordered to be taken before the District Local Authorities, Native and European, and the Magistrate having satisfied himself that the recruits are, in all respects, unexceptionable, prepares a Nominal Roll of them for transmission to the Officer Commanding the Regiment.
7. My practice was to issue subsistence allowance only at the rate of two annas a day to all recruits enlisted in Cantonments until the return of their Rolls duly verified by the Local Civil Authorities, when the balance of pay which had been detained in deposit was paid the recruit. If the recruit proved an impostor or a man of bad character, he was discharged, the deposit refunded to Government, and his security punished.
8. The existing Regulations are sufficient if acted up to. I think the castes noted in my reply to No. 4 ought to be eligible for enlistment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

raised and drilled with the Reserve Battalion and drafted as required and when fully instructed into the Service Battalion; the Head Quarters of the Regiment to be with the Service Battalion. I also strongly advocate the abolition of the Pension List and increased rates of pay to all grades while actually serving in the "Service" Battalions.

16.

No! I would admit all the laboring classes, including Zemindars, Brahmins (cultivators of the soil), and men who themselves handle the plough; I would exclude all the other Brahmin tribe.

17.

Each Company should, as far as possible, consist of men of one tribe or caste. The mixing up of all castes having been found to be no protection against a combination for evil, it seems reasonable to adopt another system; after national or District Regiments, I advocate Regiments composed exclusively of one caste, race and tribe.

18.

One-fourth Mussulmen; the remaining three-fourths mixed Hindoo tribes and castes.

19.

All the most important Guards, such as Treasury and Jail Guards, ought to be furnished from the proposed "Local Reserve Battalion," to which a body of men raised in the Districts trained as Irregular Light Infantry might be attached; for the Police duties in the District, Office Guards and Orderlies to the Civilians, in lieu of the present Chupprassies, such Orderlies ought to be relieved daily, or at least weekly, otherwise there would soon be a return to the present Chupprassie system. As long ago as I can recollect, I have heard men of all grades in the Native Army say that the Chupprassies of the Judges, Collectors and Magistrates were the real rulers of the Country, and complain bitterly of the tyranny and insolence they were obliged to submit to from them.

20.

I would allow Police, raised as above proposed, to volunteer into the Service Battalion if in all respects fitted.

21.

A European Officer well acquainted with the language ought to proceed into the District with a party, and beat up for recruits in the Villages. By this means there could be no imposition as to caste, place of residence, or respectability of a recruit.

22.

Yes under my plan the Police and Military would be of the same class of persons, or nearly so.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

23.

The precautions ordered by existing Regulations would be ample if acted up to ; but as they are not, and never can be under the present agency, I make the suggestion contained in my answer to question No. 21.

24.

The same under the system I advocate.

25.

Yes ! formed into separate Regiments.

28.

I think not ! Two or three European Non-Commissioned Officers to each Company would, however, tend greatly to the efficiency of Native Regiments in my idea.

33.

With the common percussion musket ; before the mutiny, I would have answered, with the Enfield Rifle !

34.

With fuzils or carbines and swords to fix as on rifles.

35.

Yes ! dress distinguished, smartness on parade, and skill in the discharge of all duties are the chief mediums from which Soldiers, both European and Native, imbibe a Military pride in themselves and in their Regiments to the material assistance of their Officers in maintaining discipline. As it is understood low caste men are now to be admitted into the ranks, it seems to me every endeavour ought to be made to substitute a Military pride for pride of caste, as I have no doubt could be successfully done by proper measures, even in a Regiment composed entirely of Mehters.

36.

If to be considered regular Corps of the Line, like the European Infantry Regiments, for the reasons stated in my reply to the last question ; if Police only, the Native chupkuns and turbans.

37.

Not advisable in my opinion.

42.

It would be better to have Police only and no regular Native Troops, as the latter would be regular only in name if systematically trained to act in dependence upon European support.

The same object would be gained by making Native Regiments dependent on the European Officers and European Sergeants for drill, discipline and all the interior arrangements hitherto, in a great measure, entrusted to Native agency ; but to accomplish this, the grade of Native Commissioned Officers would have to be abolished.

BRIGADIER G. FARQUHARSON, COMMANDING AT MOOLTAN.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Brahmins, Rajpoots, Aheers, Mahomedans, inferior castes of Hindoos, and lately, in some Corps, Seikhs and Punjabees.
2. From Oude, the Doab and Behar ; a few from the Punjab.
3. Parsees and all low castes, by regulation ; Goojars, Rohilkund, Hindoos, Jats, Bundelas and Rajpoots of Central India, by practice.
4. Many men of low caste, Jats, Goojurs, Mewatties, agricultural Mahomedans, from North of Jumna, Bundelahs.
5. As a rule no agency other than small Recruiting parties sent into Districts by Recruiting Officers of Depôts or Commanding Officers of Corps.
6. Since 1851 Verification Rolls of recruits have been sent for registry in District offices ; but this has only been effectually carried out in the Punjab ; in Oude it was impracticable.
7. None, except registry of name of relation, or other Soldiers who brought the Recruit for enlistment.
8. Enlist from all classes and tribes, preferring the agricultural and pastoral, and for general service across the Sea.
9. See Articles of War.
10. From date of General Order ordering the same.
11. Yes, all to swear to cross the Sea, go any where, and do any thing, such as dig trenches, make roads, cut jungle, build lines, &c., during peace or war ; menial work, as a right, to be excluded, and which is against the religion of the Asiatic.
12. No. But Mughls, Chittagong Mahomedans, and probably some of the Karen or Burmese tribes, Mahomedans and Sonthals might also make good Marines.
13. Not applicable.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

Yes ; the men from different Provinces to be kept in separate Corps and recruited from their own Provinces ; but no minor subdivisions of Districts to be entered.

15.

Seikhs, Goorkhas, Pathans, Beloochees, Oude men, Rohilkund, Ditto Bhoojipoories, Central India races, Jats, Thakoors, &c., &c.

16.

No ; except as regards Goorkhas and Pathans.

17.

Companies to be homogeneous ; the Native Officers to be of the same class as the men, like the Guides.

18.

The different races, castes or tribes, procurable in each District, to give the two or three Companies according to their proportion, to the general population of the District ; but this should much depend on the qualifications, as Soldiers, of these races and their feelings to the British Government ; too great a proportion of any one caste or religion to be avoided.

19.

Both in same District.

20.

No ; the recruiting to be distinct, but if men in Police choose to volunteer for the line in time of war to be sanctioned.

21.

Each regular Regiment to have a Depôt in the heart of its own Provinces, where the men might leave their families, and where recruits for the Corps would be entertained when a Regiment had suffered in the field or on foreign service, to be sent to its own District and Depôt to recruit, and as an indulgence to the men.

22.

District Officer in charge of Depôt to recruit for line Regiments, taking due care to verify the Rolls at District offices.

The Police to be recruited by their own Officers.

23.

Register the names of all recruits' near relations.

24.

The Policeman not being required to leave his District, security should be taken.

25.

The mass of the Native Army should be taken from the Presidency and its borders ; but it would be expedient to enlist Malays.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

26. Chinese, Tartars, African races, to be formed into separate Regiments.
27. No experience.
28. No.
29. No reply requisite.
30. Ditto.
31. Decidedly.
32. No reply requisite.
33. Percussion muskets, till organization is completed, when the propriety of giving superior weapons can be reconsidered.
34. Victoria carbines with swords.
35. No.
36. Loose tunic and trowsers, same color as European, for regular Native Infantry. The cut of tunic for Natives about the collar to differ from European model. A light cap to be worn with turban round it, sufficiently large to guard the head from a sabre and from the sun.
- The turbans of Europeans and Natives to be same color.
37. I approve of this scheme. Each Regiment Bengal Infantry to be 1st Battalion European and 2nd Battalion Native, but one Regiment of Officers; each Battalion to be distinct and complete in equipment. The Officers of Native Battalion to be selected and posted to it by authority of the Commander-in-Chief. The power of the Officer Commanding Native Battalion in matters of discipline to be independent of the Officer Commanding the European Battalion, even when serving together.
38. There are exceptions to every general rule; but it is believed that that portion of the Native Army which has been most associated with European Troops, has been most faithful.
39. As each Battalion is complete in itself, the Barracks and Lines should be separate and distinct, also when two complete Regiments, four Battalions—two European and two Native—are quartered together, the Barracks for the two European Corps to be in centre with Artillery (exclusively European); between them the Native

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

two Battalions being in flanks or respective 1st Battalions in such quarters; one Magazine with two compartments for each Battalion, but under one European Guard and near the Barracks would be advisable and economize space and Guards.

40.

Decidedly favorable. The Europeans would be massed, their Barracks and Hospitals being built on a place so as to be always defensible.

The Natives would be always in awe of the superior race. Establish market places after the European model for the convenience of European Officers and men; do away with all crowded Bazars within Military Cantonments; the residents of Regimental and Station Bazars to be strictly confined to the Camp-followers necessary for the Corps or Brigade in the field; all manufacturers, builders, butchers, &c., to be established in Bazars under Civil power only, and no such Bazars to be within 600 yards of Cantonments. Stalls for sale of provisions and manufactured goods, being provided in the Cantonment market-place centrally situated, such an arrangement would exercise the awe of European Troops.

41.

The two Battalions being distinct in equipment and organization, either could be moved where their services were required, and it would not be imperative that they should be always quartered together. In war two Regiments, two Battalions of European, and two of Native would form an efficient Brigade.

42.

Decidedly, as a general rule, imbue them with a spirit of confidence and self-reliance; use them freely as Light Infantry and in advanced situations; let each Battalion share the same dangers, and occasionally employ the Native Troops by themselves; do not let them entertain the idea they cannot command success without European support; foster a Soldier-like spirit of emulation and an *esprit de Corps*, which, with the races proposed to be introduced into the Bengal Army, would uphold their discipline and increase the chances of their fidelity to the State. Example, the feeling entertained by the 35th Native Infantry to Her Majesty's 13th Light Infantry at Jellalabad in 1842 was not one of dependence on European support but of honorable rivalry.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT OF BOMBAY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

A Return will be furnished showing this, from the Army Departments.

2.

A Return will be furnished in answer to this question.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

None that I am aware of.

4.

I know of none.

5.

Recruiting parties are detached by Officers in Command of Regiments; but no general agency is employed for the enlistment of recruits.

6.

None. When the Officer, Commissioned or Non-Commissioned, in charge of a Recruiting party, has collected a batch of recruits, he takes them to the nearest Military Station, where the men are examined by a Committee of Officers, including a Medical Member, and if they are found fit for the Service, a roll of their names is prepared and forwarded to the Regiment to which they are to belong, and to the Head Quarters of the Army.

7.

I am not aware of any.

8.

I can propose none.

9.

There is a prescribed form which will be furnished.

10.

I do not know.

11.

None. I conceive it to be of little moment.

12.

The sea-faring tribes along the sea-board of the Bombay Presidency are not numerous, and are chiefly engaged in the ordinary occupations of Sailors or Fishermen. They present no good material for the formation of Marine Corps.

The Native Troops make indifferent Marines. In the Indian Navy they are found to be almost useless, and whenever a Steam Frigate is fitted out for War Service, a Detachment of Artillerymen is embarked to take the combined duty of Gunners and Marines.

The constitution of a Corps of Marine Artillery, composed wholly of Europeans, has been repeatedly proposed, but always rejected on account of the expense; but that such a Corps is essentially required to complete the efficiency of the Navy, can hardly be questioned.

13.

There is one Marine Battalion on the strength of the Bombay Army. Its establishment is that of a Regiment of the Line with the exception of the European Officers. It is recruited almost entirely in the Concan, and its ranks are filled with the lowest caste Hindoos, with a proportion of Mussulmans larger than in the regular Regiments.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

I think not.

15.

I think it should.

16.

I think the composition of every Corps should be as heterogeneous as possible as regards race, tribe or caste.

17.

I consider homogeneity is to be avoided throughout the Companies as throughout the Corps.

18.

I consider the proportion immaterial, provided no one tribe or caste is allowed to unduly preponderate.

19.

For Police Corps, local recruiting is probably advantageous, as local knowledge is hereby secured which must be of consequence.

20.

No, I would not. In times of exigency, drafts may be taken from the Police Corps to fill gaps in the Line; but, generally speaking, Commanding Officers prefer their own recruits or those obtained by their own parties.

21.

I cannot recommend any.

22.

The Police Corps should have their own agency, or means of recruiting, distinct from the Line.

23.

I am not aware that any precautions of this nature are required.

24.

Police Corps must make their own arrangements independently of the Military.

25.

I think it is not expedient to enlist Natives of other tropical Countries for service in India, so long as a sufficient body of European Troops can be maintained.

26.

Experience only can answer this question. With the exception of Africans it is difficult to point out any race or country where enlistment might be pursued with any prospect of advantage.

27.

Officers possessed of the necessary qualifications may always be employed as Recruiting Agents.

28.

I think the plan of mingling Europeans and Natives in the same Regiment must fail. The European and the Native Soldier are managed and treated differently, and the two cannot be

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

subjected to the same system of interior economy. If a Company of Europeans be made a component part of all Native Regiments, such Companies must have their own Officers, separate Barracks and distinct Commissariat. They will be in fact just so many small Detachments isolated from each other and from the European Regiments, and to maintain discipline under such circumstances will be almost impossible.

29 to 32. Disapproving of the plan altogether, I am not prepared to answer these questions.

33. As at present, I see no occasion for any change.

34. According to the duties they are to perform.

35. I think there is advantage in making the dress of the Native Soldier assimilate with that of the European; but assimilation should not be carried to extreme.

36. Very much as at present.

37. I think the intimate, close and permanent association of the European and Native Troops is not desirable, and therefore I do not approve of such a combination as is here contemplated.

38. The Gun Lascars and Native Drivers are little more than a superior kind of followers. I do not recognize the analogy.

39. They must be separated clearly and decidedly, if not widely.

40. Certainly unfavorable.

41. It would create much confusion in forming Brigades or Divisions for Field Service.

42. Native Troops are, I consider, incapable of acquiring any spirit of self-reliance independent of the support of Europeans, and if trained as they must be to act with Europeans, it follows, of necessity, that they must be trained to act in dependence on European support.

COLONEL E. GREEN, ADJUTANT GENERAL, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Christians, Mussulmans, Hindoos, Jews, Seikhs, men drawn from all parts of India without distinction of race, tribe or caste, so long as they are reported fit to bear arms.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

The Deccan, Concan, Hindoostan (the North-West Provinces for the most part), the Punjab, Malabar (giving a small quota), Guzerat and Cutch (but few recruits).

3.

None are excluded.

4.

None have been excluded. Coolies and Bheels may have been neglected; but it remains to be proved if they will enlist with the understanding that they will go wherever called upon to serve as is the custom in the Bombay Army.

5.

Recruiting parties composed of Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers and men of the Regiment are sent out as occasion requires. Lately a European Officer from each Regiment was detached on this duty, and succeeded well or ill according to the activity and intelligence of the Officer. The experiment was generally successful.

6.

The regulation on the subject will be found in Bombay Government General Orders, No. 539, 5th July 1855 (Jameson's Code, 3rd Appendix, page 182, Section XLVI. Act 214, et infra.)

7.

If the recruit be enlisted in Cantonment, where the Regiment is located; no precautions are taken, but if at another Station, the man is examined by a Committee, and if found fit, his Register is sent to the Commanding Officer and a copy to the Adjutant General. The same rule applies to the families of Sepoys.

8.

No alterations are required. It is only necessary to make Officers Commanding Regiments individually responsible that none but eligible recruits are entertained irrespective of race, tribe or caste.

9.

I, A. B., Private in the Regiment, do swear, that I will not abandon these colors, but always defend them to the utmost of my power, and that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful Servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War, which have been read to me.

10.

Since the 11th April 1807.

11.

No, I cannot. The oath appears to me to be useless. It does not prevent desertion, and puts that into the head of the recruit which probably he would never have thought of.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

The Mahomedan classes of Bombay and along the Coast are a fine race of men, and would doubtless make an excellent Marine Corps; but they would require a high rate of pay. I know of no other races.

13.

It has. The strength of the Bombay Marine Battalion is as follows:—

EUROPEAN OFFICERS.		NATIVE OFFICERS		RANK AND FILE.	HOSPITAL ESTABLISHMENT.		SCHOOL ESTABLISHMENT.	BAZAR ESTABLISHMENT.	FOL-LOWERS.																		
Surgeon.	Commanding.	Lieutenant and Adjutant	Lieutenant and Quarter-Master Interpreter.		Soobadar Major and Soobadars.	Jemadars and Native Adjutant	Havildar Major.	Serjeant Major.	Quarter-Master Serjeant.	Color Havildars.	Havildars.	Naiques	Privates.	Bheetees	Boys.	1st Hospital Assistant.	2nd Hospital Assistant.	Apprentices.	Mahratta Pundit.	Assistant Pundits.	Chowdry.	Peons.	Armourer	Assistant Armourer	Mochee	Bellow's Boy.	Drummers, Fifers and Buglers.
1	1	1	1	12	12	1	1	1	12	48	60	1,000	12	25	1	1	2	1	2	1	2	1	1	1	1	1	24

Recruited almost entirely from the Northern Concan and from the lowest races of Hindoos, with a fair proportion of Mussulmans.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

I think this would be highly impolitic. Under existing orders, the Bombay Army can enlist only within the limits of the Presidency. Few recruits are to be had from Cutch, Guzerat, Khandeish and other Districts. Being thus restricted to the Deccan, Northern and Southern Concan and Sawuntwarree will have, in my opinion, the effect of making the Bombay Army a Mahratta clique as those of Bengal was of Oude.

15.

Commanding Officers should take recruits from all parts of the Country without reference to race, tribe or caste. Oude might be made exceptional until the cause of the mutiny shall have been ascertained, and all *Brahmins* should be carefully excluded the Service, Civil and Military.

16.

A mixture of all races, tribes or castes.

17.

* The Companies, in the same manner as the Regiments, should be composed of men of all castes.

18.

This must depend upon the facility given to enlistment. If Commanding Officers are permitted to enlist where they please, the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

proportion of races, tribes or castes, should be equalized as much as possible as a counterpoise.

19.

Military Corps should recruit from all Districts, if possible; the Police from that particular Pergunnah in which it may serve. The latter I consider necessary, as the Police to be efficient should be acquainted with the locale and, if possible, the people of the District in which they serve. In Military bodies such local knowledge is unnecessary.

20.

No, I would make Commanding Officers entirely responsible for recruiting their Regiments, making their own arrangements.

21.

Nothing beyond what should be within the reach of every Commanding Officer. Nothing more is required.

22.

Replied to above. The Police should make their own arrangements.

23.

The existing Regulations under this head are clear and distinct. If thoroughly acted up to, nothing more is required or simply a modification.

24.

Modified perhaps according to circumstances. These Rules might, with advantage, be introduced to the Police Corps as tending to ready identification.

25.

Certainly not. I think such a measure would be fraught with evil if we have to import such Natives, as admitting that we distrust those upon whom we should and must rely. If such men (Africans and others) can be found in India and induced to enlist, they should be entertained like any other eligible Native.

26.

Replied to above.

27.

Answered above.

28.

No; such an arrangement would militate against any perfect organization of a Native Army, which we must have. Our object should be to make an efficient Native Army supported by Europeans; the mixture would ruin both.

29.

Answered above.

30.

Ditto ditto.

31.

Answered above. The Commissariat arrangements would be most perplexing.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

32.

Answered above.

33.

For the present, with the common percussion musket.

34.

This must depend on political consideration. When the mutiny is put down, the Country people generally disarmed, and thorough Police arrangements organized, this body should be armed with a sword and truncheon only.

35.

The abolishing the chako, knapsacks and stocks has removed the disadvantages. The present dress is excellent, *viz.*, Kilmarnock bonnet, tunic and loose trowsers. The imitation has the advantage of uniformity.

36.

The present dress cannot be altered for the better.

37.

In my opinion the plea would not answer. The association is unnecessary. When the Native Regiments are required on a firm foundation, the fact of the association argues that the Corps should always be employed together, which frequently would be impracticable, while the proximity of the two distinct races would lead to scenes of violence and discord and a depreciation of the moral force of the European tending to the worst results, while under such a system the Native material would as certainly deteriorate and soon become worthless.

38.

But very little. The Company of European Artillerymen are quite distinct from the Gun Lacars and Drivers attached to the Battery, and have nothing to do with them except on parade.

39.

Answered above.

40.

If the European Soldier is required to watch the Natives, such a result may be attained by the association ; but the respectability of the Native Army would soon be lost, while the habits and practices of our Barrack rooms tend to any thing but awe.

41.

Such an arrangement would neither answer in peace nor war. Our object should be to raise Native Troops faithful in themselves, fully impressed with the knowledge that our European superiority is ready at all times to crush them. We should little dread future mutinies. With a due proportion of European Troops in the principal Stations, our Magazines, Treasure and Artillery in the keeping of Europeans, such an event is impossible. In some Stations in India, European Soldiers cannot serve and live ; then we must depend upon Natives, and the history of the Bombay Army shows that our Sepoys can be depended upon, and we may naturally look

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

for greater attachment to the Service under more perfect arrangements.

42.

Without confidence and self-reliance a Native Army would be a burden. To train the Sepoy to act in dependence upon European support, would paralyze the entire portion of the Native Army. It should be our endeavour to sustain them, and as during the mutiny this Army has done so well, it should be our aim not to destroy vitality, but to give increased life by removing obstructions which may have caused mischief.

COLONEL K. YOUNG, JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY AND PUNJAUB IRREGULAR FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

This question can be better answered in the Adjutant General's Department.

2.

This also. But I may remark that Oude and the adjacent Districts that were formerly under the orders of the Oude Government furnish about three-fourths of the recruits for the Bengal Infantry. Bhojepore and Northern Behar supply also many very good Infantry recruits.

3.

Most of the lower castes are excluded ; but the Adjutant General's Department can reply to this fully.

4.

Yes ; but I would exclude no race, tribe, or caste now, provided the men were physically fit for the Service.

5.

The Adjutant General's Department will answer this.

6.

Ditto.

7.

Ditto.

8.

Ditto.

9.

The following is the oath sanctioned by authority ; but in practice the words—" I will go wherever I am ordered, whether by sea or land"—have been introduced into the form of oath administered to recruits in General Service Regiments.

I, A. B., Inhabitant of _____, Village
Pergunnah _____ Subah _____ son of _____
do swear that I will never forsake or abandon my colors, that I

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

will march wherever I am directed, whether within or beyond the Company's Territories, that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful Servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War, which have been read to me.

THE OATH FOR SEIKH RECRUITS.—I

Inhabitant of _____ son of _____, swear by the Gooroo Grunth Sahibjee, and if I tell a falsehood, may the Gooroo Grunth Sahib cause misfortune to descend upon me, that I will never forsake or abandon my colors, that I will march wherever I am directed, whether within or beyond the Company's Territories, that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful Servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War, which have been read to me.

10.

The oath first came into operation when the Articles of War of 1796 were published. The Sikh oath was first published to the Army in General Orders of the 7th October 1853.

11.

I am doubtful as to any advantage that is likely to accrue from swearing in recruits. The results of the last year have clearly shown how entirely powerless any form of oath has been to secure the fidelity of the Sepoy. All have alike gone; those who, it may be presumed, from education or from superior intelligence, knew well the importance to be attached to an oath, as well as the more ignorant, who regarded it probably as a mere form to be forgotten as soon as it was made. I can scarcely believe that the oath has kept one Sepoy true to his allegiance; no disgrace attaches in their minds to breaking it; the disgrace rests only in the punishment, and there is no advantage in the administration of an oath that might not, I believe, be equally gained by simply declaring to a Sepoy, at the time of his enlistment, that he was expected to obey implicitly his superiors, and to go wherever he was ordered, whether by sea or land, and that no objection made by him hereafter would be received as an excuse for disobedience. If, however, it is considered desirable that the formality of swearing in recruits should be observed, I think it will be well to introduce the form in use in General Service Corps, and to lay down clear and defined Rules for the manner in which the oath is to be administered and the period after enlistment when it is to be taken.

12.

Apply to the Adjutant General's Department.

13.

Ditto

ditto.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14 to 18.

I should like to see all plans fairly tried, and I think myself it would be very desirable to have some Corps recruited entirely from certain castes or certain Districts; for instance, Corps exclusively composed of Seikhs, Rajpoots, Gwalas, Beloches, Goorkhas, Punjabees, Oudemens, and Bhojpoories, and again I would propose having other Regiments in which the Companies were similarly composed, the Regiments thus containing men of all castes and from all Districts, but the Companies being men entirely of one caste of one District. The latter organization would, I think, be found to be preferable for the mass of the Native Army, as Corps exclusively composed of one caste or recruited in one District, would have too much of nationality about them, and I conceive it would not be either politic or prudent to encourage national Regiments, except to a very limited extent.

Some Regiments again should, I think, be composed of men of all castes, creeds, and countries, and posted to Companies indiscriminately as in the Native Army of Bombay and as has been heretofore the custom in Bengal. The principal objection raised to this plan is that the men cannot, when so organized, be brought to cook in messes; but this is a matter not of so much importance as it at first sight appears to be, for, as a general rule, all Natives of India cook for themselves; but whether or not they invariably carry their few simple cooking utensils with them in their pack, and if messing were established throughout the Native Army, each man would still preserve his own individual cooking utensils, and the baggage of the Army would be no wise decreased by the arrangement.

But I should like to see all *three* modes of organization fairly tried, and it will probably be found that each has its separate advantages, and that it will be desirable to adopt and retain all three different plans.

19.

The Police should not be men of the Districts in which they are stationed.

20.

No.

21 to 24.

These are questions that can be better answered by the Adjutant General and Superintendent of Police.

25.

I think it will be very desirable to enlist Natives of other tropical Countries, and I would dispose of them as recommended for Natives of India, that is, in separate Regiments, in separate Companies of a Regiment composed of any caste or class, and in Regiments where men of all castes and creeds are posted indiscriminately to Companies.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 26 and 27.** These are questions that require a greater knowledge than I possess of the Countries where recruits are likely to be procurable.
- 28 to 32.** I would not advocate having Companies of Europeans attached to Native Regiments.
- 33.** In my opinion they should be armed with the common percussion musket and bayonet.
- 34.** A portion with the common percussion musket and bayonet ; the rest with swords or spears.
- 35.** I see no advantage to be gained in servilely imitating the dress of European Troops.
- 36.** I should think there could be no better dress than that in use in most of the Punjab Regiments, with a turban head dress. The color of the dress might vary in different Corps, and be red, green, or khakee, according to choice.
- 37.** I would deprecate having any large body of Natives intimately associated with European Troops ; but there is one class of whose services I think we might, with advantage, avail ourselves in small numbers, and attach them as auxiliaries to all European Regiments, both Queen's and Company's. I allude to the class who supply these Corps with cook-boys. These men are generally, and I may say always, of very low caste, and they seem distinct from all other Natives who enter the service of Europeans. They are always considered to be a faithful body of men, and so far as I know, have invariably behaved well throughout the late disturbances, clinging as it were, to the Regiments to which they belong, and considering themselves in deed as part and parcel of the Corps. They look up to the men for protection, and though there may be instances in which they are maltreated, these are but of rare occurrence, while they do not seem to object to the rough and rude behaviour they meet with. My proposal would be to have a Company raised of these men to be attached to each European Regiment of Cavalry and Infantry in the Service ; the Company to consist of 100 Privates, and to be organized and completed with Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers in the manner that may be decided upon for the regular Native Corps of the Army. I would attach to the Company two European Officers to be specially selected for their knowledge of the language ; the senior to Command and to draw a Command allowance of Rupees (100) one hundred a month, and the Junior (50) fifty Rupees. These Companies would be very useful in saving the Europeans from exposure, and in actual warfare they might be of essential service in guard-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

ing Convoys and taking numerous duties, upon which it would otherwise be necessary to employ Soldiers.

I have proposed there being a Company of Infantry attached to each Cavalry Regiment also, as the Native Infantry Soldiers would be equally useful in relieving the European Trooper of many harassing duties, and they would always be able to keep up with the Regiment in long forced marches, by taking advantage of the numerous ponies that accompany Cavalry in this Country.

38 to 41. The Artillery branch of the Service should be exclusively composed of Europeans as far as practicable.

24. I think that in reorganizing the Native Army, the object should be to avoid, as much as possible, any thing likely to instil an independent spirit of self-reliance in the Sepoy, and that we should foster in him a feeling of dependence upon his European comrade. This feeling, however, all Native Soldiers more or less possess, and are not likely to lose, and in none is it more conspicuous than amongst the Seikhs and Goorkhas who have fought side by side with the European during the present war. They have a confidence in the European which they have not in their own countrymen.

COLONEL F. BERKELEY, C. B., COMMANDING H. M.'S 32ND LIGHT INFANTRY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- | | |
|-----------|---------------|
| 1. | Inapplicable. |
| 2. | Ditto. |
| 3. | Ditto. |
| 4. | Ditto. |
| 5. | Ditto. |
| 6. | Ditto. |
| 7. | Ditto. |
| 8. | Ditto. |
| 9. | Ditto. |

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 10.** Inapplicable.
- 11.** Ditto.
- 12.** Ditto.
- 13.** Ditto.
- 14.** Ditto.
- 15.** Ditto.
- 16.** No.
- 17.** No regard should be paid to caste; men of different tribes and castes to be posted to Companies as might be convenient.
- 18.** This must depend in a great measure, on the facility of enlistment, or aggregate numbers supplied to the Army by the different races, tribes and castes.
- 19.** Not applicable.
- 20.** No, not as nurseries; their discipline and habits would probably not agree with those of a regular Regiment; but their services might be made available on an emergency.
- 21.** Inapplicable.
- 22.** Ditto.
- 23.** Ditto.
- 24.** Ditto.
- 25.** Yes. I have only personal experience of Kaffers and Fingoes of South Africa; they are brave, hardy, muscular and enduring; they have no caste, and are easily fed. I would form them in separate Regiments, as the men would be happier and less likely to be affected with the "Mal du Pays."
- 26.** Kaffraria, and Natal Kaffers and Fingoes.
- 27.** In the first instance the Authorities at Cape Poan and Port Natal.
- 28.** No.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

29.

Inapplicable.

30.

Ditto.

31.

Yes.

32.

Inapplicable.

34.

If the population is disarmed, with tulwars for the Infantry, and tulwars and spears for the mounted Corps.

35.

No.

36.

I know of no dress better suited for Native Infantry than the Zouave adopted by the French originally for their Native Levies in Algeria.

37.

I think the proposal a good one ; but I would prefer attaching to an European Regiment of 800 strong, two Native Corps, or one Native and one foreign raised Corps, 600 strong each, thereby forming a handy Brigade of 2,000 men, to be commanded by the Colonel of the European Regiment. The two senior Captains with extra pay and the Brevet rank of Major to Command the Native Corps. Two Captains extra and a proportion of Subalterns and Staff would be all the augmentation required to be made to the European Regiment in order to Officer those Corps efficiently.

38.

Inapplicable.

39.

That must depend much on localities.

40.

Yes.

41.

I think the arrangement would be a good one both in peace and war.

42.

I think it desirable Native Levies should acquire a spirit of confidence when commanded and led by European Officers, and feel themselves invincible when supported by European Troops ; but they should, if possible, also feel that without their Officers they would be but as a rope of sand.

With the system of auxiliary Native Battalions in permanent association with European Corps, either a spirit of confidence or dependence could equally be developed according to the line of conduct pursued towards them.

COLONEL V. EYRE, OF THE ARTILLERY, SUPERINTENDENT POWDER
MANUFACTORY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

28.

This, it appears to me, would be a half-measure of very doubtful utility.

Small Detachments of Europeans in India have a tendency to degenerate; and might, when detached permanently to Native Regiments, lapse into lax habits of discipline.

European Soldiers are most respected, and carry most moral weight when acting together in *masses*.

In proportion, as all hope of effectual resistance is crushed in the Native mind, the probability of conspiracy becomes lessened, whereas the *temptation* to it would still exist where the Native Soldiers preponderated in any large proportion over the Europeans, as in the cases supposed; moreover this system would tend to destroy that *esprit de Corps* which animates entire Regiments or Battalions, enlisted from one particular race or country.

In all actions the Europeans would, of course, secure the lion's share of credit; and feelings of irritation and jealousy might thereby be awakened, difficult to allay, and detrimental to the public interests.

33.

With the common musket only.

The Enfield Rifle should be reserved for the sole use of the European Soldier.

34.

With swords and carbines; but each Police station might have a small stand of muskets to enable the Guard to repel sudden attacks.

35.

Assuredly not.

The European dress is both unsuited and distasteful to the Natives of India.

They would infinitely prefer a comfortable loose oriental costume, such, for instance, as that worn by the French Zouaves, which would be really becoming to their persons, and would tend, as much as any thing, to render the Service popular.

I never could see any advantage in the present style of dress; but I know it to be hateful to their feelings generally, and I believe it to be injurious to their health.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

37.

This seems to me an *excellent* proposition, and well worthy of serious consideration ; perhaps it is the best solution that has yet been offered of the present difficulty. The same objections that occurred to me in replying to question 28 do not hold good in regard to Native auxiliary Battalions, where the European Regiment constitutes the preponderating mass, and the Native Battalion is a minor correlative force, possessing sufficient distinct individuality of its own to gratify national self-love and prejudice, without engendering those ideas of power and self-importance which proved the ruin of our Sepoys ; tempting them to grasp at the Empire of India by taking a sudden advantage of our weakness in European Regiments.

38.

Europeans, when not placed in a disparaging position, have always worked well and harmoniously with Natives, imparting to the latter a portion of their own energy and self-reliance.

What has worked well in the Artillery may be expected to work equally well in the Infantry.

During the recent troubles, the Native Drivers and Gun Lascars attached to European Batteries have, as a body, proved faithful.

39.

I would keep them perfectly distinct, yet sufficiently near to admit of every co-operation between the two Battalions in all matters of guard, parade and other duties.

40.

A difficult question to answer ; but experience is in favor of the system.

Witness H. M.'s 13th Regiment and the 38th Native Infantry at Jellalabad in 1841 and 1842 which, from constant association together on service, became mutually attached, and separated with the greatest regret.

The awe alluded to arises from a sense of superior power, and is with the Natives the *precursor*, as well as the *companion* of loyalty and confidence.

The Sepoys, under this system, will have before them daily proofs of our ascendancy, and in a very short time the phantom of ambition, which has so grievously lured them to their own ruin, will cease to haunt or to influence them.

They will accept our sovereignty as their *destiny*, and will accommodate themselves cheerfully to the new order of things ; though not without perhaps an occasional sigh for " the good old times " when Sepoy Regiments were trusted implicitly, and were supposed to be worthy of that trust.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

By degrees the two Battalions, like two foster brethren raised and organized together, will feel a community of interests and a mutual pride in each other.

Probably this intimate association of Natives with Europeans may tend to keep aloof the Brahmins and high caste Hindoos who have heretofore been foremost to enlist; but this may prove advantageous rather than otherwise.

41.

Admirably well! The Sepoys will be available for all those duties for which the European constitution is unfitted, such as escorts, guards and sentries, involving prolonged exposure to the sun.

42.

Our policy should be to let the Native Soldier feel, as much as possible, that he is but an *auxiliary* to the European, a sort of jackall to the lion. I have already advocated arming him with an inferior weapon. I would have no *Native Officers at all*, but meritorious old Soldiers might be allowed a *retiring* rank of *Jemadar* or *Soobadar*.

COLONEL H. P. BURN, SUPERINTENDENT ARMY CLOTHING.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Bengal Army is composed of Hindoos and Mahomedans, Seikhs and Goorkhas.

2.

The Hindoos are drawn almost exclusively from Oude and Behar; the Mahomedans are recruited from the North-West Provinces generally, Behar and the Punjab; the Seikhs from the Punjab and Cis-Sutledge States, and the Goorkhas from Nepal and the Hills West of Nepal.

3.

All classes employed in menial occupations are excluded from enlistment by Regulation, page 215, Military Regulations. The fighting classes generally are enlisted in practice. Many Brahmins have, of late years, taken advantage of the privilege allowed to them, by the laws of caste, to usurp the more particular duties of the Chatree, and have entered the Army. They have proved themselves, on many occasions, good Soldiers, and many, during the late struggle, have remained faithful; but they are not a fighting class, and ought to have been rigidly excluded from our ranks. I have frequently rejected them as Brahmins, and found them again seeking enlistment as Rajpoots.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

There are some few distinct tribes, who would make good Soldiers if they would enlist. The men of Hurriana, for instance, are a very fine race ; but they wont serve in our Regular Regiments as foot Soldiers. The Jats of Bhurtpore, Delhie and other Districts would make excellent Soldiers. The Goojars of the Upper Doab and the Delhie and Agra Districts under discipline might be reformed and would make good Soldiers ; they are a race of thieves, but so are the Afreedies of the Khyber Pass, who have done good service in the Punjab Corps during the present insurrection. The Gwalahs of Bengal, who are much employed by the Zemin-dars and Indigo Planters, would make good Soldiers.

A Regiment or two of Mehters might be tried as Pioneers, but the lower castes of Hindoos generally I would continue to exclude from our ranks ; they are not to be trusted, either as Soldiers or Policemen, and their enlistment, to the exclusion of the better classes, will give very general disgust to the whole nation. We can't put down caste by merely elevating the lower orders ; they are as much wedded to the destructive privilege of their class as the Brahmins or Chatrees, and are so completely under the dominion of the upper classes, that no discipline would induce them to break the bonds of caste and release themselves from its influence. If the higher and better orders of the Hindoo races are not in future to be trusted, I do not see how the smallest reliance can be placed on the lower and less educated classes. These last, in their present degraded condition, will, I fear, prove themselves utterly unworthy of trust.

5.

Recruits used formerly to offer themselves in such numbers at the Head Quarters of Regiments, even when stationed at a distance from the Recruiting Districts, that no special agency was employed for their enlistment. The recruits were generally the relations or fellow-villagers of the Soldiers of the Regiment in which they sought service, and generally accompanied the leave men on their return to the Corps.

6.

No precautions for registry were observed until the Rules laid down at pages 216 and 217 of the Military Regulations were adopted from a system first introduced in the Punjab Irregular Force. A man's identity was thus, in a measure established, and he could be traced to his real home if he misbehaved himself. It also established his true caste, which many concealed, as I have already stated.

7.

It seldom happens that recruits are taken from the families of Sepoys present with Regiments ; of the small portion of an Infantry Regiment that is composed of Mahomedans, a few only have

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

their families with them. Some of the inferior castes of Hindoos allow their families to reside with them in the Lines ; but the children brought up in the Regiment don't often enlist I don't know that any precautions are taken when enlisting men in Cantonments or from the families of Sepoys beyond the usual one of ascertaining that they are physically fit for the Army.

8.

I don't see that the material at our disposal affords much room for improvement. The future Native Army of Bengal, to work well, must be composed of an entire new set of men ; none of the old leaven should be left to impregnate the new mass ; every man who has been suspected, and had his arms taken from him, should be dismissed ; he can never again serve with credit ; he will not be trusted by his Officers, and will feel himself ashamed and a degraded being. For the new Army I would enlist all fighting classes, whether Mahomedans, Hindoos, or Seikhs, in due proportions, being careful only as regards their physical fitness for the Service. I see no danger in this arrangement if the paramount race, the Europeans, are maintained in proper proportion to the Native auxiliaries.

9.

The form of oath is given at page 220 of the Military Regulations.

10.

I don't know how long it has been in force.

11.

The form of oath administered to the Seikh Soldier appears more binding than that for the Hindoostanee. It might be adopted for all classes with the necessary alterations.

12.

I don't know of any classes that would make good Marines, unless the Lascars employed in our Ships be deemed fit for Marine Corps.

13.

There are two Corps, the 25th and 40th, which were looked upon as Marine Corps, and in former years were employed more exclusively as Marines than they have been of late years. There are other Corps called Volunteers, the 65th, 67th, and 68th, that were embodied for general service beyond Sea. All these Corps are, I believe, recruited from the same classes as the other Corps of the Line.

14.

I think it would have a very beneficial effect if recruiting for each separate Regiment were confined to a prescribed District. This might do good on the principle of *divide et impera*. There has always been great jealousy between the Oude and Behar men, and I see that it was taken advantage of at Lahore when the Behar men were separated from those from Oude.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

15.

See foregoing reply.

16.

I would not separate the races of Hindoostan, that is the Mahomedans and Hindoos ; but I would have distinct Regiments of Seikhs. I would even keep up the distinction so far as not to amalgamate the Manjah and Cis-Sutlej Seikhs. When Seikhs were first admitted into our Army, I advocated their being kept in distinct Regiments, and the late mutiny has confirmed me in the correctness of that opinion. The Seikhs belonging to the various Corps in Delhi went with them, and nothing would induce them to break this unnatural alliance and join their countrymen who were fighting in our ranks. They remained with the Rebels throughout the siege. The Goorkhas have always been kept distinct, and their conduct during the mutiny has shown with what advantage this distinction of races may be worked upon for the maintenance of our authority.

17.

If distinctions are made in Regiments by dividing the men into classes or tribes, quarrels will be incessant. If Corps are recruited from one particular District, all the fighting classes of that District should be taken without distinction, and mixed up in Companies, as has been the practice hitherto.

18.

I would not observe any particular proportion of tribes if recruiting for individual Corps is confined to Districts. It might not be possible, and would not, I think, be necessary, as the men having been brought up together, there is a fellow-feeling amongst them, though of different caste.

19.

Police Corps that are not for Local Police duties should be recruited or filled up by drafts from the Corps of the Line. By this system the active service Corps would be really efficient Regiments, and the Police Corps would be composed of well-disciplined and steady old Soldiers in every way suited for the duties of a Military Police.

20.

Instead of making the Police Corps nurseries for the Corps of the Line, it will be observed, from the preceding reply, that I would make the Line Corps the nurseries for the Police.

21.

The best agency for recruiting is to employ the leave men on this duty. They generally bring back with them excellent recruits.

22.

See reply No. 20.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

23.

The precautions ordered to be taken for the enlistment of Sepoys at pages 216 and 217 of the Military Regulations appear to be sufficient if properly attended to.

24.

See reply No. 20.

25.

If Natives of other tropical Countries can be procured, they ought certainly to be enlisted for service in India. I would form them in separate Regiments.

26.

The Malays, Arabs and Kroomen all suggest themselves as the races best suited for Soldiers. Afghans make excellent Soldiers and are enlisted, to a large extent, in our Punjab Regiments. I have an idea that Chinamen under discipline would make good Soldiers; they are strong athleticmen, and would be more tractable than the Malays or Arabs.

27.

Recruits from these tribes could only be procured by sending Commissioned European Officers with a well-selected Staff of Native and an Interpreter to enlist them. These Recruiting parties would require to remain some time on the spot with the men to reconcile them to their new mode of life. Good pay and kind treatment, with but little drill at first, would soon effect this. Malays, I fear, are not to be had. The Ceylon Rifle Regiments, if I mistake not, find it very difficult to obtain recruits in sufficient numbers. Arabs could be had if they were permitted to return to their homes after a limited service. Kroomen I know nothing about.

28.

I would not mix the European and Native Soldier together by attaching a Company of Europeans to a Native Corps. Any such compulsory amalgamation is bad. Encourage voluntary friendship between the two classes, but do not attempt any unnatural combination of men of such totally distinct habits. It would certainly be looked upon by the Native Soldier, in its true light, as a coercive measure.

29 to 32.

These are all answered in the above reply.

33.

This is a very grave question after what has occurred. Not to arm the Sepoy with the Enfield Rifle might be looked upon by the Native Army as a decided victory gained by them from Government. It would leave them, too, very much worse armed than any external force they may be called on to encounter.

These, however, are trifling objections when compared with the great evil of placing in their hands so effective a weapon as the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Enfield Rifle. It would be putting them on a par with our European Troops, for they are excellent shots, and they would never allow themselves, in any future outbreak, to be brought to close quarters if they once discovered the advantages of the Enfield Rifle at long range.

I would, therefore, arm all our Native Troops with the old percussion musket. With it they will be on a par with any Native adversary they may be called on to encounter, and at close quarters, from the ease with which it is loaded, it is, by many, deemed preferable to the Enfield Rifle.

35.

The advantage of dressing the Native Soldier in close imitation of the European is that at a distance, the one is not distinguishable from the other.

Without this the fire of the Enemy would be centred on the Europeans long before they got within musket range of each other. A looser and easier dress would be preferred by the Native, and also, I imagine, by the European, in this very hot climate.

36.

I would give them the Zouave dress, or something very similar to it. The choking, stiff collar of the tunic, ought to be got rid of altogether; it is better than the collar of the old coat, but for Natives collars are not required at all.

The summer dress, both for Europeans and Natives, should be white, with a good-sized white turban, ten yards by twenty inches, of Scotch muslin, to wear loosely round the head when exposed to the sun, and round the waist as a kummerbund at all other times. For Europeans a solah helmet, painted white, to turn the rain, costing twelve annas, with a similar turban for the hot season, as above described, would be a good head dress.

37.

This mode of combining the two races, Europeans and Natives, is preferable to that of adding a Company of Europeans to every Native Corps. The combined Regiments could not always work together, I fear, either in Cantonments or in the Field, and the number of Officers who could be spared from the European Corps would be small and would never be the picked men of the Regiment. The proposal is a plausible one, but I doubt if it would work well in practice.

The Officers of the Native Regiments would be constantly changed, and would be too few in number for its proper discipline. It would be simply an Irregular Corps, and unless the Officers

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

attached to it were higher paid than those attached to the European portion of the Regiment, there is little doubt which would be preferred.

38.

This will be better decided by the Artillery, to whom I leave it.

39.

If the Europeans and Natives are to be associated, the Barracks of each must be kept apart, as at present. The social and domestic habits of the two classes do not admit of their being more closely brought together in quarters.

40.

A closer association of the two races, if founded on friendship, would be favorable to that vigilance which has become essential. A friendly warning of what was going on at Meerut on the 10th May 1857, would have prepared the European Troops for immediate action. At present the European and Native Troops are unable to communicate from a want of knowledge of each other's language. I would encourage, in every way, the acquisition of English in our Native Army; it would soothe the inhuman cruelty that is inherent in the Native mind. "So sensible were the Romans of the influence of language over manners, that it was their most serious case to extend, with the progress of their arms, the use of the Latin tongue." Britain should follow this example, and teach the English language throughout her Indian empire. The maintenance of the awe of European Troops, which is an element of strength, can only be upheld hereafter by having everywhere a sufficient European Force, ready and armed with authority, to put down at once any rising either of the Native Army or of the Native population.

41.

The present system of Brigading European and Native Regiments on service and also in Cantonments affords equal, if not better facilities for combining the two services than any forced alliance of European and Native Corps ever will do. The warmest attachments spring up from the combination of European and Native Corps on active service; I would, therefore, adhere to the existing system, and not attempt to combine, for any coercive purpose, a European with a Native Regiment. The combination might be found very inconvenient at times both in peace and war.

42.

If the Native Troops are to be employed on active service in combination with Europeans, they ought to be encouraged to acquire a spirit of confidence and self-reliance. Without these requisite qualifications of a Soldier, they would be little better than a mere rabble, and could give our European Troops neither assistance nor support.

COLONEL J. H. SHULDHAM, LATE 15TH REGIMENT N. I., COMMANDING AT
ALLYGURH.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Mussulmans, Brahmins, Rajpoots, Aheers, Kaits, Seikhs, Goorkhas and Punjabees.
2. Oude, Behar, Bhojpoor Country, about Loodhiana, Cis-Sutledge States, Barielly, &c.
3. Yes, Mehters, Chumars, Telees, Jodhs, Koormees, Dosauds, Jats, Kahars, Bunneahs, &c., both by regulation and practice.
4. I have not had sufficient experience of the other classes to give a fair opinion.
5. Parties are sent out, under Native Officers, for recruiting purposes, and men returning from furlough are encouraged to bring back relatives, &c., with them.
6. A Descriptive Roll is sent, for verification, to the Civil Authorities of the man's Village.
7. It is ascertained whether they are acquainted or connected with respectable men in the Regiment, who take on themselves, in such cases, to be, to a certain extent, security for them. Their Verification Roll is also sent as above, and they are examined often by a Regimental Caste Committee to ascertain their real caste.
8. Greater care should be taken in ascertaining their real connections, castes and villages, and in all possible cases, respectable Natives should be called on to be security for them, and the number of Brahmins and Mahomedans should be greatly restricted, but able-bodied, intelligent men of all classes should be admitted.
9. Having lost all my books of reference, I cannot give it.
10. Long before I came into the Service.
11. I would suggest that every recruit be called on to swear that he is not a Bhojut, and that he never will become a Bhojut while on the effective branch of the Service. These men remain in hospital for weeks after they are cured, because they will not take sufficiently nourishing food to recover their strength.
12. Yes, about Chittagong, Noakallee, &c.; but I believe these men are considered to be deficient in courage.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

13.

The old 20th N. I., now the 40th and 45th, I think, was a Marine Corps, and I believe a good many men came from Chittagong and that neighbourhood.

14.

I think not.

15.

Yes, without reference to Districts, I should say.

16.

I think not, though with reference to foreign service, in the Straits, China, &c., a Corps entirely composed of Mussulmans would be more efficient than any other.

17.

This is a difficult question, and would require many trials to test it fairly. It might be useful, on some occasions, to preserve the balance of power; but if your most trustworthy Companies happened to be on Command, it would have the contrary effect.

It might be useful also as regards the men's cooking; but I suspect the style of cooking adopted by the Seikhs is not, after all, so good as some suppose from the fact that although the chuppaties of the whole are baked on the same large *tawah*, still each man cooks his vegetables, &c., separately, which greatly nullifies the advantage of the arrangement.

18.

The proportion of Brahmins, Mussulmans, Bunneahs, Kuhars, Chumars, and Methers, should be very small.

19.

In the same, I should think.

20.

Yes, occasionally, when there is an urgent call for men to fill up weak Regiments, but not otherwise.

21.

I see little objection to the agency hitherto used.

22.

I think that the Officer Commanding the Police Corps might superintend it much more himself than the Commander of a Corps of the Line could possibly do.

23.

Chiefly those of discovering their real villages, castes and connections, and inducing respectable men to be security for them.

24.

Similar ones.

25.

It is an experiment worth trying; but they should be formed into separate Regiments.

26.

Africans, I should think, and Malays might be tried.

27.

To send our own Officers; but to secure them every assistance from the Local Authorities.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

28.

If the suggestion at No. 37 is not adopted, the next best plan would be to have the two flank Companies composed of Europeans, and armed with rifles. Each Native Company might also have a European Sergeant attached to it. He would be a most valuable assistant to the European Officer Commanding it, and supply his place if killed or wounded in action.

29.

It might be composed of steady men selected from our own European Regiments, but not subject to periodical relief.

30.

In rear of the centre.

31.

I should think not.

32.

With rifles.

33.

With the common percussion musket, or rather with fusils ; the musket is too heavy, except for first class men.

34.

With a tulwar in addition to the musket or fusil.

35.

Certainly not.

36.

Khakee pugree, khakee tunic, pajammas, not trowsers, and Native shoes.

37.

It is an excellent proposition ; but I would have two Native Corps to each European Corps. I would give each Native Company a European Sergeant in addition to its European Officers, and I would also attach a European Troop of Artillery, or a Light Field Battery. You would then have an effective Brigade, and enough Europeans either to overawe the Natives if disaffected, or encourage them in action.

38.

I cannot give any opinion.

39.

I would have the European Barracks sufficiently near to check an *emeute* if necessary ; but I should endeavour to prevent all intimacy between the Europeans and Natives as much as possible.

40.

Favorable, certainly, provided all intimacy is avoided between the Europeans and Natives. "Familiarity breeds contempt," and lays open the weak points of our character.

41.

I do not apprehend its causing any difficulties.

42.

They should be trained to look up to the Europeans on service ; whenever there really comes the tug of war, they are always obliged to do so, and it signifies little whether they have self-reliance or not on other occasions.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL W. MAYHEW, ADJUTANT GENERAL OF THE ARMY.
BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 and 2.

Vide Return enclosed, and my reply to question 5 of the first series.

3.

Men of low caste have been generally excluded by the Regulations, and practically Commanding Officers have carried the point too far. Lord W. Bentinck, when Commander-in-Chief, attempted to introduce the inferior castes into the Army, but did not meet with support, and subsequently the measure was dropped. *Vide* General Orders by the Governor General, 31st December 1834.

4.

The agricultural class generally, such as Koormees, Passees and Rajbhurs, might, with great advantage, be introduced very largely into the Service; but the lowest tribes will, I apprehend, be found totally wanting in the spirit necessary to make good Soldiers, and never will be fit for promotion to the smallest command in consequence of the servility almost inherent in their social position.

5.

Recruits for the Service have always been found so readily, that no agency beyond the Regimental appliances have been necessary. Men returning from furlough have generally brought recruits from their villages to fill up vacancies, whence a system of relationship and dependence has too largely prevailed in most Corps.

6.

See Government General Order, No. 486, 6th August 1852.

7.

The few children of Sepoys, born in the Lines, and Camp Followers generally, are little encouraged, and are very seldom enlisted, except as Classees, Drummers, and latterly, Band boys, they are often very smart but disreputable.

8.

The total exclusion of Brahmins and town-bred Mahomedans, the partial enlistment of Rajpoots and Mahomedans of rural Districts, and the very large admission into the ranks of all arms, of Gwallas, Ahirs and cultivators generally, such as Koormees, Passees, and Rajbhurs of the Azimgurh and Goruckpore Districts, will improve the *personnel* of the Native Army as far as possible.

9 and 10.

The oath in use was first published with the Articles of War in 1796, and no change has been sanctioned. The Judge Advocate General will reply to these questions in full.

11.

The only change necessary in the existing oath is the addition of the words "by sea or land"; but it should be very distinctly explained to each recruit before he is sworn in; which should never be till he has become accustomed, for several months, to the service, and at drill.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

There are no sea-faring races in Bengal; but the Dacca and Chittagong Mahomedan population may be tried with advantage, and formerly were admitted into the old Marine Corps as least averse to serving beyond sea.

13.

These Corps are called now General Service Regiments; such as the 25th, 40th, 47th, 65th, 67th and 68th Native Infantry.

14 & 15.

A mixture of tribes of the same *faith* is very desirable, and Corps should be raised for general service without reference to Districts, and as widely as possible all over the Country.

16.

Regiments should be decidedly homogeneous so far as Hindoos, Mahomedans, Seikhs and Goorkhas are concerned. The admission of the three latter partially only in our old Corps of the Line, quite neutralized their influence, as counterpoise to Hindoo predominance of feeling throughout the Infantry. In the Cavalry and Artillery the Mahomedan ascendancy prevailed from the same cause.

17.

It is not desirable to have Companies of one class, nor would it be quite practicable, with reference to the disproportion of the admixture of castes; it would also tend to a class feeling very prejudicial to harmony in a Regiment.

18.

Not applicable.

19.

It is advisable to recruit Police Corps locally, which will ensure a better class of men, and give them a greater stake in the welfare of their respective Districts. Corps for general service should be recruited generally, and the wider the area the better.

20.

The Police Corps should be kept as distinct as possible from the Line; no community of feeling should be encouraged.

21.

Recruiting Depôts should be established, under very conscientious Officers, as permanencies in every suitable District, whence alone the recruits should be allotted to Corps, as required. This system will supersede the "Bhy-bundee" tendency, which has heretofore been so baneful to the Service and still offer such impediments to the introduction of new feelings into the Native Army.

22.

The Police Corps should, as I have said before, be kept as distinct as possible from the General Service Regiments.

23.

The Local Civil Authorities, who attest recruits, should be enjoined to pay strict attention to the correctness of the Returns as to caste, employment and residence of these men. At present this important duty is slurred over. The Registries should be sent, for verification, monthly, to the Sudder Stations, by Officers Commanding Recruit Depôts, who should be held responsible for the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

correctness of Descriptive Rolls sent with recruits to Corps; he should also frequently personally visit his District, and enquire into the truth of these Registries, and keep them corrected where necessary.

24.

Not applicable.

25 to 27.

The only Foreign Troops in India should be Europeans, as I have said before: black races will always make common cause against white races, and should not be trusted; they would probably be nearly as expensive as Europeans, and more difficult to keep up.

28 to 32.

The Native Corps should be separate, I think; the close admixture of the European with the Native Soldier will lower the former in the eyes of the latter; the idiosyncracies of the two races are incompatible, and should be kept as distinct as possible.

33.

The Native Army of the Line should be armed with the common percussion musket, which is very efficient and not readily adapted for general use without the cap, which should be kept, as far as possible, out of the reach of Native manufacturers.

34.

The old flint musket will answer every purpose of a Police Corps, and will give them all the superiority over the population that is desirable.

35 & 36.

There is no advantage in the present uniform of Native Soldiers, and it is unsuited to their habits. A costume something like that of the Zouaves will add to the comfort and efficiency, of all Soldiers serving in India.

37 to 41.

I have answered these questions in the negative. and recent experience shows that the admixture has not worked well generally, in fact the practice is to be discontinued in the Artillery, and should not be introduced into the other branches. In peace and war time the vigilance which has become essential to the maintenance of our power may, at all times, be secured by a proper combination of the Troops of both races in Brigades, each Corps having the homogeneous elements that can alone give it respectability in its own estimation and weight with other Troops.

42.

The permanent association, in the same Corps, of European and Native Soldiers would, I am convinced, have the effect of making the expensive and needy Englishman dependent on the rich and usurious Hindoo, to whom he would find himself constantly bound by debt, and thus a spirit dangerous to discipline would be fostered in spite of the utmost care of the ruling powers. This might certainly be obviated, in a measure, by the frequent change of the Native portion of a Corps from its European base; but the amalgamation will thereby be weakened, and retain none but its worst features.

RETURN showing the Races and Castes of which the Native Army was composed on the 1st April 1858.

CORPS.	European Commissioned Officers.	European Non-Commissioned Officers.	Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers and Rank and File.	NUMBER OF EACH RACE AND CASTE.																		TOTAL.	
				Christians.	Muslimans.	Brahmins.	Rajpoots	Hindoos of inferior description.	Seikhs.	Punjabees.	Hindoostanees.	Cis-Sutledge.	Trans-Indus.	Hill States of Nepal.	Hazara Tribes.	Afghans.	Goorkhas.	Hill Men.	Mhairs.	Maharatas.	Bheels.		Margzeahs Grassceahs and other predatory Tribes.
Artillery	6	4	2,241	..	552	77	88	445	....	....	....	....	....	..	..	..	..	....	..	..	..	....	1,162
Light Cavalry	26	3	1,259	25	624	344	231	35	....	....	....	....	....	..	..	..	..	....	..	..	..	....	1,259
Infantry (Regular)	248	47	21,928	436	3,590	6,205	6,404	4,326	135	192	....	....	....	..	..	..	590	....	..	..	..	....	21,928
Infantry (Irregular)	240	29	42,715	20	1,853	1,532	2,911	3,821	3,504	15,286	896	2,270	2,867	353	23	32	271	3,677	566	915	803	223	41,828
Cavalry (Irregular)	94	....	10,703	41	3,331	350	549	181	833	2,401	1,219	167	467	19	..	105	29	2	..	..	..	....	10,194
Artillery (Irregular)	10	6	998	..	....	....	....	....	....	495	38	15	5	..	..	..	..	....	..	..	..	....	553
Sebundy Sappers and Miners..	1	2	209	..	2	18	179	10	....	....	....	....	....	..	..	..	..	....	..	..	..	....	209
Total	625	91	80,053	572	10,452	8,526	10,362	8,818	4,472	18,374	2,153	2,452	3,339	377	23	137	890	3,679	566	915	803	223	77,133
												N. B.—Aggregate of Corps, the races of which are not shown in this Return											2,920
												Grand Total											80,053

(150)

(Signed) W. MAYHEW, *Lieut.-Colonel,*
Adjutant General of the Army.

ADJUTANT GENL'S OFFICE; }
Head Quarters, Allahabad, }
The 13th August 1858. }

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON, OFFICIATING QUARTER MASTER
GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Inapplicable.
2. Ditto.
3. Ditto.
4. Yes, the greater the scarcity of race, tribe and caste in the ranks of the Bengal Native Infantry, the less dangerous will it probably be to us.
- 5 to 7. Inapplicable.
8. All races, tribes and castes should be admitted.
9. I inhabitant of son of swear, that I will never forsake or abandon my colors, that I will march wherever I am directed, whether within or beyond the Company's Territories, that I will implicitly obey all the orders of my Commanders, and in every thing behave myself as becomes a good Soldier and a faithful Servant of the Company, and failing in any part of my duty as such, will submit to the penalties described in the Articles of War which have been read to me.
10. It was in use before I entered the Service in 1828.
11. Perhaps the words "by land or by sea" might be inserted after the words "Company's Territories".
12. I have no knowledge of any; but the Chittagong Mussulmen are of seafaring habits.
13. None.
14. No.
15. Yes.
- 16 to 18. I would vary the organization, as much as practicable, with reference to local and other circumstances; thus, I would have some Corps homogeneous, such as the Muzbee Pioneers of the Punjab Irregular Force, or other out-castes; then I would have other Corps in which each Company should consist of one tribe or caste; and again I would have some Corps with tribes and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

castes mixed up in each Company, the out-castes only excepted, which should be kept by themselves. Where Corps are composed of all races, tribes and castes, the proportion of each should be equalized as much as possible. Our object should be to have an efficient Native Army, and at the same time to take every precaution that is in any way likely to reduce the chances of its ever in any way combining against us. I would, therefore, employ men of every race, tribe, or caste that could be induced to enlist throughout the length and breadth of the Empire.

19.

I would recruit for both Military and Police in every District, according to the race or tribe from which it was desired to draw men.

20.

Yes, if necessary or expedient.

21.

The present system of Recruiting parties, or of getting furlough men to bring candidates for enlistment, appears to meet all requirements.

22.

The same, that is, each Corps should look out for itself.

23.

As at present. They should be identified, and their homes, &c., ascertained.

24.

The same precautions should suffice.

25 to 27.

The more variety of race the better, and it might be practicable to get men from the Cape, from the Mozambique Coast, and from the Western Coast of the Red Sea, by establishing Recruiting Depôts for the purpose. I offer these remarks with diffidence, as I have no experience of the Countries in question. Africans from the Mozambique Coast are procured for Sugar Plantations both at Mauritius and Bourbon. They are an able-bodied race of men, and ought to make good Soldiers.

28 to 32.

My belief is, that the more we keep our European and Native Soldiers apart, the better. They do not improve by being brought into contact with each other, and familiarity has the effect of weakening the wholesome feeling of the superiority of the European, which the Native should entertain.

33.

Percussion muskets.

34.

Ditto or fusils.

35 & 36.

No, they do not. A pugree, tunic, coat and pair of loose-pyjamas would be the most suitable dress.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

37.

Entirely against it.

38.

No, I do not, and during the late mutinies, the Gun Lascars could not be trusted.

39.

If it be determined upon to associate two such Corps, the Barracks could be well-placed contiguous to each other.

40.

I do not see that it would affect the vigilance of the European one way or the other ; but I do think that it would tend much to lessen the awe of European Troops, which, it is desirable, all Natives should feel.

41.

If in all other respects unobjectionable, the arrangement would be very advantageous as regards many requirements of the Service both in peace and war. For instance, the Native Soldiers of such Corps would be very handy for duties entailing exposure to the sun, for Treasure and Commissariat Guards, Rear Guards in ordinary marches, &c., &c. ; but the objections to the mixing of Europeans and Natives in the manner proposed are, to my mind, so great as to outweigh the consideration of any such partial advantages as could be desired from it.

42.

To cultivate a spirit of confidence and self-reliance is indispensable among Native as among European Troops.

We should have a small, but highly trained Native Army, all the ordinary duties of the Country being taken by the Police Battalions.

PUNJAB IRREGULAR FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Infantry of the Punjab Irregular Force is composed chiefly of Seikhs, Punjabee Mahomedans, Trans-Indus Pathans, Punjabee Hindoos, Dogras and other Hill Rajpoots, a few Goorkhas, and a few Hindoostanees, Muzbee Seikhs.

[NOTE.—The further enlistment of Hindoostanees has, however, long been prohibited, and by a recent Order, the Goorkhas are to be drafted into one Regiment for Hazara.]

2.

The Seikhs, chiefly from the Manjhabut ; there are also many from our Cis-Sutlej Territories, and a few from the protected Sikh States.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Punjabee Mahomedans, chiefly from the Scind Saugor Doab, and generally from all parts of the Punjab; a few from Hazara.

Trans-Indus Pathans, Eusaufzaie, Peshawur, the Afreedie Hills and Afghanistan; Punjabee Hindoos, from the several Districts of the Punjaub; Dogras and other Hill Rajpoots from Kangra, and the adjoining Hill Country.

Goorkhas, from Kemaon and Nepal; few in number, and obtained with great difficulty.

Hindoostanees, from Oude and Behar.

Muzbee Seikhs, from all parts of the Punjab and Loodianah, Ferozepore Districts.

3.

Yes, the enlistment of Sweepers was prohibited in the old Corps of the Punjab Irregular Force, and it has not been the practice to enlist in them either Muzbees, Ramdaspees, and other classes of men who are looked upon by the people of the Country as out-castes.

During the past year, however, two Regiments of Munzabees have been raised as Pioneers, as a rule subject to exceptions of course, as in the case of the Trans-Indus Pathans of Afghanistan, the Afreedie Hills, &c., and the Goorkhas; the enlistment of men who reside in foreign Territory is forbidden.

4.

Yes; the more varied the clan, caste, tribe and country of our Native Soldiers, the less likely will they be to combine against us. The Muzbees (Sweepers who have adopted the Seikh religion) were valued as bold and daring men by the Maha Rajah Runjeet Sing, and the 24th Regiment Punjaub Infantry (Pioneers) which is entirely composed of them, has done good service at Delhi and elsewhere during the War.

A few Corps of Ramdasseeas and classes of out-castes in the Punjab, might also be enlisted into our Service with advantage. They should, however, be kept to themselves entirely in Regiments, without any admixture of other classes, by almost all of whom they are regarded as impure, their very touch even to be pollution. By giving them honorable service as Soldiers, good treatment and good pay, we raise them in the social scale, and humanly speaking, their own interests should bind them strongly to our cause, because, under Native rule no such privileges would be continued to them; from being Soldiers they would sink again into the degraded out-caste.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

[NOTE.—In the service of Runjeet Sing, Muzbees were employed as Sepoys only, and none of them were ever suffered to attain the rank of Officer.]

5.

By Recruiting parties detached from Regiments in general, and by furlough men bringing candidates for enlistment. In some instances Military Officers on Civil employ procure recruits in their respective Districts at the request of Commanding Officers of Corps. Military Officers on Civil employ have, within the last year, been largely employed in raising men under the orders of the Chief Commissioner of the Punjab. A large number has thus been raised by Captain Adams, Assistant Commissioner at Goordaspoor.

6 and 7.

Inapplicable.

8.

All restrictions as to race, tribe or caste, should be removed ; but as a general rule, men of our own Provinces only should be enlisted, Goorkhas and Pathans always excepted.

9.

The only authority is that given in the Native Articles of War, and it is, I believe, adhered to.

10.

It was generally introduced shortly after the Punjab Irregular Force was raised in 1849-50.

11.

The oath is probably as binding in its present form as it could be in any other. If retained at all, perhaps it might be well to add the words "*by land or by sea*" to the part of it which says—"I will march wherever I am ordered either within or beyond the Company's Territories."

12 to 19.

Inapplicable.

20.

Yes, undoubtedly; but men are so easily obtained that it would seldom prove necessary.

21.

The usual Recruiting parties generally, or District or other Civil or Political Officers might be employed according to the class, caste and country of men required.

22.

Inapplicable.

23.

The existing orders appear sufficient. By them a Descriptive Long Roll of every Recruit is made out in his Regiment, and sent for verification to the Civil Officer or other Authority in the District or Country in which the recruit resides. As for men who reside

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

in foreign Territory, Commanding Officers generally take them only on the recommendation or responsibility of their Native Officers, or others, whom they deem trustworthy.

- 24.** The same precautions will suffice.
- 25 to 32.** Inapplicable.
- 33.** For the service of the Trans-Indus Frontier, with the two-grooved rifle, otherwise with the percussion musket.
- 34.** With the percussion musket or fusil.
- 35.** Inapplicable.
- 36.** The pugree, tunic and loose pantaloons, as at present, appear to be all that can be desired.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL C. DAVIDSON, RESIDENT AT HYDERABAD.

HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** Mussulmans, Brahmins, Rajpoots, Mahrattas, Jelingees, Jamil, Maungs, Bedurs, and other inferior castes; Indo-Britons as Musicians.
- 2.** Hindoostan, Northern Circars, Carnatic, Baramahal, Ceded Districts, Deccan.
- 3.** Formerly none; but since the mutinies, recruiting from Hindoostan has been forbidden; but this restriction might advantageously be removed hereafter.
- 4.** None are precluded.
- 5.** Men returning from furlough bring their relatives or friends in the chance of being enlisted by Commanding Officers. No separate Recruiting parties are organized.
- 6.** None.
- 7.** Ditto.
- 8.** Exclude Brahmins entirely.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 9.** Those laid down in the Articles of War.
- 10.** Since 1854.
- 11.** The oath is perfectly valueless. I do not know of any form that would make it more binding.
- 14.** No.
- 15.** Certainly.
- 16.** No.
- 17.** The tribes and castes should be mixed up in each Company.
- 18.** One-third Mussulmen, two-thirds Hindoos of various castes or Natives of different tribes.
- 19.** For Police purposes the men of the District should be recruited.
- 20.** Certainly not.
- 21.** Leave it to the Officers Commanding Regiments.
- 22.** Leave it to the District Officers.
- 23 & 24** I do not think any precautions are necessary.
- 33.** With percussion fusil or muskets of a lighter kind than the present one in use.
- 34.** With swords and one-half fusils.
- 36.** Tunic and a cloth turban of the description daily used by the men in their undress; the uniform should not be changed with every imitation of dress by the European Soldiery, which is often very frequent in India.

BRIGADIER J. COKE, C. B., COMMANDING AT MORADABAD.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** I believe the Bengal Native Infantry to have been composed at the rebellion (Seikhs excepted) as it was fourteen years ago, when I

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

left the 10th Regiment N. I., of which I had been nine years Adjutant, *viz.*, Mussulmen, Rajpoots, Brahmins and Hindoos of inferior castes, such as Aheers, Kaiths, Koormees, &c. ; about 200 Seikhs were added after the conquest of the Punjab, but they had little influence in the Corps, and, generally speaking, though utterly distinct in feelings from Hindoostanees, yet, from having been placed in the same Corps, became amalgamated and joined in the rebellion with the Hindoostanees.

2. Mussulmen from all parts of India, Hindoos principally from Oude, Bhojepore and Behar.
3. Yes, the lower class of Hindoos, such as Bunneeabs, Chumars, Sweepers, &c., and they should still be excluded, as they will not fight ; Sweepers might, but it is not desirable to entertain them, as it throws a slur on the whole Native Army. Muzbee Seikhs are doubtless of the Sweeper caste, but they have been raised from their position by being admitted to take the Pahul, and by being employed as Soldiers by the Maha Rajah of the Punjab, Runjeet Sing.
4. I should think there are many tribes who would make excellent Soldiers, such as Goojurs, Jats, Mewattees, Maharattas, Rangurs, Rajpoots of Rajpootana, and many others, with which I am not acquainted.
5. I think no recruits in any District should be enlisted, save by the Commanding Officer, or by such parties as he may send into the different Districts either with or without an European Officer.
6. I think it may not be amiss, especially after this rebellion, to have recruits registered in the different Districts to which they belong, as is done in the Punjab, by sending in Rolls of the recruit, when he is enlisted, to the District Office for attestation. I have not seen much practical good arise from it ; but it may be a check, to a certain extent, on notorious budmashes getting into the Corps, and of some use, when the Soldier is killed, in preventing the Government being defrauded in claims for pension.
7. I know of none, and I conceive no precautions are necessary, the best guarantee being the presence of the father or family of the recruit.
8. None ; the less regulations there are in the Army the better ; they are neither understood nor attended to. I would enlist from all tribes and castes in India, provided they will fight.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 9.** I do not remember the words of the oath, but it is high time that all oaths were done away with. A bad Soldier will never be bound by an oath, and a good one does not require one.
- 10.** I do not know, the sooner it is done away with the better.
- 11.** There is no oath wanted. The 1st Punjab Infantry has been raised nine years; no man of it was ever sworn in, nor ever heard of the Articles of War. They obey their Commanding Officer, go where they are ordered, and have shown, like the rest of the Punjab Corps, how they can fight wherever they have been employed. If they disobey orders they are flogged, and till something of the Bengal line folly crept into the Punjab Force, which, had it been carried out by Commanding Officers, would have ruined the Force. Non-Commissioned Officers and men were summarily dismissed when they were found, from vice or temper, to be unfit for the Service. The only fit judge of these matters is the Commanding Officer. Let Native Soldiers have only one master, their Commanding Officer, and they will be good and obedient Soldiers; let them find that the Brigadier is one master, the General a second, and the Commander-in-Chief a third, they will obey no master. To all Officers who have thought on this subject, or who have experience of the Native character, this truth is so self-apparent, that I can only imagine one reason why it has not been acted on, and that is that the Madras mutiny has not been forgotten, and that Government doubt the loyalty of their European Officers.
- 12.** I am not sufficiently acquainted with these tribes to give an opinion. I should have thought, if there is no other objection to them, the Malays would make excellent Soldiers for this purpose.
- 13.** I do not know. I believe not.
- 14.** Certainly not be confined to a prescribed District without; by a District is meant a Province, such as the Punjab, Scinde or the North-West Provinces; then I think they should be confined to it or rather to each separate tribe of that Province as before mentioned.
- 15.** Answered at No. 14.
- 16.** Yes; each Corps should be, in my opinion, of one tribe or caste as before stated.
- 17.** Yes, certainly; the next best thing to having the whole Corps of one caste is to have each Company of one caste. The tribes or castes should not be mixed in the Companies.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

18.

I think half the Corps should be of one caste and half of another ; but I dislike the mixed Corps for the reason before stated, still if the Government will have it so, never mix the Punjab with the North-West Provinces, or those with Scinde, Bombay or Madras. Keep Oudh separate from Bhojepore and Behar, Delhi, Rajpootana, Gwalior and Rohilcund, all separate for the same reasons as stated at the end of the reply to the 1st question.

19.

I think the whole Police of the Country should be in the hands of the Military ; all Commanding Officers of Corps should be Magistrates ; all their Officers, Assistants, and all Regiments used for Police purposes. There seems to be no reason why all should not be recruited from the same District ; but there should be Regiments of Police for detective purposes, which should be composed of all races and tribes, as it is evident that a Brahmin would not use the same endeavors to detect and capture a Brahmin as he would a Mussulman or any man of any other tribe with whom he is not allied, and the same will hold good with the rest of the other tribes and castes.

20.

No, certainly not ; but there can be no reason why men should not be permitted to exchange into any Regiment, provided they are not men of bad character.

21.

The Commanding Officer of the Police Corps, which should be raised and disciplined in the same manner as any other Corps. Fewer Officers would suffice for a Police Corps ; a Commanding Officer and Adjutant would be sufficient.

22.

The same agency as for other Corps, *viz.*, the Commanding Officer.

23.

Registry of all recruits enlisted in Rolls being furnished by the Commanding Officer.

24.

Yes, the same.

25.

I think it would be well to enlist Malays, Chinese and especially Africans for service in Bengal, Burmah, Assam and the Provinces lying on the Sea Coast, and they should be kept in separate Regiments for the reasons stated before.

26.

Answered in No. 25 ; but there may be many other races fit for the purpose with whom I am not acquainted ; if so, they should be enlisted, if they will take service, and almost all

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

men will, provided the proper means be adopted. I will elucidate this by an example. When I was at Kohat, nothing could induce the Barucks of the Chountra Plains and the Bungee Khel tribe of the Hills near Kalabagh to enlist, but they were most desirable men to get into the Service, being notoriously brave men, capable of the greatest endurance, and the most daring robbers in the whole Kohat District. I captured three of the most notorious men of the Bungee Khel tribe in a raid, and sentenced them to imprisonment for three years; after some time I told them I would remit their punishment if they would take service and bring me men of their tribe. They agreed to do so, commenced in the Police, and I have now some thirty of their tribe in the 1st Punjab Infantry, gallant and good Soldiers. The Baruck tribe I got through a Mullick or Head-man, to whom I had showed some kindness. I asked him to give me his son as a Soldier; he did so, and though a man of forty years of age, came himself and enlisted in my Corps till he saw that his men had got over the bugbear of the service, the slow march and the balance step; he then took his discharge. I promoted his son, and have now some fifty Barucks in the 1st Punjab Infantry. I mention these two cases to show that by tact and perseverance any man may be induced to enlist. Every endeavour should be made to induce the tribe of the Wuzerees of the Kohat and Bunnoo Frontier to enlist into our Service; they are good horsemen and better footmen. This will be a work of great difficulty, as that great Soldier General Nicholson did not succeed in obtaining the service of this tribe; still I think it may be done.

27.

I cannot give an opinion; those on the spot are the only fit judges.

28.

Certainly not. I would not have any European Soldiers mixed up with Natives for these reasons. In case of a rebellion, such as the one in 1857, the European would probably have been murdered as well as the Officers; but the principal objection I have to mixing up Europeans and Natives is, that it tends to do away with the respect and fear for European Soldiers which it should be our constant care to instil into the minds of Natives. By mixing the European with the Native Soldier all his worst points are brought before the Native. He is seen in a beastly helpless state of drunkenness or exposing his person, or too often trying to get money out of Natives by imposing on them. The Native thus sees all the vices, but understands none of the virtues of the European Soldier. The result is loss of respect, and contempt in place of fear.

29 to 32.

Answered in question No 28.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

33.

All the Pathans, Dogras and frontier tribes in our Service, Goorkhas, and a portion, say one in four, of the Punjab Corps, should be armed with the two-grooved rifle, as this weapon is better adapted than any I have yet seen for Hill warfare; the rest of the Army and Police, with percussion muskets, and every Infantry Soldier should carry a good sword of his own selection, with the exception of Goorkhas, who prefer the kookery to the sword.

34.

If a shorter and lighter weapon than the percussion musket is obtainable, I should prefer this arm for the Police. A carbine, such as was given to the Irregular Cavalry, would, I think, with a sword, be a better weapon for the Police than a musket.

35.

No, certainly not.

36.

For head dress a turban of different colors according to the different Provinces from which men are enlisted; a loose blouse or tunic in place of the coat, with no collar or beads about the neck which should be perfectly open. Pantaloon not too loose below the knee, above very loose and roomy to enable the wearer to sit and lie down with perfect ease and to be no encumbrance to him in climbing Hills, fastened not with braces but with a waist-string as pajamas. For the feet shoes, chupplus, or leather sandals, as may be the habit of the people of the Province from which they are enlisted.

37.

I am averse to the arrangement for the reason stated in question 28. This most undoubtedly would be the best mode in which Europeans and Natives could be brought together; but I think the tendency would still be the same, and the advantage to be derived from it would not be commensurate with the evils likely to arise therefrom as before stated.

38.

Doubtless the Gun Lascars and European Artillerymen do bear some analogy to this question; but the Gun Lascars hold a very subordinate position like the Syce Drivers, who are used, as light weights, to ride the horses. I am not aware that Gun Lascars are employed to work the Guns. I am also not aware that these men have proved less rebellious than other Native Soldiers; if so, fear was probably the cause, as they being unarmed save with swords that were perfectly harmless.

39 to 41.

Replied to in answers to Nos. 37 and 38.

• QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

42.

I am of opinion that Native or any other Troops who have no self-reliance would be worse than useless in the hour of trial. I would do every thing in my power to give self-reliance to Native Troops. I do not mean by self-reliance a mutinous and insubordinate spirit. Nothing can be more mutinous and insubordinate than an English mob ; but this does not make them self-reliant. Witness the way in which a Policeman walks into the midst of a violent chartist mob, and carries off his man. A mutinous and insubordinate Army can only exist with a timid and weak Government. No arrangement of Troops, no amount of want of self-confidence, will save an Army under these circumstances, for they will soon find that their own want of self-confidence does not equal that of their Rulers. I hope I shall always see Native Troops rely on Europeans for aid and support in the hour of danger, believing them to be their superiors in bodily strength, physical and moral courage ; but I don't think we have in many cases since the late rebellion increased this feeling, and if it is not strenuously exerted, our Northern Soldiers will not long continue to believe in the name alone.

ON THE 1ST HEAD OF INQUIRY UNDER THE HEAD CLASSIFICATION.

I am of opinion that Corps should be raised of separate classes and tribes Thus Sikh Corps composed of Seikhs and no admixture of any classes with them. Brahmin and Rajpoots in other Corps, Gwallas and other lower caste Hindoos in other Corps, but no Sweepers or Chamars should be enlisted, Hindoostanee Musselmen in other Corps, Goojurs separate, Meywattees separate, Pathans, Cis and Trans-Indus with Punjabee Mussulmen in separate Corps, Dogras in separate Corps, the same as the Goorkhas are at present. My reasons for this are that in a rising of the Mussulmen, you would always have Seikhs, Dogras, Goorkhas and Hindoo Corps to depend on, and *vice versa*. By mixing the castes in one Corps, they become amalgamated and make common cause, which they never would do if kept in separate Corps. Hindoos and Mussulmen are natural enemies, the same with Seikhs, yet the result of mixing them in one Corps has been to make them all join against Government, and not only the Soldiers, but through them the Hindoo and Mussulmen Zemindars were incited to make common cause, which they never would have done had the races been kept in distinct Corps. Our endeavour should be to uphold in full force the (for us fortunate) separation which exists between the different religions and races not to amalgamate them. *Divide et impera* should be the principal of Indian Government.

MAJOR G. W. WILLIAMS, SUPERINTENDENT OF POLICE BATTALION,
NORTH-WEST PROVINCES.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Of about two-thirds higher class Hindoos, such as Brahmins and Rajpoots, which last consider the profession of arms to be their heritage, and one-third Mahomedans and the lower castes.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

Principally from Oude and Behar, though almost all Districts furnished each a small quota.

3.

By the practice of the Army indirectly sanctioned by their rulers, all the lower classes, more especially those considered out castes, were excluded.

4.

I imagine enlistments might be advantageously made from all classes, though at present the number of those willing to serve may be small, owing to the force of habit and the state of abject subjection in which they have been hitherto kept by their countrymen, countenanced greatly by ourselves.

5.

Native Recruiting parties were chosen for their qualifications for enlisting, and sent to their homes in the different Districts.

6.

Names of Fathers, Villages, Pergunnahs, and Zillahs, were entered in the Regimental Long Roll.

7.

As above.

8.

Recruiting Officers should be sent into Districts, so that the Native Army may be formed of various castes and tribes, and from different Districts. These Officers should recruit, as much as possible, by personal selection, from the rural population, as the inhabitants of cities are, generally speaking, more corrupt; and not trust so much to subordinate individuals for Recruiting parties, who either bring their relatives and friends, or take a douceur from those who are strangers to them. In consequence Recruiting Officers for a Division will require to be carefully selected for their knowledge of Native character, judgment and discrimination.

9.

They repeated the words of an oath; but few, I believe, understood the meaning or obligation of what they uttered.

11.

Neither solemn affirmation nor oath would, in general, be binding on the men if inclined to mutiny, still to some extent, and in many instances, it might prove a check, and therefore it would be as well to have a written agreement signed and sworn to, administered in as solemn and binding a form as possible, and according to the respective creeds of the enlisting parties. I am aware that an objection exists to the use of an oath, on what we believe to be a false religion; but I am also aware that the solemn affirmation has little or no hold on a Native. The same statement, if required on what they consider an oath, bears very different aspect to them.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

A written agreement has almost a greater hold on a Native, who is more careful to comprehend what he signs and swears to.

12.

I imagine the tribes inhabiting Chittagong and the Eastern portion of the Bay of Bengal would furnish recruits for a Marine Battalion. When I first entered the 40th Native Infantry, originally a Marine Corps, it had very many men from the neighbourhood of Chittagong,—a fact I also observed in the Calcutta Militia whilst Commanding that Corps.

13.

The late 25th and 40th Regiments Native Infantry, were originally a Marine Battalion. Then one of the Calcutta Militia also took escort duty on board of Ships.

14 & 15.

Each Corps might be raised in a prescribed District ; but if so, should serve as little as possible in that District.

Vide Rule 7 of the Police Manual.

“As a general rule it is better not to have too many of any, one District serving therein, as local ties would prevent them acting so efficiently against their own country men.”

16 & 17.

The Army should be composed of Regiments comprising as many races, tribes, and castes as possible, each to be formed into a distinct Company of its own special class.

18.

In equal proportions.

Vide Rule 9 of the Police Manual.

“No one caste is to predominate in a District, and as a check the Weekly Present States should show the numbers and castes enlisted during the week ; Native Christians are to be readily taken if of good character.”

19.

The recruiting for the Army and Police should be perfectly distinct, and yet could be simultaneously carried on in the same Districts. The Police being now so far advanced (having already enlisted nearly twenty thousand men) would not interfere with the recruiting for the Army.

20.

Certainly not. It would ruin the Police completely.

21.

As already stated in question 8, District Officers should be appointed, who should traverse the space allotted them for the purpose, and personally inspect, select, and enlist recruits.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

22.

A distinct agency. At present District Officers of Police are employed in recruiting.

23.

The following instructions are issued to Police Officers, *vide* Rules 8, 9, 10, 11 and 12.

“ Strong, able bodied men, irrespective of caste, high or low, if recommended by the Civil Authorities and approved by the Civil Surgeons, as physically fit, from 18 to 35 years of age, may, in all cases, be taken into the Police. Great care should be exercised with regard to character and antecedents. Many will seek for refuge in the Police ; but a Sepoy bearing ought at once to betray him. No one caste or tribe is to predominate in a District, and as a check, the Weekly Present States should show the numbers and castes enlisted during the week. Native Christians are to be readily taken, if of good character. Height, is immaterial, though 5 feet 6 is a fair limit. Security to be taken for all men enlisted. Village, Pergunnah and District, with Father's name, to be entered in the Register. It is distinctly to be explained to all about to enlist, that they are taken into the Police to serve in any part of India ; that refusal to march or desertion will be severely punished, and all arrears of pay confiscated. For the better encouragement of gaining good men, the inducement of rank might be held out to approved parties of influence and good character bringing recruits, thus say, for 100 good men, the rank of Jemadar, with liberty to recommend 2 Havildars and 2 Naiks.”

24.

The above Rules would, I imagine, answer equally well for the Army.

25.

I would say yes.

26.

African Regiments, if not Mahomedans, would prove useful ; but without leaving India, we might have Companies formed from Natives of the East and South, Munnepoorees, Coles, Dhangers, Khasias, Meenas, even Malays, who, though passionate and treacherous, yet under strict discipline make good Soldiers.

27.

Officers, if carefully selected, would answer best for recruiting. The capabilities or otherwise of the Police Officer of the District would at once be evidenced by the style of men enlisted by him.

28 to 31.

I would not associate European Companies with Native ones, nor indeed associate the two races at all, when it could be possibly avoided, save in times of war.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

33.

I would arm the Native Army with percussion muskets; rifles and weapons of a superior kind should be entrusted to Europeans alone; the supply of ammunition and caps for Natives should be limited; all in excess should be kept in Magazines under European charge.

34.

The Military Police I would arm as above, taking the same precaution; the Police for Cities and Cantonments, I would arm as at Agra, with a long club painted blue and numbered; the Burkundazes at Thanna "where no Military Police are stationed as Guards," might be allowed a limited number of tulwars.

Vide Rules 49 and 50.

The Mounted Police will be armed with a small portion of carbines, 10 in 100, a pistol and sword.

The Foot Police, with muskets, bayonets and Native tulwars. Goorkha Companies, with the khookrie. Tulwars might be provided, out of the numbers taken from the population, while disarming is being carried out.

35.

The dress of the late Native Army was quite unsuited to the Native habits. On active service tight pantaloons and coats are a great hindrance; and if Officers wished to get work out of their men, they were obliged to dispense with them for the time being.

36.

Some such dress as that now worn by the Military Police, which has stood the test of hard work, would, I think, be advisable. The color is a serviceable one; but a distinctive difference should, of course, be made for the Native Army.

Vide Rules 54 and 56.

For the Mounted Police a khakee chupkun and rather close-fitting pantaloons, red turban and kumberbund, jack boots with spurs, great coat of blanket lined with khakee, accoutrements of brown leather with brass mountings.

Foot Police to have a khakee tunic or blouse, without collar, for the hot weather, and blanket covered with khakee drill, for the cold season. Khakees pantaloons easy and full tying round the waist, dark blue turban put on in an uniform pattern, a good pair

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

of shoes, a great coat of blanket lined with khakee, accoutrements of brown leather.

37.

If a Native Irregular Regiment be attached to every European Local Regiment, the Officers of the former would be considered to hold a subordinate and inferior position, from the prevailing feeling of the superiority of an European Corps, though to manage a Native Regiment with credit requires, in my opinion, greater tact and judgment than for an European. Again with regard to the men, both European and Native, amongst two such opposite races and creeds, it would be difficult to maintain peace and harmony. With the present feelings of European Soldiers towards Natives, they would be apt to ill-treat the latter. There is likewise now a horror impressed on the minds of the Native with regard to European Soldiers, and I think it would be difficult to make the two assimilate if permanently attached to one Regiment.

38.

I am not aware whether any inconvenience was felt by Officers of the Artillery; but the present animosity did not then exist against Natives. Gun Lascars and Native Drivers, moreover, occupied, I believe, a very inferior position.

39.

The Lines of a Native Regiment should be placed, if possible, within range of the Fort Guns or of the fortified square which every Station should have for the security of the European Magazines, &c.

No places of Arms, Magazines or Military Stores should be exposed.

40.

I think unfavorable, as too close an association with European Troops would lessen the awe now entertained for them. They should, therefore, be associated as little as possible, except in times of war; peace and idleness do not tend to exalt the character of our European Soldiers in the estimation of Natives.

42.

Native Troops ought to have a confidence in their European Officers, and if well led by them, will readily fight side by side with Europeans without requiring any close assimilation in times of peace. The late mutiny showed what Natives were without European Officers, and yet raw levies of Police fought these long-trained Soldiers and kept their Districts in perfect order. At Agra the Military Police vied with the Europeans in the Field.

CAPTAIN H. SHAKESPEAR, COMMANDING NAGPORE IRREGULAR FORCE.

NAGPORE IRREGULAR INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Mahomedans, 530 ; Brahmins, 720 ; Rajpoots, 434 ; Mahrattas, 212 ; inferior castes of Hindoos, 852, and Christians, 27.
2. Lucknow, Nagpore Province, Cawnpore, Allahabad, Banda, Futtehpoore, Baiswarrah, Oude City, Gwalior, and many minor Districts.
3. Mehters and Maugs, and since the mutiny, Upcountrymen.
4. None.
5. None ; recruits are all enlisted at the Head Quarters of Regiments.
6. None.
7. A relative or friend of known good character in the Regiment becomes responsible for the recruit, and strict enquiries are made regarding the candidate for enlistment ere he is enlisted.
8. Restrictions to the enlistment of Brahmins, save in very small numbers.
9. The same as laid down in the Bengal Military Regulations.
10. Since the Force was raised in the year 1854.
11. No.
14. No.
15. Each Corps should be recruited without reference to Districts.
16. No.
17. The tribes and castes should be mixed in each Company as not being so likely to combine for mischief.
18. One-fourth to be of different sects of Mahomedans, and three-fourths of Hindoos of all castes ; the Brahmin element to be in a very small proportion.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

19.

Recruiting for both might be allowed in the same District but from a wide area, without reference to District.

20.

Certainly not.

21.

That which is now employed, *viz.*, that of the Officers, unless in future any difficulty should be found in getting recruits in this Province.

22.

The Commandant of Police or his Deputy should enlist for the same.

23.

Commanding Officers should apply to the Civil Authorities under whose jurisdiction the candidate's family lives, for all information.

24.

I think that similar precautions should be taken.

33.

As the employment of the Nagpore Irregular Infantry is likely to be in jungles and against an Enemy very lightly armed and equipped, and who rarely stand to fight, it is highly advisable that the weapons and accoutrements of the Soldier should be light. To this end, instead of the heavy musket and bayonet in use, I would arm him with a percussion fusil, weighing not more than six and a half pound's, length of barrel 28 inches, with swivel ram-rod, carrying balls twenty to the pound, with a straight sword, of blade 28 inches in length, to fix on to the muzzle of the fusil, as does the sword to the rifle in present use. The sword is the natural weapon of the Native of India. I would have one Company in each Regiment armed with the rifle now in use.

34.

The above-mentioned weapons would, I consider, be the most efficient; but the present percussion musket, considerably reduced in length, would be a very efficient weapon for Police.

35.

The red coatee should be abolished, and the Officers and Men be dressed in alkalicks or chupkuns made loose and opening on either side of the chest, with reference to the wearer being either a Mussulman or Hindoo, and coming down to only within six inches of the knee. For wear in the cold weather, the alkalick might be made of French grey broad cloth, texture according to the rank of the wearer; for the hot weather, stout cotton cloth dyed in the babool dye, the object being to make the Soldier as invisible as possible in the jungles, the present uniforms of red and white being the most glaringly conspicuous that can be; the trowsers should be of similar colored clothes;

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the head dress, a Native turban of the size usually worn by Irregular Horsemen, to be of slate color, and one fold to be brought under the chin ; the shoe or sandal to be used at pleasure indiscriminately ; accoutrements to be of brown leather, with as little brass as possible ; the cloak to be of French grey broad cloth in present use.

OUDE COMMITTEE.

OUDE POLICE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. All castes. *Vide* abstract appended.
2. From Peshawur to Cape Comorin, Gungotry to Bombay, if possible.
12. Yes, Mullahs.
14. To preserve nationality might be raised in District, but enlist for general service.
16. No.
17. Companies may be homogeneous.
19. Military or Police Corps to serve under the same Government may be recruited in the same District.
20. No.
21. Commanding Officers should make their own arrangements.
22. Certainly.
24. Impracticable. The Roll of Enlistment should always be sent for verification.
34. Must have fire-arms.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

35.

No!

36.

Color ; khakee, fit, loose.

37.

Better to keep the Europeans distinct.

38.

Gun Lascars are in the position of menials. Comparison does not hold.

40.

The reverse.

RETURN showing the number of Men of each Caste enlisted for Service in the Oude Mounted and Foot Police, from the 16th to 22nd July 1858.

Office of Chief of Police, Dilaram, Lucknow, 23rd July 1858.

MOUNTED POLICE.

DETAILS.	Seikh	Hindoo Jaut.	Brahmin.	Rajpoot.	Christian.	Musulman.	Koormee.	Aheer.	Kaeth.	Lodha	Dogerah.	Khuttree.	Bya.	Gurrura.	Malee.	Kuhar.	Bunya.	Jogee.	Soonar.	Total.	REMARKS.
Enlisted as per last Return	555	125	78	68	1	253	2	25	1	1	6	12	2	1	1	0	1	1	1,164		
Ditto during the week	15	0	8	6	0	15	2	3	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	49		
Casualties during the week	570	125	86	74	1	298	4	28	1	1	6	12	2	1	1	0	0	1	1,213	3rd Cavalry details, 325, not included.	
	2	0	1	9	0	9	0	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	23		
Total	568	125	85	65	1	289	4	26	1	1	6	12	2	1	1	0	1	1	1,190		

INFANTRY POLICE.

DETAILS.	Brahmin.	Chuttree.	Ehst.	Aheer.	Mooroo.	Maile.	Lodah.	Dharook.	Pasee.	Kaeth.	Kahar.	Naoo.	Tumboollee.	Hulwasee.	Buhalia.	Bhoojooer.	Dhobee.	Mullah.	Talee.	Bahasee.	Bunnah.	Koomar.	Musulman.	Koree.	Gurrura.	Koormee.	Gosharen.	Seikh.	Chumar.	Mehur.	Khuttree.	Jaut.	Musbee.	Dograh.	Punjabee.	Kumbah.	Soonar.	Aigree.	Christian.	Total.	REMARKS.	
Enlisted as per last Return	114	150	15	310	84	8	112	54	301	20	14	15	6	20	63	12	21	76	12	9	11	8	796	80	80	300	5	1804	196	26	8	1	139	169	155	4	2	2	5,204			
Ditto during the week	13	15	0	17	7	0	0	5	36	5	0	0	0	0	7	0	0	11	0	0	0	0	25	6	0	35	0	3	0	3	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	188	
Casualties during the week	127	165	15	327	91	8	112	59	337	25	14	15	6	20	70	12	21	87	12	9	11	8	821	86	80	335	5	1807	196	29	8	1	139	169	155	4	2	2	5,392	Captain Stamford's Infantry levy, 560, not included.		
	8	11	0	13	7	0	5	0	10	0	5	0	0	1	6	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	15	0	2	14	0	9	5	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	112		
Total	119	154	15	314	84	8	107	59	327	25	9	15	6	19	64	12	21	87	12	8	11	8	806	86	76	321	5	1798	191	29	8	1	139	169	155	4	2	2	5,280			

(Examined)

(Signed) H. B. SPURGIN, Captain,
Assistant to Chief of Police.

(True Copy)

(Signed) G. HUTCHINSON, Captain,
Mily. Secy. to the Chief Commissioner

(Signed) H. BRUCE, Major,
Chief of Police in Oude.

OUDE COMMITTEE.

BENGAL CAVALRY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

36.

Plainly and loosely as possibly.

G. PLOWDEN, Esq., COMMISSIONER, NAGPORE.

NAGPORE IRREGULAR INFANTRY.

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

1. Mahomedans, 530; Brahmins, 720; Rajpoots, 434; Mahrattas, 212; inferior castes of Hindoos, 852, and Christians, 27.
2. Lucknow, Nagpore Province, Cawnpore, Allahabad, Banda, Futtehpore, Baiswarrah, Oude City, Gwalior, and many minor Districts.
3. Mehters and Maugs, and since the mutiny, Upcountry men.
4. None.
5. None; recruits are all enlisted at the Head Quarters of Regiments.
6. None.
7. A relative or friend of known good character in the Regiment becomes responsible for the recruit, and strict enquiries are made regarding the candidate for enlistment ere he is enlisted.

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

8.

Restrictions to the enlistment of Brahmins, save in very small numbers.

I understand the Officer Commanding to mean that he would not allow Brahmins to be enlisted except in very small numbers. In reply to this question it seems to me sufficient to say that no alteration is required in the existing rules and practice, which excludes no class except Mehters and Maugs. The composition of Corps is more particularly referred to in questions 16 to 18.

9.

The same as laid down in the Bengal Military Regulations.

10.

Since the Force was raised in the year 1854.

11.

No.

No.

14.

No.

No.

15.

Each Corps should be recruited without reference to Districts.

Each Corps should be recruited over a wide area without reference to Districts.

16.

No.

No.

17.

The tribes and castes should be mixed in each Company as not being so likely to combine for mischief.

The tribes and castes should be mixed up in each Company.

18.

One-fourth to be of different sects of Mahomedans, and three-fourths of Hindoos of all castes; the Brahmin element to be in a very small proportion.

I agree with the Officer Commanding.

19.

Recruiting for both might be allowed in the same District, but from a wide area without reference to District.

Ditto.

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

20.

Certainly not ; because I am of opinion that men who had served in Police Corps of this Province would not be so likely to subject themselves to the severer discipline exacted from the Sepoys of the Line as young men recruited for the latter service, unless indeed they were recruited for the Police Corps with the understanding that they might be called upon to be transferred to the Infantry Regiments as Sepoys.

I agree with the Officer Commanding.

21.

That which is now employed, viz. that of the Commanding Officers, unless in future any difficulty should be found in getting recruits in this Province.

Ditto.

22.

The Commandant of Police or his Deputy should enlist for the same.

Ditto.

23.

Commanding Officers should apply to the Civil Authorities, under whose jurisdiction the candidate's family lives, for all information.

Ditto.

24.

I think that similar precautions should be taken.

Ditto.

33.

As the employment of the Nagpore Irregular Infantry is likely to be in jungles and against an Enemy very lightly armed and equipped, and who rarely stand to fight, it is highly advisable that the weapons

Ditto.

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

and accoutrements of the Soldier should be light. To this end, instead of the heavy musket and bayonet in use, I would arm him with a percussion fusil, weighing not more than six and a half pounds, length of barrel 28 inches, with swivel ram-rod, carrying balls twenty to the pound, with a straight sword, of blade 28 inches in length, to fix on to the muzzle of the fusil, as does the sword to the rifle in present use. The sword is the natural weapon of the Native of India. I would have one Company in each Regiment armed with the rifle now in use.

34.

The above-mentioned weapons would, I consider, be the most efficient ; but the present percussion musket, considerably reduced in length, would be a very efficient weapon for Police.

I agree with the Officer Commanding.

36.

The red coatee should be abolished, and the Officers and Men be dressed in alkalicks or chupkuns made loose and opening on either side of the chest, with reference to the wearer being either a Mussulman or a Hindoo, and coming down only to within six inches of the knee. For wear in the cold weather, the alkalick might be made of French grey broad cloth, texture according to the rank of the wearer ; for the hot weather, stout cotton cloth dyed in the babool dye, the

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

object being to make the Soldier as invisible as possible in the jungles, the present uniforms of red and white being the most glaringly conspicuous that can be; the trowsers should be of similar colored clothes; the head dress, a Native turban of the size usually worn by Irregular Horsemen, to be of slate color, and one fold to be brought under the chin; the shoe or sandal to be used at pleasure indiscriminately; accoutrements to be of brown leather, with as little brass as possible; the cloak to be of French grey broad cloth in present use.

FROM

E. A. READE, Esq.,
Civil Service, Agra,

TO

COLONEL DURAND,
On Special duty with the Governor General,

ALLAHABAD.

Dated Agra, 6th September 1858.

SIR,

I HAVE the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter, dated 21st June last, with certain questions relating to the Native Army and Police Battalions, to which I have herewith forwarded replies.

2. I have detained these answers for a considerable time, hoping, with reference to question 4 of the first part, to have been able to submit a compilation respecting inferior castes, upon which I have been engaged for some months past, at the request of Major Williams, the Superintendent of Police Battalions.

3. The experience of several years as a Settlement Officer, in close intercourse with the people in the interior and remote parts of Districts, followed by that of Recruiting Agent for Shah Shoojah's 4th Broadfoot's Sappers and Miners, and subsequently the Sirmoor Battalion, has impressed me with the conviction that amongst the numerous inferior castes of the bulk of the population, intermediate of the dominant castes

and out-castes, can be found, of the materials for Soldiers and Police, as efficient and more faithful than those who have, in so many instances, joined in mutiny and rebellion, or otherwise proved faithful.

4. I beg to enclose a paper, which has escaped the fate of most others at Agra, which may be considered interesting, as it illustrates the great variety of castes and clans of recruits sent from Goruckpoor to the Regiments mentioned in congruous elements, who have shown a marvellous unity at Chareekar, at Jellalabad, and Soobraon, crowned by the achievements, at a later date, of the Sirmoor Battalion at Delhi.

5. There is, however, this difficulty that the same castes in different Districts essentially vary in the requisite characteristics of physical power, energy and resolution, and in drawing up a list of castes and clans throughout so large a range as the North-Western Provinces, it has been necessary to make enquiries from competent judges in parts of the Country of which I have little local knowledge, before either suggesting or warning against selection.

6. I hope, however, ere long, to be able to complete what may be at least the basis of useful information, to be enlarged by subsequent enquiry and experience.

7. In the mean time on the general question with the enclosed answers, I beg to add, as more readable than manuscript, two printed papers of the past year—the one an Appendix to a confidential narrative submitted to the Government, and the other a Memorandum on Police, &c., containing opinions which I have not since seen reason to modify materially.

I have, &c,

(Signed) E. A. READE.

AGRA,
6th September 1858. }

LIST of the several Castes of the Nepaul Recruits levied at different times at Goruckpoor in 1840, 1841 and 1842.

CASTES.

1	Adheekaree. Allay. Achayee. Beend.	20	Doodra. Doora. Gooroong. Gree.	35	Oochayhee. Olee. Oopudiah. Pon.	55	Sakoor. Sawary. Misser. Zysee.
5	Booruh. Bhundaree. Busnath. Beesta.	25	Ghurtee. Ghulay. Gayalee. Juhnsee.	40	Poonar. Pookrail. Panda. Rana.		Kurmee, as Carpenter, and Kanee, as Sohar or Sonaur.
10	Buhora. Bhatwol. Bhutrye. Bada.	30	Khurka. Khytree. Khawoss. Koour.	45	Rawoth. Rajah. Rookaha. Roon.		Bandee, as Drummer. Offred, who digs Iron. Augred, who digs Copper.
15	Chund. Corkee. Cooke. Chuttree. Damy.		Mull. Mazee. Nugurkosee. Newar.	50	Sawond. Sahee. Sorkee. Thape.	60	Dhola as Duzee.

LIST of principal Recruiting Districts in Nepaul.

DISTRICT.	PROVINCE.	DISTRICT.	PROVINCE.
Toolseepoor.*	Mudhais.	Mooseekote.	Ranjin Hill.
Nyakotee.	Palpah in 2nd Hill.	Phulaban.	Ditto.
Seelguree.	Dotee Hill.	Pookreethoke.	Ditto.
Peepulthoke.	In Upper Hill.	Goolmee.	Ditto.
Gurhoon.	Ronj.	Khanehee.	
Egsma.	Hill Ditto.	Dhorkote.	Ditto.
Tunhoo.	Ditto.	Dewgeer.	
Rohaneekote.	Ditto.	Sunjhoom Kote.	Ditto.
Jeznrkote.	Ranjin Hill.	Gheering.	Ditto.
Darmakote.	In Ditto.	Bhirkote.	Ditto.
Coskee.	Ranjin Hill.	Reesing.	Ditto.
Urgha.	Ditto.	Seebtar.	Ditto.
Sylanah.	Ditto.	Bonkee.*	Midhais.
Tansien (Town.)	Ditto Palpa.	Kubeeloss.	In Hill.
Palpah.	Ditto.	Mukanpoor.	Rauj Ditto.
Pewtanah.*	Ditto.	Bootwul.*	Mudhais.
Katmandho.	In Nepaul.	Reesing.	Ranjin Hill.

NOTE.—The Districts marked * are not recommended as Recruiting Fields. The inhabitants have a good deal of the Tara listlessness in them, and few would make good Soldiers.

(Signed) E. A. READE.

E. A. READE, ESQUIRE, C. S.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Native Infantry of the Bengal Army was almost wholly composed of the dominant castes and of the inhabitants of a few tracts of Country only.

In the Police Battalions, so far as they have been formed, the class or caste distinctions are more numerous, the range of selection wider.

2.

From Oude mostly, Bhojpoor, the popular name for Shahabad, to a great extent, and in a less number from the Districts of the Dooab, scarcely any from the Districts adjoining the Terai.

This applies to the Native Infantry of the Army. So far as my observations have gone, there has been no principle of selection of men for Police Battalions, except to take men of all castes and no castes, Brahmins and Mahomedans generally being eschewed.

3.

The rule is in Part 2nd, Section XXXI., Para. 6, General Regulations Bengal Army—"Special care must be taken to reject all men of inferior castes, &c." The practice in the Police Battalions may generally be said to be the reverse of this rule.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

Under different names, in different localities, there are more than a hundred castes which have been hitherto systematically excluded from the Military Service under our Government. This is a wide subject, and will be treated of separately. As above said, in Police Battalions such exclusiveness is the exception, not the rule.

5.

I have heard veterans of the Army, twenty-five or thirty years ago, allude to Recruiting parties with colors, fife and drum, at the early part of the century. Latterly Native Officers appear to have been more commonly sent out to bring men of their own stock and neighbourhood of their Native places. I am not aware of European Officers having been deputed on this duty.

6.

Prior to 1852, there was, I believe, no check on the licence of recruits, giving any name they pleased to themselves, their progenitors, or their Native localities. False names were often given. Under Orders of Government, No. 486, dated 6th August 1852, the descriptions were sent to the Collectors of Districts to be certified.

8.

The European Officer should go to the people ; not selections made from a few classes and tracts of Country by Native Officers' license of choice, and brought to the European Officer ; exclude the sacerdotal class ; they have no business with a profession that may involve the sacrifice of life ; exclude the Rajpoots, who practice infanticide ; they are faithless, remorseless, cruel ; avoid the opposite extreme of preferring outcastes ; give to Native Christians encouragement and a fair chance, and select, but diversify the selection of intermediate castes, hitherto almost entirely excluded from the Military profession, from all parts of the Country. The same principle equally applies to Police Battalions.

14.

I am of opinion that there should be a Recruiting Depôt for each Commissionership, usually comprising five to six Districts. The Police Battalions are for each such Divisions. It would, however, be better to have the Army Recruiting Depôt at some Station other than the Head Quarters of the Police Battalions.

15.

Answered in No. 14.

19.

This is answered under No. 14. I see no objection to recruiting for two distinct branches of the public service being carried on in the same District.

20.

These two branches should be kept rigorously distinct ; experience has already proved this, for the admixture of the two was one of the primary causes of the failure of the Police Battalions

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

raised by orders of Lord Ellenborough. (See Mr. Thomason's Despatches, Vol. 1, Pages 170-171.) At the same time I see no objection to application of men in a Police Battalion to serve in the Army being approved. To some the purely Military Service may be really attractive; but once enrolled in the Army, there should be *Nulla vestigia retrorsum*. The Police Battalions must, on no account, become a refuge for incompetent or discontented Soldiers.

Ordinarily European Officers of the Army, moving throughout the Country, not merely on the main thoroughfares, but penetrating into the interior of Districts. They should be well acquainted not only with the language, but the usages of the agricultural classes, the main body of the population, and disposed to ready intercourse with them.

22.

The same in kind, that is to say the European Officer, the main spring, but the agency to be quite distinct.

23.

With regard to recruits enlisted for the Native Army, I think the Nominal Roll from No. 1 enjoined by the Orders of the Governor General, No. 486, 6th August 1852, would be more useful, if there was an additional column after "father's name, &c., viz., referee." Generally this would be a proprietor of the estate, and each reference has been found by experience, in the matter of deaths or family remittances, or any necessary inquiry, to be most useful. With this modification, I think the rules in that order sufficient. The required information should be obtained from District Officers where the Recruiting Officer has not the means of ascertaining it on the spot, or from the Mofussil establishments in his vicinity. The same rule should obtain for recruits for Police Battalions.

Infantry, with percussion muskets and bayonets, but not with rifles; mounted Police, with spear, sword and pistol. It seems to be the opinion of competent Military Officers, that carbines in lieu of spears with Native Cavalry rather tend to induce the men to eschew coming to close quarters with the Enemy.

F. WILLIAMS, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER, MEERUT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

This question can be answered accurately from Returns. But it may be said generally the Native Infantry has been mainly composed of Brahmans and Rajpoots.

2.

Principally from Oude and Behar.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 3.** Seikhs have been latterly admitted, and there have always been about 10 per cent Mahomedans ; but it may be said that all other tribes have been excluded, to a great extent practically, for the men enlisted from other tribes and castes amounted to a comparatively small per-centage. All that are called low-caste have been practically excluded, as have been East Indians, Christians, Jews, Arabs, Punjabees, Wullaities.
- 4.** Those hitherto neglected from the Army raised since the mutiny, Seikhs have now been enlisted to the full extent desirable ; ditto Punjabees of all sorts and Wullaities since the mutiny ; all procurable Goorkhas have been enlisted ; East Indians and Christians should be sought for, and those of all classes who have shown loyalty and taken the side of good order during the rebellion.
- 5.** Can be best answered from Office Returns.
- 6.** Ditto ; but I may observe that recruits entered in the Rolls received from Regiments were very often not traceable by the Local Authorities.
- 7.** Ditto.
- 8.** The particular race, tribe or caste to be enlisted should be prescribed, and the Recruiting Officer should be made to obtain, from the proper Local Authorities, unquestionable and satisfactory recognition of each recruit, acknowledgment of him by his neighbours and the headmen of his Village, and satisfactory certificates of his loyalty and general good conduct.
- 9.** Not applicable.
- 10.** Ditto.
- 11.** In the case of Hindoos, the oath on Ganges water and salt has prevented men, who had their muskets loaded and cocked, presented at the heads of European Officers, firing, when reminded of the oath, and this, perhaps most binding one, should be adopted if it is thought advisable to administer an oath at all.
- 12.** For a sea-going Marine Corps none Upcountry, unless picked men of the Sweeper caste were taken, because they will eat any kind of food.
- 13.** Not applicable.
- 14.** No.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 15.** Without reference to Districts.
- 16.** Certainly homogeneous.
- 17.** The tribes and castes should certainly not be mixed up in each Company. If homogeneous Corps are not adopted and the proportions pointed out in answer 18 is not allowed, the Companies should be homogeneous.
- 18.** If it is decided that Corps are not to be homogeneous, each should be composed of three different races, tribes or castes in equal proportions in homogeneous Companies. In my opinion the proper composition of Corps would be entirely homogeneous with a spirit of rivalry and almost antagonism between one Corps and another, and the Native Army and the common people.
- 19.** Police Corps must be recruited from a wide area without reference to Districts.
- 20.** Men getting seven Rupees a month, as the Military Police, would very seldom take service in Army Corps.
- 21.** Officers like to raise their own men, and should be allowed to do so, provided strict injunctions on the requisite points are laid down. But the Officer, whoever it may be, and it should be a Military Officer, should work in the locality from which he is drawing men and be in unreserved communication with the Local Authorities.
- 22.** The Officers of Police Corps would raise their own men in the North West and they might be employed for raising men for Bengal.
- 23.** Vide answer to question 8.
- 24.** Similar.
- 25.** With the exception of the Mahomedan races, of whom we shall always have too many certainly, as far as possible, if they can be got at any thing like the pay of the Hindoostanee Soldiers, not if they would cost nearly as much as Europeans. They should be in separate Regiments.
- 26.** It is impossible to answer this without making enquiries as to what races would enlist.
- 27.** Military Officials of Government in those Countries, or Officers specially employed.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

28.

No large body of armed Natives of any sort should be trusted anywhere without sufficient Europeans to coerce them and enforce discipline among them. The attachment of a Company or Companies of Europeans to form always a component part of a Regiment, is the least desirable way of securing this.

29.

If the principle is adopted, the Europeans should be enlisted for the special purpose or selected from European Corps in India, and should be picked men. The system of integral portions of European Corps subject to periodical relief would never bring about the good understanding between the Europeans and Natives, which it would be desirable to secure.

30.

The Barracks of the Europeans should be in the centre, in front of the huts of the men, on the North side between the huts and the bells of arms, with the Magazine beyond all.

31.

Such Detachments could not really complicate the Commissariat arrangements.

32.

The Europeans should be armed with the most improved weapons, and every Officer with a Native Corps, with a revolver, which should be carried always.

33.

The Native Infantry should be armed with a common detonator musket and bayonet.

34.

With detonators, Sapper and Miner carbines, and sword bayonets.

35.

Certainly not.

36.

As the Seikh Corps are now in the Punjab.

37.

The combination of a European and Native Corps is better, I think, than the attachment of Companies to a Native Regiment; but the Officers must be permanently attached to the Native Corps.

38.

The association of European Artillerymen with Gun Lascars and Native Drivers can hardly be said to present an analogy; but I should look upon the combination of European and Native Troops as a necessary measure and not seek analogies.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

39.

The European Barracks on the North, Native Lines on the South.

40.

Vigilance must always be maintained under any system. The proper awe of European Troops, which has been inculcated by the fact that two Companies of Europeans have beat a whole Native Brigade will remain; the awe which commenced the mutiny at Meerut, that is, the fear that the Europeans were going to annihilate the Native Regiments, would disappear.

41.

Admirably; the proper proportion of each arm or branch of the Army, and of each class, European and Native, would always be employed or detached.

42.

The main object at present is to discover some means of having a Native Army with some confidence, that it will not mutiny. The events of the last year have shown that without European support 40,000 Native Troops can effect nothing against 10,000 Europeans. There remains now only, by the enforcement of proper discipline and association with Europeans, to make a useful Native Army.

F. WILLIAMS, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER, MEERUT.

NOTE.

1st. The mode of securing an efficient combination of Europeans and Natives cannot be fully discussed in the answer to questions 28 and 37.

2nd. The mere attachment of one or two Companies of Europeans or of a whole Corps to each Native Regiment by no means effects all that is requisite.

3rd. There would be the European Force to coerce the Natives. But the two bodies would be separate; the constant intercourse between the two, and the presence, at all times, of the Europeans among the Natives in the Lines, would be wanting. For maintenance of internal discipline and observation of the behaviour and temper of the men in the Lines, we should be dependent on Native Officers, and they have signally failed.

4th. Native Corps, with the full complement of European Officers, and Irregular Corps, have been found equally untrustworthy, and Native Troops cantoned at the same Station with an equal number of Europeans have mutinied.

5th. The abundance or paucity of European Commissioned Officers, and even the presence of European Troops in the immediate propinquity, or the total absence of them, appear not to have had the slightest effect.

6th. The causes which led to the mutiny were, under all circumstances, in silent operation in the huts of every Native Regiment. Emissaries were entertained, extensive correspondence was kept up, rumours were circulated, grievances magnified, and mutiny matured in the Lines without the slightest check or hindrance on the part of the Native Officers.

7th. In the Native Cantonment of Meerut, where the mutiny commenced, the consciousness of guilt led to the ready belief of the report that the Europeans were coming to seize the Magazines, and until European surveillance in the Lines is secured, the same may happen again whether there are three Officers or three and twenty, whether there are two Companies of Europeans, or a whole Corps at hand.

8th. Even if the dread of European force prevented mutiny, there would be no grounds for confidence, and much fear of mutual suspicion and antagonism, which would destroy the efficiency of the Army.

9th. The disbanded Regiments, though surrounded with European and Sikh sentries, have been hot-beds of unreported sedition.

10th. The real remedy appears to be to abolish the worse than useless Native Officers and substitute Europeans, who would be in constant communication with the men, granting to the Native Soldiers, in lieu of promotion to the Non-Commissioned grades, good conduct marks, carrying enhanced rates of pay and pensions.

11th. The number of Europeans might be increased, without any extra cost, by reducing the number of Natives, as shown in the following proposal for a Native Regiment.

EUROPEANS.		NATIVES.	
1 Colonel.	8 Captains.	64 Havildars.	
1 Lieut.-Colonel.	8 Lieutenants.	64 Naiks.	
1 Major.	8 Sub-Officers.	800 Privates in 8 Companies of	
1 Adjutant.	8 Sergeant Majors.	100 each.	
1 Interpreter & Qr. Mr.	8 Sergeants.		
1 Surgeon.	16 1st Corporals.		
1 Regimental or Staff Sergt. Major.	16 2nd or Lance Corporals.		
1 Ditto Qr. Mr. Sergt.	20 Christian Drummers.		
<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	
8	92	928	
<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	
Total Europeans and Christians	.. .. .	100	
Total Natives	... ..	928	
<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	
Total of Regiment	... ..	1,028	
		<hr/>	

12th. The pay of the eight Regimental Officers would remain as at present; two of the eleven Lieutenants drawing, as now, the Staff Allowance of Adjutant and Quarter Master.

					INCREASE.	SAVING.
Ensigns should be posted, on arrival, to the European Regiments, and when they have learnt something of their duty and of the Country and language, passed by promotion in the Native Corps.	There would be an extra					
	Captain	415 6 0	
	One Lieutenant saved		256 10 0
	The Sub-Officers in place of Ensigns to be Non-Commissioned Officers promoted and drawing 100 Rupees a month each, then in lieu of 5 .					
	Ensigns at 202-12-5	1,013	14 1		
	There would be 8 Sub-Officers at 100 Rupees ...				800 0 0	
					213 1 41	
						470 8 1
	8 Sergeant Majors @ 45 ..				360 0 0	
	8 Sergeants @ 40 ..				320 0 0	
Total ...				680 0 0		
Instead of						
10 Subadars @ 67 ...				670 0 0		
10 Jemadars @ 24 ...				240 0 0		
Total ...				910 0 0	230 0 0	
New Class						
16 1st Corporals @ 35 ...				560 0 0		
16 2nd Ditto @ 30 ...				480 0 0		
4 new Havildars @ 14 ...				56 0 0		
4 ditto Naiks @ 10 ...				40 0 0		
800 Privates instead of 100 ...					1,400 0 0	
Total ...				1,551 6 0		
					2,000 8 1	
					1,551 6 0	
					549 2 1	

13th. A considerable margin is left for enhancing the pay of Sergeant Majors, Sergeants and Corporals, which may have been put too low, and for good service extra pay to men.

14th. A Regiment so constituted should be much more efficient than one on the old system.

15th. With as many Europeans in each Company as there are now sometimes in a whole Regiment. It should be more formidable in war and much less so in Cantonnements than one of the old Native Infantry Corps.

16th. With such a number of Europeans to enforce discipline, and for loyal Native Soldiers to rally round, there would be no mutiny, and if the Native Regiments that remain to be raised were so organized, there would be less fear in India of a Native Army than there is now.

17th. But even if the idea were thought worthy of adoption, it could only be carried out prospectively in Corps remaining to be reorganized or raised.

18th. It could not well be introduced in the Native Regiments that have been raised, and that have been fighting for us since the mutiny; for them other arrangements must be made.

19th. The gallant little Gorkhas of the Sirmoor and Kumaon Battalions, who fought at Delhi, and the 66th, that stood staunch at Nynee Tal, should be left on their present footing. To the Nusseere Battalion and to all Sikh Corps two Companies of Europeans should be added.

20th. All Native Regiments of all sorts should be Brigaded with European Troops, each Brigade being complete in each branch, Artillery, Cavalry and Infantry; the Artillery being always entirely European, the Cavalry partly European and partly Native, such Corps of the latter as have been raised since the mutiny being retained on their present footing, any raised hereafter to be Irregular Cavalry, with

Commandant.	And in each Troop—
Second in Command.	1 Lieutenant.
Adjutant.	1 Sub-Officer.
	1 Serjeant-Major.
	1 Serjeant.
	2 Corporals.

2nd Corporals instead of the higher ranks of Native Officers.

21st. Fortified places should be held entirely by Europeans.

22nd. All the Civil duties, such as guarding and escorting Treasure, guarding Jails, &c., &c., should be taken by the Police Battalions. But even with these a sufficient number of Europeans should be employed. Ample funds are forthcoming, if the responsibility of Village Communities for crimes committed in their neighbourhood, the perpetrators of which they do not produce, is enforced, and the immense and universally condemned establishment of Village Watchmen is entirely abolished.

23rd. If Europeans were thus proportioned in the Army, and added to the Police Battalions, and Bengallee Baboos were more employed as Clerks in Offices, and the present class of Clerks as Mofussil, Revenue and Police Officers; if colonization of European Capitalists were encouraged, and all Christian, Non-military, residents of all Stations, from the highest to the lowest, were obliged by a simpler law than that

lately enacted, to train constantly and be ready to act always as Yeomanry Cavalry or Militia Infantry according to their means, and the Native population is thoroughly, not nominally, disarmed, there will not be another rebellion.

24th There is one other point which does not appear to be proposed for consideration in the heads of enquiry specified by the Court of Directors, which is worthy of adoption, that is, the employment of Native Infantry as Sappers and Miners on Military works, fortification, barracks, roads, &c., &c.

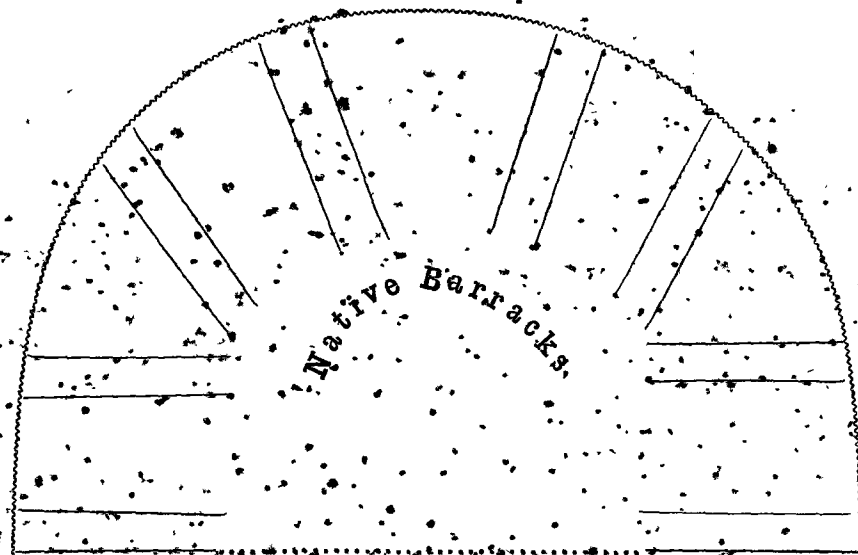
25th. The Native Soldier, instead of being allowed to turn up his nose at the bare idea of labor, infinitely less derogatory than the low toil he readily undertakes for himself at home, should be fully employed; the time now wasted in cooking, eating and coquetting, mutiny and revolt, should be devoted to making him perfect in the art of applying his labor.

26th: Were this done, the mass of the Native Troops would be effectually kept out of mischief, the British-Indian Army would cease to be the only one which does not strengthen its positions by entrenchments, and Government would have, for half the hire of common coolies,* the services of 50, 60, 70,000 skilled laborers to reduce the heavy expenditure for public works.

27th. I await the receipt of the questions on the 2nd, 3rd and 4th heads of the general classification to give me an opportunity of submitting my opinion on the 9th, 10th, 11th and 12th heads of enquiry.

28th. There should be no more huts in the Native lines, but open barracks, each to hold a Company, so that European Officers could look after the men, and the men could not entertain propogatives of sedition. They should be arranged so.

* That is, supposing such a high rate of working Batta, the only Batta that ever should be allowed, as 2 Rupees per mensem, were given to the men while so employed.



European Barracks.



Bells of Arms.

E. WILLIAMS,
Commissioner.

H. B. E. FRERÉ, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER IN SCINDE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I believe about half are Natives of Gangotic India, of the same races, tribes, and castes as the Bengal Native Infantry, but inferior in quality, the Bengal Army having the pick of such men as offer. There are also many Hindoostan and Oude men in the Bombay Army belonging to castes, members of which were not usually admitted into the Bengal Army. The other half are chiefly Mahrattas, and Deccan Mahomedans, and Purwarrees, with a few Telingas, Jews and half-caste Christians. There were before the late mutiny two Regiments (the Belooch Battalions) composed of Beloochees, Scindees, Affghans, &c., and orders have lately been issued for raising other Corps of this class of men. A few Beloochees and Seikhs have, of late years, been enlisted in most Infantry Corps.

2.

This has heretofore depended very much on the Commanding Officer; who had generally an opinion of his own as to where he was likely to get the best recruits and could generally get leave to recruit there. Out of Hindoostan and Oude, the usual recruiting districts are the Deccan about Poona, Nugger and Sholapore and the Southern Concan, whence excellent Soldiers have always been drawn. The district of Sawunwarree especially has always furnished some of our best Infantry recruits.

3.

No particular race, tribe or caste that I know of, has ever been excluded from enlistment by the Regulations of the Bombay Army.

In practice the Commanding Officers of Corps had generally a preference for some particular race or caste, to which the recruiting of their Regiment was, so far as lay in their power, confined; but this was purely a matter of personal preference, and the practice of one Commanding Officer was often reversed under his successor. Of late years there has been, till shortly before the mutiny, a growing preference for the fine men of the upper classes in Hindoostan, and, with a view to correct this tendency, orders have been sometimes given from Army Head Quarters, to enlist from particular races, Beloochees and Seikhs, &c.; but in general it has been the traditional policy of the Bombay Army to avoid having a large majority of the men in a Regiment of any one particular race or caste, even in Regiments which, like the Belooch Battalions, were originally intended to be raised from a particular race, or which, like the 21st and 22nd Native Infantry, were generally considered Hindoostanee Regiments. Measures were, from time to time, taken by individual Commanding Officers to prevent the material of the Corps becoming too uniform.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

I know of none. I cannot but think it a great mistake to interfere with the discretion of Commanding Officers in this respect. They should be left quite unfettered to make their own arrangements for recruiting wherever and whatever men they think best. The soundness or otherwise of the discretion they exercise is speedily seen in the state of their Corps. The interference of Head Quarters in such matters has greatly increased of late years, and much, I think, to the detriment of the Service, especially where it has been directed to ensure conformity to one particular mode of proceeding.

5.

In general Commanding Officers make their own arrangements. Occasionally, when a large augmentation was suddenly ordered, Recruit Depôts have been established, and the men so enlisted were drafted off as required, to different Corps. I do not know how the system answered in other respects; but it was, I believe, universally condemned by the Commanding Officers of the Regiments so furnished with recruits. They complain that they never got from the General Depôt such good recruits as when they employed their own recruiting parties.

6.

A form of registration by the Local Authorities is prescribed, but I have not got the particulars at hand to refer to. I do not know what particular object they are intended to secure, and I can imagine none which would counterbalance the undoubted evils of a multiplication of such forms of which we have already far too many.

7.

I am not aware of any precautions taken in such cases, and cannot imagine any to be necessary, as the recruit would probably, and ought generally, to have been known from his childhood, to the Officer enlisting him.

8.

I think all existing Regulations should be abolished as far as they interfere with the perfect free agency of Commanding Officers in such matters. This matter of recruiting is pre-eminently one on which the Commanding Officer, if fit for his post, must be better qualified to judge than any one else, and in which any mistake he may make is most quickly seen by himself and all his superiors, and most easily corrected. It is hardly possible that if unfit to choose recruits the Commanding Officer can be qualified for his position in other respects, and it is certain that the best conceived Regulations on such a subject, if stereotyped and imposed on the Commanding Officer so as to interfere with his free agency, immediately become mischievous. Recruiting is an act of selection, and it appears to me a self-evident absurdity to prescribe rules for selecting, which the party entrusted with the responsibility of the selection shall be bound to follow. What you want is a certain quantity of bone, muscle, and other physical

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

qualities joined to docility, courage, and fidelity, and nothing can, I think, be more unwise than to hamper a man with any rules to fetter his proceedings in looking for such qualifications beyond what his common sense and experience may dictate to him.

9.

I have not got the form at hand to refer to.

10.

I am not aware. It is, I believe, an old form.

11.

Some special formality to remind the recruit of the solemnity of the engagement on which he is entering must, I think, be beneficial; but the pledge should not be in the form of an oath. If such oath were taken in any form which the recruit would consider more binding than a mere verbal pledge, it must be in a form which his British Officers would generally consider idolatrous or blasphemous.

Moreover, such oaths make the recruit fancy that it is the oath which binds him to the State, and not the obligations inherent in the relation which exists between the State and a Volunteer Soldier, which the Natives well understand when left to themselves and commonly designate by their well-known allusions to their "salt." The consequence of the recruit substituting in his own mind the obligation of the oath for the natural obligation of fidelity to the State, is that whenever he meets a Moolla or a Brahmin to adjure him by some more potent form of oath to do some act inconsistent with his fidelity, he is the more prone to obey, under the impression that his oath to the State is over-ruled.

12.

There are many such races, tribes, and castes, and Marine Corps to almost any amount which could be required in India, might be raised from them.

13.

The Bombay Marine Battalion is, I believe, one thousand strong. It is recruited generally from the Concan and Guzerat Coasts. The men are generally Purwarrees* of various castes, and Mussulmen

* Purwarree is a generic term used in Western India to denote a class of men who are not out-castes, for they are divided into numerous very distinct castes, and are as particular in such matters as their high caste brethren, but who are accounted impure by the higher caste Hindoos and generally in a Mahratta village live apart outside the village walls (whence the name "Purwarree," outside the village.) They comprise the Mhars, known in some parts as Dhers and Meraces and Soortees, who are a very important part of every Mahratta village community, acting as village watchmen and messengers, as conservators of boundaries, and taking a part in every ceremony connected with the land of which they claim to be authorities. They were probably the original inhabitants subdued by Hindoo invaders and reduced to a species of Helotage. They are perhaps the most numerous race of Purwarrees. Mangs, Chumbars and other races answering to the Domes, Passees of Hindoostan, which are also accounted "Purwarrees." The Purwarrees found in our Army are mostly Mhars and a few Chambars, and are physically a very fine, energetic and intelligent race of men.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

of the Coast, who are a peculiar race much given to a seafaring life. There are also a few Mahrattas.

14.

I think there should be no such restriction. Each Regiment should, I think, have permanent Head Quarters, as recommended by General John Jacob, and many of the recruits would naturally be drawn from that neighbourhood; but I would on no account impose any restriction on the Commanding Officer in this respect. Any such restriction must, sooner or later, produce most mischievous results. You may select the best possible Recruiting District, and yet a Commanding Officer may, in the exercise of a wise discretion, consider it highly inexpedient to take any recruits from it for his own particular Regiment, and you ought to permit him to select from a fresh field, without requiring him to give reasons sufficient to satisfy Departments at a distance. If the matter is left entirely to him, you may be very sure that allowing for a few individual aberrations, you will, on the whole, get the best recruits procurable, and where the best recruits are procurable is the best Recruiting District.

15.

Decidedly without any reference to Districts. I can imagine but one reason assigned for indicating peculiar Districts whence recruits should be drawn, and that is, a fear lest any single favorite District should obtain a monopoly of the privilege of supplying our Army with recruits, and thereby give them a bond of union other than their duty to Government, and re-produce one of the causes which facilitated the late mutiny.

But there is little danger of this being the case now, when opinions are much more divided than formerly as to what class of men is preferable as material for Native Soldiers, some men preferring Seikhs, and some Patans, and many continuing to prefer Hindoostanees of various classes and races. But admitting the danger, it is much more likely to be enhanced than diminished by any prescription of the District whence the recruits are to be drawn,—a rule which could hardly fail to produce an evil very similar to that which it is intended to remedy.

16.

In my opinion certainly not. I think such a rule would be most dangerous. A Corps of Soldiers should have no common bond of union other than their duty to the State, and the rule above described would furnish them with a common bond rarely consistent with their duty as Soldiers and often diametrically opposed to it. Our great object should be to make the men feel only as Soldiers, and as far as we can, to sink entirely all considerations of race, tribe or caste. Experience shows that there is no Military duty, not even service beyond Sea, which is found inconsistent with the strict observance of the necessary rules of caste and religion, by men who have the true spirit of Soldiers, and it has repeatedly

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

been shown in practice that there is no reason whatever why a man's caste should in any way interfere with his ordinary duties as a Soldier, or be known to his comrades or Commanding Officer other than every individual peculiarity must be known.

17.

Certainly not. I think it a fundamental principle in any Native Army that no question should ever be raised as to a man's tribe, caste or religion, except as a matter of identification, like his father's name or surname.

18.

I do not think any rule should be laid down, nor should Officers or Men be allowed to consider that such circumstances as race, tribe or caste had any thing to do with the selection of a Soldier. No restriction whatever should be placed on the discretion of a Commanding Officer in selecting men, beyond requiring him to get such men as he can make into good Soldiers. Another strong reason against attempting to lay down any fixed rule on such a subject is that the best proportion must be always altering. What may have been a reasonable proportion a generation or two ago, or even ten years ago, may have become unreasonable now; but your rule once laid down never alters till it has been proved actively mischievous, and has meantime often produced incalculable evil.

19.

I do not think that either with regard to Military or Police, any rule as to the Recruiting District should be prescribed to Commanding Officers.

It is most necessary to the efficiency of Police that they should not be allowed to play at Soldiers, and if the essential distinction between the Police and the Army is duly observed, I do not see how they can clash in recruiting any more than the London and Irish Constabulary interfere with the Army at home.

For Police you require more than one class of men; some (detectives must almost necessarily be taken from the District in which they serve, others) protective police may be advantageously men of other Provinces, but both classes should be chosen for qualities different from those required in Soldiers, and are spoiled if allowed to consider themselves a Military body.

It seems to me that the non-observance of this distinction between Military and Police, is one of the main causes of our present financial embarrassment and of many of our Military difficulties. When the distinction is not observed it gives us a Police expensive and extensive beyond our wants, while as Soldiers they are not as efficient a force as might for the same cost be entertained.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

20.

Certainly not—for the reasons above given the two services should be kept as distinct as possible. This opinion does not at all affect my conviction that a certain degree of Military organization is essential to many branches of the Police Force, and that in general, young Military men make the best European Officers to Command Police. No doubt also a Native who is well fitted for the Police may often be well qualified as a Soldier, and *vice versa*; but the two classes of duties being entirely and essentially distinct, much harm must result from any confusion between them.

21.

I do not think any special agency should be employed. Recruiting should be left entirely to Commanding Officers, to be managed by them as they think best.

22.

The same answer applies to this question also.

23.

No precautions whatever, as far as I am aware, are needed; and I can imagine none which would not do much more harm than good.

24.

The last answer applies to this question also.

25.

I think it would be a very great, if not a fatal mistake, to look to other tropical Countries out of India for recruits for the Non-European portion of our Indian Army. I do not speak of what may be advisable in a sudden emergency, but as part of our ordinary system I have heard of, and I can imagine no single reason for such a step except that such tropical foreigners will be found able to stand the sun as well, as Natives, and will be more trustworthy.

As regards the first point, their capacity for standing the extreme heat of an Indian sun, I would admit, for the sake of argument, that if men of the tribes I have heard named—Malays, Dyaks, Caffirs, Negroes, &c.—could be dropped down in the midst of a hot weather campaign, as few of them would be likely to die of mere solar heat as if they were Natives of the Country; but it is not heat alone which kills men in and after such a campaign, and I know of no reason for hoping that tropical foreigners would be more exempt than Europeans from the diseases which are caused by such heat, combined with bad and insufficient food and shelter, damp and malaria, while they would be far more obnoxious to all that great and fatal class of diseases which are caused or aggravated by mental depression. Judging of such men (of whom I have of course little or no personal knowledge) by what I hear and read of them, and by what I do know of other semi-barbarian tropical races with which I am acquainted, I should say that, under adverse

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

circumstances, which would only rouse the spirit of the European and increase his powers of endurance, physical as well as mental, the tropical foreigner would sink into apathy and die; and there can be little doubt of their utter helplessness and hopelessness under all trying circumstances when deprived of the leaders whom they know and to whom they are accustomed,—an accident which must often happen in war.

Of all the heroic characteristics which distinguish us as a nation, and which make us what we are, there is none more marked than what is called the "not knowing when we are beaten," the endurance and steadfastness which continues a contest as a matter of duty even when all apparent hope of success is gone. Many Asiatic nations, the Turks for instance, and Arabs, have it in a high degree, and some of the races of India, but I never heard it attributed to the tropical foreign races, whose enlistment for Indian service is usually advocated, and some of them are said to be remarkably deficient in it, giving up, in a stupid, sullen despair, and refusing all further effort when they believe themselves beaten.

I think there can be little doubt that in circumstances like the siege of Delhi and defence of Lucknow, such races would be found less enduring than either Europeans or Natives of India.

I doubt, therefore, whether any real advantage would be found in employing them in active operations, and whether, in the long run, they would be found more capable of bearing the climate than Europeans, or more powerful auxiliaries than Natives of India.

In time of peace they have absolutely no superiority over good Native Troops, while in many points they are much more troublesome and expensive.

As to their superior fidelity, I think it will be more than doubtful, if they are ever employed in numbers sufficient to make them a real counterpoise to the Natives of India.

They can have to us no single tie but the mercenary one of pay, in which we may be at any time outbid. No Sepoy in India can possibly be so purely and entirely mercenary as these tropical foreigners must be. In temporary discontents they may be less likely to join, owing to their general want of sympathy with the bulk of the Native population; but in any general contest for empire they will assuredly be more liable to corruption because there is but one single motive to be influenced. The solitary example of Swiss fidelity can hardly be held to disprove the experience of all

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

purely mercenary Armies from the beginning of time. They are good for conquest, with both pay and plunder before them, but can never be depended on for defence against an invader who appears able as well as willing to buy them over.

The expedient of relying on such foreigners has again and again been tried by Oriental despots, and is indeed a stereotyped part of their policy. A Body Guard of exotic mercenaries so pampered and indulged as to leave them nothing to gain by change, so hated by the people as to make their interests one with those of their master, and so small as to put independent action out of the question, has often shown exemplary fidelity to a tyrant ; but when such a body outgrows the small dimensions which are essential characteristics of such a guard, it has invariably been found dangerous and generally fatal to its employer, and in no case has it ever afforded an example which the Government of British India would follow without certain danger and hardly doubtful disgrace.

26.

This is answered above. There can be no objection to letting any Commanding Officer get men where and how he pleases, and if he has a fancy for men who are not Natives of India and can get them, let him do so, and try them. I believe the result would be to prevent his wishing to repeat the experiment ; but in my opinion no special agency or extra expense should, on any account, be allowed for such a purpose. Every plan of the kind proceeds on the supposition, which I believe to be most erroneous, that Natives of India are not to be trusted ; but I hold entirely with General Jacob (*vide* his letter to Sir C. Trevelyan) that in the Military races of India, we have the best possible material for a Native Indian Army, and that nothing whatever has failed us but our own bad workmanship. Every incident of the last two years seems to me to point to the same conclusion, and I feel convinced that had the same system been applied to any other materials, drawn from any other race with which I am acquainted, the progress of failure and ruin would have been much more rapid.

27.

Vide supra. In a mercenary Army, no agency should ever be permitted to supersede that which the Commanding Officer of the Corps to be recruited may devise for himself.

28.

I should say decidedly not. Such an arrangement must, I should think, be bad for the discipline of Europeans and utterly destructive to the morale of the Native portion of the Corps.

I have never heard any reason assigned for a scheme beset with such manifold inconveniences except that the Europeans are

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

required as an antidote to suspected Native treachery, and as a kind of body guard to the European Officers serving with the Native Corps. For any such purpose they seem to me about as effectual as concealed armour against the knife of the assassin, but a poor security at best, and one which renders life hardly worth having, if it can only be preserved on condition of maintaining such safeguards.

It appears to me that unless we can keep India principally by Native agency, in whose fidelity we can feel the same sort of reasonable confidence which we felt while we were laying the foundations of our Empire, we should soon become weary if we do not become incapable of holding it. The process of holding the wolf by the ears can never be tolerable as an habitual mode of life, and it becomes impossible, when the wolves are counted by tens of millions, and the holders of them can never exceed a hundred thousand.

29.

Vide last answer. I believe any such plan, however modified or disguised, would be the signal, if not the occasion of our Indian Empire slipping from our hands.

30.

Vide supra. The idea of keeping one portion of an Army to watch another and guard against its proving faithless seems to me utterly inconsistent with any possible condition of permanent security.

31.

Very seriously, I should think.

32.

There should be no difference in the mode of arming owing to difference of race. Any such difference should depend solely on the service the Troops are required to perform, and their physical capabilities for bearing arms.

33.

With the best known Infantry weapons, adapted in size to the ordinary strength of the men using them.

34.

According to the service they are required to perform. No one but the Officer Commanding them can well judge what is required, and the question should be left to him, taking care that he does not overarm his men by trying to make Soldiers of them. Staves and swords for the Foot Police, except those who are employed to guard Treasuries and Prisoners, who should have percussion fusils and bayonets, and swords and light percussion carbines for the mounted Police, are the arms generally required.

35.

The only advantage I know of is, that the difference between European and Native Troops may not be perceptible further off

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

than the color of the face can be seen. If the dress of the European Soldier were what the climate requires and calculated only for convenience and efficiency, I know no reason why the Native dress should not assimilate to it quite as closely as is necessary for the purpose above specified.

36.

A very loose single-breasted frock coat, without collar, just long enough to cover the thighs; loose trowsers buttoning at the ankle, of cloth in cold weather, and stone colored or "kakee" linen in the hot weather, a colored puggree, a canvas haversack to carry what he requires on the march, waist-belt and pouch and belts of the natural color of the leather without either blacking or pipe-clay. The above makes, so far as I can judge, the best dress and equipment I have seen. It is becoming and serviceable, and most comfortable to the men.

37.

I do not think as a general rule this plan will be found to answer. It would be generally incompatible with the selection of thorough qualified Officers to Command Natives, which is, I think, a fundamental principle in the organization of a sound Native Army. The Native portion of the Legion would soon come to be considered inferior to the European, and such feeling of inferiority is quite incompatible with any useful result from such association. Wherever European and Native Regiments are together on active service, a strong feeling of attachment, as well as of emulation, grows up between the Europeans and any Corps of the Native Force which prides itself on being soldier-like, and you may tell with much certainty the spirit which animates a Native Regiment if you observe the feeling between its Sepoys and the European Soldiers. I could mention numerous instances of this within my own knowledge. Attachments so formed endure for years, and have always excellent effects on both races of Soldiers; but I doubt if they would ever be formed by such an arrangement as is indicated in the question, unless very effectual means were taken to prevent the Native portion of the mixed Legion being considered an inferior body.

38.

I think not; the duties to be performed by the men of each race being in the case of the Artillery so essentially different.

39.

Vide answer to question 37.

40.

I think any thing which tends to make the Native Army be considered an inferior branch of the Service must do harm to both Officers and Men. Officers should be taught to consider service with a Native Corps a proof of special qualification and trust. The men should be taught to emulate, as Soldiers, the soldier-like qualities of their European brethren. I do not see how this is com-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

patible with the kind of permanent association here spoken of, and therefore I think the plan not likely to do good ; but I cannot see that such association is at all incompatible with security or likely to impair the sense of the superior power of Europeans,—a knowledge of which is no doubt one element of strength.

41.

This could hardly be answered without trying it.

42.

The spirit of entire confidence and self-reliance seems to me essential to the idea of a Soldier of any kind, and without it he must become not merely an useless, but a most mischievous encumbrance to the State. To train the Native Soldier to act in habitual dependence on European support, seems to me to be equivalent to emasculating him, and an Army of such Soldiers must be far worse than none at all. It is because I think that the plan of auxiliary Native Battalions, in permanent association with European Corps, is not calculated to promote such habits of self-confidence and reliance, that I doubt its working for the good of the Native portion of the Army. No doubt, however, means might be devised for rendering such association of Native with European Corps more habitual and permanent than at present, which would be free from such objection ; but I do not see the precise object to be gained.

SCINDE POLICE INFANTRY.

1.

The Regular Infantry (Rural Police) were originally almost all of the same material as the Native Infantry of the Bombay Army, chiefly Hindoostan men and Natives of the Deccan, who from want of size or other causes, did not get enlisted in our Native Regiments of the Line. It was a part of Sir Charles Napier's policy that this branch of the Police should contain a considerable admixture of foreigners. Punjabees and Patans were early admitted, and of late years a good many Natives of the Country, Beloochees and Scindees. It now contains representatives of all the Military classes of Western and Northern India and the Countries adjoining.

The City Police (untrained Infantry) contains a few Hindoostan and Deccan Nujeebs and Burkundauze, but is generally composed of Scindees and Beloochees or Patans, Natives of Scinde.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

They are all recruited almost exclusively in Scinde. The men who are not Natives of Scinde are enlisted at our Military Stations in the Province from among those men who may have come to seek service or with connections serving in our Army.

3.

No--there are some Non-Military classes, members of which are not to be found in the Police; but when a good recruit offers, no objection is ever made to him on account of his race, tribe, or caste.

4.

No--there is no exclusion, and I think the best men procurable are got.

5.

None. The Commanding Officer makes his own arrangements and has generally many more candidates than he can employ for any vacancy.

6.

None whatever are prescribed by any authority superior to the Captain of Police. The Officers Commanding Police Corps have the matter entirely in their own hands, and generally take great care to enlist none but known men, for whose character they have some guarantee; but they make their own arrangements for this purpose.

19.

I do not think this is a point on which any authoritative Regulation should be attempted. Commanding Officers of the Regular Army Corps, as well as of the Police, should be allowed to get the best recruits they can find; when and how they can; they should never be restricted to, or excluded from any particular District.

20.

Certainly not. It seems to me one of the capital errors of our late proceedings that we have made our Police in many Districts a kind of secondary Army, with looser discipline and inferior and harder duties.

The qualities you require in most branches of the Police are very dissimilar from those you want in a Soldier, and a man is injured as a Policeman by learning to ape a Soldier. This is very visibly the case in bodies like the London Police and Irish Constabulary, and precisely the same reasons hold good in India also. Sir Charles Napier fixed the pay of his Police on the principle that the Policeman should have higher wages than the Soldier, and I think he was right.

I consider that if we gave up the attempt to make our Police an inferior kind of Soldiers, we should have a much smaller, better paid, and more efficient body of Police at less total cost, and be able

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

to keep up a much larger, more efficient, and more disposable Army without getting into debt. These remarks are not intended to apply to the Military organization of some branches of Police which I think essential to order and efficiency, nor to the habit of drawing our Police Officers generally from among young Military men, the Army being, I think, usually up to a certain age the best school for such duties. But Military order and organization are quite distinct from Military spirit. The former are useful, if not essential to large bodies of protected Police; the latter is not only not useful, but is positively mischievous to the *men* of a body of Police, who should always be carefully taught that their function is to keep the peace, not to distinguish themselves by their courage and prowess in fight.

I believe these principles are quite as applicable to the task of preserving the peace among savage and warlike tribes, as in a quiet commercial town. Your Policeman must always have so much of the hero in him as to be ready to risk his life single-handed in a contest with a host of savage breakers of the peace, whether in a dark alley or on a mountain side; but this is something quite different from his looking to a fray as the summit of his hopes, and to victory in fight as more glorious than inducing the enemy to retire peaceably to their homes without a contest, which is what you want the Policeman to effect.

21.

None whatever, but that of the Commanding Officer, and that which he may devise for himself.

24.

I do not think any are needed, and if they interfere in any way with the authority and direct responsibility of the Commanding Officer, I should think them mischievous.

34.

As at present. Their arms should differ according to the work required of them. The Rural Police (drilled Infantry) should be armed with light percussion fusils and bayonets; the Mounted Police, with sword and carbine or matchlock; the City Police (Detective and Town Police) the detectives and trackers, with sword and shield of the Country; the Town Nujeebs, with staves, swords, and in some cases fusils or matchlocks.

36.

As at present. The Rural Police, in brown tunics, loose trousers of the same color, or dark blue, and Kilmarnock caps or puggrees. The City Police, in their Native costume of uniform color, but distinguished from the common people merely by bearing arms.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR HUGH ROSE, G. C. B., COMMANDING FIELD FORCE
SOUTH OF THE NERBUDDA.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Native Infantry of the Bombay Army is composed, with few exceptions, of men of all the numerous races, castes and callings, from the Brahmin to the Dher, both included, of Hindoostan men, a few Rajpoots, Mahrattas, Hindoos, generally of a lower caste than those from the Upper Provinces; Mussulmen, Jews, Malabarees, a few Native Christians, and a limited proportion of Purwarrees or Dhers.

Some Regiments have lately enlisted a limited proportion of Affghans.

It is just towards the Jews to state that they are universally allowed to be good, intelligent and faithful Soldiers. The only regret expressed by Officers respecting them is that they are so few in number. A Jew was the only Native Officer in the late 27th Regiment Bombay Native Infantry who informed its Officers of the intended mutiny of the Regiment, and by so doing saved their lives. Another Jew Native Officer has written a very clever little Work on Light Infantry Drill, with diagrams.

2.

From Oude, the Doab, the Districts opposite the Doab, on the right bank of the Jumna, *viz* Calpee, &c., the Deccan, Northern and Southern Malabar.

3.

No races, tribes or castes were formerly excluded from enlistment, either by the Regulations or the practice of the Bombay Army, except that the Maugs (Hangmen) and Mehters (Sweepers) would not, on account of their calling, be accepted as recruits. Liberal as is the feeling in the Bombay Army as to caste, other races or castes would not serve in the same Corps with the Maugs or Mehters.

Since the mutiny, the Bombay system as to indiscriminate enlistment from all parts of India has undergone a modification as is seen in two Circulars.

The first, I mention it confidentially, because it is so headed, directs that at the present time "the recruiting parties from "Regiments in the Sawuntwarree Country and in Malwan" are to cease enlisting in those localities until further orders.

The second Circular prescribes that the recruits for Native Regiments of the Bombay Army "shall be wholly drawn from the "Provinces under the Bombay Presidency."

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

I think that it would be advantageous not to exclude Bengal men or any inhabitants of India from the Bombay Army, because such exclusion would not be favorable to that complete mixture of races in Regiments and Corps of the Indian Army which is desirable, and if the Bombay Army were recruited wholly from the Bombay Presidency, it would be too much drained to allow of its furnishing a proper proportion of recruits for the Armies of the other Presidencies.

4.

No races, tribes, or castes are excluded from the field of enlistment except the Maugs and Mehters (Hangmen and Sweepers).

The Bheels, Coolies, Ghonds and other Hill tribes will not enlist into the Army, but enter willingly the Police Corps, because, like all Mountaineers, they dread the removal from home, to which service in the Army would subject them. The Police Corps, in which they enter, serve only in their own District, and they cannot serve out of it unless with their own consent.

I feel convinced that if the Bheels, Ghonds, &c., were civilized by good Military discipline, combined with an useful Military education, such as is afforded by the Austrian Institution of the "Frontier Regiments" (Grenz Regimenten) they would become useful Soldiers.

The system of the Grenz Regimenten, which is a social as well as a Military Institution, is praised by all foreign Officers and Military Authors who are acquainted with it. It has produced many good Officers and Soldiers, amongst others Omar Pasha. It is economical, it ensures a most useful Military education, protects a difficult and extensive Frontier, and affords also Military aid, when required, to other portions of the Austrian Empire. Mr. Mories, attached to H. M.'s Mission at Vienna, visited, two years ago, the Districts where the Grenz Regimenten are established, and drew up a very valuable Report on them.

I venture strongly to recommend the introduction of this excellent Institution, not only into the Bombay Presidency, but into all India, modified, of course, so as to suit Indian requirements. In a quarter of a century it would civilize Indian races, now removed from the sphere of civilization, who otherwise will be always benighted.

The Bheels, Coolies, Ghonds and other Hill tribes are supposed to be Aborigines, driven by the conquerors of India from the Plains into the Hills. They have lived for ages in a state of savage seclusion. If they have a faith it is so confused that they cannot describe, and that consequently no one can understand it. Their

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

morality is what might be expected. It is not very long since that the Ghonds occasionally eat young children without incurring the censure of their Community.

The Bheel Corps hitherto has not answered, nor do I think that it will do so under the present system. The men have not sufficient inducement to serve well or abandon their vices. They are under-paid, have no pensions, nothing to look forward to, and are not improved by an useful education. They drink and desert a good deal, have as many wives as they can, &c.

The Coolie Corps is in a state of transition; but as yet they are useless for Military purposes.

I will not say that the Anglo-Indians, as a race, have been neglected; but they certainly have not been made enough of. I think that it would be advantageous to raise their position, encourage their education, and attach them, as much as possible, to the State. It should not be lost sight of, that in a Country where we have so many millions of natural opponents, the Anglo-Christians are the only Natives who are our natural friends, and it is due to them to say that with one exception, a rebel in arms, I have found them loyal and intelligent. The Anglo-Indians are not numerous enough for, or generally speaking, of a class suited to the rank. But acclimatized and acquainted as they are with the language and customs of the Natives, they would be very useful in the Civil Departments of the Army, such as the Commissariat, Military Transport, Interpreter Department, &c. There is a great deficiency of good Military Interpreters who are now Officers on full pay of Regiments. There are many disadvantages in the present system of Interpreters. In the first place a Regiment is deprived of an intelligent and useful Officer when it is obliged to furnish an Interpreter to an European Regiment, where his duties, with the exception of acting as Interpreter at Courts Martial, are unimportant and hardly suited to his position, such as requiring the price of provisions, settling disputes with carters and servants, &c.

I remember a case where the only Captain of a Regiment in the Field was taken from it in order to act as Interpreter to a Detachment of Dragoons on the march and not in the Field.

Lastly, British Officers, with very few exceptions, are not sufficiently acquainted with the Indian languages to read and understand written Native documents or compose a Native letter. In fact I do not think that at this moment there are above four or five Officers in the Bombay Army who could, without the help of a Moonshee, compose or write a proper Native letter.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

If the Anglo English and Portuguese, who are intelligent and zealous, and who always know one Native language, were taught to know and write all the spoken and written Native languages, they would be most useful in the Intelligence Department, and General Officers or Officers Commanding Brigades in the Field, who now are obliged to refer, for translation, important and confidential Reports addressed to them in the Field by Native Authorities or Native Officers or Non-Commissioned Officers Commanding Outposts or Patrols, to some Native Clerk in the employment of a Civil Officer, or of the Commissariat, &c. I received two days ago a Native document respecting the Rohillas and Arabs, which no Officer of my Force could read or understand.

5.

A recruiting party, under the Command of an intelligent Non-Commissioned Officer, is sent by the Officer Commanding the Regiment into the Provinces, from whence recruits are required for a particular race or caste in his Regiment. The recruiting party is composed of Natives of the Province. On reaching the Province, the party separates, each Soldier going to his Native place, where he enlists recruits, or rather he persuades young men, relatives or neighbours, to accompany the party back to the Head Quarters of the Regiment, where they are approved or rejected by the Commanding Officer and Surgeon of the Regiment, the recruit receiving two Annas a day subsistence from the day on which he agreed to serve.

6.

No precautions of Registry and other forms are observed before the Local Authorities of Districts that I am aware of. A Recruit's Register is made out according to a prescribed form, by the Commander of the recruiting party.

7.

Of course, a notoriously bad man would not be accepted in Cantonments by a Regiment. If a man unaccompanied by any security offers himself as a recruit in Cantonments, enquiry, as much as possible, is made into his character and motives for enlisting, and that proving satisfactory, his Military fitness is alone looked to. The Commanding Officer prefers that a Sepoy of the Regiment should present and give an account of a recruit, in which case he is, in a measure, his guarantee. When a Regiment is popular, a great part of the recruits for it are enlisted in this way; young men come to their friends or relatives in a Regiment for the purpose of enlisting into it.

8.

The practice in the Bombay Army is, generally speaking, so little exclusive, and is so conducive to the mixture of the different races, castes, and callings, that provided the present system be adhered to, I would suggest no other change in it than that a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

standing Regulation should be issued, ordering that there should not be in a Regiment a predominating number of Soldiers of any particular caste or race.

9.

The oath, as prescribed by the Government General Order of the 11th of April 1857, which was taken by the recruit or recruits holding the Colors, was as follows—

“ I Private in the Regiment, do
“ swear that I will not abandon these Colors, but always defend
“ them to the utmost of my power, and that I will implicitly obey
“ all the orders of my Commanders, and in everything believe
“ myself as becomes a good Soldier and faithful Servant, and
“ failing in any part of my duty as such, I will submit to the
“ penalties described in the Articles of War, which have been read
“ to me.”

If a recruit for the Artillery is to take the oath, he does so on a Gun.

The oath at present sworn by a recruit in a Native Infantry Regiment on enlistment is as follows—

“ I a Sepoy of the Regiment Native
“ Light Infantry, do swear before this Color that I will not desert
“ these Colors, and that I will obey all orders issued by my superior
“ Officers, and that if I commit any offence, I will abide by the
“ punishment that may be awarded to me by the Articles of War.”

The ceremony of swearing in recruits is performed on the first of a month, in the event of any recruits having been enlisted during the preceding month, after muster, in presence of the Regiment; the Colors are brought to the front, and the recruits taking hold of them, repeat the oath.

On this subject the Native Articles of War, Section 1, Article 1, Page 2, run as follows—

“ Every recruit, prior to being enrolled in his Regiment, shall
“ have the first four Articles of the 2nd Section of these Articles of
“ War read to him and explained, and when reported fit for duty in
“ the ranks, such declaration, as is now used in the three Presi-
“ dencies, shall be made to him by the Officer Commanding, in front
“ of the Regiment or Corps, in presence of the Native Officers and
“ Soldiers, and an oath, or declaration, shall be required of him, ac-
“ cording to the forms of his religion, such oath and declaration to
“ be the like as are now used in the respective Presidencies.”

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

The original oath was established by G. G. O. of the 11th of April 1807.

11.

Experience shows that the declaration by oath, whether by the Colors or the Gun, has little or no effect on a Sepoy if under the influence of intrigue, bad discipline, or his priest, he wishes to break it. A clever Brahmin can suggest various ways by which the oath can be evaded. For instance, that if Sepoys should mutiny, taking along with them their Colors and Guns, they would not break the oath, which they had taken "not to desert their Colors or "Guns," or that the recruit may declare, that he was impure the day on which he took the oath, &c., or lastly, that an oath tendered by, or given to an English infidel, was not binding.

I think that the most binding oath on an Indian Soldier of any caste or race would be a simple declaration by his faith or religion ("deen") and the "nimmuck hullall" (fidelity to the salt, that is to his master or employer) to be faithful to the Queen, and to the Officers whom Her Majesty may be pleased to place in Command over him, and to obey their orders.

None of the titles of honor given to the rank of Queen, according to Indian custom, should be omitted; if they were, the Indian recruit's feelings of respect for Her Majesty would be diminished.

The Natives of India have a traditionary respect for the office of Queen or "Ranee." They acknowledge the power of Ranee as much as that of Rajah or Maharajah, and it is worthy of remark that in the late troubles, the Ranees have increased the influence of their office by displaying far more courage in the Field and intelligence in Council, whether on our or on the rebel side, than the Princes; witness the Ranee of Bhopal on our, and the Ranee of Jhansi on the opposite side.

The fidelity to the salt is, in the eyes of Indians, the best guarantee of fidelity; because although not a point of faith, it is one of "dustoor" (custom) which is all in all to, and innate in them.

But the oath of an Indian recruit, however binding it may be made, must always be a feeble tie, unless it form a component part of a first-rate Military system, of which discipline is the life and soul. No oath will be binding on a Native Soldier who have never had discipline, or who have lost it, and who are incited by bad passions and bad advisers, to rise against masters who are of a faith, country and color different from their own, who in their

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

eyes are of no caste at all. Discipline is a combination of high Military feeling, or honor, order and subordination, and when Native Soldiers are under its influence, then the oath to the Sovereign, and duty to their Colors, will make them faithful to trusts which, in the eyes of a good Soldier, take the place of every other tie.

12.

Several castes, of seafaring habits, inhabit the sea-board of the Bombay Presidency. They are, for the most part, known by the designation of Gabdees, Karmees, Kolies, Boers, and Daldees. All these castes take service as Lascars in ships and in the coasting trade; but few enlist, either in Police Corps or Regiments of the Line. These castes gain a sufficiency for their livelihood, and it is not their custom to enlist, otherwise I should think that they would make useful recruits for a Marine Corps, if their attachment to custom could be overcome, and a sufficient inducement offered to them to give up their calling.

The fishermen are mostly low Hindoos and not fit for service, being very small of their race. Their habits and customs are, besides, wholly un-Military.

13.

The Bombay Presidency has a Marine Corps, but it is not composed of the castes of people of seafaring habits stated in the reply to the previous question, but, for the most part, of Mussulmans, Purwarrees and Mochees. The Marine Battalion is composed of 10 Companies, each Company consisting of 1 Subadar, 1 Jemadar, 1 Color Havildar, 4 Havildars, 5 Naiks, 2 Drummers and Fifers, and 80 Privates, and 1 Bheestee. There are three European Officers attached to it,—a Commandant, Adjutant and Quarter Master, and Interpreter. It is recruited chiefly from the Deccan and Concan.

14.

Certainly not. The raising each Infantry Corps in a prescribed District, and recruiting it there, and there only, would be favorable to confederacy and conspiracy, both of which are the authors, or at any rate the organizers of mutiny.

15.

Certainly. It would be desirable that each Corps should be recruited over a wide area, in fact without reference to Districts, and that the Army of each Presidency should recruit in the other two Presidencies, as well as in its own.

The Armies of the three Presidencies should be recruited also by Affghans, Seikhs, &c This might be effected by recruiting parties being sent to Peshawur, the Punjab and Kurrachee, where Affghans resort. One Seikh might discover a Hindoo or Mussulman conspiracy to mutiny, and *vice versa*.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

16.

Certainly not, for the reasons stated in my answer to No. 14 question.

The mixture of races and castes in a Corps not only checks confederacy, but it weakens and often removes the influences of castes. A Soldier of high caste says that he is contaminated by touching a man of low caste. But in a Regiment composed of men of all castes, he must, in the various duties of Military life, in the ranks, on guard, in rail roads, come constantly in contact with a comrade of low caste. The contact gradually wears away the sensitiveness of caste, although its exclusiveness may at first have been offended by inroads on its privileges inseparable from the discharge of Military duties, or indeed of those of the world's daily life. The Native Soldier of high caste in a Regiment composed of men of all castes, perceives that he daily, hourly infringes the illogical injunctions of caste, but notwithstanding, his conscience and his common sense tell him that this disregard of caste in no way prevents his being a good Soldier and an honest and happy man.

A clever Native—himself a man of high caste—gave me convincing proofs of the pliability and contradictions of caste. He said that the very Soldiers of high caste, who urge that their caste renders it impossible that they can perform certain Military duties or orders, perform daily, in their own Country, those same duties for their relations or masters. He added that reflection would convince any one that this must be so, as it was impossible that a man of high caste and very small means could either afford to dispense with the performance of indispensable work or duties offensive to caste, or, on the other hand, hire men of low caste to perform them.

It is the more desirable that caste should disappear, because it is almost superfluous to state that it acts very unfavorably on discipline and Military operations; and, moreover, if the privileges of caste be allowed, the refusal of men of high caste to perform their share of Military duties, which are against their caste, would throw these duties on British Soldiers or Native Soldiers of low caste, which is an injustice and opposed to the letter and spirit of all Military Regulations.

In proof of what I have said in the preceding Paragraphs, respecting the disadvantage of caste privileges, I beg to adduce a few examples.

The Commanding Officer of Engineers reported to me, in a Battery under fire at the siege of Jhansi, that one of his men refused to rivet, with cow-hides, the side of an embrasure, which had been blown away, because it was against his caste. I told the Sol-

ANSWERS.

dier that if he did not immediately obey his Officer, I would try and punish him in the Battery. The man obeyed at once.

A Staff Officer told an Officer in Command, last year, that the men of a certain Corps would not, on account of their caste, work in the trenches at a siege, although these same men had dug trenches for irrigation, and worked in the fields every day in the year in Oude and elsewhere.

An Officer of the Bombay Army succeeded, for a short time, at a Station, to the mixed Command of Bengal and Bombay Troops. An application was made to him afterwards, for the payment, according to custom, of the price of additional grain for the dinners of high caste men of a Bengal Regiment, because they had thrown away the first dinners, in consequence of their having been contaminated by the shadows of British Soldiers passing by whilst the dinners were being cooked.

In the first instance, we see that if the rights of caste were acknowledged, the right of a Soldier to disobey his orders in action must be also acknowledged, and in the second, that siege operations or field fortifications, &c, could not be carried on by Soldiers of high caste, that consequently these important operations must either be abandoned or be performed, although not their turn of duty, by British Soldiers or Soldiers of low caste; and in the third and last instance, the rejected dinners,—a privilege of caste is claimed, entailing an item of expenditure which I think would not be passed by the most liberal Committee on Army Extraordinaries, which is subversive of all good comradeship, and exhibits a fastidiousness of caprice which no wise mother would allow in her nursery.

I know of many instances where the pride and intolerance of caste have produced a bad feeling between different Corps, and in their interior.

Privileges of caste render discipline exceptional, that is to say, subordinate to the real or imaginary injunctions of caste. I need not observe that such a discipline is no discipline at all.

Good discipline and high Military feeling, which is its invariable companion, education and mixture of races, will obliterate the endless and indefinite distinctions of caste, all of which are more or less opposed to the harmony and efficiency of the Military Service. They would have disappeared long since if they had not been tolerated; for the sake of conciliation, I will not say that they were encouraged. The peak, the stock, and the chin strap,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

to all of which the Native Soldier of the Bombay Army had at first his objections, because they had formed part of an animal which he worships, are now quietly worn without disturbing his peace of mind.

The Turkish Mussulmans—a dominant race, and under an independent Mussulman Emperor—have yielded to foreign, mainly British Council, rights, many of which were won by conquest, or grounded on the Koran, far more important and definite than the privileges of Indian caste. If a fraction of the policy which induced Turkey to give up valued rights had been brought to bear on Indian caste, a British question, India would never have been in the dangerous predicament of having a Native Army, of which a large portion became willing instruments of disaffection and political intrigue, because they had a discipline with exceptions, and a fidelity with reserves.

I am far from advocating a crusade against caste, or from proposing the adoption of corrective measures against it. I think that the wisest and most dignified course which the Government can pursue as to caste, is neither to acknowledge, nor to coerce it, not to enlist men into their Service whose feelings as to caste or creed render it impossible that they can fulfil the *sine qua non* of Military discipline and success—obedience.

I would act with perfect straightforwardness towards the Indian recruit. I would not allow him to be in any, the smallest doubt, as to his future obligations as a Soldier. He should be told, on his enlisting, that he was allowed to cook and eat his food in his own way, as he does at present; but that in all other respects he must conform to the Regulations of the British Service, and that no exception whatever, whether as to caste or creed, will be allowed to discipline or obedience. If this fair warning should prevent from enlisting fanatical Brahmins, who, after all, like the Levites, are a priestly and not a Military race, or bigotted Mussulmen, the Indian Army would gain rather than lose by their absence from its ranks.

I have no doubt that, in a few years, Sepoys would not object to a modified system of British messing, which would obviate the inconvenience now arising from all the men of a Regiment being employed in cooking.

What occurred in the Bombay Army during the mutinies is a striking proof of the disadvantages of homogeneity.

The Bombay Army, with a few exceptions, came very well out of the mutinies.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The two principal exceptions were the late 21st and 27th Regiments. In the first, there were a very preponderating homogeneousness of high caste Oude men, in the latter, of Mahrattas of a particular District. Both Regiments were reformed into new Corps with new numbers, the 30th and 31st. A curious instance, on the other hand, of the advantages of mixture of castes or races, is seen in one of the cases in question. It was a Jew Officer as already mentioned, who announced to the Officers of the Mahratta Regiment the intention of their men to murder them, and thus saved their lives, for which act of fidelity the mutineers murdered his mother.

It may be argued in favor of homogeneousness in a Corps, that a Regiment, of which more than half, nearly all the men, were Seikhs, Bengalees, Mahrattas, &c., and acted admirably during the late revolt, in Cantonments or in the Field. But this reasoning is not well-founded.

For such a Corps or Regiment may have been composed of a race hostile to the race or caste of the rebels or mutinous Sepoys, or it may have been under a Commander, a speciality, who had remarkable knowledge and experience of the character of Natives, and great talent and tact in managing them. He may have had a system of his own, the success of which was due to his rare qualifications; but this is a system which may be called personal and does not outlive its author, it is useless for the ordinary run of capacities.

Or, such a Regiment may have been placed in peculiar and fortunate circumstances; brigaded with a large European Force, have been on very good terms with some Regiments in that Force, fought successfully under a first-rate Commanding Officer, side by side with it, against the rebels, and become, at an early period of the revolt, pledged to or identified with the right side. But supposing that this same Regiment had been under a commonplace Commander, and perhaps slack discipline, far away from all European influence, and exposed to the intrigues of designing men, the case would, probably, have been different.

It is clear, therefore, that as a general rule, or a safe system, mixture of races or caste in a Regiment is the best guarantee against confederacy and insubordination.

17.

The reason which renders it inexpedient that Corps should not be homogeneous, is equally valid as regards Companies. The races or castes should be mixed in each Company in the same proportion as in the Regiment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

18.

I think that the proportion of each race, tribe, or caste, whether in Corps or Companies, should be such that the insubordination or mutiny of any one caste or tribe would not excite apprehension on account of their predominant numbers, but could be easily quelled by the rest of the Corps or Company.

19.

I think that it is desirable that separate Corps should be maintained for Military and Police purposes, and that the recruiting for both should be allowed in the same District. Police Corps in the Bombay Presidency are now restricted to recruiting in the Districts over which they exercise Police authority. I think that it would be an improvement were the Police, like the Army, to be recruited from a wide area without reference to Districts.

It is true that it is urged that for the sake of local knowledge, a Policeman should be an inhabitant. On the other hand, localities and connections are in the way of his performing impartially and strictly his duties. Besides an intelligent and active Policeman should, although new in a Country, acquire sufficient local knowledge in two or three months. I have had under my Command Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers of Cavalry, who have acquired it in half that time, and made excellent reports on the state of the Country.

I am unable to answer the questions respecting Police, without making a digression on that subject, and describing some of the various sorts of Police which exist in the Bombay Presidency, and which, I believe, exist more or less throughout India.

1st.—The state of India, especially latterly, has necessitated an extension of the Police system under a variety of forms, and Corps of Military Police have been raised for quelling turbulent populations or resisting incursions of bands of marauders into Districts of the Bombay Presidency. Thus the Bheel Corps was organized to put down the insurgent Bheels in the Santpoora Range; the Coolie Corps to protect the Bombay Frontier District from the incursions of Rohillas from the Nizam's Dominions.

2nd.—An ancient and purely Indian Police has been maintained in some places, for example, "the Ramoosers," who are a caste of thieves, or whose calling was to thieve. In the Cantonments of Poona and Ahmednugger they are employed as Police on the distinct understanding that, in consideration of the pay which they receive, they are not only not to exercise their calling against their employers, but to prevent others from doing so; it is the system of black-mail.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3rd.—A Regular Foot Police, in uniform and armed, have been introduced into the City of Bombay and partially into Towns and Districts of the Presidency.

4th.—Each Collector or Magistrate has Police Sowars attached to himself and his subordinates.

5th.—At Sattara the late Rajah's Guards have been converted into a Police Corps; they retain their scarlet uniforms, colors, &c.

I have said quite enough to show that in the Bombay Presidency there is not one uniform Police system or an organized Police, and that, therefore, I should have misled, and given wrong answers, if I had replied to the queries as if there had been such a Police.

I believe that in Bengal, Police Corps or Military Police have been raised for the purpose of supplying, temporarily, the place of disbanded Regiments, as well as for doing Police duties.

I think it most desirable that there should be one organized system of three sorts of Police throughout India.

1st.—Military Police, Cavalry and Infantry, in the proportion of two Troops to a Battalion. No Artillery or Engineers.

Their duties to watch and subdue turbulent populations, protect frontiers, perform Police duties when required, and give Military aid to Police when called on; never to leave the District, except in cases of extreme emergency.

Their organization to be on the Austrian system of Frontier Regiments.

No homogeneousness of race in these Corps, which will be composed, as much as possible, in equal proportions, of the different Hill Races, Bheels, Coolies, Ghonds, &c., and of men also of other tribes or castes having certificates of good character.

The Corps not to bear the denomination of races, but of the Provinces or Mountains to which they belong, such as the Candeish or the Santpoora Military Police.

The Military Police to be officered (with the exception of the Commander, who will be British) generally speaking, by meritorious Non-Commissioned Officers of Native Regiments from the Army, and from the Non-Commissioned Officers of the Police when specially recommended for important service or acts of useful courage.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Military Police, Battalions, or Troops, to be under the General Officer Commanding the Division as regards their discipline and organization ; but under the Civil Authorities in all matters relating to aid to the Police or Police duties. If the Military Police are to take part in an operation, they should be under Military Command.

The men to be dressed in a dark green tunic, or long loose jacket with pockets, trowsers loose in the leg and tight at ankles, no braces, ankle boots, short leather gaiters, dark green turban. Two-grooved rifle, bayonet, sword, and black leather belts and pouches. The dress to be cloth for winter, stout cotton, with a country dye, for summer ; oil cloth cloak, Austrian pattern, lined with dark serge, for cloak and bed.

RURAL POLICE.

Mounted and Foot.

Their duties to be purely Police.

To be composed of all races and castes bearing a good character.

The organization, equipment and armament of the Foot Police to be like that of the Irish Constabulary made to suit India. To be organized by and entirely under the Civil Authorities. Dress like that of the Military Police, with a slight distinction.

Mounted Rural Police to be Sowars.

To be officered, generally speaking, by meritorious Non-Commissioned Officers from the Army.

To be entirely under the Civil Authorities.

URBAN POLICE.

Mounted and Foot.

Their duties to be entirely Police.

To be composed of men of all races and castes bearing a good character.

The organization, armament and dress of the Foot to be like that of the Rural Police.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Mounted Police to be Sowars.

To be organized by and entirely under the Civil Authorities.

To be officered, generally speaking, by meritorious Non-Commissioned Officers from the Army.

20.

I would regard the Infantry of the Military Police as nurseries from which valuable men, especially Non-Commissioned Officers, might be drawn for the Army.

If the Austrian system, which I propose, be adopted, with necessary modification, for India, the Military Police Corps would be schools as well as nurseries, for the Army, and there would be a constant flow of civilized and educated youth from the Military Police into the Army. If also, as I propose, the Military Police be officered, in a great measure, by meritorious Non-Commissioned Officers of the Army, many of them would have come from the Military Police, and be accustomed to its duties and system.

I would, on no account, regard the Rural and Urban Police as nurseries for the Army. A good Policeman must possess superior qualifications to those of a common Soldier.

The Police are scattered in twos and threes over the Country. The nature of their duties exposes them to all sorts of temptations, from which a Soldier is carefully withdrawn.

A Policeman should read and write Reports, keep Accounts and a Journal, never drink, and have a good character. He must turn a deaf-ear to corruption in all the attractive forms in which it will assail him. It is clear that no Police would be good unless composed of men of this superior description. It is as clear that it will be difficult to find the number of such men required for the Rural and Urban Police of India.

Consequently, the Police of India never would be efficient if it were to be a nursery for the Army, if it was to be drained of the good and scarce men which it had collected with so much difficulty for the Army.

I have ventured to dilate on the question of Indian Police, whether Military or Civil, because I think that public security and order in India must, for the future, depend, in a great measure, on the Police. If it is honest and efficient, it will give a support to law and order which no Army, however numerous or well-disciplined, can afford.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Army has beaten and dispersed the rebel Troops; taken their strongholds and Artillery. The rebels are fugitives for their lives, but no longer combatants for a cause. What remains to be done for the pacification of India is a question of education, internal administration, and Police, the Civil Authority, of course, receiving Military aid when required.

A good Native Police is the more valuable, because it is less likely to fraternize with the disorderly and the disaffected, than a Native Army.

If a Police be good, that is, if it be intelligent in tracing out crime and active in seizing its perpetrators, it is sure to be unpopular, particularly in a Country where the amount of offence is or has been considerable. The daily, hourly duties of a good Policeman bring him in never-ceasing collision with the interests of the disorderly. He must become an object of their mistrust and dislike. It is the disorderly who are always the foremost in the ranks of disaffection or intestine strife, consequently a good Police must be antagonistic to these classes, who are most likely to endeavour to convulse India.

It must be borne in mind that a Policeman possessing higher qualifications and performing more responsible duties than a Soldier, should receive higher pay. In London a common Policeman receives fifty shillings a week, which is much higher pay than that of a Soldier. If the Police are to be good in India, they must be paid to the full in the same proportion, and as a reward for long and useful service, they should have a good pension, because an Indian Policeman works for those who are not of his nation, creed, caste, habits, or color, against those who are the same as himself in all these essentials.

Financially speaking, the money expended in good pays and pensions to ensure a trustworthy and efficient Police would be a saving because -

Firstly.—Two hundred good Policemen do more good service than eight hundred half and half or tolerable Policemen.

Secondly.—An excellent Police would enable the Government to diminish the standing Army, which will be another important saving.

21.

I think that pensioners might be advantageously and economically employed, under the Officers Commanding Divisions, in recruiting in the Districts in which they reside, receiving, as a stimulus to exertion, a gratification for each good recruit.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Their knowledge of the inhabitants would much facilitate their performance of this duty.

This system would keep the pensioners in the path of duty by giving them respectable employment in the service of the Government. It would make them, in a measure, guarantees for the recruits, and save the expense, loss of men and discipline which more or less ensue from the employment of Regimental recruiting parties.

22.

I would employ a distinct Agency, the pensioners for the Army. I have stated in answer No. 19 the means of recruiting for the Military Police, and as regards a Civil, that is Rural and Urban Police, I think that if it were well-paid and organized, it would be so popular a Service in India that it would only be necessary to make selection from candidates and not to recruit for it.

23.

When a pensioner sends in a recruit, he should transmit, if possible, with him to the Adjutant of the Regiment into which the recruit enlists, a register of his character, age, village, trade, or calling and description from the Pottail or other authority of his town or village. This Register to be signed by the Civil Officer of the District or one of his subordinates. This Register would be a guarantee for the recruit both as regards conduct and desertion.

Recruits or candidates for the Police Corps should produce the same Register as recruits for the Army, as well as specimens of their writing, and should be able to read. No Policeman to be promoted to be Serjeant of Police until he could speak English. If he can speak and write it, a mark should be placed opposite his name as a recommendation for further promotion.

No means should be neglected of attaching the inhabitants of India to Great Britain and of making them as English as possible. Their knowledge of the English language will be favorable to the attainment of this desideratum, and increase their usefulness most materially as servants of the British Government.

24.

This question has been already answered.

25.

I think so. I would raise Regiments for service in India in all the British Colonies or possessions where the climate is hot, except the Ionian Islands. I do not think that it would be wise to introduce the Greek element into India. The Russian Officers in the Crimea said that their Greek Levies set at nought all their attempts to keep them within the bounds of order and discipline. I have done duty in Malta, and can testify to the efficiency and good feeling of the Royal Malta Fencibles, who have, frequently,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

volunteered for foreign service. Thousands of Maltese leave Malta and seek employment in Constantinople, the Turkish and Syrian Posts, Alexandria, Tunis, and Tripoli. I have almost invariably found these Maltese well-disposed towards the English, and ready to assist them in any difficulty. If the Maltese were properly paid and pensioned, I am sure that they would gladly serve in India in Maltese Battalions, or a Regiment of say three Battalions, one of which should be Light Infantry. The proximity of Malta *vid* Egypt to India is another reason for forming Maltese Corps for Indian service.

The Maltese are Arabs by origin, and their language and habits fit them for service in the East.

In a political point of view, it would be wiser to employ the super-abundant population of Malta in the British service, than to allow so many thousand inhabitants of this important stronghold to be under foreign rule close to it.

26.

The West Indies, Sierra Leone, the Cape of Good Hope, Malta, Ceylon, Hongkong, for Chinese and Tartars. The Tartars are excellent Soldiers. It may be urged against the enlistment of Natives of other tropical climates for Indian service, that Great Britain has put down the troubles in India solely with British and Indian Troops, and that she could do so again. But I cannot admit the correctness of this reasoning. Great Britain would, in all probability, should troubles hereafter occur in India, never again be in such favorable circumstances for quelling them as during the last two years. She was in profound peace with all the world, free from not only troubles but political agitation at home, the Porte and Egypt sanctioning, and the other Powers interested in Turkish affairs not opposing the passage of Troops and warlike store through Egypt to India.

India ought to be able, single-handed, to protect herself against foreign aggression or intestine troubles, or both united. It has been urged that the employment of foreign Troops would hurt British prestige, because indicating a deficiency of British power. But I think, on the contrary, that the presence in India of British Troops, subjects of the British Crown from every quarter of the Globe, would confirm the belief of the Natives that the sun never sets in Her Majesty's dominions, and that her rule is as powerful as it is extensive.

27.

For Maltese recruits, the Civil and Military Authorities in Malta, the Consular Agents at Tunis, Tripoli, and in the Levant. For the West Indians, the Civil and Military Authorities. For Africans, the Civil and Military Authorities at Sierra Leone.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

28.

It would be fractioning, instead of uniting, the valuable European material, and if a Regiment were detached, the Company would in a manner be useless.

The mixture of one European Company with nine Companies of a Native Regiment would proclaim so unmistakeably its cause, that is, want of confidence in the Native Companies, that even on the most peaceful terms, a mutual mistrust—and mistrust engenders dislike—would arise between the European and the Native Soldiers.

In times of trouble or mutiny, the first wish of insubordinate Sepoys in the Native Companies would be to get rid of their European Guards, and their great numerical preponderance of nine to one would encourage them to give effect to their designs.

If there were more than one Company, of course the danger of combination of the Native against the European Companies would be diminished ; but still, even in this case, I think that the disadvantage of the mixture of European with Native Companies in one Regiment would outweigh its advantage. There would be two totally different systems of Commissariat Barracks, messing, &c., in one Battalion ; but the chief objection is that the Native would see too closely cases of inebriety and irregularity which will occur at times, amongst the men and women of the best disciplined British Regiments. At present, the Sepoy admires the British Soldier on Parade, and he admires him still more in the Field. I think that too near a neighbourhood, too much intercourse would diminish the British Military prestige, which, it is necessary, should exist unalloyed in the mind of the Native Soldier. Besides if British Soldiers and Sepoys lived in the same Lines, there would be the risk of frequent disputes about the families of the Native Soldiers—a matter as to which Sepoys are most susceptible.

29 to 32.

Answers to these questions are rendered unnecessary by my previous one.

33.

The percussion musket and bayonet.

34.

This question has already been answered.

35.

Yes ; with the exception stated in the answer to the next No. 36 question.

36.

The Native Soldier likes his English uniform, with the exception of the trowsers. These he wears invariably to his great discomfort, especially in marches, over his "dhootees" or Native

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

trowsers. The Sepoy has the same attachment for his "dhootees" that the Hungarian Soldier has to his tight pantaloons, which he wears, even in Italian heat, under his summer linen trowsers. The Sepoy, I think, should be dressed—the new helmet for the Army in India, an excellent head dress, included—like the English Soldier, except that I would give him the same trowsers, gaiters and ankle boots (the Zouave dress) as to the Military Police. If this description of dress—certainly the best for Infantry—be given to the British Army, there would be no difference in dress which would be desirable between British and Native Soldiers.

The dress should be—cloth for winter, strong cotton with a country dye for summer. I would recommend the Austrian great coat and a forage cap with a white "puggery" for the British and Native Soldiers.

37.

I think that on the whole the disadvantages of the proposed combination of an European and an auxiliary Native Regular or Irregular Corps of Infantry in close and permanent association, outweighs the advantages for the reasons stated in the previous answer.

Whilst I entertain these opinions I think that it is most desirable that British and Native Regiments or Troops, whether in Cantonments or in the Field, should be invariably brigaded together, and that no opportunity should be lost for maintaining the best possible feeling between them.

In the Field it is necessary that a British Force should always be accompanied by a Native Force. The latter performs, with admirable patience and good-will, indispensable duties in the sun, which would soon render a British Regiment inefficient from sun sickness. The Native Troops furnish on the march and in Camp Guards for Treasure, Commissariat, Baggage, &c. The Sepoys in an excellent spirit seem to take a pleasure in doing for their English comrades a hard duty, which they know they could not do except with loss of health.

I never witnessed in the Force and Division under my command a single quarrel between British and Native Soldiers. On the other hand I have seen with unmingled pleasure the existence of excellent feeling between them, for example, Her Majesty's 86th Regiment and the 25th Bombay Native Light Infantry, both highly disciplined Regiments. Whether on the march or in action, the men of these two Regiments called, and acted towards each other like brothers ("baees"), and were ready to share in common hardships and dangers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Nothing will tend more to promote the attachment of the Sepoy to British rule than the existence of a friendly feeling between the British and Native Soldiery, and as so good a state of feeling can exist between them under the present system, I should be sorry to recommend any change in it, such as the incorporation in Companies or Regiments of the British and Native elements. This good feeling will, I feel confident, always exist, provided one condition be never lost sight of,—that condition is discipline,—which lays the foundation of mutual esteem between English and Native Troops.

38.

Even supposing that the association of European Artillerymen with Gun Lascars and Native Drivers presents a very partial analogy, and I cannot think that it is more with the arrangement proposed in 37 question, I do not think that the practical working of that association is, as far as my experience goes, at all encouraging. When I took Command of the Central Indian Field Force, I found that a Bengal European Field Battery with Native Drivers which formed part of it, was without Drivers because they had mutinied and deserted, thus rendering the Battery unable to move. I know another instance where the Native Drivers, in mutiny, ran the Guns into a ditch and deserted.

39.

An answer is rendered unnecessary by my answer to No. 37 question.

40.

I do not think that such a system would be favorable to that vigilance which has become essential and to the maintenance of that awe of European Troops which is an element of strength.

41.

I do not recommend the adoption of such an arrangement.

42.

Same answer as to 41 question.

PRECIS
OF THE
REPLIES TO THE QUESTIONS ON INFANTRY.
MILITARY CODE AND RULES OF DISCIPLINE.
QUESTIONS. ANSWERS.

1.

The Judge Advocate General of the Army, Colonel Keith Young, is of opinion that until something is definitely settled regarding the organization of the Native Army, it will be premature to take the question of Articles of War into consideration. It appears that amended articles approved by the Commander-in-Chief, General the Hon'ble G. Anson, were forwarded to Government and are now before it; but Colonel K. Young thinks that whatever the constitution of the Army may be, many more changes in the Articles of War than those recommended will be necessary. He is also of opinion that whatever the Military Code, by which the Army is to be governed, it should be left to the Commander-in-Chief to determine, with the sanction of Government, what the provisions of that Code are to be; and he objects to this duty being devolved upon the Legislative Council, a body mostly non-Military, not possessed of a sufficient knowledge of the requirements of the Army, and for whose laws, having reference to the Army, the Commander-in-Chief is practically responsible. As a further reason for pronouncing it inexpedient to continue in the Legislative Council, the power of framing Articles of War, Colonel K. Young advances the long delays in making necessary amendments, or in introducing any fresh Article the Commander-in-Chief may deem essential to discipline.

Colonel K. Young suggests that the Legislative Council should pass an Act, abolishing the present Native Articles of War, and vesting authority in the Commander-in-Chief, with the sanction of the Governor General in Council, to frame such Articles, Rules, or Regulations, as he may consider expedient from time to time for the preservation of discipline in the Bengal Army. If the intervention of Parliament were required, the Home Government should be addressed on the subject. A similar provision might be made for the Armies of the other Presidencies, or if thought proper the mode of dealing with the more serious offences might be left to be declared by the Supreme Government.

Colonel K. Young states:—"In elucidation of the evils resulting from framing Articles of War under a Legislative enactment, I may mention that by the greater portion of the present Native Army, con-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“sisting of Seikhs and Levies of all kinds, the Articles of War are understood to be ignored altogether, Commanding Officers proceeding for the trial and punishment of offenders under Magisterial authority. I have no official knowledge that such is the case, but it is a matter of general notoriety, so that although it is declared by the Articles that all Native Soldiers are to be subject to them, they are entirely set aside and treated with a disregard, but ill calculated to ensure respect for Legislative enactments; and there is besides for after consideration the illegality of all trials held otherwise than under the authority of the Articles of War. Were the power of making them vested in the Commander-in-Chief, matters might have been properly provided for at once, and all illegal proceedings avoided.”

The Punjaub Committee observe, that it is the general feeling of the Army, that the Articles of War for the Native Troops are so technical and so stringently construed, that justice is often sacrificed to form, and that it is difficult for a Court Martial to observe their niceties and refinements; that prisoners admitted by all the authorities of the Regiment, Division and Judge Advocate's Department to be guilty, frequently escape punishment, and return triumphantly to their Regiment, to the great injury of discipline. That even Judge Advocates disagree about the requirements of the Articles, whereas to influence the Native Soldiery, which is their most valuable function, they should be so simple that any Sepoy could understand them, though so comprehensive that no real offender could escape.

The Punjaub Committee quote instances of the defeat of justice by errors of procedure or in sentences, being allowed to quash proceedings; and they point out other faults of system and practice which violate the plain laws of simple justice.

They are of opinion that Native Regimental Courts Martial are a solemn farce, which might, with great advantage to discipline, be abolished, and their functions merged in the Commanding Officer. They add that —“It is not to be doubted that the gradual weakening of Commanding Officers has hastened the gradual dissolution of the discipline of the Native Army. We are a free people rejoicing in constitutional liberty; and we have loved to treat our Native subjects in the same way, forgetting that they are not yet fitted for it, and are certain to abuse it. What they respect is power in their immediate Superior; not power a thousand miles off, in some jealous constitutional check. We must revert somewhat to first principles, and while guarding strictly against individual abuse of power, make every Native Soldier look up to his Commandant.”

They then proceed to state the powers they wish to see vested in Commanding Officers *viz.*

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1st.—To dismiss any Soldier whose term of service had not exceeded five years.

2nd.—To recommend the dismissal of a Soldier of more than five years' service to the Brigadier, whose decision to be final, and not liable to appeal.

3rd.—To reduce any Non-Commissioned Officer one step, placing him at the head of the Roll of lower rank.

4th.—To imprison a Soldier or Non-Commissioned Officer, for a term of two months; half of which may be solitary confinement, and to recommend imprisonment up to six months, requiring the confirmation of the Brigadier.

5th.—All imprisonment to involve loss of pay (except subsistence allowance) as it involves loss of the Prisoner's Services to Government.

6th.—Any man sentenced to more than four months imprisonment to be struck off the Rolls of the Regiment.

7th.—The Commanding Officer (and he alone) to sentence any Sepoy to be flogged for insubordination or theft, to the extent of 30 lashes. No Sepoy to be flogged twice in one month; any Sepoy flogged three times to be dismissed the service.

8th.—The Commanding Officer may fine any Sepoy, Non-Commissioned Officer, or Native Officer, within the limit of one month's pay in one year.

9th.—Every sentence of punishment to be entered in Regimental Orders.

Under the above Rules petty civil crimes, in which both parties were Soldiers or Camp-followers would, be tried by the Commanding Officer; serious crimes by the Civil Courts; and Military crimes (as distinguished from Military misdemeanors) requiring more than six months imprisonment, by a District Court Martial. The General of the Division to have the power of confirming sentences up to 14 years imprisonment with transportation; beyond which sentences to require the confirmation of the Commander-in-Chief.

District Courts Martial to be the only Court Martial for Native Officers and Soldiers; and not to require more than five Members, of whom two should be Native Commissioned Officers, and three European Officers, only one European Officer and no Native Commissioned Officer

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

being of the prisoner's Regiment, Commissioned Native Officers as a rule to be tried by District Court Martial, but when exceptional cases required, might be dismissed without trial by the Chief Military authority of the Province.

The Oude Committee would abolish the Articles of War. So likewise would the Officers marginally noted, among whom Sir S. Cotton considers the Articles of War in their present form as wholly useless, and not understood by the Native Troops, with which view Major Wil-

Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigadier Coke.
" Farquharson.
Sir J. Hearsey.
Major Williams.

liams coincides, styling the Articles of War incomprehensible to Natives. Brigadier Coke would have no Articles of War. Magisterial powers vested in the Commanding Officer, and capital cases made over to the Sessions. Brigadier Farquharson would also invest the Commanding Officer with Magisterial powers and substitute a simple Code for his guidance. So also Sir J. Hearsey would have the Articles few and plain, with much left to the discretion of the Commanding Officers. Brigadier Steel also, though he adverts to the fallibility of Commanding Officers, would have them given more authority.

The Commander-in-Chief is of opinion that the powers of Commanding Officers should be greatly increased, and His Excellency remarks that it is doubtful whether there should be such a tribunal as a Native Regimental Court Martial, and whether it might not, without inconvenience be abolished, if the powers of Commanding Officers are adequately increased.

Major General Birch observes that there is but one Code for the Native Armies of the three Presidencies, that enacted by Act No. XIX. of 1847, that the Articles of War apply to all Officers or Soldiers, Regular or Irregular, and that alterations to suit the case of the Native Army of Bengal will, unless declared exclusively applicable to this Army, be applicable to those of Madras and Bombay also.

After noting the great pains taken in the arrangement of the Articles of War, the classification of Officers and indexing the contents, precisely in a similar manner to those for Her Majesty's Forces, Major General Birch observes that he does not see why the arrangement which is found to work well in Her Majesty's Army should require a different plan for the Native Troops. He then proceeds to make some observations upon the objects kept in view in framing the resolution of the 30th August 1835, regarding corporal punishment, and the restrictions put upon its infliction, and considering the system of punishments the best that could be devised he deems that it would be no improvement to change the classification of Officers, the sentences awardable or to remove the restrictions on corporal punishment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Major General Birch proposes an addition to Article 101, so that it may be in the power of the Governments of the three Presidencies to order, when desirable, that offenders shall be tried by European Officers.

In Article 110, he would give power to Officers Commanding Regiments to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers, and in Article 112, he proposes still further to strengthen the hands of the Commanding Officers by investing them with the power, in cases of light offences, or *in the maintenance of discipline*, to inflict summarily, without the intervention of a Court Martial, *corporal punishment with a rattan to the extent of three dozen strokes.*

Major General Birch says,—“The total abolition of the Articles, which has been suggested in some quarters, seems to me to be a measure from which no good could be derived. It would not tend to civilize or ameliorate our Native Troops, and it would place a degree of power in the hands of Commanding Officers not known in any other Army; for which the necessity is not apparent, and which would not in any way really strengthen their hold on the obedience or the affection of their men. Commanding Officers, like all other persons, require to be themselves subjected to certain wholesome restrictions. The Commander-in-Chief, and even the Government in its executive capacity, are not at liberty to exercise an arbitrary authority independent of law; and there appears no good reason for investing Commanding Officers with authority independent of Articles of War.”

2.

The Punjab and the Oude Committees would retain neither. Sir J. Hope Grant considers either objectionable. Brigadier Coke would have no special rules for regulating punishments of any kind in the Native Army. He would leave the matter to the Commanding Officers, who should keep a register of the men tried, the crimes for which they were tried and the punishments awarded. The trials to be conducted in the presence of the Native Officers in the vernacular. He considers the nature of Europeans and of Asiatics to be so utterly different that it is manifestly as impossible to frame rules to suit both races as it is to render them of the same color.

Sir S. Cotton considers that the present rules for the punishment of offences not requiring trials by Court Martial are too lenient and useless in upholding discipline. He is of opinion that corporal punishment and solitary confinement in cells should be inflicted at the discretion of Commanding Officers, whose powers should in every respect be much increased, and all excepting capital crimes be punished under the orders of Commanding Officers. He recommends the following:—

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Punishment.

Crimes.—Mutiny, desertion,
and all capital crimes.

Death, transportation by sentence of a European Court Martial. Sentence being carried out under orders of Officers Com-

manding Divisions.

To be punishable with or without hard labour, solitary confinement to the extent of 14 days, and corporal punishment not exceeding 50 lashes. These punishments being awardable by Commanding Officers of Regiments.

Disobedience, neglect of duty, and all other crimes not capital.

Brigadier Farquharson would have a specific Code laying down general rules, but leaving punishments in a great degree to the discretion of Commanding Officers.

Brigadier Steel considers the habits of the native so different from those of the European Soldier that any assimilation for regulating punishment is not necessary.

The reply of the Commander-in-Chief to this question is "no, decidedly not. It is impossible to assimilate them, and therefore unwise to attempt it."

In the opinion of Major General Birch, the special rules regulating punishments in the Native Army must needs be retained.

3.

The Punjaub and the Oude Committees are of opinion that, the system of Native Courts Martial does not work satisfactorily, and in this opinion the Officers noted in the margin concur. Sir S. Cotton considers that the system has utterly failed in its object; that the Native Officers

Sir J. Hearsey.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigadier Coke.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Major Williams.

have no sense of justice, are totally ignorant of the Articles of War, and of their duties at a Court Martial; and that the proceedings as at present conducted, are farcical. Brigadier Coke gives the following picture of the working of this institution. "Native Officers sitting on a Court will always endeavour to let off the offender for many reasons. There is always some clique, who either from being related to the offender or of the same tribe or village, will make it their business to get up a party amongst the Native Officers to screen the offender. If these Native Officers will not agree to this, it makes a feud, which shows itself in a thousand underhand tricks, which tend to defeat justice and injure discipline. Native Officers are also bad judges of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ punishment ; certain crimes are great offences in our eyes, and considered of little moment by Natives. This particularly applies to matters of discipline. Consult Native Officers fully in every matter regarding the proof of the crime ; let the trial be open, before all the Native Officers, or men who are interested to attend ; we lose much of the respect that we should otherwise obtain for our justice by closed Courts ; but let the sentence rest with the Commanding Officer alone. All crimes committed at Head Quarters, where he is present, should be tried by him alone, nothing gives a greater insight into the state of his Corps, evidence given before him, when the matter is first investigated, and what is afterwards given before a Court Martial is as different as light from darkness. An investigation taken on the spot and at the time the offence is committed, has a chance of eliciting the truth ; the investigation before a Court Martial, never ; as the evidence has been all tampered with and every thing settled and agreed on before hand in the lines. When any investigation is required affecting the state of a Corps, let the Court be comprised of European and Native Officers mixed. The acumen of the European Officer, and the insight into native character and local knowledge of the Native Officer, will be more likely to elicit the truth than any other kind of Court ; but it should only be used for the investigation of large matters.”

Sir J. Hearsey would have all Courts Martial in Native Regiments composed entirely of European Officers.

Upon this question the Judge Advocate General has the following remarks :

“ I think that under the present system of trials by Native Courts Martial, substantial justice is administered, and what is more, I believe the Sepoys think so too ; but I am at the same time of opinion that equally satisfactory results might be arrived at by less complex machinery, and the majority of cases now tried by Native Courts Martial, might be disposed of with advantage by Commanding Officers of Regiments, provided that these Officers, are selected Officers, not merely succeeding by seniority, and that their proceedings are open to proper supervision. This arrangement would be one entirely consonant with Native habits and feeling who love despotic power, whether as the governor or the governed and for the future, it seems unquestionable, that the hands of Commanding Officers must be strengthened, if a severe discipline is to be maintained.”

Dissentient from the general opinions expressed, is that of Brigadier Steel, who remarks that the conduct of the Native Army had been so satisfactory up to the period of the assembly of the Rifle Depôts, and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

that occasions for the assembly of Courts Martial had been so rare, that he is not aware of any general grounds of dissatisfaction with the institution of Native Courts Martial.

Major General Birch attributes Native Courts Martial not working so satisfactorily as they might to the failure on the part of Officers to inform themselves of the provisions of the Articles of War; he anticipates great improvement by the substitution of European for Native Officers in Courts Martial in the Native Army, and observes that if Courts Martial were conducted with proper care, if Commanding Officers would inform themselves of their own powers and act accordingly, the revision of Regimental Courts Martial by Generals of Divisions would cease to be felt a grievance.

The Commander-in-Chief is of opinion that the system of Native Courts Martial does not work satisfactorily; that Commanding Officers have been too much hampered by them, and that offenders have often escaped through some trivial error in the Proceedings, a thing most undesirable with Natives.

4.

The Punjab Committee, like the Officers marginally noted, mention periodical parades at which the Articles of War were read; but they add that the Sepoys gained little knowledge in this way, and that their ideas were gathered from the precedents furnished by the management of their own and other Corps, and the punishments, awarded by Courts Martial. The Oude Committee state that European Officers seldom understand the Articles of War, and less frequently are able to communicate. Major Williams remarks that at these periodical parades few heard and scarce ten per cent of the Native Troops who heard, understood what was read. Sir S. Cotton makes a similar observation, that the Articles of War were not understood when read out.

Sr H. Grant.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigr. Farquharson.
Steel.
Col. K. Young.
Major Williams.

The Commander-in-Chief and Major General Birch also reply that the Articles of War are directed to be periodically read out to the men (158 Act).

5.

The Punjab Committee reply that perhaps ten per cent. can read for themselves in the vernacular dialect the Articles of War. The Oude Committee say one in a hundred, and that one in a thousand understand what they read. Brigadier Coke states that in Pathan and Seikh Regiments not above one or two can read and write. Sir S. Cotton, not one in a hundred. Sir J. Hope Grant, very few indeed. Sir J. Hearsey, very few, not five per cent. Brigadier Steel and Major

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Williams, very few, a very small proportion. Brigadier Farquharson takes the most favorable view, and says about one-half.

Major General Birch remarks that sepoys unable to read and write in our character are debarred promotion, except in special cases to be reported to the Commander-in-Chief.

The Commander-in-Chief finds it quite impossible to say what proportion of the sepoys can read, but that of those who could, very few, he is told, probably ever perused the Articles of War.

6.

In the Punjab, in Oude, and in the N. W. Provinces, the European Commanding Officers have Magisterial powers and deal with petty offences, and the Civil Courts take cognizance of serious crimes.

The Commander-in-Chief has not the least idea under what Military or Civil Code the Police Corps are placed. Major General Birch replies, "none that I am aware of, further than that I believe they are under the Magistrate."

Punjab Committee.
Oude Committee.
Major Williams.
Brigadier Steel.
Sir J. H. Grant.

7.

In the Punjab Police Force, the Commanding Officers in Military cases punish according to their own discretion, subject to appeal to the Chief Commissioner. In the Oude Police Force the European Commandant can summarily dismiss a private, and exercises the power of a Joint Magistrate, punishing up to three years' imprisonment, without reference. He can reduce or fine Non-Commissioned Officers, and can flog any private for a Military offence. He can fine all Native Commissioned Officers, save Commandants and Adjutants of Cavalry and Infantry. He can promote to the various Non-Commissioned grades. The Chief of the Police has higher powers and can summarily dismiss all ranks, save that of Native Commandants, for which the sanction of the Chief Commissioner is required. He can sentence to imprisonment and to transportation for long periods; but transportation for life and capital punishment are subject to confirmation by the Chief Commissioner.

Punjab Committee.
Oude Committee.
Sir J. H. Grant.
Brigadier Coke.
Brigadier Steel.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Major Williams.

In the Military Police of the N. W. Provinces, Police Officers can sentence to 100 lashes, and 3 years' imprisonment with hard labor. Heinous crimes are committed to the Sessions.

The Commander-in-Chief knows nothing of the Police Corps.

Major General Birch believes Commanding Officers of Police Corps to have Magisterial powers, as well as the ordinary Military powers of Commanding Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8.

The reply of the Punjaub Committee is that, hitherto the body of Military Police in the Punjaub has been small, and the selection of Officers easy, and the system has been found to work well. The body will now be larger and there would be no objection to a simple Code.

Major Williams considers that ten months' experience, the few and trivial complaints brought against the Police of the N. W. Provinces, and the testimony of Magistrates and Commissioners, is highly in favor of the Military Police, and shews that the system is working satisfactorily.

Sir J. Hope Grant and Brigadier Farquharson also express favorable opinions.

Brigadier Steel, who was Superintendent of the Police Corps disbanded in 1847, is of opinion that a higher rate of pay was accorded for the same material than was necessary, which may lead to the necessity for raising the pay of other establishments, and that experience only can shew if the working is satisfactory.

The Commander-in-Chief knows nothing of Police Corps, and Major General Birch has no means of judging of the working and discipline of the Police Corps.

1.

Sir W. Mansfield would dispense with the Articles of War, and substitute for them a simple code under which a soldier may be tried.

2.

He would not retain the special rules regulating punishments in the Native Army.

3.

He considers that the system of Native Courts Martial does not work satisfactorily, but he gives no explanation.

The only other question to which he replies in this Section, is the 7th, on which he states that discipline is maintained, and the authority of Europeans and Native Officers, in the Police Corps, is upheld as in Irregular Corps:

No. II. MILITARY CODE AND RULES OF DISCIPLINE.

INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

1. Can you suggest improvement in the Articles of War in use in
2. Should the special rules regulating punishments in the Native Army be retained, or should they be assimilated to the rules which obtain in the British Army?
3. Does the system of Native Courts Martial work satisfactorily in ?
4. What means are adopted to acquaint the Native Troops of with the Military Code under which they live and are governed?
5. What proportion of the Native Troops can read for themselves, in the Vernacular dialect, the Articles of War?
6. Under what Military or Civil Code are Police Corps in ?
7. How is discipline maintained, and the authority of Officers, European and Native, upheld in Police Corps in ?
8. Do you consider that the provision made for maintaining the discipline of Police Corps, and the authority of their European and Native Officers sufficient, and the working satisfactory?

RIGHT HONORABLE LORD HARRIS, GOVERNOR OF FORT ST. GEORGE.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 5.

Having had the advantage of seeing the answers to these questions by His Excellency Sir Patrick Grant, I beg leave to express my general concurrence with his views.

6 to 8.

There is only one Police Corps, strictly so called, in this Presidency; but there are in addition and under similar rules, three Sebundee Corps formed, and two being raised.

A

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

These Corps, though entirely under the direction of the Civil Authorities, are disciplined, at present, under Military Regulations; they will, however, eventually be amalgamated with the general Police of the Country.

HIS EXCY. GENL. THE RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The powers of Commanding Officers should be greatly increased. It is doubtful if there should be such a tribunal as a Native Regimental Court Martial, and it might, without inconvenience, be abolished, if the powers of Commanding Officers were adequately increased.
2. No, decidedly not. It is impossible to assimilate them, and therefore unwise to attempt it.
3. No, I should say not. Commanding Officers have been too much hampered by them, and offenders have often escaped through some trivial error in the proceedings of Courts Martial. This is most undesirable, especially with Natives.
4. The Articles of War are directed to be periodically read out to the men.
5. Quite impossible to say; but of those who could read, I am told very few probably ever perused the Articles of War.
6. I have not the least idea.
7. I know nothing of these Police Corps.
8. Ditto Ditto

LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, G. C. B., K. H., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF,
BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. There ought, in my opinion, to be but one Mutiny Act, and one Code of Articles of War for the Army in India, so modified

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

as to be applicable to the Queen's and Company's Troops Europeans and Natives.

2.

I conceive this is answered by the above.

3.

I think not. Courts Martial composed of European Officers only would work better.

4.

By translation into the Vernacular, and by reading and explaining to the Troops the Articles of War.

5.

About one-third.

6.

Under the Civil Code.

7.

Entirely under the Commissioner of Police.

8.

This is a question upon which, as no reports are made to the Commander-in-Chief, I am unable to give you an opinion.

LIEUT.-GENL. SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, FORT ST. GEORGE.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

It will be beneficial to remove the restrictions upon corporal punishment in Garrison for disgraceful conduct.

The offence of habitual drunkenness ought to be constituted in this Army, where it is by no means of rare occurrence, and corporal punishment should be sanctioned for insubordinate and mischievous writings, such as placards, anonymous letters and the like.

2.

In my opinion the special Rules regulating punishment in the Native Army should be retained, framed as these Rules have been with reference to local circumstances and to Native prejudices feeling and religion, with which it is as impolitic to interfere as it is unjust and a positive breach of faith.

3.

I do not myself think that Native Courts Martial do work altogether satisfactorily. But nevertheless, I am very averse to

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

take from Native Commissioned Officers the privilege of sitting upon Courts Martial. It is optional with the Native Soldiers of the Madras Army whether they will be tried by a European or a Native Court, and it seems to me that this is sufficient without degrading Native Commissioned Officers by ruling positively that they are not eligible for this duty.

4. The prescribed Sections of the Articles of War are explained to every recruit prior to being enrolled, and translations of the Articles in Hindoostanee, Teloogoo and Tamil are read to the men on parade once in three months. The Monthly Returns of Regiments, dated 1st January, 1st April, 1st July and 1st October of each year, are required to specify that this has been done.

5. This point cannot be ascertained without calling for Returns from Regiments.

6 to 8. I am unable to answer these questions. Police Corps in this Presidency are not in any respect under Military authority, nor have I any information with regard to them in any particular.

LIEUT.-GENL. SIR M. CUBBON, COMMISSIONER MYSORE AND COORG.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. It does not occur to me in what way any improvement can be made to the Articles of War in use with the Madras Native Army.

2. I think the special Rules should be retained, as it is provided that corporal punishment may be inflicted for the following offences:—

“Mutiny, insubordination, and violence or using or offering violence to superior Officers; drunkenness on duty; sale of or making away with arms, ammunition, accoutrement, or necessaries; stealing from comrades, or other disgraceful conduct.”

Strange as it may sound to European ears, the abolition of corporal punishment was highly unpopular in the Native Army of Madras.

3. It works satisfactorily, and is generally considered by the men a fair tribunal.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

Certain Sections of the Articles of War are read to the men on parade once in three months. Such parts of the Standing Orders of the Service as affect them are also read to them on parade every sixth month. The above are read in Hindoostanee, Teloogoo and Tamil—the three standard languages of the Madras Army.

5.

A large proportion of the men can read the Articles of War in their own language, as reading and writing are qualifications necessary to their promotion.

6.

There are no Police Corps yet established in the Madras Presidency.

FROM

THE COMMISSIONER FOR THE GOVERNMENT OF THE

TERRITORIES OF HIS HIGHNESS THE RAJAH OF MYSORE,

To

LIEUT.-COL H. M. DURAND, C. B.; ON SPECIAL DUTY

WITH THE GOVERNOR GENERAL,

ALLAHABAD.

Dated Bangalore, 12th August 1858.

SIR,

It has occurred to me that I may appear to have made a mistake in stating, in one of the answers enclosed in my letter to you of the 24th July last, that there are no Police Corps yet established in the Madras Presidency, and that I ought to explain that I considered the Malabar Corps, from its organization, its appointment, and its measure of discipline, to be, properly speaking, a Local Irregular Corps, not a Police Corps, as contemplated by the question, and that I concluded the fullest information regarding it would have been furnished by Head Quarters.

I have the honor to be, &c.,

(Signed) M. CUBBON,

Commissioner.

B

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B., CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Articles of War to be dispensed with, and in their place a set of simple Regulations under which a Soldier may be tried.
2. No.
3. No.
7. As in Irregular Corps.

MAJOR-GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B., SECY. TO THE GOVERNMENT
OF INDIA, MILY. DEPARTMENT.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. At the outset of the consideration of this question, and throughout the entire discussion of it, it should be borne in mind that there is but one Code for the Native Armies of the three Presidencies. Those enacted by the Act No. XIX. of 1847, that these Articles of War apply indiscriminately to all Officers and Soldiers, whether Regular or Irregular, in the service of the East India Company, and that if alterations are made in them to suit the case of the Native Army in Bengal, either such alterations must be declared to be specially and exclusively applicable to the Bengal Army, or they will be applicable to the Native Armies of Madras and Bombay also.

Further, it has to be remembered, that the sixth Section of the Articles of War relating to the mode of dealing with offences not Military is not now in question. That Section brings criminal offences within the jurisdiction of Courts Martial, in places where there may be no Civil Judicature appointed by Her Majesty or the East India Company. The object of the present inquiry I understand to be to suggest improvement in the Articles of War which relate to the trial and punishment of Military offences.

Great pains were taken in the arrangement of the Articles of War to classify offences and the punishments awardable for them. The Index to the Contents with which the Articles are prefaced, shows, at a glance, the simplicity of the arrangement, and it was hoped that that Index, in addition to the headings of the several groups of crimes, and the clear specification of punishments awardable, with which each group of crimes terminates, would have

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

been sufficient to keep Courts Martial in the right way. Assuredly, with the commonest attention, this result would have been obtained. The Articles of War for Her Majesty's Troops have similar divisions of offences into groups or classes, and precisely similar terminating clauses to each group, and so long as this arrangement continues to be adopted and to work well in Her Majesty's Forces, I do not see why these Articles of War for the Native Troops should be formed or arranged on any other plan. Section I. relates to enlisting and discharges, and consists of four Articles, none of which appear to me to require alteration. Section II. relates to crimes of all descriptions thrown into distinct classes, and to the punishments awardable for them in each class by Courts Martial. It embraces the Articles from 5 to 69 inclusive.

It was a great object with the late Lord Hardinge, under whose instructions as Governor General I framed the Articles of War, to restrict the actual infliction of corporal punishment to offences of a strictly Military nature, the delinquent remaining in the Service; to punish disgraceful offences ordinarily and those not involving breach of Military duty, so to speak, with imprisonment with hard labor, the offender being necessarily dismissed the Service, and to assign only minor punishments to offences of the lighter kind. At the same time it was of course arranged that for disgraceful offences corporal punishment should be awardable, and that for all offences of which corporal punishment or imprisonment with hard labor might be adjudged, the minor punishments should also be applicable where there might be extenuating circumstances. The restriction of corporal punishment was made in a Resolution by Government, dated the 30th of August 1835, in the following terms:—

Fort William, 30th August 1845.

RESOLUTION.—“The Governor General in Council has resolved, on the occasion of publishing the Act for providing Articles of War for the Native Army, that, until further orders, corporal punishment may be applied for the following offences; viz.

1st.—“For mutiny, insubordination, violence or using or offering violence to superior Officers.

2nd.—“Drunkenness on duty under ordinary circumstances and in Cantonments. Corporal punishment will not be inflicted for disgraceful conduct under the six Articles from 38 to 43 inclusive (now 40 to 46 of 1847).

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“If the discipline of the Army should, at any time, require that the restriction imposed by this Resolution should be taken off, it will be rescinded.

“On the line of march, on board any ship or other vessels, and on service in the field, the full power of the Act will be exercised according to the absolute necessity of the case. On these occasions the Resolution is not applicable, but the Officers in Command of Troops will clearly understand that the object of this Resolution is to inflict corporal punishment as seldom as possible, commuting it for other punishment in all cases when it can be done with safety to the discipline of the Army.”

I consider this system of punishments to be the best that could be devised, and it would be no improvement, I think, to make any change in the classification of offences or the sentences awardable for each class, or to remove the restrictions on corporal punishment. It has been proposed, in some quarters, to make disgraceful offences punishable ordinarily with flogging. But with Lord Hardinge it was a principal consideration not to connect corporal punishment with crimes involving moral turpitude, which renders the dismissal of the offender desirable, lest men flogged and retained in the Service should be considered disgraced. To a certain extent such men will, as it is, be looked upon by their comrades as disgraced by being flogged; but it appears to me to be a wise arrangement not authoritatively to attach, when it can be avoided, the stigma of disgrace to corporal punishment. I would therefore not make any alteration here.

It has been lately proposed to ask the Legislative Council for an Act by which imprisonment with hard labor might become awardable for all offences for which simple imprisonment is awardable under the Articles of War. Considering the nature of the offences for which the Articles provide simple imprisonment to the exclusion of imprisonment with hard labor, I doubt the expediency of this change, and so long as we have no Military prisons in which to confine Soldiers so as to keep them separate from Civil Criminals, the infliction of imprisonment with hard labor necessarily carries with it the dismissal of the offender. This seems to furnish an objection to the change proposed.

Section III. relates to the administration of justice.

In the 76th and 79th Articles in this Section, no provision is made for mitigating a sentence of dismissal in the case of a Sepoy. Simple imprisonment might be substituted for such sentence. This has been proposed; but the proposal has not been carried into effect by Government as yet.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Article 101 in this Section relates to trials by European Officers ; it gives offenders about to be tried the option of claiming to be tried by European Officers. The second Clause of this Article declares that " it shall be competent to the Governor General of India in Council, by a General Order, to authorize the Native Troops of any of the Presidencies to claim to be tried, in like manner, by European Courts Martial."

This Clause does not contemplate an authoritative order of Government that offenders shall be tried by European Officers, whether they choose to claim to be so tried or not, and at present there exists no power to issue such an order. The circumstances of the Native Army in Bengal appear to require that Government should have such power, and that it should be exercised, and as it may be desirable to include the other Presidencies in any such authoritative declaration, I would propose to leave the first Clause of this Article as it is, and to alter the second Clause in the following manner :—

" And it shall be competent to the Governor General of India in Council, or to the Governor in Council at any Presidency, by a General Order, to authorize the Native Troops of any of the Presidencies or in the Military Service of Her Majesty, to claim to be tried in like manner, or to direct that such Troops shall be tried by European Courts Martial."

Section IV., relating to the effects of the Dead, does not seem to require any alteration. Section V. Miscellaneous.

Article 110 may, I think, be conveniently and unobjectionably altered, so as to give power to Officers Commanding Regiments to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers. I would alter it thus—" Non-Commissioned Officers may be reduced to the ranks by sentence of a Court Martial, or by order of the Commander-in-Chief, or by order of the Officer Commanding the Regiment to which such Non-Commissioned Officers may belong."

Article 112. I would propose further to strengthen the hands of Commanding Officers by adding to this Article as follows :—

" In cases of light offences or in *the maintenance of discipline*, a Commanding Officer may, without the intervention of a Court Martial, *cause corporal punishment with a rattan, to the extent of three dozen strokes*, to be inflicted summarily on *any Sepoy*, or may award, &c. &c."

The words underlined are new.

Such are the few alterations which appear to me to be necessary to the improvement of the Articles of War. The total abolition of the Articles, which has been suggested in some quarters, seems to me to be a measure from which no good could be derived.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

It would not tend to civilize or ameliorate our Native Troops, and it would place a degree of power in the hands of Commanding Officers not known in any other Army, for which the necessity is not apparent, and which would not, in any way, really strengthen their hold on the obedience or the affection of their men. Commanding Officers, like all other persons, require to be themselves subjected to certain wholesome restriction. The Commander-in-Chief, and even the Government in its executive capacity, are not at liberty to exercise an arbitrary authority independent of Law, and there appears to be no good reason for investing Commanding Officers with authority independent of Articles of War.

2.

They must needs be retained, in my opinion.

3.

Not so satisfactorily as it might if Officers would inform themselves of the provisions of the Articles of War. But great improvement may be looked for in this respect by European Officers being substituted for Native Officers in Courts Martial in the Native Army.

The revision to which proceedings of Regimental Courts Martial are subjected at the hands of General Officers Commanding Divisions is felt as a grievance. But it would not be so if Regimental Courts Martial were conducted with proper care, or if Commanding Officers would inform themselves of their own powers and act in strict accordance therewith. But some remarks on this subject will find a place in the answer to a subsequent question.

4.

The Articles of War are read to the Native Troops in Companies and at Parades of Regiments once a quarter as directed in the 158th Article of War.

5.

I am not able to reply to this question ; but Sepoys are debarred from promotion who have not a competent knowledge of reading and writing in at least one character. In very special cases, however, for distinguished conduct in the field and the like, men who cannot read may be promoted ; but such cases must be reported to the Commander-in-Chief for approval.

6.

None that I am aware of, further than that I believe they are under the Magistrate.

7.

I believe Commanding Officers of Police Corps have Magisterial powers, as well as the ordinary Military powers of Commanding Officers.

8.

I have no means of judging.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. B. HEARSEY, K. C. B., COMMANDING PRESIDENCY
DIVISION.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The Articles of War for the Native Army ought to be very few, very plain, and very distinct; *no quibbling, no hair-splitting Articles*; much, very much should be left to the discretion of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment.
2. All rules for punishments should be laid down so plain, that he who runs may read and understand them.

Punishments should be severe. Death, transportation for 7, 14 years, or for life; flogging to the amount of 150 lashes. I have seen a Trooper of the 6th Light Cavalry in 1812 take 500 lashes without a cry or a moan, and when released from the halberds, he took up his jacket and shirt, and then going before his Commanding Officer, saluted him. The Commanding Officer should have the power of summary dismissal from the Service, of course reporting the case to the Commander-in-Chief. Asiatics do not understand half measures. Much, very much, should be left to the discretion of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment.
3. No, the system of Native Courts Martial does not work satisfactorily. All Courts Martial in Native Regiments should be composed entirely of European Officers.
4. The Articles of War are constantly read out to the Regiment formed up into close column of Companies or in square on the Parade. Very few of the men understand what is read to them—very many ridicule them and mock the reader. When I commanded the 6th Regiment Bengal Light Cavalry, I had an abridged form of all important or necessary orders regarding the different crimes that met with severe punishment, the duties of the different grades of Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Native Officers and Privates, read out to them slowly and distinctly by a good and clear reader, and the men were asked every now and then if they understood what was read to them. This reading did not take ten minutes, or quarter of an hour, especially *the money to be deducted for loss or damage to arms, &c., or clothing*, so that every man fully understood it. Every Thursday, on the weekly inspection of saddlery and kits, the men were assembled by Troops, and the Captain and Subaltern falling in, these orders were read.
5. Very few indeed, certainly not five men per Company. The men of the Native Regiments speak in the idiom of their Provinces usually called "Gaonwarree," *i. e.*, "Village language." They do not clearly understand Oordoo, which is much mixed up with Arabic and Persian. In speaking to them care must be taken

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

to make use of words drawn from a Sanscrit root. This is the great colloquial art to make or cause them to understand what is said to them. It is only after many years' service they comprehend Oordoo the "kurrabohlee." The Bojpooree is the language or provincialism they best understand.

6.

I never had a Police Corps under my Command, so cannot answer this question. They are, I believe, under the authority of Magistrates who, I suppose, punish according to the Military or Civil Code, as either suits them.

7.

I am told *vivâ voce* investigation and summary punishment.

8.

Summary or face to face investigation, and quick and sharp punishment suits the Asiatic, the Sepoys or Policemen, better than Courts Martial. The references of Courts Martial to different Authorities keeps the prisoner in confinement sometimes for weeks, nay months, usually eight or ten days. The crime is forgotten, or becomes light in the apprehension of the men by the length of time that has elapsed before punishment is inflicted. The prisoner is pitied instead of being scorned by the men; very, very frequently he, the prisoner, gets off punishment altogether, because there is some petty informality in the proceedings or examination or want of affirmation being duly taken, and the prisoner then laughs and jeers at the whole proceedings, and is ready to defy his Officers and become mutinous.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE SECOND HEAD OF ENQUIRY.

A plain and most simple Code or Articles of War ought to be drawn out; no hair-splitting quibbles; these may answer for Courts of Law, but Courts Martial should be considered Courts of Honor. One simple form is required. All technicalities should be banished. The only thing to be borne in mind, ought to be "guilty" or "not guilty" of the crime charged. There should be no opening left for a Military or any other kind of Lawyer. Sentences to be confirmed by Commanding Officers of Regiments, and immediately carried into execution. Soldiers (especially Native ones) escaping punishment in consequence of the quibbles of Law, defy the orders of their Captains and the Commanding Officers of their Regiments, and become "yagee" or mutineers.

The Commanding Officers of Regiments to be held responsible for the proper administration of justice. No reference to higher authority to be made, either to Brigadiers, Major-Generals or to the Commander-in-Chief, except in cases where the sentence of death is passed or transportation for life. The Commanding Officer to have the power of summary dismissal from the Service as well as of corporal punishment or confinement in prison with hard labor. This would simplify Military Law much. The men to be enlisted are ignorant and wild Asiatics who know no rule but despotism and immediate punishment for crimes committed; these men would have a wholesome fear of their European Officers, and especially of their Commanding Officer, and would yield implicit obedience when they know that he had full power to punish instantly all disobedience.

If Commanding Officers of Regiments acted wrong or showed they were otherwise unfit, they should be instantly removed from their Commands; they should fully know and understand that such was the penalty for incompetence; but they should not be set up as automatons without authority or power, to be scoffed and laughed at by ignorant men of a fierce and wild nature, who understand nothing but force and immediate obedience, for failing in the latter, nothing but mutiny and outrage can be the result.

Courts Martial, for the future to be composed entirely of European Officers. An open Court; all who wish to witness the proceedings to be permitted to do so, whether Native or European.

One of the great causes of the present mutiny was the want of authority in Commanding Officers of Regiments to punish immediately all crimes or faults committed, and to reward for good conduct.

MAJOR-GENERAL J. BELL, COMMANDING PEGU DIVISION.

MADRAS INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Armies of the three Presidencies are governed by the same Code, and it has been in force since 1845, and as far as the Madras Army is concerned, it has worked very well. I have taken advantage of Major McGowan's experience in these matters, and beg to give his views, in which I fully concur. (Memo. accompanying.)

2.

With the exceptions noted in Paras. 1 and 11 of the answer to the foregoing question in the Memo., the punishments practically are nearly the same, and further assimilation would not appear to be necessary.

3.

As far as my experience goes, it does perfectly so.

4.

They are read to them periodically, and the men have full access to the translation in the different Vernacular dialects.

5.

About one-third I should think the average.

6.

I am not aware, there being no Police Corps but such as are under the Civil Authorities, and are governed by a Code with which the Military has nothing to do.

7.

I have never come in contact with any sufficient to form an opinion.

8.

Answered above.

MEMORANDUM BY MAJOR THOMAS MCGOWAN.

Major-General Bell having requested me to state my opinion on the subjects involved in the questions marginally noted below, I trust I may be permitted to premise that having been nearly twenty years in the Judge Advocate's Department, and having held the Command of my Regiment upwards of four years, I have had opportunities of forming a judgment on the subjects in question.

The Armies of the three Presidencies are governed by the same Code. It has been in force since 1845. As far as the Madras Army is concerned, it has answered remarkably well ; but it requires revision, and I shall endeavour to point out briefly the alterations which appear to me to be necessary.

Can you suggest improvement in the Articles of War in use in the Madras Army ?

First.—General Courts Martial should be empowered to award “transportation” for *limited* periods, as well as for “life,” the latter only being awardable under the present Code.

Second.—Corporal punishment should be awardable for every offence against the Articles of War. In time of peace and in Garrison it may be desirable to restrict its infliction by Regulation as it now is ; but it should nevertheless be awardable under the Articles of War for every offence, and its infliction should be extended to the *non-Military* offences enumerated in the 6th Section as well.

Third.—The Articles of War for the Native Army should be simple and concise ; they cannot be too much so ; they should be confined to an enumeration of offences and punishments with the constitution and powers of the different Courts Martial by which such offences are to be tried. There is much in the present Code which could be equally well provided for by Regulation as by Legislative enactment ; as for instance, Section I, many parts of Sections III. and V., and Section IV. The practice, &c., of Courts Martial should be the same as before Courts held under the European Articles of War, which would render it unnecessary to make provision for such practice in the Native Code.

Fourth.—The right by appeal to a Court composed of European Officers (a privilege which the Madras Native Army enjoys) should be retained, for although it is seldom resorted to, it is considered a kind of a safeguard against abuse of authority.

Fifth.—All persons *residing* within Military limits should be amenable to Military Law, and to Military Law only. The introduction of the Bengal practice of Cantonment Magistrates, who are under the Military Authorities in some cases, and under the Civil Local Authorities in others, can be attended with no possible good to the Service or to individuals, while it casts an *imperium in imperio* totally at variance with Military organization and discipline. With Courts Martial, Courts of Requests and Bazar Master's, there is no occasion no necessity why any matter occurring in a Military Cantonment should go before the Civil Authorities, or, if it is done to keep up the supremacy of the Civil over the Military, it is merely a fiction in such a Country as India, and the sooner it is altered the better. The Officer Commanding the Station should be the head of the Police ; the Bazar Master, the Executive Police. The practice in Madras of vesting this executive duty in the Commissariat Officer is faulty : he should have no other duties to perform.

Sixth.—Officers Commanding Regiments* should have Police jurisdiction, to a certain extent, over all Regimental, Public and Private Followers (including Officer's servants) residing in the Lines of the Regiment, *i. e.*, for petty offences he should have the power of summarily inflicting twenty-five lashes or one month's imprisonment, or fine to the amount of fifty Rupees, and jurisdiction to this extent should be granted to Commanding Officers over *all persons* who accompany a Regiment on the line of march: on such occasions the followers are three times as many as the men.

Seventh.—The same grounds which exclude a Sepoy from receiving good conduct pay, *viz*, two entries in the Defaulter's Book; a trial by Court Martial should deprive him of such pay when in receipt of it. Under existing Rules he cannot be deprived of it, except by sentence of a Court Martial, and then for "disgraceful conduct" only.

Eighth.—Solitary confinement to the extent of seven days is one of the punishments which a Commanding Officer can award summarily, and it has proved an efficacious one; but it would be more so if the Officer forfeited his pay and service while so confined, as is the case with offenders under European Articles of War.

The above are a few of the parts in which the present Code for the Native Army might be improved. there are others, but these appear to be the more important ones.

I have had much to do with Native Courts Martial in the Madras Army for many years past, and from the result of my experience I have no hesitation in saying that they work satisfactorily. With rare exceptions, their decisions are correct, their awards suitable and apposite, and calculated to uphold discipline, &c. In all these particulars they will bear comparison with Courts Martial composed of European Officers.

In the Madras Army they assuredly are. I have a high opinion of them as Jurymen, and when the proof depends on Native testimony only, they are superior, in this capacity, to the generality of European Officers. That the men have full confidence in them, is evidenced by the fact, that they rarely appeal to be tried by Courts composed of European Officers.

Does the system of Native Courts Martial work satisfactorily in the Madras Army?

Are the Native Officers generally fit to take a seat in Courts Martial?

MAJOR-GENERAL H. G. ROBERTS, COMMANDING RAJPOOTANA
FIELD FORCE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Only that the Vernacular translation should be more simple: few but Hindoostan men can now properly understand it

* At single Stations or on the line of march.—(Signed) J B.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

Corporal punishment for disgraceful conduct cannot now be awarded in Cantonments: this should be altered, and discretionary power left to Commanding Officers.

3.

Yes.

4.

The Articles of War, &c., are read out to each Regiment by the Interpreter at the Monthly Muster Parade.

5.

About one-eighth.

6.

Under the Civil Code.

8.

The present provisions are good; but I consider it advisable that Commanding Officers of Irregular and Police Corps should have the power of disposing of Civil cases connected with the men of their respective Corps, say to the amount of Rupees (200) two hundred, without reference to the Civil Courts. This arrangement would materially strengthen the influence of the Commanding Officer, and be much appreciated by the men.

MAJOR-GENL. SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B., COMMANDING PESHAWUR DIVISION.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I believe the present Articles of War are utterly beyond the comprehension of the Native Soldier. If such a Code is preserved at all, it should be much curtailed and simplified, being, in my opinion, wholly useless in its present form. I should recommend the following alteration.

CRIMES.

PUNISHMENTS.

Mutiny, desertion, and all capital crimes.

Death, transportation by the sentence of a European Court Martial; sentence being carried out under orders of Officers Commanding Divisions.

Disobedience, neglect of duty, and all other crimes not capital.

To be punishable with or without hard labor, solitary confinement to the extent of fourteen days, and corporal punishment not exceeding fifty lashes; these punishments being awardable by Commanding Officers of Regiments.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 2.** The present Rules for regulating punishment in offences admitting of less serious notice than those requiring trial by Court Martial, are far too mild and are useless in upholding discipline. Corporal punishment and solitary confinement in cells should be inflicted at the discretion of Commanding Officers, whose powers should, in every respect, be much increased. All excepting capital crimes, I think, should be punished under the orders of the Commanding Officer.
- 3.** It has utterly failed in its object. The Native Officers have no sense of justice, are totally ignorant of the Articles of War and of their duties at a Court Martial. The proceedings, as at present conducted, are farcical.
- 4.** The Articles of War are read quarterly, at a Regimental Parade, by the Interpreter of the Corps; but, as above said, the men cannot understand them.
- 5.** Among the Sepoys not one in a hundred can read the Vernacular dialect of the Articles of War.
- 6 to 8.** Being unacquainted with the organization or interior economy of Police Corps, I am unable to answer these questions.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. HOPE GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDING OUDE
FIELD FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** I would have no Articles of War for the Native Army.
- 2.** Either are objectionable.
- 3.** Certainly not.
- 4.** The only means I am aware of is the reading of the Articles of War on parade.
- 5.** Very few indeed.
- 6.** The Commanding Officer holds Magisterial power over his men.
- 7.** In Police Corps having Native Commandants they can give light punishments. The European Officers under whom the Corps may be, should have Magisterial power over their men.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8. I do.

MAJOR-GENERAL C. WADDINGTON, COMMANDING SCINDE DIVISION.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The Native Articles of War are simple and well-understood ; I am not prepared to propose any improvement.

2. These assimilate very closely to the Rules which obtain in the British Army. I would not recommend any nearer assimilation.

3. It does. Justice is administered uprightly and well.

4. The Articles of War are read periodically on parade, as ordered.

5. Very few ; perhaps on an average of Corps not more than 10 per cent of the men can do so ; but more attention has been paid, of late years, to the instruction given in Regimental Schools, and the number is likely to increase.

7 and 8. The system and working of Police Corps have never come under my personal cognizance.

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. This is a very large question, and to answer it in detail would be to draw up new Articles of War, for which time does not now suffice. We limit ourselves, therefore, to a few general remarks. It is generally felt throughout the Army that the Articles of War for the Native Troops are so technical and so stringently construed, that justice is often sacrificed to form, and that it is difficult for a Court Martial to observe their niceties and refinements, that prisoners, admitted by all the Authorities of the Regiment, Division, and Judge Advocate's Department, to be guilty, frequently escape punishment, and return triumphantly to their Regiments, to the great injury of discipline.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Even Judge Advocates disagree about the requirements of the Articles, whereas, to influence the Native Soldiery (which is their most valuable function) they should be so simple that any Sepoy could understand them, though so comprehensive that no real offender could escape.

The forms of procedure also in the Court Martial cannot be made too simple ; errors in procedure or in sentences should never be allowed to quash the proceedings. The revising authority should return them for correction, pointing out the errors, so that justice may not be defeated.

For instance, the proceedings of a Court Martial should not be declared null and void, because the Court sat till past 4 P. M. instead of adjourning at 4 P. M., and sitting again next day for half an hour, which recently occurred.

Again when a Court sentences a prisoner to a punishment in excess of that prescribed by the Articles, the confirming authority should not be obliged to release the prisoner, but allowed to reduce the punishment. At present when a Sepoy is tried for insubordination and found guilty, he is often released, because the Court, instead of sentencing him to imprisonment without labor, sentenced him to imprisonment with labor.

This seems like tying up our own hands in our own laws. It surely would be better, for the discipline of the Army, that the revising Officer should have the power to remit the "labor" and confirm the rest of the sentence.

Again, a Court Martial is not allowed to award less than the prescribed punishments, though widely various shades of culpability are observable in every case. We would advocate a greater latitude in this respect.

Again, a prisoner erroneously tried and convicted by an inferior Court for a superior crime, is, under the present system, released, instead of being remanded for trial by a superior Court, which seems the reasonable course ; for here there is no violation of the principle that a man once acquitted cannot be tried again.

In our opinion, however, Native Regimental Courts Martial should be abolished. They are a solemn farce, and might, with great advantage to discipline, be merged in the Commanding Officer.

It is not to be doubted that the gradual weakening of Commanding Officers has hastened the gradual dissolution of the discipline of the Native Army. We are a free people rejoicing in constitutional liberty, and we have loved to treat our Native subjects in

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the same way, forgetting that they are not yet fitted for it, and are certain to abuse it. What they respect is power in their immediate superior, not power a thousand miles off in some jealous constitutional check. We must revert somewhat to just principles, and while guarding strictly against individual abuse of power, make every Native Soldier look up to his Commandant.

Without going into minute detail, the following will indicate the nature of the powers which we would wish to see vested in the Commanding Officers of Native Infantry *Regiments*.

POWERS OF A COMMANDING OFFICER.

1st.—To dismiss any Soldier whose term of service had not exceeded five years.

2nd.—To recommend the dismissal of a Soldier of more than five years' service to the Brigadier, whose decision to be final and not liable to appeal.

3rd.—To reduce any Non-Commissioned Officer one step, placing him at the head of the roll of lower rank.

4th.—To imprison any Soldier or Non-Commissioned Officer for a term of two months, half of which may be solitary confinement, and to recommend imprisonment up to six months, requiring the confirmation of the Brigadier.

5th.—All imprisonment to involve loss of pay (except subsistence allowance) as it involves loss of the prisoner's services to Government.

6th.—Any man sentenced to more than four months' imprisonment to be struck off the Rolls of the Regiment.

7th.—The Commanding Officer (and he alone) to sentence any Sepoy to be flogged, for insubordination or theft, to the extent of thirty lashes. No Sepoy to be flogged twice in one month. Any Sepoy flogged three times, to be dismissed the Service.

8th.—The Commanding Officer may fine any Sepoy, Non-Commissioned Officer, or Native Officer, within the limit of one month's pay in one year.

9th.—Every sentence of punishment to be entered in Regimental Orders.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Under the above Rules petty civil crimes, in which both parties are Soldiers or Camp-followers, would be tried by the Commanding Officer, while serious Civil crimes would be referred to the Civil Courts.

Military crimes, as distinguished from Military misdemeanors, requiring more than six months' imprisonment, would be tried by a District Court-Martial (which should be the only Court-Martial for Native Officers and Soldiers) under the orders of the General Commanding the Division, whose confirmation of any sentence up to 14 years' imprisonment with transportation should be final, beyond which sentences should require the confirmation of the Commander-in-Chief.

A District Court Martial should not require more than five Members, of whom two should be Native Commissioned Officers, and three European Officers (only one European Officer and no Native Commissioned Officer being of the Prisoner's Regiment). Commissioned Native Officers should, as a rule, be tried by the above District Court Martial; but when exceptional cases required it, might be dismissed without trial by the chief Military Authority of the Province.

2. Neither. See answer No. 1.
3. Certainly not.
4. Periodical Parades at which the Articles are read. The Sepoys gained little knowledge in this way; their ideas were gathered from the precedents furnished by the management of their own and other Corps, and the punishments awarded by Courts Martial.
5. Perhaps 10 per cent.
6. We only know of one such Corps in Bengal, viz., Captain Rattray's, and are not aware by what Code it is managed.
- 7 and 8. See answer 6.

PUNJAB IRREGULAR FORCE

1. The Punjab Irregular Force was nominally governed by the same Articles of War as the Regular Native Infantry. See therefore our answer to this question in the Bengal Paper.
2. Our views on the subject of punishments are fully given in answer to question 1 in the Bengal Paper.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

It would not have done so if left to its own operation ; but it was in practice modified and its defects counteracted by the supervision of the superior Authorities. For instance, if the letter of an Article of War required a guilty man to be released for some informality, the man was summarily dismissed instead of being allowed to return to his Corps in triumph. Again, when the nature of the proof against an offender would be insufficient to meet the requirements of an Article of War, but the offender's guilt was evident or notorious, he was summarily dismissed without further trial.

4.

Originally the Soldiers of the Punjab Force took no oaths of allegiance on enlistment, and consequently the Articles of War were not read to them ; but on this being brought to the notice of Government, it was ordered that all new recruits should take the oaths, and from that time the Articles of War were periodically read to the men (those Soldiers who had been previously enlisted were not called upon to swear allegiance). See answers Nos. 9 and 10, on "the recruiting and composition of Corps in the Punjab Force."

5.

Perhaps 5 per cent.

6.

Their own European Officers have Magisterial powers and deal with petty offences, and the Civil Courts take cognizance of serious crimes.

7.

See answer 6. In Military cases the Officers punish according to their own discretion, subject to appeal to the Chief Commissioner.

8.

Hitherto the body of Military Police has been small, and the selection of Officers easy, and the system has been found to work well. The body will now be larger, and there would be no objection to a simple Code.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF ON THE FRONTIER.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I would abolish them *in toto*. These Articles of War are simply mischievous ; they are entirely opposed to every Oriental idea of Government.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. The system appears to me to involve the unspeakable absurdity of an assembly of Native Officers judging between the English Commandant and the men under his Command.
4. The Articles of War are read to the Troops every month.
5. I should think about one-half.
6. No Code that I am aware of.
7. I do not know enough of the details of the arrangements in the Police Corps in Bombay, to answer these questions.
8. The Corps themselves are very different from each other as to organization and all else.

BRIGADIER G. FARQUHARSON, COMMANDING AT MOOLTAN.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Abolish the Native Articles of War, and institute a simple Code for guidance of Commanding Officers, who should have Magisterial powers.
2. A specific Code should be instituted, laying down general rules ; but punishments should be, in a great degree, left to discretion of Commanding Officer.
3. No, it does not.
4. The Articles of War were read to the men monthly.
5. About one-half.
6. Does not know.
7. The authority is kept up by the sort of absolute power vested in a Commandant of Police both to reward and to punish, which Commanding Officers of regular Corps do not possess.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8. The Native Officers of Police have no extraordinary powers beyond those of regular Corps.

Yes! decidedly so; an additional European Officer to assist the Commanding Officer in visiting out-posts and in case of sickness, might be an advantage.

BRIGADIER C. TROUP, COMMANDING AT BAREILLY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. I think I could, if I had them by me; but having lost all my books and papers, I have nothing to refer to.

2. As far as possible, they should be assimilated to the Rules which obtain in the British Army.

3. It most certainly does not.

4. The Articles of War are regularly read and explained to them every three months at a public Parade ordered for the purpose.

5. A very small proportion indeed. I doubt very much if more than fifty men in any Regiment could be found who could do so correctly.

6. I really don't know, for I never had any thing to do with them.

7. I don't know.

8. I must here observe that until very lately there has never been any thing like a Military Police in the Bengal Presidency. During the thirty-seven years that I have been in it, there has been nothing better than a Civil or what is called a Burkundauze Police, which, in the truest sense, is a curse to the population. My association with it, and the means of personal observation is so slight, that I can say but little about the Military Police which has been raised during the present year; but if I am to believe what Natives have told me, even making every allowance for their exaggeration, and the very little which has come immediately under my own notice, however good the provisions made, the working is the very reverse of satisfactory.

BRIGADIER P. GORDON, COMMANDING AT BENARES.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

1st. Power to award corporal punishment to be extended to one hundred lashes.

2nd. Power to combine "dismissal" with simple "imprisonment" or corporal punishment.

3rd. Trial by all Courts Martial for "disgraceful conduct" to be authorized on sufficient grounds when by inferior Courts Martial.

4th. The words "with the sanction of the Commander-in-Chief," to be expunged from the 89th Article, leaving the enforcement of forfeiture of pay and stoppages to the confirming Officer, as well as the rest of the sentence, according to the nature of the Court.

5th. The powers of Commanding Officers to award summary punishments, granted in the 112th Article of War, to be greatly extended.

6th. The 114th Article to be abolished. Native Soldiers, while on the effective list, to be amenable to Courts Martial only.

7th. Transportation to be allowed for any period not less than five years, as well as for life, at the discretion of the Court.

8th. Present Articles to be condensed and simplified.

9th. Power to break Non-Commissioned Officers for incompetency to be vested in Officers Commanding Regiments. I attach much importance to this.

10th. Courts Martial in Native Regiments to be for the purpose of recording the evidence in the case only ; verdict and sentence to be left to the Commanding Officer, who might be vested with the powers of a Joint Magistrate ; proceedings to be subject to review, to guard against abuses.

11th. Commanding Officers to be empowered to require Courts to supply omissions in evidence ; the course of justice has often been stopped owing to the existing rule on this head.

2.

Assimilated, as regards what constitutes a breach of discipline ; but by some means punishment ought to follow the committing of such crimes in a more severe and summary manner, specially as regards mutiny, treason, plotting, and the illegal secret combinations to gain particular objects to which the Native Soldiers have always been addicted.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 3.** Under the old system, in nine cases out of ten the superior Officer, when an Officer of experience and determination, directed Native Courts Martial as he thought proper ; the exceptions were generally found to be where Native Officers of low caste sat in judgment over a prisoner of high caste !!
- 4.** Articles of War read at the head of the Regiment every third month, besides, on every occasion of the swearing in of the recruits ; Standing Orders of the Army read at the head of Companies every week, also weekly all Regimental Orders bearing on discipline, the interior economy of the Regiment, or publishing Courts Martial, General, District and Regimental ; all the above, after having been translated, are copied into Company and Hindoostanee Order Books by Pay Havildars.
- 5.** About one-fourth.
- 6.** A Commanding Officer of a Police Corps is, I believe, vested with the powers of a Joint Magistrate.
- 7.** See above. I can't enter into particulars, having had no experience with Police Regiments.
- 8.** A properly selected Commanding Officer, having the powers of Joint Magistrate, and with authority to break Non-Commissioned Officers at his pleasure, I consider, ought to be able to maintain discipline ; but I have had no practical experience.

BRIGADIER W. HILL, COMMANDING HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** The Articles of War in use with the Hyderabad Contingent are the same as are in the Madras Army.
- They can be improved with much advantage, retaining those Articles which are obviously necessary for the maintenance of strict discipline, and omitting many others which are not required and useless.
- I would recommend greater powers being given to Regimental Courts Martial, which would, at the same time, invest the Commanding Officer of a Regiment with more authority also over his men in confirming and carrying into effect such sentences of Courts Martial as would cause this tribunal to be more feared than it is at present from its limited powers, and in many cases useless punishments, such as simple imprisonment. The alterations and improvements are too numerous to be alluded to here ; but a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

selected number of Officers of the Company's Army might draw up, for submission to Government, such a Military Code as would, in my opinion, be far preferable for administering justice to the Soldiers for Military offences, than if they were to be abolished and paramount authority to be placed in the hands of the Commanding Officer of a Regiment, and himself only to be responsible for its exercise.

No Soldier, I conceive, should be deprived the liberty of appealing to a tribunal of his equals, if he considers himself wronged by his Commanding Officer.

2.

The Rules regulating punishments in the Native Army should be retained, and greater power given to Commanding Officers of Regiments for inflicting them, by which means his hands would be strengthened, which is desirable for the maintenance of discipline.

The Rules of the Native Army cannot, in my opinion, be assimilated to those which obtain in the British Army.

3.

I think it does, and I believe it will work with greater advantage if the alterations suggested in Paragraph 1 should be sanctioned by the Government of India.

4.

The Native Articles of War are translated into Hindoostanee and Nagree, and a certain number of the Articles which are specially marked are read once every three months at the head of every Regiment. They are understood in a way by the men; but the Articles require to be simplified, when they will be better remembered.

5.

On an average about one-third of the men of a Regiment can read for themselves.

My reply to the three following questions is as follows.

6.

There is no Police Corps in the Assigned Districts of the Nizam's Territories. The Police are under no Military or Civil Code peculiar to themselves; but, in common with the other inhabitants of the District, they are amenable to the Provisions of the Indian Penal Code.

7.

As there is no Police Corps in the Assigned Districts, there cannot, therefore, be said to be such discipline as is contemplated in this question. They are dealt with, or summarily dismissed, by the Deputy or Assistant Commissioner as they please.

I have just marched through the Raichore Doab, which contains upwards of 5,500 square miles; for which, I have been

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

informed, there are only 500 Police Peons. The consequence of this is, there are not sufficient Peons for the executive and current duties of the Districts, as I have seen in every Village or Town I have encamped at.

8.

There is no doubt that the safety and security of the Raichore Doab is most imperfectly protected from the absence of an organized Military Police of such a strength as would preserve the peace of the Districts by being of such a number as could be collected together on an emergency to act with effect in any part where a tumult or an assemblage of disorderly persons might collect together.

The Deputy Commissioner or his Assistant is now in himself Police Superintendent, Magistrate, Judge and Collector. Until a severance is made between the Police and Magisterial duties of the same Officer, and the Police doubled to what it now is, there will be a constant fear of incursions from all sides, which actually did occur recently, and which caused the Force I commanded to be marched into the Raichore Doab against insurgents.

There should be a Superintendent of Police, with his Deputies under him, all Military men, *selected for this duty*, which will entail constant moving about, and the Police could then be well disciplined under a Code of their own. It will be found that what I have stated as regards the defective Police establishment in the Raichore Doab, and the entire absence of any discipline among the Police, is equally applicable to the whole of the Assigned Districts in the Nizam's territory.

BRIGADIER W. HILL, COMMANDING HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Articles of War and form of trial should be much simplified.

Two descriptions of Courts only are necessary,—General and Regimental, or Detachment Courts Martial. The latter should have the power of trying all offences when deemed expedient, and to award any punishment now authorized, short of death, or transportation for life on ship board, the time of march in the field, and at single stations; it should have this power also, in cases of mutiny, sedition, or gross insubordination, and disobedience of orders.

Sentences of Courts Martial should be confirmed by the senior Officer on the spot, or Commanding Officers of Regiments. A General Court Martial to consist of five, and a Regimental or Detachment Court Martial of three Officers, respectively, either European or Native, at the discretion of the Commanding Officer. Cor-

Q UESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

poral punishment should be increased from fifty to one hundred lashes, and should be always inflicted for disgraceful conduct, mutinous or grossly insubordinate behaviour, and refusal to obey orders.

2.

The Rules regulating punishments in the Native Army should be retained, and greater power should be delegated to Commanding Officers of Regiments for inflicting them ; by this means the hands of a Commanding Officer would be strengthened, which is very desirable for the maintenance of strict discipline.

The discipline and punishments required in the European Army, are so different from those required for the Native Army, that the Rules for the latter cannot in any way be assimilated to those which obtain in the British Army.

3.

It does, and I believe it will work with greater advantage to the discipline of the Army, if the alterations suggested in the 1st Paragraph should be sanctioned by the Government of India.

4.

The Native Articles of War are translated into Hindoostanee, Teloogoo and Tamil ; and a certain number of the Articles which are specially marked are ordered to be read once every three months at the head of every Regiment in the Service.

Parts of the Infantry Standing Orders are also ordered to be read periodically.

5.

About one-third of the men in a Regiment can read for themselves.

6.

The Madras Government have only recently appointed a Commissioner of Police and three Deputies, to organize a Military Police Corps for that Presidency.

7.

The Commissioner is a Gentlemen of the Civil Service ; the Deputies are Officers of the Army.

I am not acquainted with the discipline which is to be maintained in this Police Corps, or what proportion of Native Officers are to be appointed.

8.

As I am not aware what provision has been made for maintaining the discipline of Police Corps, and the authority of their European and Native Officers, I can only suggest the measures which seem to me necessary. I think that great care should be taken in the formation of the Mounted Police especially, which should be composed of an efficient body of men ; and the European Officers should be selected for this purpose, whose habits, physical

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

powers and intelligence qualify them for this peculiar duty. East Indians would be an excellent class of people to entertain in the Police, as being more trustworthy and faithful than the Natives. As our Rail-roads in India must hereafter be protected from being at any time injured, Mounted Police should, I think, have the entire supervision of the Rail-road. To this Corps should be entrusted the maintenance of good order along the whole line of road, and they would at once furnish a safeguard to all travellers, and contribute a valuable resource "as Cavalry" on any sudden emergency, and would be a suitable auxiliary to the Army. There should be regular Divisions of Police at stated distances; and the knowledge that would thus be imparted to the inhabitants of the Country that a body of "Cavalry," could with ease be thus called out in an hour or two's notice, by the aid of the telegraph, would render our Rail-roads secure at all times.

Faithful, active and deserving Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers of the Native Regiments of the Line might be rewarded by promotion into the Foot Police Corps; and this would act as a stimulus to the Native Army.

BRIGADIER J. STEEL, COMMANDING AT UMBALLAH.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

It has been advocated that Officers of Native Regiments should be vested with powers of a Magistrate; it would give them more absolute control; but the general conduct of the Sepoy has not required it.

2.

The habits of the Native are so different from the European Soldier that any assimilation for regulating punishments is not necessary.

3.

The conduct of the Native Army has been so satisfactory up to the period of the assembly of the Rifle Depôts, and occasions for the assembly of Courts Martial so rare, that I am not aware of any general grounds for dissatisfaction with that institution.

4.

Standing Orders are copied out by Pay Havildars of Companies and read to the men.

5.

Very few.

6.

Officers Commanding Police Corps were invested with the powers of a Magistrate over their own men, with an appeal to the Commissioner of the Division; but if they are to be vested with a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

more Military character, that appeal might with advantage be dispensed with. It would make the Commanding Officer more effective in his duties, and prevent his decisions being subject to the intrigues of any Native Amlah.

7.

By imprisonment and discharge under the orders of a Magistrate.

8.

The Police Battalions, of which I was the Superintendent, were disbanded in 1847. I am not aware what are the Rules now in force in the several Police Corps in course of formation. A plan was suggested in November last and sent to me, on which I recorded a minute; but I am not acquainted how far it has been acted on. The impression on my mind was, that a higher rate of pay was accorded for the same material than was necessary, and consequently diminishing the value of the Rupee and causing the necessity for raising the pay of other Establishments. Experience only can show if the working is satisfactory.

BRIGADIER COKE, C. B., COMMANDING AT MORADABAD.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

There should be no Articles of War for the Native Army. The Commanding Officer, as I have before stated, should be a Magistrate. Native Soldiers committing any offence should be tried by him, and crimes exceeding the power of a Magistrate to punish, such as murder, should, after investigation, be handed over to the Sessions for trial as in other Civil cases.

2.

There should be no special Rules for regulating punishments of any kind in the Native Army. They should be left to the Commanding Officer, who should keep a Register of the men tried, the crimes for which they are tried, and the punishments awarded. The trials to be conducted in the presence of the Native Officers in the Vernacular. The nature of Europeans and Asiatics is so utterly different, that it is manifestly as impossible to frame Rules to suit both races as it is to render them of the same color.

3.

No, certainly not. There should be no Native Courts Martial in the Native Army. Native Officers sitting on a Court will always endeavour to let off the offender for many reasons. There is always some clique who, either from being related to the offender or of the same tribe or village, will make it their business to get up a party amongst the Native Officers to screen the offender. If these Native Officers will not agree to this, it makes a feud which shows itself in a thousand underhand tricks, which tend to defeat

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

justice and injure discipline. Native Officers are also bad judges of punishment; certain crimes are great offences in our eyes and considered of little moment by Natives. This particularly applies to matters of discipline. Consult Native Officers fully in every matter regarding the proof of the crime; let the trial be open before all the Native Officers or men who are interested to attend. We lose much of the respect that we should otherwise obtain for our justice by closed Courts Martial. Let the sentence rest with the Commanding Officer alone. All crimes committed at Head Quarters, when he is present, should be tried by him alone. Nothing gives him a greater insight into the state of his Corps. Evidence given in front of him, when the matter is first investigated, and what is afterwards given before a Court Martial, is as different as light from darkness. An investigation taken on the spot and at the time the offence is committed has a chance of eliciting the truth; the investigation before a Court Martial, none, as the evidence has been all tampered with and every thing settled and agreed on beforehand in the Lines. When any investigation is required affecting the state of a Corps, let the Court be composed of European and Native Officers mixed. The acumen of the European Officer and the insight into Native character and local knowledge of the Native Officer, will be more likely to elicit the truth than any other kind of Court; but it only should be used for the investigation of large matters.

4.

I do not know what may have been done latterly in the Line Corps. The only Code in the 1st Punjab Infantry was my orders, which were very clearly understood. There is no Military Code required, and no Military Code could, in my opinion, be framed supposing it was required to suit the different races in the Bengal Army. It would seem difficult to frame a Military Code that would suit English, French, Spanish and Germans; but they are not a bit more dissimilar in their customs and nature than Hindoos, Seikhs, Goorkhas, Pathans and Beloochees, and I think this applies equally as well to Civil as to Military government.

5.

I do not know what may have been the case in the Line Corps; but in the Pathan and Seikh Corps there are not more than one or two men who can read and write. Those who can read and write are certainly not better Soldiers than those who have not this accomplishment. Amongst the Native Officers of the 1st Punjab Infantry, who are a body of thoroughly good Soldiers, competent to Command their Companies better than most European Officers, there is only one Officer who can read and write, though many of them speak three languages, Persian, Pushtoo and Hindoostanee; all two languages, Punjabee and Hindoostanee.

6 and 7.

I do not know.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8.

The Punjabee Police Corps are the only ones I am acquainted with, and they are well managed by their Commanding Officers in the same way as the Irregular Corps.

GENERAL OBSERVATION ON THE 2ND HEAD OF INQUIRY.

There is no Military Code nor Rules of Discipline wanted except a Book of Standing Orders for each Province. The Commanding Officer should be both. If the Commanding Officer is incapable, remove him ; but the whole Army should not be ruined for the sake of a few incapables. Military Codes and Rules for Discipline may be very good for Europeans, but are worse than useless for Natives. They make Military lawyers but spoil good Soldier.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT, BOMBAY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I am not prepared to do so.

2.

I do not see the necessity of any change in this respect.

3.

I believe that it works quite satisfactorily.

4.

The most prominent of the Articles of War are read to them on the monthly muster parade.

5.

I am not prepared to answer this.

6 to 8.

I am not sufficiently acquainted with the Civil Police Corps to be able to answer the question relating to them satisfactorily or with confidence.

COLONEL E. GREEN, ADJUTANT GENERAL OF THE BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Native Articles of War should be abolished, and a few simple Rules laid down by Government calculated to meet ordinary breaches of discipline. Commanding Officers should have Magisterial powers, to be exercised beyond a certain extent under the confirmation of Brigadiers and General Officers Commanding Divisions.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 2.** The Rules which obtain in the British Army are not required to govern the Native Army ; Europeans and Natives being essentially different, a different mode of treatment is required.
- 3.** Custom has made the system work smoothly, but the machinery is cumbersome and might be much simplified by the proceedings being taken in the Vernacular, the Court Martial assuming the form of a Punchayet superintended by an European Officer.
- 4.** Portions of the Native Articles of War are read in Hindoostanee to the Regiment at muster parade every month.
- 5.** About one third.
- 6.** Under the Civil Regulations.
- 7.** In minor cases by fine, extra drill, suspension, and dismissal ; in major cases, neglect of duty, abuse of authority, &c. &c., by Section 8 of Regulation 12 of 1827.
- 8.** The Police Authorities consider that Section 13 is deficient inasmuch as hard labor cannot be awarded. Some additional authority would be an improvement ; but the system appears to work satisfactorily, for security of life and property is found throughout this Presidency to an extent which speaks highly in its favor.

COLONEL K. YOUNG, JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** Until something is definitely settled regarding the organization of the Native Army, it will, I think, be premature to take the question of Articles of War into consideration.
- I may remark that about two years ago very extensive changes were proposed in the present Native Articles, to which the then Commander-in-Chief, General the Honorable G. Anson, had given much attention, were approved of by His Excellency, and were sent on to Government ; but nothing has been heard of them since. They are probably with the Legislative Council, having been detained pending the arrangements for reconstructing the Native Army ; but whatever the constitution of that Army may be, many more changes in the Articles of War will be necessary beyond those already recommended.

Postponing the discussion of the question, as before observed, till the organization of the Army has been to some extent decided

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

upon, I would observe that by whatever Military Code the Army is to be governed, it should, in my opinion, be left to the Commander-in-Chief to determine, with the sanction of Government, what the provisions of that Code are to be. It is scarcely possible that the Legislative Council, composed as it is almost entirely of non-military Gentlemen, should have a sufficient knowledge of the requirements of the Army to decide with advantage on the questions likely to come before them connected with the Articles of War, and for the good working of which, after they may become Law, the Commander-in-Chief will always be considered the responsible party. The long delay too that there must be in making necessary amendments from time to time, or in introducing any fresh Article that the Commander-in-Chief may deem essential for preserving discipline, are, I think, strong reasons why it should be pronounced inexpedient to continue in the Legislative Council the power of framing Articles of War.

Whatever, therefore, may be the future of the Bengal Native Army, I think it will be desirable to propose to the Legislative Council at the appropriate time to pass an Act abolishing the present Native Articles of War, and to vest authority in the Commander-in-Chief, with the sanction of the Governor General in Council, to frame such Articles, Rules or Regulations, as may be considered expedient from time to time for the preservation of discipline in the Bengal Army. If it should be found, however, that though the Legislative Council can annul the existing Articles, the intervention of Parliament is required to allow of Government and the Commander-in-Chief providing a substitute for them, I think it will be desirable to address the Home Government on the subject.

A similar provision to that recommended might be made for the Armies of the other Presidencies, or if thought proper, the mode of dealing with the more serious offences in all three Presidencies might be left to be declared by the Supreme Government.

In elucidation of the evils resulting from framing Articles of War under a Legislative enactment, I may mention that by the greater portion of the present Native Army, consisting of Seikhs and Levies of all kinds, the Articles of War are understood to be ignored altogether. Commanding Officers proceeding for the trial and punishment of offenders under Magisterial authority; I have no official knowledge that such is the case; but it is a matter of general notoriety, so that although it is declared by the Articles that all Native Soldiers are to be subject to them, they are entirely set aside and treated with a disregard but ill-calculated to ensure respect for Legislative enactments, and there is besides, for after—considerations, the illegality of all trials held otherwise than under the authority of the Articles of War. Were the power of making

ANSWERS.

QUESTIONS.

them vested in the Commander-in-Chief, matters might have been properly provided for at once, and all illegal proceedings avoided.

2.

Answered in the preceding.

3.

I think that under the present system of trials by Native Courts Martial substantial justice is administered, and what is more, I believe the Sepoys think so too ; but I am at the same time of opinion that equally satisfactory results might be arrived at by less complex machinery, and the majority of cases now tried by Native Courts Martial might be disposed of with advantage by Commanding Officers of Regiments, provided that these Officers are selected Officers, not merely succeeding by seniority, and that their proceedings are open to proper supervision.

This arrangement would be one entirely consonant with Native habits and feelings, who love despotic power, whether as the governor, or as the governed, and for the future it seems unquestionable that the hands of Commanding Officers must be strengthened if a severe discipline is to be maintained.

4.

Under the provisions of the 158th Article of War, certain named portions of the Native Articles are directed to be read every three months at the head of every Regiment, Troop or Company, mustered in the Service, and to every recruit at the period of his attestation such standing Rules and Regulations as there may be in Regiments are read and explained at fixed times as may be directed by the Commanding Officers of Regiments, and whenever any General Order is published affecting the Native Army, it is translated and read to every Regiment.

If a Sepoy errs it ought not to be from ignorance of the penalty that attaches to his offence.

5.

The records of Regiments will show this.

6.

The Police Corps are not amenable to the Articles of War. The Superintendent of Police will best be able to explain under what Code they are governed.

7.

The Superintendent of Police will be best able to answer this question.

COLONEL H. P. BURN, SUPERINTENDENT ARMY CLOTHING.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 8.

I shall leave these questions to be answered by Officers who are practically acquainted with the working of the Military Code and Rules of Discipline as introduced of late years.

COLONEL F. BERKELEY, C. B., COMMANDING HER MAJESTY'S 32ND
LIGHT INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 4. I can give no opinion on these questions.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL W. MAYHEW, ADJUTANT GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 and 2. The Articles of War for the Native Troops are sufficient for every purpose if enforced; but they have been so neutralized by the many special regulations against inflicting the punishments of flogging and imprisonment, that Commanding Officers of Corps are practically almost powerless. Since corporal punishment has been, to all intents and purposes, abolished, it has become a very common feeling amongst the Sepoys, that do what they may, they can only be dismissed, or sent to drill, and their European Officers have felt keenly that such has really been the case for years past. The only middle course, that of simple imprisonment has been a mockery, as there never has been a proper place to carry it out, nor any restrictions as to the food or personal comforts of a prisoner confined in the Quarter Guard of a Corps.

3. In the Native Army the scope of trial by Court Martial never has been properly understood, and Native Courts have ever been a by-word. The European Superintending Officer and the Interpreter have always been the Judges at such tribunals; the sooner they are done away with in *toto* the better. Courts composed entirely of European Officers would, I am persuaded, be more popular with the Native Troops generally.

4 and 5. The Articles of War may be read half a dozen times a year to the Troops under arms; but no other means of explaining them to the men have been had recourse to generally. Not above ten men per Company can read in the Vernacular dialect of the Articles of War, indeed, education is on the most primitive footing throughout the Native Army of Bengal, nor do the men care to improve themselves in that respect, although they have the means placed at their disposal for the purpose.

6 to 8. I have not the means of replying satisfactorily to these questions; but I apprehend that Officers Commanding Police Corps are less restricted, as to rewarding and punishing their men, than those of the Line, and that consequently their authority depends more on their personal conduct and aptitude for Command.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL C. DAVIDSON, RESIDENT, HYDERABAD.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Code is at present too complicated, should be divested of all technicalities of a legal nature, a simple charge should be drawn up, and on conviction, the sentence left to the discretion of the Court.

2.

They should be retained as at present.

3.

It does not. The Judge Advocate in revising the trials has almost always to remark on inaccuracies either in drawing up charges or that the sentence is not in accordance with some particular Article on which the charge was framed. Guilt thus often escapes punishment, which should not be the case in a Military Code. Occasionally too the prejudices and modes of thought of the Native Court are not in accordance with European ideas of law and justice, and a conviction can hardly be expected in such cases, or if a sentence is passed, it appears absurd according to our views of discipline and Military Law. I have, on several occasions, known the Native Soldier to apply for an European in preference to a Native Court Martial. I should, for this and other reasons, which will easily present themselves, be inclined to direct all charges of a grave and important nature to be tried by a Court composed entirely of European Officers.

4.

Certain Articles laid down in the Articles of War are read ; but generally the men. cannot comprehend the classification of charges and offences.

5.

A Regiment consists of 919 men, including Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers. Of this number, at an average, 80 men can read and write and 146 can merely sign their names, while the rest are totally illiterate.

6.

The Hill Rangers in North Berar are amenable to the Native Articles of War ; with that exception, no organized body of Police exists in the Assigned Districts.

7 and 8.

There are no Police Corps in the Assigned Districts.

MAJOR G. W. WILLIAMS, SUPERINTENDENT OF POLICE BATTALION, N. W. P.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 and 2.

They might be abolished as being incomprehensible to Natives, and a few simple and stringent Rules adopted in their stead.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

I believe unsatisfactorily.

4.

The Military Code was read at stated periods to the Troops on parade ; but I believe very few heard, and scarce ten in a hundred understood what was thus read to them.

5.

A very small proportion.

6.

Under Civil Law.

Vide Rule 28th of the Regulations.

By Government Notification, No. 1333, of 10th May 1858, Divisional and District Commandants are invested with the powers of a Magistrate, for the investigation and punishment of offences committed by the Non-Commissioned Officers and Men of the Forces under their respective Commands.

7.

Police Officers can punish to the extent of one hundred lashes and sentence to hard labour for three years. Heinous crimes are committed for trial to the Civil Courts.

8.

The Military Police have been working ten months ; and hitherto most satisfactorily. Few complaints have been brought against them, and those of a trivial character. The testimony of Commissioners and Magistrates is highly in their favor.

CAPTAIN H. SHAKESPEAR, COMMANDING NAGPORE IRREGULAR FORCE.

NAGPORE FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Not for the Infantry or Horse Battery, but for the Cavalry. I would suggest that the punishment to a Silladar for neglect of his horse should never be imprisonment but dismissal, and that imprisonment, unless with hard labor, which involves dismissal, should never be awarded a Silladar for any crime inasmuch as it is not adapted to Silladaree Horse, because while the Horseman is in confinement there is no one to look after his horse, and the animal is liable to become ill or vicious for want of work ; reprimand, stoppage of pay and dismissal are, in my opinion, the three punishments suited to Irregular Cavalry, except, of course, where crimes deserving imprisonment with hard labor or some such punishment are committed.

2.

They should be retained.

3.

Yes, in the Infantry and Horse Battery, but not in the Cavalry, owing to imprisonment being often awarded a Silladar, which

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

punishment as shown in answer No. 1, is very unsuitable to Irregular Cavalry.

4. The Articles of War are read out to the men on Parade once every three months.
5. One-fourth.
6. I am not acquainted.
7. I am unacquainted with the Regulations of the Police Corps, they not being under my Command.
8. I am unable to answer the question for the above reason.

E. A. READE, Esq., C. S.

AGRA.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6. I believe only general Rules have as yet been laid down for Police Battalions; though the organization is Military, are and must necessarily be a branch of Civil Administration. See Government Notification, 10th May 1858.
7. By the Commandant and Sub-Commandant being vested with the full powers of Magistrates or Assistants to Magistrates for the punishment of offences committed by the men under their authority.
8. I can only speak with knowledge of the Agra Divisional Police Battalion. Though there have been large drains upon it to aid other Divisional Police Battalions, and it may be said to be almost in a transition state; the system has worked well. The only defect I see in it is the Second-in-Command not being Sub-Commandant of the Head Quarters District.

OUDE COMMITTEE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

OUDE POLICE.

5. *Vide* Copy of Code appended.
7. By the European Officers.

RULES FOR MILITARY POLICE.

Military offences.

Powers of an European Commandant.

European Commandants can summarily dismiss a Private and exercise generally the powers of a Joint Magistrate, punishing up to three years' imprisonment without reference. Cases requiring severer punishment than three years to be referred to the Chief of Police.

European Commandants can summarily reduce a Non-Commissioned Officer to the ranks, or subject him to a fine. He can flog any Private for a Military offence. He can fine all Native Commissioned Officers save Commandants and Adjutants of Cavalry and Infantry.

Powers of Chief of Police.

The Chief of Police can summarily dismiss all ranks save that of Native Commandants. For this the sanction of the Chief Commissioner is required.

He can sentence to imprisonment and transportation for long periods ; but cases of transportation for life, and death will be subject to the confirmation of the Chief Commissioner.

Statements.

Monthly Statements of punishments and rewards will be sent, through the usual channel, to the Chief Commissioner.

Civil offences where Police only are concerned.

[N. B.—Separate Rules for Police, when under the Civil Authority, are framed in the Civil Department.]

Petty Cases.

In misdemeanour and all offences punishable by a Magistrate, the European Commandant can try and award sentences up to three years' imprisonment, or can make over the case to the Civil Authorities.

Felonies.

In felonies the European Commandant and Deputy Commissioner, or qualified Assistant sitting together, can try and award sentence up to seven years' imprisonment, and this sentence will be final. For sentence beyond seven years, cases are to be sent to the Commissioner for approval.

In cases of difference of opinion between the Commandant and the Deputy Commissioner, the Commissioner will decide.

Where others besides the Police are concerned.

Petty cases.

In misdemeanour and all offences punishable by a Magistrate, the Deputy Commissioner or his qualified Assistant will try the case and award punishment up to three years' imprisonment, or he may make over the case to the European Commandant.

Felonies.

In felonies the European Commandant and Deputy Commissioner, or qualified Assistant sitting together, will try and award sentence up to seven years' imprisonment, and their sentence will be final. For sentence beyond seven years, cases are to be sent to the Commissioner for approval.

In cases of difference of opinion between the Commandant and Deputy Commissioner, the Commissioner will decide.

OUDE COMMITTEE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Abolish.
2. Retain neither.
3. No.
4. European Officers seldom understand and less frequently are able to communicate.
5. One in hundred read, and one in thousand understand.

H. B. E. FRERE, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER IN SCINDE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.
 1. I, of course, have no practical experience of their working; but judging from what I hear and see, the Articles of War for the Native portion of the Bombay Army have always appeared to me to be utterly unsuited to the government of such a Force.
 2. Their general idea is taken from the Articles of War of Her Majesty's Army, modified with the intention of making them suit Natives of India. But our Native Army differs from our English, and from most European Armies in several characteristics, which are so important as to make what is suitable for the one quite unsuitable to the other.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3. Our English Army is a national force ; our Indian Native Army is, to a much greater extent, a mercenary force. There are powerful feelings to which you can appeal in the one case, and not in the other.

4. The pay and position of an English Soldier is, in many respects, inferior to those of the industrious and well-educated of the class whence he is usually taken. Hence, simple dismissal, especially during the earlier years of his service, is no punishment. The reverse is the case with the Native Soldier. He is better off than the generality of the class whence he is drawn, and simple dismissal is a substantial punishment, involving the loss of an eligible and lucrative employment.

5. On the other hand, the English Soldier, after a few years' service, becomes unfitted for earning his livelihood by other occupations, and if cast adrift, must often beg or starve. This is not the case with the Sepoy. There are many professions in our own Provinces open to him if he leaves our Army, and he can always, if he wishes, find Military Service in the Armies of other States.

6. These two latter considerations point to simple dismissal at the will of a Commanding Officer as a punishment much more effectual, and at the same time less liable to abuse, from undue severity in the Native, than in the British Army. To the Native, dismissal is a substantial punishment during the earlier years of service, and later in life does not become absolute ruin, as in the case of the English Soldier: hence the long array of provisions in the Articles of War, calculated to enforce the unwilling service of an underpaid English Soldier, and to secure him from ruin when he has long served the State and become unfit for other employment, are quite inapplicable to the Native Soldier.

7. But the main difference of all is that the English Soldier comes of races habituated to self-government, and you can only get good recruits in large numbers by letting them see that however ill-paid and undesirable the Service is in some respects, the Soldier has still rights of his own. The non-Military class in England would not, with their eyes open, tolerate paying for an Army of their own Countrymen ruled on purely despotic principles. The Articles of War give to the engagement between the Soldier and the State some semblance of a voluntary compact, and any breach of the Articles of War becomes a breach of a Law, apparently in some degree self-imposed ; punishment for which commands little sympathy among Englishmen.

8. Asiatic Soldiers, on the other hand, come all of races habituated to despotic government, and in the dealings of a State

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

with its servants and subjects, they understand and appreciate no other. The grant of rights which they can enforce against their sovereign and employer, simply puzzles them, and a Code like the Articles of War and Army Regulations by giving rise to vague notions of some ill-understood rights which some unknown authority is apparently suspected of wishing to subvert, creates a vague feeling of suspicion and discontent. Natives much prefer serving under a Master whose wishes and temper once understood, are to them a law and rule of conduct of which they know the exact provisions and obligations. An Englishman asks—"what are my rights and duties"? The Asiatic guesses what they will be by the answer to his question, which is always "who is my Master"? and amid all intricacies and divided responsibilities of our present system, this is a question to which he can rarely get a clear and decided answer. In some respects his Adjutant or Commanding Officer, the Brigadier or Adjutant-General, the Commander-in-Chief or Governor in Council are all more or less his Masters; but he can never clearly understand the exact relation of each authority to the other, still less can he find the one Master whose will to him is law, for he still perceives behind the Government itself some power which prevents the Government from being absolutely despotic.

9. That the Natives infinitely prefer the individual despotism, is clear from the preference they always show for it when the two forms of subordination are presented to their choice. Service in an Irregular Corps is always preferred to a Regular one, and no one can deal long with Natives without finding that they prefer serving a man they know and can trust, and that they will rely on his arbitrary will, rather than get the most binding charter of rights that ever was written on paper by a man whom they do not know.

10. In all that General Jacob has written and published on this subject, I most fully agree. Rules and laws of some kind there must be; but they should be confined to a definition of who is to be obeyed. The authority of the immediate Commanding Officer should be made supreme over all Natives who are placed under his orders, to the extent of dismissing them from the Service, and he should be held strictly responsible to a superior Commanding Officer up to the Commander-in-Chief for the mode in which the authority so given is exercised. But the responsibility should be always retrospective in the shape of praise or blame for what is done, and should never involve the necessity of applying for previous sanction. Whatever appears soundest and best in the way of rules for such exercise of authority, should be embodied in manuals and text books, which leave an opening for discretion and judgment, and should never assume the form of blind and unalterable law.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2.

Regarding the kinds of punishments, there should, I think, be no distinction whatever 'subjecting one class of Troops to punishments from which others are exempt. The arguments for special rules for each kind of force are all founded on the difference between the two Armies already noticed, the European Soldier being often the unwilling servant who is to be retained in the Service by fear of punishment; the Sepoy being the voluntary member of a Service expulsion from which is in itself severe punishment. In a Service like the latter, I can imagine no reason for any peculiar Military Code at all. Offences against discipline and Military orders can be severely punished by simple privation, temporary or entire, of all advantages of the Service; while for any other offence, the general Code may be so arranged as to inflict sufficient penalty. There is no so-called Military offence which does not in its essence constitute Civil crime, and which might be punished as such, if proper provisions were made in the General Code.

3.

1. I believe their working depends very much on the Superintending European Officer, to whose opinion they are very apt to show more deference than is consistent with independent judgment. I have rarely heard complaints such as I have seen stated against the system in the Bengal Army, that Native Courts Martial are unduly lenient. Perhaps the contrary is oftener the case in Bombay.

2. I do not think Native Courts Martial should ever be allowed, except as delegates of authority conferred on them by the Commanding Officer. He should be the sole and supreme Judge over the men, and the occasions must be rare in which such delegation can be necessary or advisable.

4.

I know of none except the periodical reading on parade of the Articles of War, which I imagine are understood by but few, and even if thoroughly understood, they would teach little without a thorough knowledge of the glosses supplied by Departmental Rules and General Orders, with which but few even of the European Officers in a Regiment have more than a superficial acquaintance.

5.

I cannot say.

6.

Under the General Regulations, especially those noted in the margin. There are some Circular Orders of the Sudder Adawlut and of Government relating to Police Corps generally in force; but they have never been separately collected or codified. They do not apply to Scinde, where the only orders affecting the Police are those issued by the late Governor and the Civil Commissioners who succeeded him.

BOMBAY.
Regulation 12 of 1827.
Ditto 4 of 1830.
Ditto 3 of 1833.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

7.

Mainly, I believe, by the power of dismissal.

8.

I believe, in the old Provinces of Bombay, the pay is generally very low, and the penalty of dismissal in consequence not heavy. The discipline is, therefore, of necessity, more lax than it ought to be.

In Scinde, where the pay is better in proportion to the ordinary rate of wages, the working of the system is quite satisfactory, and it would be so every where if the Police were adequately paid.

SCINDE POLICE CORPS.

1 to 5.

No replies required.

6.

The Police in Scinde are subject merely to the ordinary Civil Regulations, and to such general Rules as may, from time to time, be laid down by the Captain of Police under the authority of the Commissioner in Scinde and the Bombay Government.

7.

The Captain of Police has absolute power of appointment, promotion, and dismissal of all Men and Officers of the Force, subject, of course, to the general authority of the Commissioner and Government. This is found ample for the maintenance of discipline and authority.

8.

Yes; it is by far the best organized, best disciplined, and most efficient Police I have known or heard of in India. I know of no change which it would be desirable to introduce beyond raising the pay of some branches, and in some localities where a general rise of wages has placed the Policeman in a less favorable position than he formerly occupied as compared with the day laborer.

PRECIS
OF THE
REPLIES TO THE QUESTIONS ON INFANTRY
ORGANIZATION, PROMOTION AND REWARD.

• QUESTIONS.

1.

• ANSWERS.

THE Punjauh Committee reply that the system of promotion is based nominally on seniority and merit, but really on seniority, as the senior was never passed over unless he was imbecile.

In the Punjauh Irregular Force the rule is to give the promotion to the best man, preference being always shown to the senior if possible.

It appears from the concurrent testimony of the Officers marginally noted, that the general rule in the Native Infantry of the Bengal Army was promotion by seniority. That the exceptions were rare, merit operating to a very limited extent, and provided the character were good, seniority being seldom departed from, hence, says Major Williams,

Sir J. Hearsey.
Sir S. Cotton.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
OUDE COMMITTEE.
Brigadier Farquharson.
" Coke.
" Troup.
Colonel Burn.
" K. Young.
Major Williams.

the noted inefficiency of superior grades of Native Officers. Colonel Burn remarks that it "had become so much the practice to regulate promotion by seniority, that it was looked upon as the right of the senior, and any deviation from this practice was regarded by the whole Corps as an infringement of what they considered an established law of the Service. Some Commanding Officers took advantage of the invaliding season, when a great many vacancies occurred to promote smart and deserving men. They were generally selected from amongst the Drill instructors. Others stoutly upheld the seniority system as the only safeguard against misconduct in the field and in Cantonments." Brigadier Coke, after stating that seniority was the chief consideration, adds, "but many energetic Officers labored to get rid of their old and inefficient men, and to re-place them with more efficient Officers, both as regards age and qualifications; but what with the parsimony

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

of the Government in keeping Officers and men on the roll of the Regiments who were only fit for invalids, to which they would neither send them nor discharge them, and what with the obstacles thrown in the way of Commanding Officers by Head Quarters to the promotion of junior and efficient men, the whole promotions for the last 20 years have been almost entirely by seniority."

Brigadier Steel is of opinion the promotion was regulated by merit and seniority combined, but observes that promotion by favor has sometimes caused discontent.

The Commander-in-Chief replies, "I am informed, and can also state from my own knowledge, that promotions went much by seniority, but sometimes men were promoted out of their turn for smartness, gallantry, &c. In some Corps Commanding Officers promoted out of turn more than in others. A good deal had been done at Head Quarters of late years to encourage promotion by seniority, save in cases where the men were disreputable, or very incompetent. There was an old order that men should be promoted who could not read and write. This, in most cases, used to be a dead letter, but was very generally enforced after the publication of the new Military Regulations in 1855, and occasioned much dissatisfaction amongst men who had expected promotion, and were thus suddenly superseded, owing to the revival of this rule."

Major General Birch quotes the Regulations, Section LIV, in extenso, and adverting to its contents, says, "That such are the safeguards with which the claims of respectable seniority are hedged round," but that practice more decidedly recognized the paramount claim of distinguished merit and inferior qualifications than these Regulations encouraged.

2, 3 & 4. The Punjaub Committee reply that the Native Officers of the Bengal Army were proverbially dull and inefficient, and they ask, how could it be otherwise, when the position of the Native Officers was considered a reward of long service, and not a link in the discipline of the Corps, extreme age aggravating all their natural defects.

Whereas the Native Officers of the Punjaub Irregular Force are represented to be particularly intelligent, useful and efficient, in all positions, affording the greatest assistance to their Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The general sentiment is, that the Native Officers of the Bengal Army were not intelligent, useful and efficient.

The Commander-in-Chief.
Major General Birch.
Sir J. Hearsey.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir S. Cotton.

OUDE COMMITTEE.
Brigadier Farquharson.
" Steel.
" Coke.
" Troup.
Colonel K. Young.
" Burn.
Major Williams.

Brigadier Coke states that from two to three Native Officers might, in a Regiment, be fit for their position. Colonel Burn depicts them as in general very old, and perfectly useless; and he observes that one great blunder made by the

Mutineers, was the selection of these old and worn-out men to command them, and that it was the saving of our small Army before Delhie; that such men as Subadar Bukht Khan and others, equally infirm, were the leaders of the Rebels. Sir S. Cotton represents them as dull, inefficient, and wholly useless in supporting discipline; and drawing a similar conclusion with the foregoing, quoted from Colonel Burn's; adds, "Were they otherwise, the Mutiny has clearly shewn us, that they would be very dangerous and mischievous."

Brigadier Troup regards them as the most stupid, useless, worn-out race that ever existed, and not to be trusted. Brigadier Steel considers that the Native Officers were useful in minor details, and that their position was an inducement to all ranks to behave well. The Oude Committee remark with respect to them, that of intelligent and efficient men there was the usual proportion under a seniority system.

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.
Major General Birch.

OUDE COMMITTEE.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir J. Hearsey.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigadier Farquharson.
" Coke.
" Troup.
" Steel.
Colonel Burn.
" K. Young.
Major Williams.

There is a general concurrence of opinion with respect to the Native Officers of the Bengal Army, that their acquirements were usually not of a higher grade than those of the men from amongst whom they rose; on the contrary, that age, indolence, and disease having usually

impaired their energy and intelligence, they were, though originally on a par with the Sepoys, actually of a lower grade, and frequently leant on a smart Non-Commissioned Officer or Private, especially if

Sir J. Hearsey. a Brahmin. Brigadier Troup remarks that "they (the Native Officers) are from age and long service so infirm and apathetic, that they are generally commanded by, instead of commanding, those under them." Added to this, it is quite a mistake to suppose that the mere fact of giving a man a Commission made him all at once a native gentleman of influence; so far the contrary. It must be well known to all those who are at all conversant with the native character, that, however much appearances may be kept up before

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the European Officers, that when away from their control, the youngest Sepoy in the Company, if of a higher caste, was considered a better man than the Subadar, and this was productive of the most pernicious consequences as regards discipline and duty ; but more especially the manner in which it influenced the minds of Native Officers when sitting as President and Members of Courts-Martial.

The Punjaub Committee except the Native Officers of the Punjaub Irregular Force, whom they state to be selected men, and consequently above the average.

His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief remarks, that from having been Non-Commissioned Officers for several years before obtaining Commissions, the Native Officers have usually learned more of their duties than they knew when Sepoys, and that from his own observation His Excellency can state that many of them can drill a Company very well.

On the question of test or examination prior to promotion to a Commissioned grade, or from one Commissioned grade to another, there is much unanimity. Sir J. Hearsey introduced tests in the Cavalry Regiments he commanded ; but except (as remarked by Brigadier Farquharson) longevity, there would seem by concurrent testimony to have been none. In the Punjaub Irregular Force there is no other than that of general qualification to command.

The Commander-in-Chief.
Major General Birch.
PUNJAB COMMITTEE.
OUDE COMMITTEE.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir J. Hearsey.
Sir S. Cotton.
Brigadier Coke.
" Troup.
" Steel.
" Farquharson.
Colonel Burn
" K. Young.
Major Williams.

5.

The Punjaub Committee observe that the result of the intervention of the Native Officers must depend on the disposition and energy of both the European and the Native Officers, but that, on the whole, they believe that, as far as their influence went, the Native Officers strengthened their European Commanders. This is said with reference to the Bengal Army ; with regard to the Punjaub Force, they are of opinion that when the Command is in the hands of a competent Officer, the intervention of the Native Officers does not weaken the influence of the European Officers.

The Commander-in-Chief answers "not necessarily" to both questions, and Major General Birch considers that the result of the intervention of the Native Officers depended very much upon the European Officers themselves, varying according to their conduct and the interest they took in their men. That when the European

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Officers took little interest, clever Native Officers would greatly influence the men for good or evil, but that many of them were mere cyphers.

Upon this point the authorities, who deem that the intervention does not weaken the European Officers, are given in the margin. Brigadier Coke remarks, however, that sympathy between the Native and European Officers decreased latterly, partly because the Officer finding himself powerless to reward or punish, ceased to take interest in his men; and partly because every Officer who had interest or abilities, only thought of getting on the Staff, and of escaping the tedious routine of Regimental duty; and Brigadier Steel observes that both classes of Officers had too little power for either good or evil.

Sir J. Hope Grant.
Brigadier Coke.
" Steel.
" Farquharson.
Colonel K. Young.
OUDE COMMITTEE.

Others however (vide margin) consider that the intervention of the Native Officers was unfavorable to the influence with the men of the European Officers; that the latter should be all in all, and that the Native Officers were a hinderance; that if the latter were not in existence, the European Officers would act more directly upon their men, whereas from the position which the Native one holds, the European Officer is compelled to repose a trust in him, which he is very seldom worthy of.

Sir J. Hearsey.
Major Williams.
Sir S. Cotton.

Colonel Burn is of opinion that the intervention of the Native Officer between the European Officer and his men, may be made very beneficial; but that to effect this, Native Officers must be men of education, and of a better class of society than the Privates. He is of opinion that, had we had men of this stamp in the Army in 1857 to explain to the Sepoys the utter groundlessness of their fears of being made Christians, there would have been no mutiny.

Upon the second section of this question the Punjaub Committee is of opinion that a full complement of European Officers certainly interferes with the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officers, but that in the Punjaub Irregular Force the complement of European Officers is only four.

Sir S. Cotton considers that a full complement of European Officers would make cyphers of the Native Officers, an opinion with which Brigadier Coke concurs, inasmuch as such an organization must cause the Native Officer to take little or no interest in his duties.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

On the other hand Sir J. Hope Grant, Brigadier Troup and the Oude Committee hold the contrary opinion, namely, that a full complement of European Officers does not militate against the professional efficiency of the Native Officer. Sir J. Hope Grant does not put it quite so absolutely, but says that "it ought not." Major General Birch is also of opinion that a full complement of European Officers does not necessarily militate against the efficiency of the Native Officers.

6.

The Punjab Committee are of opinion that, during the late mutiny, the Native Officers of the Bengal Army on very few occasions gave any information of, or aid in, checking what was impending or taking place.

But in former years when there was dissatisfaction, and mutinous feeling in particular Corps, the Committee state that the Native Officers as a body did tell their European Officers what was going on, and that even in the Mutiny of 1857, the Native Officers went away with, rather than led, the Mutineers, and in any body that remained loyal, there was generally a large proportion of Native Officers.

Colonel K. Young believes "It may be stated, without contradiction, that the instances in which Native Commissioned Officers have given timely information of intended risings, are very exceptional, but when mutiny has once broken out they have very often sided with their European Officers. During the late Mutiny, however, their leaning has rather been towards the mutineers, on the ground, I believe, that they were deserting a hopeless cause, that they were abandoning in fact a sinking ship."

Sir J. Hope Grant's reply conveys the opinion, that in some cases the Native Officers have given information, but that they were so old and useless that they were quite unable to check any mutiny or irregularity. The opinion of Major General Birch is also somewhat similar. He states, "that in very few cases have the Native Officers given information or been of use to the European Officers in checking mutiny, There is a large proportion of them who have sided with the mutineers; but my belief is that the majority have done so on compulsion. There are numerous instances of their siding with the European Officers."

The foregoing are the more favorable opinions, those that follow are less so.

Brigadier Steel considers that the Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers as a body have always professed

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

ignorance of any cause of discontent, and have pretended not to be parties to it.

Colonel Burn remarks that, "The Native Officers being of the same class in society, and generally closely allied to a portion of the men under them, have, in all mutinies, aided and abetted the mutineers. They are all equally affected by the same cause, and being equally ignorant, any common ground of offence is as much a grievance to the Commissioned Officer as it is to the private Soldier."

Sir J. Hearsey observes that Native Officers usually encourage mutiny, if they think it may benefit them. That he has known them discourage trustworthy men from giving evidence or reporting mutinous acts or language, and that a Native Officer not siding (covertly) with the men, would indeed be an exception to the general rule.

Brigadier Troup says in reply to question 6, "I am not aware of their ever having done so, but on the contrary, they have always practised the grossest deceptions, and played a double part throughout. I am not aware, excepting during the present crisis, that they ever sided openly with the mutineers, although I am fully aware they always did so secretly, and although they have openly made the show of siding with the European Officers on occasions when the men did break out into open mutiny, selfish motives alone induced them to adopt the measure, for there was not one amongst them that did not know and tacitly aid in the coming storm, without ever warning their European Officers of what was about to take place; and had Native Officers of Regiments under such circumstances been summarily dismissed the service, and their promotions filled up from their Corps, I feel quite certain that mutiny would have been less frequent in the Bengal Native Infantry."

The remaining opinions concur in regarding the Native Officers

as rarely of any use, and very frequently themselves mutineers; and the Commander-in-Chief replies distinctly, "No, from all information I have obtained, the Native Officers have gone with the men."

as rarely of any use, and very frequently themselves mutineers; and the Commander-in-Chief replies distinctly, "No, from all information I have obtained, the Native Officers have gone with the men."

Officers have gone with the men."

7.

The Punjaub Committee advocate the continuance of Native Commissioned Officers, but on a better system.

They urge that unless human nature can be altered, there must either be prizes for ambition or discontent, and that they regard

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the Native Officer as an indispensable link in the management of a Native Regiment. The Commander-in-Chief thinks that they must be continued, unless the number of European Officers present with the Native Corps, is to be immensely increased, which seems neither possible nor desirable.

Colonel K. Young would not only maintain but increase the number of grades, so that no Soldier should be left, during his whole service, without seeing before him the chance of continued prospective advancement.

Brigadier Farquharson would likewise continue the grades of Native Commissioned Officers, but demand higher intelligence and efficiency.

Brigadier Coke would also continue them, but make them responsible for their Companies. So too Colonel Burn, who regards Native Officers as necessary in the Native Army, as a medium of communication between the Sepoy and his European Officer, and as more likely to listen with patience to the child-like complaints of the Sepoy, and to send him away in good humour to his lines, than the European Officer.

Colonel Burn however would appoint Native Officers from the educated and wealthier classes in the district where the Corps is enlisted, and he would make a knowledge of English an indispensable requisite for admission into the service. The Oude Committee and Sir J. Hope Grant are also advocates for maintaining the grades of Native Commissioned Officers.

On the other hand Sir J. Hearsey would discontinue the grades of Native Commissioned Officers, being in his opinion worse than useless, and Sir S. Cotton, Major General Birch, Brigadier Troup, and Major Williams are also in favor of abolishing them, the latter Officer making it dependent, however, on the Army not being broken up into small Detachments, and stating that, provided men were selected for the grade, the rank of Jemadar might be retained. Major General Birch would make special exceptions in favor of men of superior qualifications now in our service, the rest he would pension or discharge with a gratuity.

8.

The reply of the Punjaub Committee to this question is "decidedly not." "European Sergeants and Corporals could not, in the climate of India, perform the multifarious duties of Native Officers, nor would they have due influence with the men, or know any thing wrong that was going on in the Regiment. Instead of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

being an element of strength, we fear they would prove one of weakness and dissatisfaction. This was found to be the case in the Punjaub Regiments, and they were in consequence removed."

The Commander-in-Chief deems it inexpedient, and those who oppose such an organization, on the ground that the class is not calculated to have supervision over Sepoys; that it would be a waste of European Soldiers and of no use, are marginally noted.

OUDE COMMITTEE.
Sir J. Hope Grant.
Brigadier Farquharson.
" Coke.
" Steel.
Colonel Young.
" Burn.

On the contrary, Brigadier Troup thinks the substitution most advisable, but would not draw the European Non-Commissioned Officers from the European Troops in India, but from a superior class, specially raised for this peculiar service. Sir S. Cotton and Sir J. Hearsey both advocate the substitution, as also Major Williams.

Major General Birch deems the substitution highly desirable, but that it is indispensable that the Non-Commissioned Officers should speak Hindoostanee fluently, and that drunkenness should invariably be punished by removal. He would prefer two Serjeants to one Serjeant and a Corporal, because Havildars have the rank of Serjeants, and it would be anomalous that a Corporal should command a Havildar; yet that it is indispensable that all natives in a Company should be commanded by any European attached to it.

9.

The Commander-in-Chief deems the abolition of the grade of Native Officer unadvisable, and a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pension claimable after specified periods injudicious; as men, when past work, would cling on to obtain higher pensions, and experience shows that Commanding Officers will not always prevent this.

The Punjaub Committee also object, and are of opinion that, there must be a gradation of ranks and a machinery for managing the men, which no pecuniary privileges, without rank, can give, and that such a system as the one stated in the question would neither be efficient nor popular.

The Oude Committee would have the graduated scale in addition to Native Officers.

The advocates for maintaining Native Officers consider that no substitute would supply their place, and that the rates of pay and the increase given, after specified periods of service, are high enough to insure excellent recruits, being better than they could earn in any of the ordinary walks of life.

Colonel K. Young.
Brigadier Farquharson.
" Steel.
" Coke.
Colonel Burn.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

On the other hand, Brigadier Troup takes quite a different view of this most important subject; he says,—“This is a subject that I have closely studied for the last 20 years, and have, during that period, at various times, got the opinions of men of almost every Native Regiment in the service. I can, therefore, speak with the utmost confidence upon it. No man, on entering the service, ever thinks of looking forward to the higher grades, so much so that, by far the greater majority of them would, had they the option, take their pension after serving 15 years. I could, had I space here, give ample proof of this.”

“The fact of the old Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers clinging so pertinaciously to the service, as they generally do, has, I know, deceived many who have not given the matter that study which it is worthy of, into the belief that they remain on in the service in the hope of gaining distinction and a higher rate of pension. But in reality this is not the true cause, as I have it from the men themselves; the fact is that many of them remain on in the service so long that they have outlived their families and have no home to go to. Others again say, ‘I have remained in the service until I am so old that I would be useless at home, therefore, the best thing I can do for my family is to continue in it as long as I can, and save all the money I can for their benefit; but had I been allowed, I should have been very glad to have taken my pension after having served twenty-one years.’ My opinion is that the pay of the regular Native Soldier should be fixed at eight Rupees per month, in all situations; that Non-Commissioned Officers should be paid exactly as at present, and that there should be no such thing as Marching Batta. Carriage at a certain rate per man when marching, and lines when in Cantonments should be furnished by the State; this, with a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions claimable after specified period of services, regulated on the same system as that in Her Majesty’s Army would, in my opinion, make the Native Soldier more contented and efficient than he has ever been, and man ore thecompensate for the loss of the Commissioned grades.”

Major General Birch considers that the scheme sketched in the question would be efficacious, as the proportion of men who rise eventually to the grade of Commissioned Officer is but small, whereas the scale of good service pay would be, to a great extent, accessible among them. He would reserve retiring pensions for exceptional cases of merit, and for men wounded on service in the field; and he thinks that the Native Non-Commissioned Officer and Soldier might very advantageously be encouraged and rewarded by occasional transfers to Civil employment on the staff of the Police, such as Thanadars, Darogahs, &c., and also to the Military Police, if kept up.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Sir S. Cotton takes a similar view as to the means open to Government for reconciling the Native mind to what he regards as a very necessary measure, and suggests the promotion of deserving men in Police Corps or by Civil employment in addition to retiring pensions and to good service pay, which latter boon he would have granted under the orders of the Commanding Officer.

Major Williams thinks there would be no difficulty in obtaining recruits for a limited Native Army, on the encouragement held out by the plan suggested in question 9, but pensions he would reserve for special cases of distinguished conduct in the field, or a long period of good conduct.

Sir J. Hearsey would have no pensioners, no invalids, but a graduated and liberal scale of good service pay, increasing after five or six years unbroken good conduct. It appears that he contemplates a bonus in money to be occasionally given in lieu of pension.

10.

The Punjab Committee state that the pensions have always been very highly valued, and that one source of discontent was, the difficulty of getting invalided ; still, that the institution, though a man could hardly get pensioned off while life was in his body, was much valued, and that if it did not prevent the recent Mutiny, it was because other questions of more vital moment are concerned. They consider the Mutiny to have been very much among the younger Sepoys. They advert to the practice of the Invaliding Committees in the Bombay Army as much more liberal than in that of Bengal, and deem this one reason of the greater efficiency of the Bombay Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned grades.

Brigadier Steel regards the Invaliding Establishment to have been the main-stay and support of the Regular Native Army, and always to have been looked upon with the greatest veneration.

Others again consider that although the late Mutiny proved that retiring pensions were ineffectual in attaching Native Troops to the service, yet that the "monster deluge" of revolt which swept through the land, and the consequent destruction of confidence in the stability of Government, an impression which caused many men to join in the revolutionary movement, ought not to lead to the abolishment of the Pension Establishment. The late revolt they regard as wholly exceptional, and that, under ordinary circumstances, pensions, either in receipt or expectancy, work a salutary effect. Brigadier Coke, however, makes similar observations with the Punjab Committee,

Brigadier Coke. Colonel K. Young. " Burnt. Sir S. Cotton. Brigadier Farquharson. " Troup. Major General Birch.	that retiring pensions were ineffectual in attaching Native Troops to the service, yet that the "monster deluge" of revolt which swept through the land, and the consequent destruction of confidence in the stability
----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and considers our system of allowing men to serve on for the pension, who are unfit for the service, to be ludicrous, and that every man unfit for the service up to 15 and 20 years should be paid up and discharged, provided his incapacity does not arise from wounds; and he adds, that if all Soldiers who were unfit for the service up to 15 years were weeded out of the Corps, it would save much malingering, and reduce the Pension Establishment to a great extent.

The reply of the Commander-in-Chief to this question is,—“No, not at all; the idea always previously entertained that the pensions ensured the loyalty of the Army has proved to be utterly fallacious. Men who had just obtained pensions at the time of the Mutiny, and could in no way be affected by the greased ‘cartridge question’ at once joined the rebel ranks. The number of pensioners that have come forward to support us is believed to be very small.”

The Oude Committee, Sir J. Hearsey, Sir J. Hope Grant, and Major Williams, also consider that retiring pensions have failed to attach Native Troops to the British service.

11.

In reply to this question the Punjaub Committee say,—“Certainly, but we wish here earnestly to urge upon Government that, to select Native Officers for merit, and keep them meritorious, the European Officers themselves must be selected and efficient. A bad European Officer cannot work a system of merit. He would soon spoil the best Native Officer in the world, and the more these questions of Army Reform are thought over, the more clearly will it be seen that the educating of the European Officer lies at the root of the matter.

Those who advocate the discontinuance of the grades of
 Sir J. Hearsey. Native Commissioned Officers state, that
 Brigadier Troup. if retained, merit and efficiency should rule
 Major Williams. promotion.

Of those who are in favor of maintaining Native Commissioned Officers, Brigadier Coke and Colonel K. Young are for merit, efficiency and gallantry in the field ruling promotion; both Officers would make the Commanding Officer the sole Judge, considering him the most deeply interested in having efficient Officers, and that, if himself qualified for his position, no one else is so fit to decide,—and that, if not fit for his position, he should be removed summarily.

Brigadier Coke remarks that he would not be too greedy to promote to the Non-Commissioned grade from juniors if the seniors are able-bodied men and of good courage; it tends with the Nor-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

thern Soldiers, who are jealous of their name and character, to disgust them with the service, and by this means many valuable Soldiers are lost to the State.

Colonel Burn's opinion is analogous to Brigadier Coke's, for he states that, "If promotion to the Native Commissioned grade is to continue as hitherto by advancement from the Ranks, it ought to be by selection from the Non-Commissioned grades. Once a Commissioned Officer, the promotions ought to be made by seniority, except for some very sufficient cause it be found necessary to pass a man over in promotion, or to promote a junior for some good or gallant act."

Brigadier Steel would have a test adopted, and failure in any such test as indicating a want of sufficient qualification to exclude from promotion, but for any particular good conduct he would always grant promotion.

Brigadier Farquharson would make merit and efficiency the rule, but in the promotion of Native Non-Commissioned Officers to the Commissioned grade, he considers that seniority should not entirely be overlooked.

Major General Birch also thinks that promotion for merit and efficiency should be the great object, but not the only one, as seniority can never be justly disregarded in toto, except when unsupported by other claims, when it should be so without hesitation.

The Oude Committee are decidedly in favor of promotion for merit and efficiency.

The Commander-in-Chief gives the following answer to the question:—"It is very doubtful if this is advisable. From all I have gathered from Officers of experience in the Company's Service, we do not know the Natives sufficiently, and are more likely to promote a smart rascal than a good reliable Soldier."

"The promotion should be seniority to a certain extent; that is, the senior fit for promotion should be taken, and only occasionally for great merit or for distinguished gallantry should a Sepoy far down the list be advanced."

12, 13.

The Punjaub Committee advise, if as they advocate a system of pensions for Native Troops be maintained, that a Committee of selected Officers be assembled, to go carefully into the details, having as a preliminary laid before them the actual charge to the State the ratio in which it had annually accumulated, and the disproportion, or otherwise, to the object in view, and to revenues of India of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the present system and scale of pensions. The Punjab Committee then proceed to remark upon some inequalities in the rates of pensions, to Regulars and Irregulars, and make suggestions with the view of rendering the rates more equitable, and also with the view of removing some restrictions which work prejudicially to the Public Service. On the subject of family pensions they recommend that the principles of bounties should be as largely substituted for that of annuities as possible, pointing out that, if fixed on the principle of Life Insurance, it should be no loss to Government; the aggregate amount would be a saving of machinery and a bar against frauds so largely practised. They then proceed to the suggestion regarding graduated scales of pay in every rank of the Native Army, as calculated to excite emulation, ambition and satisfaction, and as being consonant with the practice of Runjeet Sing in the Seikh Army, and more or less not very systematically in the armies of most Asiatic rulers. The Committee base the proposition on the fact that a recruit cannot be worth as much as a veteran Soldier, and that no good purpose is answered by putting them on a level as to pay. The Committee also advert to the rates of pay and pensions of Native Doctors, which, in proportion to the outlay of time and industry on their education and the importance of their duties, the Committee deem unaccountably and unreasonably low; observing that it does not do to raise men's intellectual standard, and to keep them down in the social scale, that the sense of justice and of power alike rebel against such a course, and that in the late crisis it has been remarkable how active the Native Doctors have been against us, having been the very brains of the Mutiny in many Regiments and Stations, a fact which the Committee attribute to the feeling above described.

Upon the subject of pensions the opinion of Colonel K. Young, a wholly independent authority, is in close accordance with that of the Punjab Committee. He observes that "the system of pensions in operation in the Bengal Army should undergo a searching examination before anything is decided on the subject, and it should be compared with the system prevailing in the Presidencies of Madras and Bombay. I know nothing of the former, but in the latter it is understood to be the practice to invalid in the Native Army men comparatively young in age and constitution, and would be certain of being rejected, if sent up before an Invaliding Committee in Bengal; no doubt the pension list in the Bombay Presidency is proportionably much larger than in Bengal, but the Bombay system is, in my opinion, the correct one, and I may add also, that it is actually the cheaper of the two, for in Bengal the worn-out men so frequently seen in our ranks, are in fact Pensioners, and receiving a higher rate of pay than they would if invalided.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

It is true the amount paid them does not appear under the head of pension, but it ought to be so included whenever pay is given to men unable to do longer service. It would be better far to decrease the strength of your Army than to keep ineffectives in it."

Sir S. Cotton considers that, as the Native Army will now be considerably reduced, the system of pensions might be maintained with advantage, as the boon is doubtless highly esteemed by the Native Soldiers.

Those who would modify the system of pensions are numerous ;

Brigadier Steel.

" Farquharson.

Sir J. Hope Grant.

ORDRE COMMITTEE.

Major Williams.

some, like the Punjaub Committee, admit that the present system has been greatly abused, and that it requires improvement, suggesting the substitution of a bonus

when practicable.

Major General Birch observes that the present pension system must needs be religiously kept up in favor of those who are now in the Native Army, and that it could not be at once swept away without a breach of faith ; but in the case of men newly enlisting, he would abolish pensions, except as rewards for merit and for providing maintenance for men wounded in action, and for their kins, he also remarks upon the necessity of bringing within the bounds the Order of Merit and the Order of British India, both of which, during the late revolt, have been conferred in a manner very different from what their respective rules warranted. Brigadier Troup would also prospectively abolish the existing pension system.

The system proposed by the Commander-in-Chief is different from all the preceding ones. His Excellency recommends that men should be enlisted for a certain number of years, ten or twelve say, and that only good and fit men should be allowed to remain above that period, and then as a favor. That the men thus allowed to remain (who should be limited) should be then re-enlisted for ten years more, and so on. After twenty-two years service, if not allowed to re-enlist, owing to physical unfitness or otherwise, and conduct had been uniformly good, a trifling pension to be given after thirty years service. A well-conducted man might claim pension. His Excellency thinks that some such system would encourage the men to good conduct, expedite promotion, and remove the great evil of aged Non-Commissioned Officers.

None of the authorities to whom questions have been forwarded, are in a position to state what charge on the Finances of the State is due to the pensions of Native Officers and men of the Bengal Army.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

The Punjab Committee consider the Native Officers of the late Bengal Army, not to have been fit, and that the whole system was a farce.

“The Native Members, as a rule, were guided by the European Superintending Officer, and then went out and told the prisoners they were very sorry for the sentence, but could not help it. Native Officers selected by merit and not by seniority would be quite qualified to sit, and if only to keep up their dignity, we would advocate their sitting on District Court Martial, Regimental Courts being abolished.”

The Committee pronounce the Native Officers of the Punjab Irregular Force as being quite fit eventually to take part in Courts Martial, and to pass judgment on most cases brought before them; but from want of moral resolution, prove to give up their own judgment to that of their European superiors.

On this important question there seems much general unanimity of opinion, and it seems advisable to give in *extenso* those of Officers of so much practical experience as Major General Birch and Colonel Keith Young. The reply of the former Officer is as follows :

“No, the great majority are quite unfit to do so, but then this is certainly owing in part to their not comprehending our Military jurisprudence. On the whole, however, and taking into consideration the weighing of cases on their merits rather than particulars of our system, I think the Native Officers, with few exceptions, quite unfit to sit at Courts Martial. I say thus after having had an experience of 11 years as a practising Judge Advocate, and having met on Courts Martial duty the Native Officers of certainly the larger half of the Regiments in the service. But I have met with occasional splendid exceptions, men of very superior intelligence.

“Native Commissioned Officers are of use at a Court Martial in sifting the particulars of the case under trial, but this I think is all. They have a voice in the verdict, but as regards the sentence, they are mostly guided altogether by the European Officers superintending the proceedings, and it is perhaps as well that it should be so, their ideas and ours of the punishments required to maintain discipline being very different. I remember some years ago, when conducting the proceedings of a Native general Court Martial upon the trial of a Sepoy charged with wounding a British Officer at Loodianah, that after the man was declared guilty, and the sentence

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

came under the consideration of the Court, the first Native Officer gave his opinion that a month or six weeks' imprisonment in the Quarter Guard would be a sufficient punishment. The matter was argued for some time, and a sentence of death was at last decided upon; and the man was executed. But it was a long time before the Court arrived at this decision; and had they been left to themselves, it is possible enough that the punishment might have been, as originally proposed, a few weeks' imprisonment in the Quarter Guard.

"I should see no objection to Native Officers sitting on Courts Martial, so long as they are under proper control."

The Commander-in-Chief pronounces the Native Commissioned

Sir J. Hearsey.
 Oude Committee.
 Sir J. Hope Grant.
 Sir S. Cotton.
 Brigadier Troup.
 " Farquharson.
 " Steel.
 " Coke.
 Major Williams.

Officers as generally not fit to take part in Courts Martial; and as will be seen by the marginal names, many concur in the same view. Sir J. Hearsey designates a Native Court Martial a farce. The superintending Officer and the Interpreter

trying the offenders, whilst the Native Officers are often asleep or dosing. Brigadier Steel considers them inclined to severity in cases of disrespect to their own order, but reluctant to punish Brahmins. He thinks they may sometimes prove a screen to the European Officer from the revenge of a culprit. Brigadier Farquharson says they either intrigue before hand or leave the trial to the superintending Officer. Brigadier Coke would, as before stated in the replies on Military Code and Rules of Discipline, have no Courts Martial in the Native Army.

Colonel Burn takes a more favorable view. He says the questions brought before a Court Martial are generally very simple, and have been dealt with by the Native Officers in a satisfactory manner under the guidance of the European superintending Officer. He remarks that one advantage of a Native Court is, that they thoroughly understand the Native witnesses.

15.

The reply of the Commander-in-Chief is, that Native Officers are not generally on a par with European Sergeants and Corporals in professional intelligence and efficiency, but that the latter are usually in the very flower of life, whereas the Native Officers are usually very old and worn-out.

Most of the authorities consulted are of a similar opinion,

Major General Birch.
 Sir J. Hope Grant.
 Sir J. Hearsey.
 Sir S. Cotton.
 Oude Committee.
 Brigadier Farquharson.
 " Steel.
 " Troup.
 Colonel K. Young.
 " Burn.
 Major Williams.

deeming the Native Officer not on a par but inferior. Speaking generally, Sir J. Hope Grant remarks that except in few instances, they cannot be; and Major General Birch, though he concurs in the generality of Native Officers being certainly not on a par, says that some of

them are fully equal to the European Sergeants and Corporals.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Brigadier Coke is of opinion that taking efficient Native Officers and efficient Sergeants, the former are infinitely superior in efficiency and intelligence in the Command of Native Soldiers, and that inefficient men of both classes are equally useless.

The Punjab Committee observe that Native Commissioned Officers promoted by seniority and worn-out, cannot be compared with European Sergeants and Corporals selected for smartness, without reference to seniority, particularly if these remain with their own Regiments under strict discipline and among their own countrymen, but that European Non-Commissioned Officers transferred to a Native Regiment are so circumstanced that their smartness and professional intelligence lose more than half its value for their inability to impart it, that knowing little or nothing of the language or feelings of the men, and failing to explain themselves, they become violent and rough, irritating the Sepoy with Native abuses, of which they know not the meaning, and having no longer a rigid discipline to retain them, being, to a great extent, their own masters, they fall off. The Committee however is of opinion that taking the best instances of European Non-Commissioned Officers, they have still no hesitation in saying that they can never be equally useful to the Commanding Officer in managing Native Soldiers as selected Native Commissioned Officers.

16.

The Punjab Committee advocate the Punjab Irregular system, which is the third organization enumerated in the question, to secure efficiency in Commanding Officers; they would establish the rule that, on obtaining the rank of Regimental Major, an Officer should vacate the command unless invited by Government to remain.

The Oude Committee, Sir J. Hope Grant, Brigadier Farquharson, Major Williams and Colonel K. Young, also advocate the Irregular Corps organization; but the last-mentioned Officer would have a slight addition of European Officers.

Major General Birch proposes that the Military Corps should be of two kinds, Regular and Irregular, the former Officered according to the second, and the Irregulars according to the third mode of organization:

Sir J. Hearsey, Sir S. Cotton and Brigadier Troup are in favor of the second mode of organization. Both Sir J. Hearsey and Brigadier Troup propose having, besides the usual complement of European Commissioned Officers to each Company, a couple of European Non-Commissioned Officers in addition. Brigadier Troup remarks that, "unless organized in this way, if ever called

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“upon to act against a disciplined enemy, instead of being of any
“use as Soldiers, they will become both a dangerous undisciplined
“and disgraceful rabble. In my opinion Infantry Soldiers, but more
“particularly Native ones, cannot have too much European super-
“vision to render them efficient; and if the Military Corps are to
“be kept separate from the Police ones, and not broken up and
“detailed in small parties all over the country on Police duties,
“far removed from the eye of the European Officer, sometimes for
“several months together, as used to be the case; if pains were taken
“in the recruiting and training, I will venture to say, the British
“Soldier excepted, they will be equal to any in the world.”

The Commander-in-Chief remarks that the Punjaub organization for Military Corps answers well, but that more European Officers than four are needed, and that on service the Commanding Officers, Punjaub Regiments generally, apply for others to be attached. His Excellency considers that there should not be less than eight European Officers *present* with a Corps of Infantry, and points out that it is often absolutely necessary that detachments of a Troop or Company should have a European Officer.

Brigadier Steel advocates the first mode of organization, *viz.*, that Regular Corps of Native Infantry be fully Officered both with European and Native Commissioned Officers, and he is of opinion that Corps of Regular Native Infantry should be treated as a superior class to those of Irregular Corps or Police, in both rank and pay; as for local service the same material can be obtained at a less cost.

Colonel Burn proposes to re-organize the Infantry of the Bengal Army in a manner which embraces a Police Force; “the
“European Infantry to consist of twenty Regiments organized in
“the same manner as the existing European Corps.”

“The Native Army to consist of forty Regiments of two
“Battalions each. These forty Corps to be Officered as at present;
“the first Battalion to be the active or service Battalion, and the
“second to be employed on Police duties.”

“Recruiting to be confined to the 1st Battalion, and the 2nd
“to be completed as vacancies occur, by drafts of the oldest Soldiers
“from the first Battalion. The men of the first Battalion would
“thus be young and active, and fit for any duty. The 2nd
“Battalion would be composed of old Soldiers, well trained for the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ duties of a Military Police. Of the 40 Regiments I would propose
“ to form—

- 15 of Seikhs.
- 5 of Punjabee Mahomedans.
- 10 of Oude-men, Hindoos and Mahomedans.
- 5 of Behar-men, Hindoos and Mahomedans.
- 5 of other Classes. .

—
“ Total ... 40
—

“ Besides these the Goorkhas must be kept up as at present
“ in distinct Regiments, and located in the Hills. If this useful
“ body of men could be increased, a few more Regiments might
“ be added to the army with great advantage to the State.”

“ We should thus have for the new Army as compared with
“ the old—

	OLD ARMY.	NEW ARMY.
“ Europeans,.....	3	20
“ Native Regiments(Regulars), ...	74	40
“ Ditto Police	0	40
“ Irregular Corps that have mutinied or been disarmed	24	0
	—	—
	101	100
	—	—

“ The Punjab Irregular Force, and all Local Corps that have
“ not been disarmed, to be maintained as at present.”

“ The forty Native Regiments to be officered as at present,
“ and the Officers to be available for duty with either Battalion.
“ Those attached to the second Battalion to be limited to—

- A Commandant,
- A Second in Command, and
- An Adjutant.

“ With Staff salaries as at present in Irregular Corps.

“ The 1st or service Battalion to be always fully officered and
“ kept in the highest state of discipline.”

He then remarks that it must not be argued from the good
service rendered during the late crisis by Irregular Corps with
few Officers, that they are more efficient on service than Regular
Corps with a full complement of European Officers; that the Irre-
gular Corps at Delhi and Lucknow were glad to have an addition;
that out of 14 Officers with the 4 Punjab Regiments before Luck-
now, 12 were wounded, and that the Sirmoor Battalion, the Guides

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and the 1st Punjaub Infantry suffered severely in Officers before Delhi; that even with one or two European Corps the want of Officers was greatly felt at Delhi, and not to the men satisfactorily remedied by the appointment of what the men called "Sepoy Officers" to do duty with them, as they prefer their own Officers.

Colonel Berkley advocates auxiliary Battalions attached to each European Corps, officered on the Irregular of No. 3 system.

17.

The Punjaub Committee reply, one European and one Native Officer to each Battalion, and one Soubadar and one Jemadar to each Company, as in the Punjaub Police.

The Oude Committee propose for the Oude Police—

- 1 Chief of Police.
- 1 Assistant Ditto.
- 4 Divisional Commandants.
- 4 Ditto 2nd in Command.
- 8 District Commandants.
- 8 Ditto Adjutants.

The Commander-in-Chief considers that a Commandant and Adjutant should be sufficient European officers for a Police Corps, with the usual proportion of native officers to have different designations to grades in the army.

Colonel K. Young would officer Police Corps similarly with Irregular Corps, but with fewer European Officers, and the Commanding Officer supreme. So also Brigadier Farquharson, who would have a Commandant and Deputy Commandant with Native Commissioned Officers as in Regiments, but on less pay, with the addition of a Native Commandant and an Adjutant with superior allowances; appointments to be granted to men or Native Officers who distinguished themselves in the Military as well as in the Police Force.

Major Williams observes, adverting evidently to the Police of the N. W. Provinces, that "whilst the Police take all Civil and Military duties, a full complement of Officers and men are needed. Divisional Police Battalions of Horse and Foot, consisting of 2,000 to 2,500 according to the respective wants of districts, with 12 European Officers, have sufficed to restore order, peace, and tranquillity; once re-established, the number of Officers and men can be somewhat reduced."

Major General Birch suggests the employment of unattached Commissariat Officers with the Police as much as possible, as also of Uncovenanted persons of the respectable classes, and that Native Commissioned Officers be appointed as in the Irregular Corps.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Sir S. Cotton on the proviso, that the people of the country are disarmed, would Officer Police Corps by Natives as fully efficient to carry on Police duties and not dangerous from their command being only over Police-men armed with swords.

Brigadier Troup on the other hand would have no Native Commissioned Officers with Police Corps, but a European Commandant, 2nd in command, Adjutant, Surgeon, two European Sergeants and two Corporals, besides the usual number of Native Non-Commissioned Officers to each Company. He observes, "surely after the fearful warning we have had, it would be needless for me to press upon my superiors the necessity there is for an extended European supervision throughout the length and breadth of the land, for they may rest assured that no native, of whatever rank, is worthy of trust without it."

18.

The Punjaub Committee say in reply—"certainly not," and Brigadier Steel the same. The Commander-in-Chief also says, "Naturally not the corps that are required to fight alongside of European Regiments, and to move about India, should be on a more advantageous footing as regards pay, and on an equal footing at least as respects proportion of Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers with Police Corps. In those of the latter now raising, it is believed the Sepoy receives as much as in the Regular Army or the Punjaub Corps; of course men will prefer the Police for many reasons." Sir J. Hope Grant also thinks that the Regular would not, under the supposed circumstances, prove as popular as the Irregular and Police Service. Brigadier Troup, however, thinks it would be so, but he considers it most objectionable, and very impolitic that Soldiers being paid by and serving the same Government should have such a difference in their organization. Major General Birch also thinks that the Regular would be as popular as the Irregular and Police Service under the supposed conditions, but if it were doubtful, he deems it another reason for not keeping up Military Police Corps.

Colonel Burn is of opinion that whichever system is adopted, the Recruits will follow their relatives wherever they may be serving; and he does not think that the distinction, if made, of having no Native Commissioned Officers in the Regular Regiments, would render them less popular than Police Corps organized on a different system.

19.

All those consulted concur in stating that there are no such tests. Brigadier Coke deems reading and writing no test of efficiency, and would not insist on it as a qualification for admission. The Punjaub Committee observe that when the natives generally are educated, this may be done in Police Corps, that at present it

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

is found impracticable even in Irregular Infantry Corps, and they note that the Military Police had no detective duties.

20.

The Commander-in-Chief's reply is, "The distinct organization I believe to have been a benefit: if we had possessed *one* Army in 1857, instead of three (or with the Punjab we may say four) Armies, we should have lost India." The concurrence is very general; the results have proved very favorable to our power, and Sir J. Hope Grant would keep not only the three Presidencies but the Punjab, distinct.

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.
 Oude Ditto.
 Sir J. Hearsay.
 Brigadier Steel.
 " Farquharson.
 " Coke
 Colonel K. Young.
 " Burn.
 Major Williams.

we had possessed *one* Army in 1857, instead of three (or with the Punjab we may say four) Armies, we should have lost India." The concurrence is very general; the results have proved very favorable to our power, and Sir J. Hope Grant would keep not only the three Presidencies but the Punjab, distinct.

Sir S. Cotton takes a modified view. He regards the distinct nature of the Army of the three Presidencies as one of the means which checked the spread of the Mutiny, but he ascribes this result solely to the difference of races, and not to distinct organization or system; advancing in support and proof of this opinion the many Bombay Regiments which have shewn disaffection, and in which men were enlisted from the same class which furnished the mutinous Bengal Sepoy.

Major General Birch does not think there is any such difference of system, regulation and component races respectively in the three Native Armies as to admit of any reply being given to this question. The prestige of the British Soldiery has preserved our power in India, and not the Native Army in any considerable degree.

Brigadier Troup is of opinion that the difference of the three Armies has not proved favorable to our power in India.

21.

In reply to this question the Commander-in-Chief observes that "to amalgamate or to assimilate the three Armies, would, I believe, be dangerous and impolitic. A craving for uniformity has already done much mischief in the Native Army. What seems to be wanted is not uniformity but dissimilarity. We should therefore have Corps of all races, and under different systems, but all governed by a few broad General Rules."

Those who are opposed to assimilation and amalgamation of the three Armies of the three Presidencies, and in favor of the maintenance of a distinctness of system, organization, and composition, are noted in the margin. The Oude Committee regard assimilation as destructive, and Major General Birch observes that "the entire separation of the three Native Armies has been of

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.
 Oude Ditto.
 Sir J. Hearsay.
 Major General Birch.
 Brigadier Farquharson.
 " Steel.
 " Coke.
 Colonel Burn.
 " K. Young.
 Major Williams.

the three Armies of the three Presidencies, and in favor of the maintenance of a distinctness of system, organization, and composition, are noted in the margin. The Oude Committee regard assimilation as destructive, and Major General Birch observes that "the entire separation of the three Native Armies has been of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

"the most important use to us during the late Mutinies. We have had "the Native Troops of Madras and Bombay in antagonism with the "mutineers and rebels in Bengal, which, but for the separation of the "three Armies might not have been." He points out the impracticability of sending Native Regiments to serve for any length of time in other Presidencies; that distance, family considerations, and perhaps climate, militate against such a measure. He would leave the administration of each Army to the discretion of its own separate Government, and keep both the European Officers and their men distinct from the Native Troops of other Presidencies.

Those who are in favor of assimilating the three Armies as much as possible, are Sir S. Cotton, Sir J. Hope Grant, Colonel Berkely and Brigadier Troup. The latter notes that the amalgamation of the three Armies would be very difficult, if not impossible, but would have every endeavor made to assimilate the system, organization, and composition of all three Armies. Colonel Berkely would amalgamate the three Armies under the title of the Royal Indian Army, under one Commander-in-Chief, and assimilate and simplify the working of Corps and Departments. He would divide the Army into three or four Corps and remarks that local circumstances might cause a difference in the organization and composition of Regiments.

Sir J. Hope Grant would not acknowledge caste in any of the three Armies, and would assimilate their system as much as possible.

1,2,3,4,6.

Sir W. Mansfield states that the system of promotion is based on seniority, he does not qualify this answer at all. That the Native Officers are not generally intelligent, useful, and efficient, that their acquirements are not usually of a higher grade than those of the men, that there is no test previous to promotion, and that the Native Officers have not given timely information, or been of use to the European Officers in checking mutiny.

7,8,9.

He considers that the grades of Commissioned Officers must be kept up, if it be only out of regard for the Madras and Bombay Armies; that the substitution of an European Sergeant and Corporal to each Company in lieu of its Native Officers is not advisable, and that though a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pension, as a compensating encouragement might probably be worked out, it would never atone for the loss of promotion and power.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10,12.

He states that retiring pensions appear not to have proved effectual during the last year in attaching the Native Troops to the service, though great faith used to be placed in the virtue of pensions. He would abolish the system of pensions as now in force.

**11.
14,15.**

He would make merit the rule of promotion.

He states that Native Officers are always led by the Judge Advocate General or the Superintending Officer at Courts Martial, and that their professional intelligence and efficiency, as compared with European Sergeants and Corporals, is a relative point depending on the man, and not on the class.

16,17.

He looks on the Irregular system as the best for separate Corps maintained for Military and Police purposes, but he would have one Officer to each Company; the presence of many Officers, he observes, is imperative in war. He would have them fully officered with Native Commissioned grades, as well as with European Officers, and not officered with Europeans to the exclusion of Native Officers. The Police Corps he would Officer, as at present in the Punjaub, where however there is but one European Officer, but he would have three to each Battalion.

18.

He considers it contrary to human nature that, with good service pay and pension only as incitements to good conduct, but with the Commissioned grade abolished in the Regular Regiments, while these grades are preserved in Irregular and Police Corps, the Regular service should be as popular as the Irregular and the Police:

20, 21.

He observes that the last year proves the advantage to our power in India from the distinct organization and difference of system, regulations, and component races in the three Native Armies. He would keep the three Armies separate, and maintain every marked difference of system, and carefully foster all local distinctions.



No. III. ORGANIZATION, PROMOTIONS AND REWARDS.

INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

1. In the Native Regiments of _____ what is the system of promotion ; is it based on merit alone, or seniority alone, or on merit and seniority combined ?

2. Are the Native Officers of the _____ Infantry of _____ generally intelligent, useful and efficient ?

3. Are their acquirements usually of a higher grade than those of the men from amongst whom they have risen ?

4. Is there any test or examination prior to promotion to a Commissioned grade or in promotion from one Commissioned grade to another ?

5. Does the intervention of the Native Officers, between the European Officers, and their Men, weaken the influence of the European Officers ?

Does a full complement of the European militate against the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officer ?

6. Has it been found in the _____ that on the occurrence of mutinies the Native Officers have given timely information, or been of any use in aiding the European Officers to check mutiny ? Have the Native Officers sided with the mutineers or with the European Officers ?

7. Should the grades of Native Commissioned Officers be continued, or discontinued in _____ ?

8. Is the substitution of a European Serjeant and Corporal to each Company of a Native Regiment in lieu of its Native Officers advisable ?

9. If the abolition of the grade of Native Commissioned Officers be advisable, and the prospect of distinction and emolument thus closed to the Native Soldier, would a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions, claimable after specified periods of services, be a compensating encouragement, and as efficacious as the Commissioned grades ?

10. Have retiring pensions proved effectual in attaching the Native Troops to the British Service ?

11. Should not the system of promotion, generally by seniority, to the grades of Native Commissioned Officers, (if these are retained) be altered, and promotion for merit and efficiency be the rule ?

12. Should the system of pensions, as now in force by Regulation, be maintained, or modified, or prospectively abolished ?

13. What is the charge to the State of Military pensions to Native Officers and Men of the ?

14. Are Native Commissioned Officers generally fit to take part in Courts Martial ?

15. Are Native Commissioned Officers on a par with European Serjeants and Corporals in professional intelligence and efficiency ?

16. If separate Corps are to be maintained for Military and Police purposes, what will be the best organization for the Military Corps ?

1st.—Should they be fully officered with Native Commissioned grades as well as with European Officers, or,

2nd.—Fully officered with European, but have no Native Commissioned grades, or,

3rd.—Be officered like Irregular Corps, *viz.*, have the full complement of Native Commissioned Officers, with but a few European Officers ?

17. How should the Police Corps be officered, the question applying both to European and Native Commissioned grades ?

18. If Irregular Corps and Police Corps have Native Commissioned Officers, and Regular Corps have no Native Commissioned Officers, but only good service pay and pensions as an incitement to good conduct and efficiency, will the higher pay to Privates and Non-Commissioned Officers suffice to render the Regular as popular as the Irregular and Police Corps, and to draw as good recruits ?

19. In Police Corps, is there, on first admission, any test or examination as to capabilities of reading and writing, or are qualifications tested on promotion to Non-Commissioned grades, or on promotion to Commissioned grades ?

20. Has the distinct organization and the difference of system, regulations and component races in the three Native Armies, proved favorable to our power, in India ?

21. Should a certain degree of distinctness of system, organization and composition, according to the views of separate Governments, to time and to local circumstances, be allowed, or should endeavours be made to assimilate or even to amalgamate the three Armies?

THE RIGHT HONORABLE LORD HARRIS, GOVERNOR OF FORT ST. GEORGE.

I may make the same statement of general concurrence respecting the questions in this list.

See his reply under Military Code and Rules of Discipline, 2nd part, Infantry.

HIS EXCY. GENL. RIGHT HON'BLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I am informed, and can also state from my own knowledge, that promotions went much by seniority, but sometimes men were promoted out of their turn for smartness, gallantry, &c. &c. In some Corps Commanding Officers promoted out of turn more than in others. A good deal had been done at Head Quarters, of late years, to encourage promotion by seniority, save in cases where the men were disreputable or very incompetent. There was an old order that men should not be promoted who could not read and write.

This in most cases used to be a dead letter, but was very generally enforced after the publication of the new Military Regulations in 1855, and occasioned much dissatisfaction amongst men who had expected promotion, and were thus suddenly superseded owing to the revival of this rule.

2.

Not generally so ; there are exceptions, however.

3.

I am informed that their qualifications originally were identical, but having been Non-Commissioned Officers for several years before obtaining Commissions, they usually have learned more of their duty than they knew when Sepoys, and many of them can drill a Company very well. This I can state from my own observations.

4.

None.

5.

Not necessarily so to both questions.

6.

No ; from all information I have obtained, the Native Officers have gone with the men.

7.

Must be continued, unless the number of European Officers present with the Native Corps is to be immensely increased, which seems neither possible nor desirable.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8.

I should say this would be inexpedient.

9.

The abolition of the grade of Native Officer does not seem advisable ; but a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pension, claimable after specified periods as a compensating encouragement, would, in my opinion, be injudicious. Men would cling on when past work to obtain higher pensions, and experience shows that Commanding Officers will not always prevent this.

10.

Not at all. The idea always previously entertained, that the pensions ensured the loyalty of the Army, has proved to be utterly fallacious. Men who had just obtained pensions at the time of the mutiny, and could in no way be affected by the "greased cartridge," at once joined the rebel ranks. The number of pensioners that have come forward to support us is believed to be very small.

11.

It is very doubtful if this is advisable.

From all I have gathered from Officers of experience in the Company's Service, we do not know the Natives sufficiently, and are more likely to promote a smart rascal than a good reliable Soldier. The promotion should be by seniority to a certain extent, that is, the senior fit for promotion should be taken, and only occasionally for great merit or for distinguished gallantry should a Sepoy far down the list be advanced.

12.

The system of pensions should be altogether modified. I would recommend that men should be enlisted for a certain number of years, ten or twelve say, and only those who were considered good men in every way should be allowed to remain beyond that period, and then as a favor ; these, of course, would be the only men who would eventually obtain pensions ; even the men who were allowed to remain (who should be limited) should be only re-enlisted for ten years more, and so on ; after twenty-two years' service, if a man was not allowed to re-enlist (owing to physical unfitness or otherwise) and his conduct had been good throughout his service, a trifling pension might be given ; after twenty years' service, a well conducted man might claim a pension ; some such system would make the men anxious to conduct themselves well, and would make promotion tolerably rapid, thereby doing away with the great evil of aged Non-Commissioned Officers.

13.

I have no idea.

14.

Generally not.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

15.

Generally not; but the Native Commissioned Officers are usually very old and worn out. European Serjeants and Corporals are usually in the very flower of life.

16.

The Punjab organization for Military Corps answers well; but more European Officers than four are needed, and on service, Commanding Officers of these Regiments generally apply for others to be attached. There should not be less than eight European Officers *present* with a Corps of Infantry. It is often absolutely necessary that Detachments of a Troop or Company should have a European Officer.

I. A full proportion of Native Officers; European Officers as above.

II. If on the Punjab system, need not be fully officered by European Officers, but should have full proportion of Native Officers. If on the old regular system, must have full proportion of European Officers (at least one a Company besides Staff) besides Native Officers.

III. Already answered.

17.

A Commandant and Adjutant should be sufficient. European Officers for a Police Corps, with the usual proportion of Native Officers allowed to Irregular Infantry and Cavalry.

18.

Materially not; the Corps that are required to fight alongside of European Regiments, and to move about India, should be on a more advantageous footing as regards pay, and on an equal footing at least as respects proportion of Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers with Police Corps. In these, of the latter now raising, it is believed the Sepoys receive as much as in the Regular Army or the Punjab Corps. Of course men will prefer the Police for many reasons.

19.

I have no means of knowing.

20.

The distinct organization I believe to have been a benefit; if we had possessed one Army in 1857, instead of three (or with the Punjab we may say four) Armies, we should have lost India.

21.

To amalgamate or to assimilate the three Armies would, I believe, be dangerous and impolitic; a craving for uniformity has already done much mischief in the Native Army. We should therefore have Corps of all races and under different systems, but all governed by a few broad general rules.

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, G. C. B., K. H., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF,
BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. On merit and seniority combined.
2. I think them generally intelligent for their position, but I doubt their utility. I am opposed to having Native Officers in the Regular Army.
3. Native Officers acquire intelligence and experience from having been previously Havildars and Naicks; but there are many Privates equally intelligent.
4. There is an examination for the grade of Havildars, but having attained that rank, all Non-Commissioned Officers are considered eligible for promotion.
5. In some measure, I think it does. Certainly not, there cannot be too many European Officers.
6. There has been only a very partial mutiny in the Regiments of the Bombay Army. I do not think that the Native Officers did give timely information, and in one Regiment they were, many of them, deeply implicated. Had there been no Native Officers, the mutiny could not have been concealed as it was.
7. If the practice of taking away the European Officers for Civil Staff employ was discontinued (which it ought to be) and the full complement of Officers retained with the Regiment, there would be no necessity for Native Commissioned Officers, and I think it would be desirable that it should be gradually discontinued.
8. If respectable European Non-Commissioned Officers could be obtained, men thoroughly conversant with the colloquial language, one per Company might be more advantageous to discipline than an unsteady European in the position of a Non-Commissioned Officer. I am not inclined to recommend this system to be adopted. The Sepoy makes an excellent Soldier, is active and intelligent, many of them capable of performing any duties up to that of Serjeant or Havildar Major; beyond that he should not be promoted.
9. A gradual scale of good service and retiring pensions would be highly appreciated, and would be efficacious and a compensating encouragement to the deserving Native Non-Commissioned Officer.
10. Most undoubtedly it is what they all look forward to and appreciate.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 11.** This does not apply to the Bombay Army; the promotions are all by selection and merit.
- 12.** The system of pensions should be maintained.
- 14.** I think not; they are greatly influenced by the Superintending Officer in their opinions.
- 15.** They have great professional intelligence, but they have not the efficiency of European Non-Commissioned Officers.
- 16.** As they now are, and full Corps of European Officers and no Native Officers.
2. Fully officered by Europeans; I would do away with Native Officers.
3. I would only have Native Officers in the Irregular Corps, but the Line Regiments should be fully officered by European Officers; but until the practice of taking Officers for the Civil Staff is discontinued (a system fraught with mischief and destruction of discipline,) this can never be the case.
- 17.** By active educated Gentlemen of the Civil Service, or by a separate Corps of Officers for the Police Service.
- 18.** I think so; the men serving generally in the Irregular Corps are a different class of persons.
- 19.** I am not aware that there is.
- 20.** Most favorable; I consider it to have been the saving of India.
- 21.** On no account assimilate or amalgamate the three Armies.

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF,
MADRAS.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** On merit and seniority combined, but by positive merit rather than by mere seniority or length of service.
- 2.** The Native Officers of the Native Infantry of the Madras Army are generally as intelligent, useful and efficient as Native Officers are capable of being made.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

Merit being the principle on which they are selected for promotion, it may be fairly assumed that the acquirements of the Commissioned grades are, to a certain extent, superior to those of their comrades in the ranks.

4.

There are preliminary examinations to promotions in the superior grades tending to qualify for the Commissioned ranks, and every Havildar, on promotion to Jemadar, attends Adjutant's drill, till reported fully acquainted with the duties of his new grade.

There is no test for promotion from one Commissioned grade to another.

5.

The intervention of the Native Officers between the European Officers and their Men cannot weaken the influence of the European Officers if the European Officers do their duty, if they take that interest in their men which a conscientious sense of duty and a determination to maintain his legitimate authority will always dictate to an Officer in Command of a Company, and if they know the names and characters and capacity of their men. If these points are attended to, and in May 1857 I directed that they should be specially reported upon by Inspecting Officers, the influence of the European Officers never will be weakened by the intervention of the Native Officers.

I do not think that a full complement of the European makes either against or in favor of the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officer. I hold that as a general rule it is wholly impossible to make the Native Commissioned Officers professionally efficient, and well it is that such is the case. For my part I do not desire to see Native Officers capable of efficiently exercising even the Command of a Company, much less that of a Regiment or Brigade or Division.

6.

The Native Officers of the Madras Army have, in some instances, but very rarely given timely information and aided their European Officers in checking mutiny and disaffection.* They invariably side ostensibly with the European Officers; but they are known, in some instances, to have secretly encouraged disaffection.

7.

I think it was a great mistake, when originally forming a Native Army, to institute the Native Commissioned grades; but I should consider it a positive breach of good faith, and in the highest degree impolitic and unjust, to discontinue the grades of Native Commissioned Officers in the Madras Native Infantry, who

See annexed Memo: from the Adjutant General of the Army.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

have throughout the late crisis in Bengal maintained an unshaken loyalty to the Government.

8 and 9.

Require no answer, referring to my reply to 7.

10.

Unquestionably, retiring and family pensions have had a great effect in attaching the Native Troops to the British *Service*. The Natives of India do not love us it is true ; but they are keenly alive to their own interests—next to their religion the strongest feeling of their nature, and they well know that under no other Ruler will they enjoy the liberal advantages they receive in the British *Service* ; but this and every other consideration will be cast aside without a moment's hesitation, if (and their fears and suspicion are easily aroused) the idea once takes possession of their minds that there is any intention to subvert or interfere with their religion, their religious prejudices or feelings.

11.

Merit combined with seniority ; but primarily merit governs promotions in the grades of the Native Commissioned Officers in the Madras Army.

12.

The system of pensions, as now in force in the Madras Army, should be maintained inviolate.

13.

I have ascertained from the Military Auditor General, that the aggregate per annum of Military pensions to Native Officers and Men of the entire Native Army of the Madras Presidency, amounts to 13 Lacs and Rupees 23,399-0-10.

14.

I don't think Native Commissioned Officers generally are fit to take part in Courts Martial ; but nevertheless I deprecate their being deprived of the privilege of sitting upon Courts Martial. As I before observed, it is optional with a Native Soldier whether he will be tried by a European or Native Court, and any change is, in my opinion, inadvisable.

15.

In point of *professional* intelligence, and efficiency, the general run of European Serjeants and Corporals are, in my opinion, immeasurably superior to the general run of Native Commissioned Officers.

16.

The existing organization of Military Corps of Native Infantry works well, and should, I think, be maintained as regards the Native grades of the Madras Army. A just proportion of European Officers, who will look upon their Regiment as their home and be content to remain with them, is quite indispensable to the efficiency of the Native Regiment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

If selected solely for superior merit and qualifications, the proportion of European Officers usually attached to the Irregular Corps will be found sufficient ; but if the command and efficiency of a Native Regiment is to be dependent on seniority and mere chance as at present, a full complement of European Officers is absolutely necessary.

17.

Three European Officers will suffice for a Police Corps, and in Police Corps I would have no Native Commissioned Officers. Police Corps are almost entirely new to the Madras Presidency, and there is no breach of faith in organizing them on whatever may be thought the best system.

18.

Were the different organizations indicated in this question adopted, I should expect that Regular Corps would not be by any means so popular a service nor draw such good Regiments as Irregulars and Police Corps.

19.

I cannot answer this question. There is but one Police Corps in this Presidency (the Malabar) and it is exclusively under Civil Authority.

20.

The distinct organization and difference of system and component races in the three Native Armies has, I consider, saved India in the crisis through which we are now passing.

21.

To assimilate, or amalgamate the three *Native* Armies, would be, in my opinion, a most suicidal measure.

So long as each Native Army is under a distinct and separate system and composition, a general combination is little likely to occur ; but amalgamate the three Armies, and in time they will feel that the cause of one is the cause of all, and they may, and most probably would, unite against us in the event of revolt or mutiny taking place on a question, in which all were interested,— religion or pay for instance.

MEMORANDUM FOR HIS EXCELLENCY THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

1. By G. O. G., 6th February 1821, Subadar Sheikh Ismal, of the 1st Battalion 20th Regiment, was granted a palankeen, with an allowance of 70 Rupees per mensem, for *discovering a plot* at Nagpore in 1819.

2. A Subadar named Kissonnass, pensioned from the 4th Cavalry with a palankeen, &c., for previous faithful services, gave information to the Adjutant General, in 1832-33, of the conspiracy at Bangalore.

3. By G. O. G., 28th September 1832, Subadar Major Syed Goffoor, and Subadar Syed Abdool Rymon, both of the 8th Light Cavalry, were rewarded for frustrating the designs of evil-disposed persons, who caused the pollution of a Mosque at Arcot. But it was considered a necessary precaution to transfer Syed Goffoor from his Regiment to the pension establishment, lest any implicated should revenge themselves upon him.

4. In 1837, the Subadar of my Troop gave me the only information that was received in the 6th Regiment Light Cavalry of the intention of the men to resist the order just issued discontinuing the full batta, and of their making the order, although the Regiment had not come under its operation, a subject of formal complaint to the Inspecting General.

5. By G. O. G., 12th April 1842, Subadar Major Shaik Damood, 10th Regiment, and Subadar Major Imam Khan, of the 48th Regiment, with two previously *distinguished Subadars*,* all of whom had honorably exerted themselves during the batta affair at Secunderabad, received special marks of the approbation of Government. The two named *gave information*, as well as assistance, to the Authorities. On the same occasion five Native Officers† of these and Foot Artillery, received special rewards, and one of them, a Jemadar, greatly distinguished himself by his fidelity and in giving *early intimation* of the designs of the disaffected. At the time these events occurred, I was in the Adjutant General's Department, and personally acquainted with the latter individual.

6. In the recent 8th Light Cavalry case, Colonel Anderson, of the 3rd Light Cavalry, was informed by a Native Officer of the latter Corps, that the 8th Regiment had resolved on not embarking for Calcutta except on the old rates of pay and pension, &c., &c.

7. A Trooper of the 8th Light Cavalry, *on the advice* of his father-in-law, a pensioned *Subadar of that Regiment*, also gave intimation to the Adjutant of the designs of the men, and for fear of the consequences declined having his fidelity publicly rewarded.

The above are the only instances I can at present call to mind ; but I doubt not, had I access to the records in my office at the Presidency, I could adduce further instances of fidelity to Government on the part of individual Native Officers of this Army.

(Signed) W. G. WOODS, *Lieut.-Colonel*,

Adjutant General of the Army.

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE ; }
Head Quarters, Ootacamind, }
The 17th July 1858. }

* Pensioned Subadar Shaik Dowell, and Pensioned Subadar Futteh Hamed, Sirdar Bahadour.

† 1 Subadar and 4 Jemadars.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B., CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Seniority.
2. No.
3. No.
4. No.
6. No.
7. Must be continued, if it be only out of regard for the Madras and Bombay Armies.
8. No.
9. A scheme of this sort might probably be worked out ; but it would never atone for the loss of promotion and power.
10. It appears not, from the experience of the last year ; great faith used to be placed on the virtue of pensions.
11. By merit.
12. Abolished.
14. They are always led by the Judge Advocate General or the Superintending Officer.
15. This depends on the man, and not on the class.
16. The Irregular system, but with one Officer to each Company. In war the presence of many Officers is imperative.
1st.—Yes.
2nd.—No.
17. As at present in the Punjab ; but there should be more European Officers, say three to each Battalion.
In the Punjab there is but one I believe.
18. I should think not ; it is contrary to human nature.
20. The last year is the answer to this question.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

21.

Keep the three Armies separate, and maintain every marked difference of system ; all local distinction and difference should be carefully fostered.

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR M. CUBBON, COMMISSIONER OF MYSORE AND COORG.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The system of promotion to the Commissioned ranks is to give due weight to seniority, keeping in view, at the same time, the efficiency required of Native Officers ; but it is not regulated by seniority alone. The promotions to the Non-Commissioned ranks are all made by selection without regard to seniority ; the smartest and best qualified men being selected, care being also taken that a due proportion of the several castes is preserved in these grades.

2.

Under the present system of promotion in the Madras Army, it may be said that all Native Officers are well deserving of their Commissions when they first obtain them ; but doubtless, after some time, some of them abate in zeal and become indolent and merely look for serving their time till they can retire on their pension ; nevertheless, it may also be said that a very good average number of intelligent, useful, and efficient Native Officers is to be found in every Native Regiment in the Service.

3.

As a body, I should say, their acquirements are of a higher grade than those of the men ; there are many whose acquirements are very superior.

4.

There is none.

5.

The influence of the European Officers with their men is not weakened by the intervention of the Native Officers ; I think the contrary is the effect ; neither is the efficiency of the Native Officer affected by a full complement of European Officers.

6.

It has not been found that the Native Officers have given timely information of intended mutiny, although it is impossible that such could have been organized without their participation, active or passive, nor can it be said that the European Officers have been of any use in preventing mutiny, because the intention to mutiny, however well known to the whole Regiment and to the Country at large, has been wrapt in impenetrable concealment from the knowledge of the European Officers. There is a remarkable General

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Order by the Commander-in-Chief, dated the 15th February 1813, on this subject, the private history of which I happen to know, in which nine Native Commissioned Officers and one Non-Commissioned Officer, convicted by a Court Martial, were pardoned by the Commander-in-Chief, not from thorough conviction of their innocence, but for political reasons, while their guilty associates, twenty-seven in number, Non-Commissioned and Privates, were ordered for execution at six several Stations of the Army. Were it not for the fear of being tiresome, I would mention some instances which passed under our observation of a guilty knowledge of serious conspiracy against our rule possessed by the Country in general, and of the secrecy with which public offenders were concealed.

7.

The Native Commissioned Officer should certainly be retained ; the grade is in itself a most useful one, both as regards the discipline and interior economy of Regiments, and as regards public policy, there is no doubt, but that the Native Officer is a great aid to the European Officer of the Company as a channel of communication with his men. If the parade of Native Commissioned Officers were abolished, the Service would be deprived of its only prize, and it would then become most unpopular.

8.

By no means. I fear the conduct and language of these Serjeants and Corporals, generally speaking, would be such as to engender a feeling of disrespect, if not a worse feeling towards them on the part of the men ; there should be no European authority exercised over the Sepoys inferior to that of the Commissioned Officers.

9.

I think no scheme that the financial state of the Empire would ever afford, would compensate for the abolition of the grade of Native Commissioned Officers.

10.

On the Madras side retiring pensions, their punctual payment and their disbursement at the Talook Cutcheries nearest to the homes of the pensioners, have had certainly the effect of rendering the Service popular, not only amongst the recipients themselves, but amongst their neighbours, who are witnesses to the care bestowed by Government on their old Military servants. The pension may be said to be the most powerful link which connects the Native Army with the Government. Great agitation, and I may say positive disaffection, had been caused by some unwise innovations made in the management of the Pension Department, previous to the arrival of Lord Elphinstone as Governor of Madras, and it was the impression amongst the best informed that but for the statesman-like policy of that Nobleman in correcting

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the evil, the general discontent would have resulted in a tremendous explosion.

11.

The present system appears to succeed well in the Madras Army, *viz.*, "promoting for efficiency but occasionally for seniority also." "Always to give the preference to superior qualifications would exclude the fair claims of long and faithful service," but all Regimental promotions should rest entirely in the hands of the Officers Commanding Regiments and Companies. It is possible that this power might occasionally be abused; but no possible abuse could be productive, of so much evil to the cause of discipline and proper feeling as teaching the Troops to look to other quarters for preferment. The material from which Native Officers are made must necessarily be good; as the Non-Commissioned grades are formed of select men, a Private need only have served three years in that rank to become eligible for the grade of Naick or Corporal, so that the rank of Havildar is attainable when a man is still young and active.

12.

Any tampering with the present system of pensions is much to be deprecated as unsettling men's minds, while any reduction might be attended with fatal consequences.

13.

I have not the means of answering this question.

14.

They are generally fit; but on a Court Martial, whether it be Native or European, members are always found who take a more prominent part in the proceedings than some of their colleagues. The results of these tribunals have been fair and successful.

15.

European Serjeants and Corporals are doubtless smarter and better acquainted with the minutiae of drill; but as substitutes for Native Officers in Native Infantry Regiments, they would fall far short of the latter in efficiency and utility, in instructing and drilling and otherwise looking after the men of the Regiment. The professional ability and efficiency of the Native Officers being of a more useful quality for the instruction of the men, and for the maintenance of discipline and interior good order of Native Regiments, I consider them therefore, for their acquirements, superior in professional intelligence and efficiency to European Serjeants and Corporals.

16.

The formation of separate Police Corps should not, in my opinion, cause any change to be made in the present organization of the Military Corps. The latter should be fully officered with European and Native Commissioned Officers, and if it should be found necessary to form Police Corps to any great extent, it might

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

be advisable to increase the number of European Officers in the Regiments of the Line, from whence Officers for the Police Corps must be drafted.

17.

The Police Corps should be officered from the European Officers of the Line Regiment. A Commandant and Adjutant would probably be sufficient ; but as their Officer would most probably be vested with the powers of Joint Magistrates for the Districts in which their Corps is employed, they should be selected with regard to their qualification for that duty. The Police Corps might, on their first formation at least, obtain their Native Commissioned Officers from the Regiments of the Line, from which volunteers might be found for this service on their receiving promotion of one grade in rank. Steady and efficient Non-Commissioned Officers might also be found willing to volunteer for the service, provided their previous service were allowed to count for pension. In this manner a good nucleus might be formed for the organization of every Police Corps.

18.

Certainly not. The abolition of the Native Commissioned grade in the Regular Service must cause its ruin in the estimation of the people.

19.

Police Corps have not yet been formed in the Madras Presidency ; but I should be disposed to advocate the requirement of a certain degree of proficiency in reading and writing the Vernacular of the District in which the Police Corps is employed, to qualify for promotion to the Non-Commissioned grades.

20.

The limitation to the Bengal Army alone of the late lamentable mutiny must be considered as most satisfactory proof in the affirmation.

21.

Recent events have taught us that it is favorable to our power in India to leave the three Armies to the distinct administration of their own Presidencies without attempting to assimilate, much less to amalgamate them.

MAJOR-GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B., SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT,
MILITARY DEPARTMENT.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The Regulations, Section LIV., direct "that in all recommendations for promotion the fullest consideration and attention is invariably to be given to the claim of seniority in every grade where no such disqualifications as want of respectability of cha-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“racter or other equally proper and just cause of objection to the
 “advancement of the seniors shall exist ; and to enable General
 “Officers and Brigadiers to enforce the strictest observance of the
 “Regulations on this subject, Commanding Officers of Corps, in pro-
 “mulgating promotions made by them in Regimental Orders, are
 “required at the same time to publish the names of those passed
 “over and the causes of their supercession. Seniority or length of
 “service do not, however, in any case constitute a claim to promo-
 “tion inspection of past conduct and general qualification, and
 “although they are always to be taken into account, when proceed-
 “ing to selection, yet they are never to be allowed to operate
 “against proved disqualification in other respects.” “Further, not-
 “withstanding that Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers
 “may be passed over on proper grounds, they are to be made to
 “understand that it is still open to them by an improved course
 “of conduct to establish a claim to promotion, and that all such
 “claims, supported by the Commanding Officer, will be duly attend-
 “ed to.”

Such are the safeguards with which the claims of respectable seniority are hedged round.

The practice, however, much more decidedly recognizes the paramount claim of distinguished merit and superior qualification than these Regulations appear to encourage, I speak more especially of the higher grades.

2.

As a class they are extremely inefficient and very useless ; but I have met with very remarkable exceptions.

3.

No, and in many instances they are not to be compared with the men.

4.

No.

5.

This depends very much, I think, on the European Officers themselves, when these take great interest in their men and show it in their conduct towards them, the influence of the Native Officers will be all in the same current, if they are good Native Officers, and will be over-borne if they are bad. When the European Officers take little interest in their Corps, the clever Native Officers will greatly influence the men for good or evil. But there is a large proportion of Native Officers who are mere cyphers.

I do not think a full complement of European Officers necessarily or unavoidably militates against the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officers. It will not affect the case of good Native Officers, and in the case of the bad it will, and just for opposite reasons not affect them, for there is nothing in such men

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6.

In very few cases have the Native Officers given information or been of use to the European Officers in checking mutiny. There is a large proportion of them who have sided with the mutineers, but my belief is that the majority have done so on compulsion. There are numerous instances of their siding with the European Officers.

7.

I think they should be discontinued with special exceptions in the cases of some few who may be reported to have superior qualifications who are now in our Native Regiments; the rest I would pension or discharge with gratuity.

8.

I think this highly desirable, but it is indispensable that these Non-Commissioned Officers should speak the Hindoostanee fluently, and the occurrence of drunkenness amongst them should be invariably punished by removal. I would rather say two Serjeants than one Serjeant and one Corporal, because the Havildars have the grade of Serjeants, and it would be anomalous that in the absence of the Serjeant, a Corporal should command Havildars. It is indispensable that all Natives in a Company should be commanded by any European attached to it.

9.

Yes, I think it would, for the proportion of men who rise eventually to the grade of Commissioned Officer is but small, whereas the scale of good service pay would be, to a great extent, accessible among them. I would not hold out retiring pensions except in rare cases of merit and for men wounded on service in the field. I think the Native Non-Commissioned Officer or Soldier might very advantageously be encouraged and rewarded by occasional transfer to Civil employment on the Staff of the Police, such as Thanadars, Darogahs, &c., and if the Military Police is kept up they might be transferred in good places to that body as a reward.

10.

I have no doubt that retiring pensions do strongly attach the Native Troops to the British Service. It has been said that the late mutinies show how ineffectual they are as a hold on the attachment of the Troops; but then it is to be remembered that the general belief in the Country was that the British supremacy was coming to an end, and with the British rule of course the pensions would be swept away. I do not think that the mutinies furnish any criterion of the effect of the retiring pensions on the minds of men one way or the other, at the same time I am convinced that with those who remained loyal the retiring pensions had their full effect, together with the other advantages of the British rule, in keeping them loyal.

11.

If the Commissioned grades are retained, I think promotion for merit and efficiency should be the great object, but not the only

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

one. Seniority can never justly be disregarded *in toto*. *Dashing* service is very often fully counterbalanced by *well adapted energy* coupled with experience. Seniority, unsupported by other claims, should be disregarded without hesitation.

12.

The present pension system must needs be religiously kept up in favor of those who are now in the Native Army ; it could not be at once swept away without a breach of faith ; but in the cases of all men newly enlisting, I would abolish pensions, except for rewarding rare cases of merit and for providing maintenance for men wounded in action and for their heirs. The emoluments of the Order of Merit should be carried out of the Service ; but the Order of Merit and the Order of British India should be brought within due bounds at as early a date as possible. During the mutinies both these Orders have been made use of in a manner very different from what their respective rules warrant.

The "Order of Merit" was intended to reward conspicuous bravery in action exclusively, and the claims of individuals are required to be investigated by a Court of Inquiry conducted by a Judge Advocate ; the Order has been largely conferred on men for loyalty and for persevering brave resistance to the enemy as in the instance of the Lucknow Garrison, but without reference to conspicuous acts of bravery.

The "Order of British India" was intended for long and meritorious service of Commissioned Officers ; it has been largely bestowed on Native Officers without the qualification of length of service. The Order is also limited in number, but no regard has been paid to the limitation.

13.

I am not in a position to answer this question, being only in Camp as it were with the Governor General.

14.

No ; the great majority are quite unfit to do so ; but then this is certainly owing in part to their not comprehending our Military jurisprudence ; on the whole however, and taking into consideration the weighing of cases on their merit rather than any peculiarities of our system, I think the Native Officers, with few exceptions, quite unfit to sit on Courts Martial. I say this after having had an experience of eleven years as a practising Judge Advocate, and having met on Courts Martial duty the Native Officers of certainly the larger half of the Regiments in the Service. But I have met with occasional splendid exceptions, men of very superior intelligence.

15.

No, certainly not, speaking of the generality. There are some fully equal to them.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

16.

Military Police Corps appear to me to be just so many Irregular Regiments, and I can suggest no better organization than that of Irregular Corps for them.

1st, 2nd, 3rd.—With regard to purely Military Corps I think they should be of two kinds, Regular and Irregular,—the former fully officered with the European Commissioned grades, but on a reduced scale, such as I have elsewhere suggested, and entirely without Native Commissioned Officers; the latter officered as Irregular Corps usually are.

17.

From the Unattached Commissioned Officers as much as possible; but the obstacle is that these worthy men frequently know but little Hindoostanee, and by Uncovenanted persons of the respectable classes.

Native Commissioned Officers should be appointed as in Irregular Corps.

18.

Yes, I think so; but if this be doubtful then does it furnish another reason for not keeping up Military Police Corps.

19.

Not that I am aware of; I know of no test.

20.

I do not think there is any such difference of system, regulation and component race respectively in the three Native Armies as to admit of any reply being given to this question.

The prestige of the British Soldiery has preserved our power in India, and not the Native Army in any considerable degree.

21.

The three Armies could never be amalgamated in my opinion; the Madras Sepoy is not to be compared and would not work, I think, with the Sepoy of Bengal, nor would the Bombay Sepoy, neither would it be practicable to send Native Regiments to serve for any length of time in other Presidencies. Distance, family consideration, and perhaps climate, all militate against such a measure.*

I would keep the three Armies quite distinct, as they are already, in great measure, by difference of language, the Hindoostanee being found in all, but comparatively little known or used out of Bengal.

* In the Madras Army there are but few Sepoys comparatively from the Bengal Presidency; these periodically visit their homes, but they are doubtfully received there by their own people, who look upon them as expatriated by joining the Madras Army, and as many of them form connexions in that Presidency; the estrangement is thereby strengthened.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Their system, organization and composition should be left, in my opinion, to the discretion of the separate Government, to time and to local circumstances. The entire separation of the three Native Armies has been of the most important use to us during the late mutinies. We have had the Native Troops of Madras and Bombay in antagonism with the mutineers and rebels in Bengal, which, but for the separation of the three Armies, might not have been. *Amalgamation* as regards the European Officers would work very inconveniently I think. The Officers of the three Armies now on the list could not be amalgamated without great confusion and injustice to many in each Presidency. If amalgamation is to take place at all, it should be with reference to the future only to Officers admitted after a certain date ; but I can anticipate no advantage from the measure. It requires time to accustom Officers to the Native Soldiery ; but experience gained in one Presidency and the acquirement of its peculiar language would be in great degree thrown away in another ; changes in the Officers to whom the men have become accustomed would operate very unfavorably on the men, and if it be impracticable, as local considerations appear to me to prove, to employ Regiments of one Presidency in another, except for the temporary purposes of warfare, the employment of the European Officers interchangeably in the several Presidencies would just involve that change and separation of Officers from their men which is so undesirable.

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Nominally seniority and merit, but really seniority, for the senior was never passed over unless he was imbecile.
2. Proverbially dull and inefficient. How indeed could they be otherwise, when their position was considered a reward of long service, not a link in the discipline of the Corps ; extreme age aggravated all their natural defects.
3. Originally over age, but below it from age.
4. None.
5. That depends on the disposition and energy of both the European and Native Officers ; but on the whole we believe that as

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

far as their influence went, the Native Officers strengthened their European Commanders.

Yes, certainly.

6.

We believe that on very few occasions did they give any information of, or aid to check the late mutiny; but in former years, when there was dissatisfaction and mutinous feeling in particular Corps, the Native Officers as a body did tell their European Officers, what was going on.

Even in the mutiny of 1857, the Native Officers went away with rather than led the mutineers; and in any body that remained loyal there was generally a large proportion of Native Officers.

7.

Continued certainly, but on a better system, unless human nature can be altered; there must either be prizes for ambition or discontent. Besides we regard the Native Officers as an indispensable link in the management of a Native Regiment.

8.

Decidedly not; European Serjeants and Corporals could not, in the climate of India, perform the multifarious duties of Native Officers, nor would they have due influence with the men or know any thing wrong that was going on in the Regiment. Instead of being an element of strength, we fear they would prove one of weakness and dissatisfaction. This was found to be the case in the Punjab Regiments, and they were in consequence removed.

9.

No. There must be a gradation of ranks and a machinery for managing the men, which no pecuniary privileges without rank can give. It would neither be efficient nor popular.

10.

The pensions have always been very highly valued. Indeed one source of discontent was the difficulty of getting invalided, which was created by late orders circulated confidentially to Invaliding Committees. Under those orders it is notorious that a man could hardly get pensioned off while life was left in his body; still the institution was much valid, and if it did not prevent the recent mutiny, it was because other questions of more vital moment were concerned. The mutiny, however, appears to have been very much among the younger Sepoys. We believe that the practice of Invaliding Committees in the Bombay Army is much more liberal than in that of Bengal, and that this is one reason of the greater efficiency of the Bombay Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned grades.

11.

Certainly; but we wish here earnestly to urge upon Government, that to select Native Officers for merit and keep them meritorious,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the European Officers themselves must be selected and efficient. A bad European Officer cannot work a system of merit; he would soon spoil the best Native Officer in the world, and the more these questions of Army reform are thought over, the more clearly will it be seen that the educating of the European Officer lies at the root of the matter.

12.

This is a question which cannot be summarily answered. If Government determined to maintain a system of pensions for their Native Troops (as we would advocate) it would be well to appoint a Committee of selected Officers to go carefully into the details, and even before such a Committee could proceed to deal with the question, it would be right for them to be informed of the actual amount of burden which the present system and scale of pensions has imposed upon the State, in order that it may be seen in what ratio it had annually accumulated, and whether it was disproportionate or otherwise to the object in view and to the revenues of India. We shall confine ourselves now to a few general remarks upon the existing system,—beginning with the scale of “invalid pensions” as shown in the annexed statement deduced from the Pay and Audit Regulations.

In the first place it will be there seen that the Regulars, after fifteen years' service, obtain larger pensions than the Irregulars after twenty years'. This on the face of it is unjust, and has probably grown up from a period when the Irregular Troops were a very inferior and unimportant body.

But, even before the late mutiny, the Irregulars had risen in numbers, discipline, and reputation to a very important position, and at present they really constitute our Native Army.

Again the same inequality pervades the rates of pensions in the two branches, the Regular Subadar getting twenty Rupees, while the Irregular only gets eighteen Rupees, and so on through all the ranks. If the Regular Soldier saw more service or took a larger share of it than the Irregulars, this difference would be just; but it is notorious that whenever Regulars and Irregulars serve together in the field, the hardest work is always put upon the Irregulars, the superior efficiency of whom is now very generally admitted, and has certainly been conspicuous in the crisis of 1857.

On these points, therefore, we would say that doing away with the Regulars altogether, the term of twenty years* should still be adhered to as the period of service entitling the Irregular

* Our own European Officers only get pensions after twenty years, of which eighteen must be in India.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Soldier to the first rate of pension, with increased rates after thirty and forty years respectively.

For the first of those rates (obtainable after twenty years) we would say generally that the present scale for Irregulars is sufficient with the exception of Native Doctors, to whose case we will allude presently; but we would abolish the present rule by which a Native Soldier, even after fulfilling his period of service, cannot get his pension unless unfit for active service. This seems unjust and is certainly felt to be a grievance. No doubt it originated in financial considerations; but if the strict system of discipline we advocate be adopted, instead of every enlisted Soldier coming gradually on the pension list as heretofore, probably one-third would be dismissed for inefficiency or misconduct at various stages of their service, which would be fully as economical as keeping men out of their pension as long as they could walk, and much better for the State.

On the subject of "wound pensions," we have nothing to remark further than that the scale seems unequally adjusted especially as between Regulars and Irregulars, Infantry and Cavalry, and will require impartial re-consideration to adapt it to the altered composition of the Native Army.

Turning lastly to the subject of "family pensions" (and again premising that we do not attempt to deal with the question of rates which depends so greatly on imperial considerations) we would recommend that the principle of bonuses should be as largely substituted for that of annuities as possible.

In the *first* place, if the scale be fairly fixed on the principle of life insurance, it should be no loss to Government in aggregate amount; *secondly*, it would be a saving of machinery; *thirdly*, a bar against frauds which have been so largely practiced, and *lastly*, it would be more applicable to many cases, and therefore more popular and beneficial to the Service. The only case in which a pension should be given, is where the heir of a deceased Soldier who was a British subject is a minor, male or female, and may be thus protected by us from interested relations. In all other cases (*viz.*, adult heirs of British subjects, and all heirs of Soldiers not British subjects) a bonus should be given. This would not only save a vast deal of trouble and peculation; but our experience leads us to believe that it would be greatly preferred by the people beyond our border; especially in the numerous cases where the heirs are females, who often evince an irresistible repugnance to presenting themselves and complying with our pension rules. Thousands of Rupees have thus been lost to the families of Pathan Native Officers, with, of course, a corresponding loss of good report to our Govern-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

ment. Having made these general remarks on the subject of pensions, we desire to touch also on the kindred question of pay; for which there seems no more appropriate place in these papers.

We believe that great emulation, ambition and satisfaction would be excited among the Soldiers, and consequently great vitality infused into the Native Army, by a graduated scale of pay in every rank; the effect of which has been found very great in our own Civil Department, which existed in the Sikh Army under Maharajah Runjeet Sing, and will be found more or less (though in an unorganized form) in the Armies of most Asiatic Rulers.

It is obvious that a recruit cannot be worth as much to the State as veteran Soldiers, and no good purpose is answered by putting them on a level as to pay.

	Rs.	As.	P.
For the first year a Sepoy should get ...	6	0	0
After one year ...	7	0	0
After ten years ...	7	8	0
After fifteen years ...	8	0	0
After twenty years ...	8	8	0

In the Non-Commissioned and Commissioned Native ranks, the scale should be graduated by merit, not by length of service, as follows.

In each Regiment there are 60 Naicks, who now get 12 Rupees each, which is rather disproportionately high. We would have—

Twenty	on	... 10 Rupees.
Twenty	on	... 11 „
Twenty	on	... 12 „

This would give an average of 11 Rupees, or a saving of 1 Rupee on each Naick.

The Havildars are also 60 in number, and get 14 Rupees each, which is moderate. We would have—

Twenty	on	... 14 Rupees.
Twenty	on	... 15 „
Twenty	on	... 16 „

which would be an average of 15 Rupees, or 1 Rupee in excess of present rates.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Jemadars are 10 in number, and now get 30 Rupees each, which is decidedly low. We would have—

Two	on	... 25 Rupees.
Two	on	... 30 „
Two	on	... 35 „
Two	on	... 40 „
Two	on	... 45 „

which would average 35 Rupees, or an increase of 5 Rupees.

The Subadars are also 10 in number, and get 67 Rupees, in which we would advocate the following improvement—

Two	on	... 60 Rupees.
Two	on	... 70 „
Two	on	... 80 „
Two	on	... 90 „
Two	on	... 100 „

which would give an average of 80 Rupees, or an increase of Rupees 13.

To these changes in the principle of pay for the Native Army we attach considerable importance, and venture to recommend them to mature consideration.

There is another change (one of organization) which we would advocate in connection with the broad questions of pay and pensions. There are many Soldiers in every Regiment, who, from weak constitution or accidents, are not fit for active service, and yet not objects for the pension list; who, moreover, are attached to the Service, and have no desire to be invalided. These men might with advantage be formed into Veteran Battalions for ordinary garrison duties in the interior of the Country. No man should be allowed to volunteer into the Veteran Battalions till he had served twenty years, but his future service with the Veterans should count for increased rates of pension, the same as if he had remained in his own Corps. Such a system would meet an existing want, would be both useful and popular, and a relief to the pension list. The operation of it would probably be to create one Veteran Battalion to ten Regiments of the Line.

It remains only to allude to the class of Native Doctors in which hitherto the rates of pay and pension have been unaccountably and unreasonably low in proportion to the outlay of time and industry which they have incurred in their education, and the importance of the duties with which they are entrusted. It does not do to raise men's intellectual standard, and keep them down in the social scale. Their sense of justice and of power alike rebel

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

against it. In the late crisis it has been remarkable how active the Native Doctors have been against us; they have been the very brains of the mutiny in many Regiments and Stations; and we attribute it to the feelings above described. We would strongly recommend, therefore, that both the pay and pensions of Native Doctors be liberally increased; but the Service is a separate one, and will have to be separately considered by Government.

13.

This information can only be furnished by the Military Auditor General.

14.

Those of the late Native Army were certainly not; the whole system has been a farce. The Native Members, as a rule, were guided by the European Superintending Officer, and then went out and told the prisoners they were very sorry for the sentence, but could not help it. Native Officers selected by merit and not by seniority would be quite qualified to sit, and if only to keep up their dignity we would advocate their sitting on District Courts Martial, Regimental Courts being abolished.

15.

Native Commissioned Officers, who have been promoted by seniority, and are consequently worn out, cannot be compared with European Serjeants and European Corporals, selected for their smartness without reference to seniority, more particularly while those European Serjeants and Corporals remain in their own Regiments among their own countrymen, and under a strict system of discipline, to which they are themselves obliged to conform. But if those Serjeants and Corporals be transferred from an European to a Native Regiment, their phase is altered; their smartness and professional intelligence loses more than half its value, for they cannot impart it; they know little or nothing of the language or feelings of the men, and failing to explain themselves, become violent and rough, irritating the Sepoys with abuse picked up in the Barracks, and of which they know not the meaning. They no longer have a rigid discipline over them, are to a great extent their own masters, and fall off accordingly.

Taking, however, the best instances of the few European Serjeants and Corporals who, when placed in a Native Regiment, maintain their former discipline and efficiency and know something of the Native languages, we have still no hesitation in saying they never can be equally useful to the Commanding Officer in managing Native Soldiers as selected Native Commissioned Officers.

16.

The Punjab Irregular system.

3rd.—This third system is what we advise, and to secure efficiency in the Commanding Officers, it should be a rule that on attaining

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the rank of Regimental Major, an Officer should vacate the Command unless ordered by Government to remain.

17.

One European Officer and one Native Officer to each Battalion, and one Subadar and one Jemadar to each Company, as in the Punjab Police.

18.

Certainly not.

19.

No; when the Natives generally are educated, this may be done in Police Corps. At present, it is found impracticable even in Irregular Infantry Corps. It should be explained that the Military Police have no detective duties.

20.

Decidedly so.

21.

1st.—By all means.

2nd.—On no account.

PENSION MEMO. INVALID. I.

"REGULARS" OF THE LINE AFTER FIFTEEN YEARS' SERVICE.

	<i>Rupees per mensem.</i>
Subadar Majors and Subadars	25
Jemadars	12
Drum Majors (European descent)	10
Havildars, Naicks, Native Drum Majors, Drummers (European descent), Tindals, Native Doctors, Farrier Majors, Sirdars, Camel Batteries, Havildars and Naicks of Syce Drivers, and of Gun Lascars	7
Troopers, Sepoys, Native Drummers, Gun Lascars, Farriers, Sowars of Camel Batteries and Syce Drivers	4
Sirdars of Ordnance Drivers	3½
Ordnance Drivers, Bhistees, Syces, Grass-Cutters, Lascars ...	3

But after forty years' service the following scale is sanctioned to men of *unblemished character*—

	<i>Rupees per mensem.</i>
Subadar Majors and Subadars	40
Jemadars	20
Havildars, Naicks, Drum Majors, without reference to parentage, Drummers (Christians)	12
Native Drummers, Troopers, Sepoys	7

LOCAL INFANTRY AND IRREGULAR CAVALRY, AFTER A SERVICE OF TWENTY YEARS.

	<i>Rupees per mensem.</i>
Subadars, Local Infantry	18
Jemadars	10
Havildars, Drum Majors	6
Naicks and Native Doctors... ..	5
Drummers and Sepoys	3½
Gun Tindals	4
Gun Lascars and Bhistees	3
Russaldars, Woordie Majors... ..	25
Russaldars... ..	18
Naib, Russaldars	12
Jemadars	7
Kote Duffadars	6
Duffadars, Native Doctors, Trumpet Majors... ..	5
Nishanchees, Trumpeters	4
Sowars	3½
Bhistees... ..	3

NOTES.

I. Fighting men of Irregular Cavalry, after forty years' service, are entitled to superior rates according to scale allowed to Regular Infantry

II. As a rule no pensions are granted to Regulars or Irregulars, unless the man is unfit for active service.

III. A service of three years in the higher ranks is necessary to enable a Soldier to obtain the pension of that rank.

IV Regulars have to serve fifteen years, Irregulars have to serve twenty years before they are entitled to any pension, unless wounded, &c., which will come under No. II.

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.

PUNJAB IRREGULAR FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The rule is to give the promotion to the best man, preference being always shown to the senior if possible.
2. Particularly so. In all positions they afford the greatest assistance to their Officers.
3. They are selected men, and consequently far above the average.
4. No other than that of general qualification to Command.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

Certainly not, when the Command is in the hands of a competent European Officer.

A full complement of European Officers would interfere with the efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officers ; but in the Punjab Irregular Force the complement was only four European Officers.

6.

There has been no mutiny in the Punjab Irregular Force.

In the 3rd Seikh Local Infantry (which has since been attached to the Punjab Irregular Force) there was a partial mutiny in 1853, the men refusing to build their own Lines. This instance afforded an illustration of the truth that the European Officers are the keystone of the Irregular system, and must be selected and efficient, or their Regiment will be worthless. The 3rd Seikh Regiment had been injudiciously managed from its very enlistment ; changes in the terms of service had not been properly explained to the men, and a feeling had consequently grown up that faith had not been kept. Lastly, a weak and childish Commanding Officer had been appointed, and when he ordered the men to do what by the rules of the Service they were not actually bound to do, but which they would have done cheerfully if there had been discipline in the Corps, most of them refused, and passively resisted the order. A Court of Enquiry ensued, and one or two Native Officers, who had aided and abetted the movement, and two Companies of the men, were dismissed the Service. Even on this occasion the other Native Officers told their European Officers what was going on.

7 to 11.

No answers required.

12.

See our answer to the same question for the Bengal Arm,

13.

This information can only be furnished by the Office of the Military Auditor General ; but it is believed that the charge is very small.

14.

Yes, mentally they are quite fit to do so, and to pass judgment on most cases brought before them ; but from want of moral resolution, most Native Officers will give up their own judgment to their European superiors.

15 & 16.

Require no answer.

17.

Just as they are now ; one Native Commandant to each Battalion, and one Subadar and one Jemadar to each Company, also

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

one European Captain of Police, who supervises both the Infantry Battalions and such Troops of Police Cavalry as are in the division.

18.

Certainly not.

19.

There is no other test for admittance or promotion than general fitness for Command.

20 & 21.

Not required.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. B. HEARSEY, K. C. B., COMMANDING PRESIDENCY
DIVISION.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I am sorry to say it was based mostly on seniority. The Commissioned, Non-Commissioned Officers and Men always thought that length of service gave them a right to promotion whether deserving or not, whether fit or not. I have known men of my Regiment, totally unfit, complaining to the Commandant of the Station, that I had deprived them of their "huq," *i. e.*, of their right, because I had passed them over as totally unfit even to be a Corporal or Naick. *Merit alone* should have promotion.

2.

No, they are not ; eight out of ten of the Native Officers of Infantry and of Regular Cavalry are exceedingly stupid. If the same routine or the same manœuvres are to be performed, they will go through more mechanically than clock-work ; make the least alteration, or do any thing new, they cannot comprehend it and get confused and flustered I mean the generality of them.

If orders are to be given to them, you must make them repeat the order to you to be assured that they fully understand them.

3.

No, the exceptions are indeed few and far between ; they are usually so inert, so indifferent, that they lean on the ability of a smart Non-Commissioned Officer and consult him, nay frequently on a smart Private (or Sepoy), and are guided and directed what to do by him, especially if he, the Havildar or Sepoy, should be a *high caste Brahmin*.

4.

None that I am aware of. I introduced a test in the different Cavalry Regiments I have commanded, whether Regular or Irregular.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS

1st.—The Non-Commissioned Officer or Private to be a good and strong Horseman.

2nd.—Shrewdness and sharpness of *understanding*.

3rd.—Ability to use their arms mounted or on foot.

4th.—Ability to put a Troop or Squad through its drill.

5th.—To be able to read, write and keep accounts.

5.

Yes it does. The Native Sepoys and Non-Commissioned Officers are *obliged* to go to the Native Commissioned Officers *first*, and they forward the petition or complaint to their European Officers, if they cannot settle the difference or quash the complaint ; this gives a great opening to smother complaints. The European Officer ought to be *all in all* to his men ; no person should intervene.

6.

A Native Officer *not siding* covertly with the men would indeed be an exception to the general rule ; usually they encourage mutiny, if they have an idea such mutiny may end in their benefit. I have known Native Non-Commissioned, nay Commissioned Officers, do all they could to discourage trustworthy Sepoys, giving evidence of or reporting mutinous acts or language of Non-Commissioned or other Sepoys of his Regiment.

In my opinion they have, as a class, shown themselves of very little use in restraining their men from mutiny, especially if such Non-Commissioned Officers or men were of a *high caste* or *grade* in the Brahminical tribe.

They say, if they report such acts or language, they will be called tale-bearers, tale-tellers, *i. e.* " choogul khours."

7.

Certainly *discontinued* ; the Native Commissioned Officers are worse than useless.

8.

Yes, the *Serjeants* should be much, nay always, in the Lines or amongst the huts of their men, and should have a good or fair colloquial knowledge of the language of the tribe of the men of their Company, so as to understand what they say to each other when they may be conversing with one another in his presence. The Serjeants ought to get a money reward when they passed a colloquial examination. There ought to be no Corporals.

9.

Yes, a graduated and *liberal* scale of money compensation is desirable, as good service pay. The pay could be increased after a term of five or six years' *good service* ; if any military or

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

other crime is committed, the good service pay to stop for a period, should the man remain in the Service. There ought to be no pensions, no invalids, a bonus in money to be given in lieu.

10.

No, they have not.

11.

If Native Commissioned Officers are retained, promotion should go by merit, not by seniority; but I would not have any Native Officers of the higher grade than Havildar or Serjeant. If you give Natives higher grades, they take upon themselves and look down upon or condemn their young European Officers, especially if they are drilled by a Native or act as coverer when a Native commands the Company on parade. Promotion to Naick or Havildar to go by merit or efficiency, by no means by seniority.

12.

No, all pensions to be abolished as soon as possible. Even the present pensioners to be allowed to take a bonus in money and to be struck off. The whole expenses of the Staff pension payments would thus be saved to the State, and a stop be put to the frauds so frequent amongst the pensioners.

13.

I have no means of judging of this question. Pension Pay Masters could easily answer it by taking an average of ten or twenty years of their payments.

14.

No; they are not; a Native Court Martial is a farce. The persons who really try the offenders are the Superintending Officer and the Interpreter. The Native Officers pay but little attention to the evidence generally, and are but too often seen asleep or dozing during the trial.

15.

No, certainly not; in drilling or teaching the recruits or in manœuvring a Squadron or Regiment, some of the Native Officers, especially Mohamédans, who can read and write, may have more general knowledge, but there are not many such in the Army.

16.

I have answered this in a former question.

1st.—The Companies of a Regular Corps ought each to be composed of separate tribes of men, with two European Serjeants to each Company; no Corporal; for the Havildar or Native Serjeant might suppose he was the European's superior in rank. The Regular Corps with full complement of one Captain, one Lieutenant and one Ensign per Company. The Police Corps one Captain Commandant, one Lieutenant Second in Command, and one

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Lieutenant or Ensign, Adjutant, a Toomenđar and other grades not to have the same denomination as those in the Regular, not even of Havildar or Naick. The Police Corps might be raised in our old Provinces, for it will be politic to give the inhabitants of them some employment. The Police Corps ought to serve at a distance from the District it was raised in.

2nd.—The Regular Corps to be fully officered with European Officers; no Native Commissioned grades.

3rd.—The Police Corps by one Major or Captain Commandant, one Lieutenant and Adjutant, one Captain or Second in Command. They may have Native Officers, but not any having much authority.

The Regular Corps have been frequently detached by Companies on Treasure escort and other duties, such as garrisoning the Forts under the Khyber Hills near Peshawur. They should always have their full complement of European Officers with them. They (the Sepoys) must be taught to look up to and lean upon them on every occasion.

17.

I would have no Commissioned Native Officers; Europeans should take their place and bear the titles as in the London Police. Some of the best men might have a low grade corresponding to Havildar or Naick given to them, but not those titles. All authority is to rest in the European Superintendents, Inspectors, &c. &c. It is bad policy to let the men of a Police Native Corps or Regular Corps believe or even suppose they can have Command over an European of the lowest grade.

18.

If practicable, I would have *no higher grade* in Regular or Irregular Corps, whether of Police or any other denomination, than a Non-Commissioned Officer. All the higher grades should be filled up by Europeans. *No pensions ought to be allowed.* A Pension or Invalid List is a severe bar against the State, having in their pay as large a body of effective Troops as it may require. The pensioners have not shown themselves faithful in the late mutiny, only a few individual cases, certainly not as a body.

The State has to pay a large body of men and their relatives, who are of no use to them even in such a crisis as the one now being subdued. The Pension List of the *late Bengal Army* cost the State nearly as much, I am told, as their effective Force; in fact the State had two Armies to pay—an effective and a non-effective one, and the policy of keeping up the latter has failed. The Pension Establishment was always on the increase, I believe a source of one continued stream of deceit and chicanery that required the eyes of an Argus to detect. By all means have good service pay, *let it be handsome pay* worth receiving, and behaving

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

trustworthy and well for. The recruits for the Regular Army should not be from the same tribes as the Police Force.

19.

The qualifications ought to be—

1st.—Trustworthiness.

2nd.—Ability and activity.

3rd.—Education—to read and write and keep accounts.

4th.—Of good families, or families that have proved themselves trustworthy during the late disturbances.

20.

The three Armies have been and are composed differently. The Bengal Army, of high caste Brahmins, Kashtryas, Rajpoots (Koornees or cultivators of the soil), Kasto (or writer caste), Gwalas (or Cow-keepers), Aheers (or Herdsmen), and but very few of the lower castes of Hindoos, Mahomedans, "Shaaks, Syeds, Moguls and Pathans," indifferently all considering themselves as Haram or undefiled.

The Bombay Army has many Oudemen and Poorbees in it of high caste; these men are from Oude and Shabad Boghpor, the Dooab of the Ganges and from Rohilcund and Bundelcund. They are mostly men rejected as too short or too small or too weak for the ranks of the Bengal Army. These men sink their caste prejudices for service; all races are mixed together in the Bombay Army, and there are a greater variety of them; the lowest castes have until very lately formed the larger portion of the Bombay Army; Jews, Mahrattas and other tribes and classes, unknown in Hindoostan, find admittance.

In the Madras Army, the lowest of the low, men of no caste, are enlisted. Chooroomootes, *i. e.*, sweepers or *mathers*, men who feed on carrion. I have seen these Sepoys, with their wives and children, cut up horses, camels, bullocks and other such animals that have died of disease, and take away the flesh for food, to the utter disgust of the Hindoos and Mahomedans of the 6th Regiment Bengal Cavalry. The men of the 6th Light Cavalry had such an abhorrence of them, that they would not allow these men to take water from the spring from the side of the Hill (at Nagpore) which they used; nay, there was a serious affray in consequence of these *mleehas* attempting to take water from the spring. These classes or tribes, Passees, Chummars, Dussads and Chooroomootes.

21.

Keep the Army as separate as possible as to tribes and grades in them. The system and organization may be the same, but I would rather have them distinct. *Divide et impera*; never let them assimilate if possible; it is not good policy.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS BY MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. B. HEARSEY, K. C. B.

In future, Regiments for the Native Army should be composed of eight Companies of Natives and two Companies of Europeans; these latter should be the Flank Companies, *i. e.*, Grenadier and Light Companies. They should be armed with the Enfield Minie Rifles. The Native Companies to be composed each of a separate tribe of men, say 80 Seikhs, 80 Hillmen, 80 Jats, 80 Mahomedans of the Punjab, 80 Rajpoots of Rajpootana, 80 Dogras of the Lower Cashmere Hills, 80 Beloochees from Scinde, and 1 Company of 80 men of Christian Africans if they can by any means be obtained.

No Native Commissioned Officers—The highest rank a Native can attain to be Havildar or Serjeant; two European Serjeants to be appointed to each Sub-division of a Company, *i. e.*, to 40 Privates. These Divisions to be termed Right and Left Sub-divisions of it.

These sixteen Serjeants to be selected and kept up from the two European Flank Companies attached to the Regiment. These men to be *sober, steady*, well-behaved men, and good or tolerable linguists. Serjeants should be allowed to rise to Ensigncies or *Commissioned Officer* as a spur to good conduct after a certain number of years' service, or for exemplary gallantry in the field. Great emulation would be caused by thus allotting the tribes to different Companies. It is not likely that eight different tribes would combine to mutiny in the manner the Bengal Army has lately done, and if they did, there would always be two British Companies and one *African Christian Company*, armed with Enfield Rifles, for their European Officers to fall back upon, and do their best to overcome it. The two Companies of Europeans and one of African Christians could be placed in Barrack in the Right Flank contiguous to each other; the remaining seven Companies could be hutted as at present; but the small bungalows or pucca-roofed houses for the Serjeants, say eight in number, could be built to the front and rear of the vacant spaces of the hutted lines of the men, and each house contain two Serjeants and their families, if married men. The huts for the men to have flat mud roof, to prevent fires or incendiarism. These sixteen Serjeants to be constantly amongst the men of their Companies, so that no intrigues or conspiracies could go on without it coming to their knowledge.

Promotion.—Promotions to Havildars and Naicks *not to go by seniority*; active, smart, good men to be selected for such grades. If rewards are due to men who are not fit for Non-Commissioned Officers, they should be made in money. Every eight years' service should entitle the Sepoy, *who has behaved well during that period*, to 1 (one) Rupee per mensem increase of pay, so that a Sepoy having served well for thirty-two years would be on the receipt of 12 Rupees per mensem pay; it would not cause much extra expense, for but few Sepoys serve thirty-two years. *No Pension Establishment; no Invalid List*. A bonus to be given to the Sepoy who is no longer fit for duty after twenty-five years' service, also to all those who may be considered unfit for active service, and to those who have suffered from severe sickness consequent on exposure during active service at inclement seasons, or who may be crippled by accidents whilst on active service or from severe wounds. A scale of recompense to be formed for that purpose.

If Military Colonies for old or disabled Sepoys were established, where they could be located on waste lands, and their families, *i. e.*, wives and children with them (such was formerly done on the present Grand Trunk Road from Raneegunge to Sheerghotty

when it was first opened) their sons could be brought up as Soldiers and join the Regiments their fathers had served in, when they were of the proper age or size. Each superannuated Sepoy to have land free or on very light rent to cultivate. This would *serve as a very material guarantee* for the fidelity of such sons who were in the service. Old *sober, steady* European Serjeants, with their wives and families, and a Native Doctor (with medicines) and such other Staff as might be deemed necessary, could be posted to each location to drill and instruct the boys. Old Christian Drummers and Musicians, with their families, could also be sent to these Colonies and have land given to them; they could also be the Head Quarters of a Missionary to attend to the religious wants of the Christians, and by setting them a good example and teaching them the way they should go, would eventually gain proselytes to the Christian religion.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. HOPE GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDING
OUDE FORCE.
BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Based on seniority, which tends to do the greatest harm in the Service; it takes away the principal hold a Commanding Officer has over his Regiment; it ought to be on merit alone.
2. With rare exceptions, they were not generally intelligent, useful and efficient.
3. It cannot be the case, when men are promoted by seniority
4. I think not.
5. It does not.

Full complements of European Officers ought not to militate against the efficiency of a Regiment.
6. In some cases they have: but they were so old and useless, they were quite unable and inefficient to check any mutiny or irregularity.
7. Continued.
8. No.
9. Answered in 7.
10. It has not.
11. Promotion for merit and efficiency should be the rule.
12. Modified.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 13.** Can't answer this question.
- 14.** They were not according to the seniority system.
- 15.** Except in few instances, they cannot be.
- 16.** Full complement of Officers, European and Native, and on the Punjab system.
- 17.** I think a few complement of European Officers would be advisable.
- 18.** No.
- 19.** I believe there are no rules on the subject.
- 20.** It has. I would keep the Armies in the Presidencies distinct, and not admit Bengalees into the Madras or Bombay Armies, and the Punjab Regiments I would remove to the Punjab from Bengal when the war is over.
- 21.** I would not acknowledge caste in any of the Armies ; but I would assimilate the systems as much as possible.

MAJOR-GENERAL H. G. ROBERTS, COMMANDING RAJPOOTANA FIELD FORCE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** On merit as a rule ; where claims are equal, seniority is considered.
- 2.** Yes.
- 3.** Yes.
- 4.** All Non-Commissioned Officers are catechetically examined as to their knowledge of drill, &c., and the most intelligent are generally selected for promotion from one Commissioned grade to another ; it is not usual to supersede an Officer unless his character or intelligence has deteriorated from his first promotion.
- 5.** The intervention of Native Officers is a link in the chain of discipline that should strengthen the influence of European Officers, and a full complement of European Officers should be the means of increasing the professional efficiency of Non-Commissioned Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 6.** Until the present time there has been no disaffection in the Bombay Army that could be styled mutiny, and in those Regiments that have misbehaved during the past year; there have been a considerable portion of Officers and Men well affected to the Government, and with few exceptional cases, the Native Officers have aided in suppressing the spread of disaffection.
- 7.** Continued.
- 8.** No.
- 10.** Undoubtedly as a rule.
- 11.** Merit and efficiency are the rule.
- 12.** Maintained.
- 13.** May be seen in Jameson's Code, Section 41, Paras. 155 and 156.
- 14.** Yes.
- 15.** These are superior as acting with their own people.
- 16.** *1st.*—There should be a full complement of Native Commissioned grades as well as of European Officers.
2nd.—Answered.
3rd.—Ditto.
- 17.** A Commandant, Second in Command, Adjutant, one Medical Officer and one Subaltern, one Jemadar to each Company.
- 18.** Answered.
- 20.** The occurrences of the past year will best answer this question.
- 21.** Distinctness of system, organization, and composition should be left to the views of the separate Governors. Amalgamation I consider very inadvisable.

MAJOR-GENERAL J. BELL, COMMANDING PEGU DIVISION.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** On merit and seniority combined; promotion for efficiency without reference to seniority is authorized. *Vide* Madras General Regulations, Page 354, Para. 8.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2. I think so generally, considering the class from which they are taken ; many are particularly.
3. Yes, they are generally selected for their superior intelligence and smartness as Non-Commissioned Officers.
4. None whatever, though an inefficient Jemadar would not be promoted to the rank of Subadar.
5. Such intervention, if properly exercised, would rather strengthen the hands of the European Officers.

A full complement of European Officers could never militate against the efficiency of the Native Officer.
6. I have never witnessed any disaffection on the part of the Native Army except at Secundrabad in January 1842. On that occasion the Native Officers did not openly go with the men, though they certainly did not give the information they might, as to the feeling of the Troops, it was simply a question of reduction in their pay, which equally, indeed more loyally affected the Native Officers, and it cannot, therefore, be wondered at, that they participated in the feelings of the men, though they studiously avoided any open manifestation of it.
7. Continued certainly.
8. Certainly not.
9. No. I do not think any prospective advantages would be regarded as an equivalent to the honor and respectability attached to that of rising to the Commissioned grades, to which all smart and intelligent men look forward.
10. Most decidedly they have.
11. Such is already the rule in the Madras Army. *Vide* General Regulations, Page 354, Para. 8.
12. I think left as it is for the present ; indeed any change is calculated to awaken suspicion in the minds of the Native Troops, though I think it is to be regretted that the Rules of Pay and Pension prior to 1837 were altered ; they were better both for the Government and the men than the new.
13. Not known ; but the number of pensioners are supposed to amount to about 3,000.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 14.** They are quite so.
- 15.** It would be difficult to draw a conclusion from comparison where the duties are so different. But the Serjeant and Corporal could not certainly take the place of the Native Officer with Native Troops, though in energy and intelligence the Native is certainly not equal to the European.
- 16.** Left as they are.
- 1st.—Certainly, whether there are Police Corps or not.
- 2nd.—Answered above.
- 3rd.—Ditto.
- 17.** By an Officer of character and standing from the Line as Commandant. Adjutant and Quarter Master might be promoted from the Warrant grades, and the Native Commissioned from the Line.
- 18.** I think that nothing would compensate for the abolishment of the Native Commissioned ranks in the Regular Army.
- 19.** I do not know.
- 20.** Certainly, it has prejudices which have been so general in the Bengal Army, on the score of castes are unknown in the Madras Native Infantry.
- 21.** I do not recommend assimilation, much less amalgamation ; the more distinct they are kept the better.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B, COMMANDING PESHAWUR DIVISION.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** The system of promotion may be said to be based wholly on seniority.
- 2.** The Native Officers of the Bengal Army are generally dull and inefficient, wholly useless in supporting the discipline of their Regiments ; were they otherwise, the mutiny has clearly shown us that they would be very dangerous and mischievous.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

No superior acquirements or intelligence distinguishes them from the men, by whom they are never respected as they ought to be in their positions.

4.

None.

5.

Yes I think it does ; if the Native Officers were not in existence the European Officers would convey their orders themselves direct to the men, instead of as at present through the Native Officers. The men are, therefore, brought much less under the influence of the European Officers than they otherwise would be.

Secondly.—Yes, a full complement of Commissioned Officers would materially militate against the efficiency of the Native Officers, in as much as the latter would be rendered cyphers.

6.

To both these enquiries I say decidedly no. Although the Native Officers must always have been aware of what was going on in the Lines, yet, excepting in very solitary instances, they have given no information to their European Officers, nor aided them in any way.

7.

I recommend that they should be abolished.

8.

Yes, I think such an arrangement very desirable.

9.

It would, of course, take some time to reconcile the Native mind to this loss of rank and pay ; but I think such a measure very necessary. The Government also might reward deserving men by promotion in Police Corps or by Civil employment in addition to retiring pensions and to good service pay.

The latter boon should be granted under the orders of the Commanding Officer.

10.

Yes, in ordinary times I think they have.

11.

Yes, but a proper counterpoise of castes, and above all things the proper influence of the European Soldier should be maintained among Native Troops. In all the Regular Native Corps I recommend the abolition of Native Commissions, and in Irregular Corps only, the strength of which I would much reduce, would I keep up those grades.

12.

As the Native Army will now be considerably reduced, the system of pensions might be maintained with advantage. The boon of the pension is doubtless very highly esteemed by the Native Soldiers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 13.** I know not.
- 14.** Certainly not.
- 15.** Most decidedly not.
- 16.** Fully officered with Europeans but with no Native Officers.
- 17.** In my scheme I have recommended that the Police Corps should be armed with the tulwar only, concluding that the people of the Country are disarmed throughout Hindoostan ; such Corps might well be officered by Natives, armed as I have proposed, they could not prove dangerous, although fully efficient to carry on the Police duties.
- 18.** Police Corps might well be officered by the good and deserving men of Regular Regiments, and this, added to the superior pay with good service pay and pensions would, I imagine, prove sufficient inducement for men to enter in the Regular Regiment, every distinction, in my opinion, should be made between Military and Police Corps.
- 19.** I don't know.
- 20.** I think the distinct nature of the Armies of the three Presidencies has been one of the means which has checked the spread of the mutiny.
- This happy result has, I think, emanated solely from the difference of races and not from distinct organization or system, and for proof of this it is only necessary to look at the many Bombay Regiments which have shown disaffection, and in which men were enlisted from the same class as that to which the mutinous Sepoys of Bengal belong.
- 21.** I see no reason for keeping up any distinction between the three Armies ; on the contrary, I think all should be placed on exactly the same footing.

MAJOR-GENERAL C. WADDINGTON, COMMANDING SCINDE DIVISION.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 1.** In the Bombay Army the system of promotion is based on merit and seniority combined. In the case of Commissioned Officers seniority is the rule, and when a Commanding Officer recommends a Jemadar for promotion, or a Subadar to be Subadar Major, not

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the senior of their respective ranks, he is required to state not only his reasons for this preference, but those for superseding the senior of the rank.

2.

The Native Officers are generally intelligent, useful and efficient ; but instances are not uncommon of a smart Havildar proving comparatively useless as a Commissioned Officer.

3.

Their acquirements are usually of a higher grade.

The principle of selection in promotion being well understood.

4.

There is no established rule in regard to any test or examination, and it is not usually the case.

5.

I do not think that such intervention of Native Officers weakens the influence of the European Officer.

The professional efficiency of the Native Officers would, I conceive, be increased by the number of European Officers being reduced to three or four as in Irregular Corps.

6.

The Native Officers are held responsible for giving information of all that goes on in the Lines, and this information is generally of great value ; but it cannot be supposed that the Native Officers have really, in the late troubles, made known all facts of importance that came to their knowledge ; so far as I can judge, it has been quite otherwise.

7.

I think it desirable to continue the grades of Native Commissioned Officers.

8.

I do not think so.

9.

Answered above.

10.

I have not had the opportunity of forming an opinion on the conduct of the pensioners in Northern India during the late troubles ; but the retiring pension has always been considered a great bond of attachment to the Service.

11.

This is the rule in the Bombay Army.

12.

The graduated scale of pension applicable only to the older men in the Bombay Army, appears to have an advantage over the Bengal scale introduced in 1837. By the latter, unfits, after 15 years' service, are entitled to a certain rate, and the same rate is applicable to all men pensioned under 40 years' service. Numbers of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

men consequently are earnest in their endeavours to get invalided on completing 15 years' service. By the former Regulation, there is a graduated scale for unfits after 15 years' service, after 20, and under 25, under 28, under 30, and for 30 years and upwards.

13.

I have no information on this point.

14.

Yes, though perhaps prone to adapt their opinion to that of the Superintending Officer.

15.

Generally speaking they are very efficient.

16.

I would recommend the full complement of Native Commissioned Officers with four European Officers; but the latter should be selected for their efficiency.

17.

In the same manner as Military Corps; but one or two selected Officers only would be required.

18.

The preference, I conceive, would be given to Corps having Native Commissioned Officers.

19.

I am not aware of the system in Police Corps.

20.

I am of opinion that it has had a most important influence in enabling us to maintain our power in India.

21.

I would not recommend any attempt being made to amalgamate the three Armies, though I am not aware of any objection, to their being organized on the same general principles.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF, SCINDE
IRREGULAR HORSE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Merit and seniority combined.

2.

I think they are far more so than could have been justly expected under the organization of our Native Regiments.

3.

Undoubtedly; they generally are so.

4.

No special examination is used, I believe; but the man's whole service is an examination.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

Nothing can possibly weaken the influence of English Officers but their own want of moral power, or their being prohibited from exerting it. The present organization of our Native Regiments is utterly destructive of that moral power, and very greatly injurious also to the development of the powers of the Native Officers.

6.

I am not in a position to answer as regards the Bombay Army generally; among my own Soldiers of the Scinde Irregular Horse, the feeling and conduct of the Native Officers have been exactly similar to the feeling and conduct of the European Officers, and the men have behaved just as the best English Soldiers might.

8.

The Native Officers, under a proper organization, would be the very nerves of the whole body, of which the Sepoys formed the bones and muscles, and the European gentlemen the brains. A Native Soldier should never be associated in the same Corps with Europeans other than gentlemen; he should only observe the European Officers holding high and important posts, and being worthy of such positions.

9.

My ideas on these subjects have been for long past in print before the world, and it seems to me that I cannot better answer these questions than by giving the following extracts from published works :—

Extracts from Tracts on the Native Army of India, by Brigadier-General John Jacob, C. B.

“ There is one erroneous opinion with regard to our Native Indian Troops, which would appear unworthy of notice, were it not that it has lately proceeded from those considered to be high authorities on these matters, but who in truth were totally ignorant of the feelings and springs of action of our Indian Soldiery. I allude to the often expressed opinion that if we were to make too much of our Native Officers, they would take the Command from us. Nothing can possibly be more unfounded, more contrary to truth, than such an idea. We hold India by being in reality, as in reputation, a superior race to the Asiatic. If this natural superiority did not exist, we should not and could not retain the Country for one week.

“ Whatever tends to make European gentlemen “cheap,” to lessen their evident value, to hold up their vices rather than their virtues to the view of the Natives, to show them to the Indians only in inferior positions, where their powers are called forth, and where they have little influence for good, must tend to destroy in no slight degree the hold which we have on the people.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ Whatever raises the European character in the eyes of the Natives of India, and in reality, must greatly add to our security and power.

“ The Native Officers feel the greatest devotion and gratitude towards their European Commanders, who must succeed in raising their character and position. The more the European is able to improve them, the greater does he appear in their estimation. They cannot govern themselves, they are too proud to submit to an equal, but they will all, with the greatest delight and pride, submit to the English gentleman, whom they all acknowledge and feel to be their superior.

“ If we really are a morally superior race, governed by higher motives, and possessing higher attributes than the Asiatics, the more the Natives are able to understand us, the more they will know and feel this, and the firmer will be our power.

“ The seniority system, so far from being just, is the greatest possible injustice to the really deserving men ; while it holds out the greatest possible encouragement to the lazy, the idle and the good-for-nothing ; throw every thing open to fair competition, and let the best man win.

“ This is the style of justice which Sepoys and all other men really like best in their hearts. Let there be no favoritism, but let the European Officers honestly and continually endeavour to choose the *best* men for promotion, and the best possible feeling will assuredly be created and maintained between them and their Native Soldiers.

“ The real error is in employing such numbers of costly Europeans in Command of Native Companies, whose duties would be just as well or better performed by Native Officers properly chosen and formed in a good School.

“ The great number of European Officers now allowed prevents the Native Officer, whatever his merit, from attaining a responsible or very respectable position in the Army, thereby keeping out of its ranks, Natives of birth, wealth and family, and preventing in the Native Soldier the full developement of that love for, and pride in, the Service, which are essential to great efficiency.

“ There are already too many European Officers with reference to Regimental duties only. A certain number of European Officers is necessary, but very few suffice. Three to a Regiment actually present is perhaps the best number. The duties of Subaltern Officers, and even of Captains of Troops and Companies, are most efficiently performed by Native Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ If there were but one European Officer in a Regiment, he would, if possessed of proper qualifications, and if entrusted with proper power and authority, soon form around him such a body of Native Officers, as would make the Corps far more effective under the one Englishman, than it could be under any number of Europeans, who held the opinions with regard to Native Troops which now to a great extent prevail.

“ The want of power entrusted to Regimental Commanders is one enormous evil now existing in our Native Army. It is perhaps a necessary consequence of another very great error.

“ The seniority rise among the Officers of a Native Regiment, originally appointed at hazard, renders it impossible at present to ensure there being at the head of each Native Regiment, a man capable of wielding the powers necessary to govern it efficiently and well.

“ It is quite possible to select for a large Army when the matter is rightly understood. It is the quantity of power given out by the European brains, not the number of European bodies employed, which controls the Native Soldiers.

“ The posting of Officers to Native Regiments without regard to qualification, is a proceeding attended with ruinous consequences.

“ The presence of unselected Europeans in such numbers as are at present borne on the strength of Native Corps of the Line is not less ruinous.

“ Qualifications, not numbers, are necessary for the leaders of the Native Indian Soldiers; one active, energetic, right-feeling and right-thinking English gentleman can, even when alone, infuse an excellent spirit into thousands of these Eastern Soldiers, till they will follow him anywhere, obey him in all things, and feel the greatest pride in acting in his absence, as they know he would wish them to do if present.

“ The feelings thus engendered are most powerful and most honorable.

“ The Native Officers and Men feel the deepest gratitude towards him who has raised their moral, intellectual, and worldly position, and are actuated by the strongest wish and energetic zeal to show that they are worthy of the respectable position in which they find themselves.

“ With thirty Europeans, on the contrary, instead of one, the Native Officer finds himself of no importance, and the Sepoy becomes a lifeless automaton.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“The Englishman becomes too common to be held in proper and wholesome respect. He is seen holding no important position, but in the performance of trifling duties which any Native Officer or Non-Commissioned Officer would do equally. He is often seen idling away his time in frivolous, or wasting his energies in vicious pursuits. The prestige of the superior race is thus destroyed, while it too often happens that the European Officer, having nothing important to occupy him, loses somewhat of his own self-respect.

“The young boy is placed in command of the old Subadar, from whom, when any thing is to be done, he has to crave instruction, and the men see that, so far from taking a pride in them and in the Service, their European Officers are generally longing to be removed from them, craving intensely for Staff appointments, &c.

“The example of the idle, the evil-minded, and the indifferent does more harm than the good can remedy. To be in a healthy state, the Native Soldier should never see his European Officer living an idle, useless life, or holding a degraded or unimportant position; while the European Officer should be proud of his men, and as Sir J. Malcolm most justly observed (Government of India, Appendix E., Para. 25) it should be arranged that the Command of Native Corps should be the most sought after of all existing appointments.”

10.

The beneficial effect of retiring pensions has been greatly injured by the troublesome forms which have to be gone through regarding them; but they certainly have been of very considerable effect notwithstanding.

11.

Yes; this question is answered above, in the extracts given from published works.

12.

Each Regiment should have a fixed Head Quarter, and there all its pensioners should reside; they should in fact remain attached to the Regiment and under the Regimental Commander only.

13.

I cannot say.

14.

In the Bombay Army they are so generally, I believe.

15.

The Native Officers of the Scinde Irregular Horse are quite equal to any European Subalterns in the performance of their ordinary duties, and very far superior to the usual average of English private Soldiers. The qualifications of the Native Officers of the Bombay Army generally must, of course, be proportionate to the care bestowed on their selection, and the importance of the duties entrusted to them.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

16 to 18.

All these questions have been answered above.

19.

I cannot say.

20.

It certainly has to this extent, that had assimilation with the practice in Bengal, which has been forced on the other two Armies with such injurious effect for the last quarter of a century, been carried a very little further, the Indian Empire must have been totally lost to England.

21.

The organization should be the same in principle in all ; the details should vary to suit the wants of each locality, of which the local Government should solely judge ; there should be no attempt to amalgamate and none to assimilate to any thing but the dictates of wisdom and common sense.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL FARQUHARSON, COMMANDING AT MOOLTAN.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

As a general rule on seniority alone.

2.

Decidedly not.

3.

No.

4.

None, except longevity.

5.

1st.—No.

2nd.—Partially, as it deprives him of opportunities.

6.

1st.—They have rarely been of *any* use.

2nd.—Mostly with mutineers.

7.

Continued ; but a higher degree of intelligence and efficiency should be demanded.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8. No.
9. No ; keep a deserving good Soldier so long as he desires to serve ; if he distinguishes himself, give him rank in his Regiment.
10. No ; but provision must be made for wounded men and old age, as a gift of Government, not as a right. We must not always judge by the experience of 1857.
11. Decidedly ; but in promotion of Non-Commissioned Officers to Native Officers, seniority should not entirely be overlooked.
12. Modified.
13. Not applicable.
14. Decidedly not ; they generally intrigue before hand, or leave the trial to the Superintending Officer.
15. Inferior in every sense of the word.
16. Separate Corps for Military purposes should be maintained, officered by selected European Officers on the Irregular principle, with a full complement of Native Officers. Selected young Officers to be sent to do duty in such Corps, after having been carefully trained and instructed in European Regiments. Veteran Corps for partially worn out men should be maintained in every Province in addition.
17. European Commandant and Deputy Commandant, Native Commissioned Officers with less pay but in equal numbers to those in Regular Corps, and in addition, one Native Commandant and one Native Adjutant, with superior allowances ; these appointments to be granted to men who distinguish themselves in the Military as well as in the Police Force.
18. Regular Corps should have superior pay to Police, as they should be liable to serve all over the world ; the Policeman never or seldom being required to go any great distance from his home. They would draw different descriptions of recruits.
19. No specific tests ; every thing should be left to discretion of Commanding Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

20.

Decidedly favorable.

21.

Keep the three Armies separate in race, and as little as possible mixed up in quarters.

The system of assimilation should not be carried out, as different races may require different systems; each Army to recruit in its own Provinces only, and be under its own Government; the superior Government controlling the whole in matters of finance and numbers.

BRIGADIER C. TROUP, COMMANDING AT BAREILLY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

On seniority alone, provided the character is good.

2.

Very far from it; they are the most stupid, useless, worn-out race that ever existed. No amount of instruction could ever make them efficient or capable of performing their duties even passably like the men. When away from the immediate control of the European Officer, they are not to be trusted.

3.

Certainly not; they are from age and long service so infirm and apathetic, that they are generally commanded by instead of commanding those under them. Added to this, it is quite a mistake to suppose that the mere fact of giving a man a Commission made him all at once a Native gentleman of influence; so far the contrary; it must be well known to all those who are at all conversant with the Native character that, however much appearances may be kept up before the European Officers, that when away from their control, the youngest Sepoy in the Company, if of a higher caste, was considered a better man than the Subadar, and this was productive of the most pernicious consequences as regards discipline and duty, but more especially the manner in which it influenced the minds of Native Officers when sitting as President and Members of Courts Martial.

4.

No, there is not.

5.

It does most materially, because the European Officer is in a great measure compelled, from the position which the Native one holds, to repose a trust in him which he is very seldom worthy of.

I don't think so.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

6.

I am not aware of their ever having done so ; but, on the contrary, have always practiced the grossest deceptions, and played a double part throughout. I am not aware, excepting during the recent crisis, that they ever sided openly with the mutineers, although I am fully aware they always did so secretly, and although they had openly made the show of siding with the European Officers on occasions when the men did break out into open mutiny, selfish motives alone induced them to adopt the measure, for there was not one amongst them that did not know and tacitly aid in the coming storm without ever warning their European Officers of what was about to take place, and had Native Officers of Regiments, under such circumstances, been summarily dismissed the Service, and their promotions filled up from other Corps, I feel quite certain that mutiny would have been less frequent in the Bengal Native Infantry.

7.

Discontinued most certainly.

8.

Most advisable ; a system which I have long since advocated, but instead of being supplied from the European Troops serving in India to answer the object in view they should be of a superior class, educated and sent out from England for the express purpose.

9.

This is a subject that I have closely studied for the last twenty years, and have during that period, at various times, got the opinions of men of almost every Native Regiment in the Service. I can therefore speak with the utmost confidence upon it. No man on entering the Service ever thinks of looking forward to the higher grades, so much so that by far the greater majority of them would, had they the option, take their pension after serving fifteen years. I could, had I space here, give ample proof of this. The fact of the old Native Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers clinging so pertinaciously to the Service as they generally do, has, I know, deceived many, who have not given the matter that study which it is worthy of, into the belief that they remain on in the Service in the hope of gaining distinction and a higher rate of pension ; but in reality this is not the true cause, as I have it from the men themselves ; the fact is that many of them remain on in the Service so long that they have outlived their families and have no home to go to, others again say " I have remained in the Service until I am so old, that I would be useless at home, therefore the best thing I can do for my family is to continue in it as long as I can, and save all the money I can for their benefit ; but had I been allowed, I should have been very glad to have taken my pension after having served twenty-one years." My opinion is that the pay of the Regular Native Soldier should be fixed at 8 Rupees per month in all situations, that the Non-Commissioned Officers

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

should be paid exactly as at present, and that there should be no such thing as marching batta ; carriage at a certain rate per man when marching, and lines when in cantonments, should be furnished by the State ; this, with a graduated scale of good service pay and retiring pensions, claimable after specified period of services, regulated on the same system as that in Her Majesty's Army, would, in my opinion, make the Native Soldier more contented and efficient than he has ever been, and more than compensate for the loss of the Commissioned grades.

10.

They certainly ought to have had this effect, and it was generally supposed even by the most experienced Officers, that it was so, but recent events fully prove such not to have been the case.

11.

Most certainly ; promotion for merit and efficiency ought to be the rule generally ; but I do hope that under any circumstances the Native Commissioned grades will cease to exist.

12.

They should be prospectively abolished.

13.

I don't know, but I am aware it is something ruinously large.

14.

No, they are not.

15.

Most certainly they are not.

16.

To be efficient as a Military body, and capable of acting as useful Soldiers, they should be fully officered with European Commissioned and two European Non-Commissioned Officers to each Company, but should have no Native Commissioned Officers. Unless organized in this way, if ever called upon to act against a disciplined Enemy, instead of being of any use as Soldiers, they will become both a dangerous, undisciplined and disgraceful rabble.

In my opinion, Infantry Soldiers, but more particularly Native ones, cannot have too much European supervision to render them efficient, and if the Military Corps are to be kept separated from the Police ones and not broken up and detailed in small parties all over the country on Police duties, far removed from the eye of the European Officer, sometimes for several months together, as used to be the case : if pains is taken in the recruiting and training, I will venture to say, the British Soldiers excepted, they will be equal to any in the world.

17.

The Infantry Police should have no Native Commissioned Officers ; each Corps should have a Commandant, a Second in Command and Adjutant, a Surgeon and two European Serjeants and two Corporals, besides the usual number of Native Non-Commissioned Officers to each Company. Surely after the fearful warning we

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

have had, it would be needless for me to impress upon my superiors the necessity there is for an extended European supervision throughout the length and breadth of the land, for they may rest assured that no native of whatever rank is worthy of trust without it.

18.

I think so; but I consider it most objectionable, and very impolitic that Soldiers being paid by, and serving the same Government, should have such a difference in their organization.

19.

I cannot speak positively on this point; but I think there is no such test on promotion or examination as to capabilities of reading and writing on admission, or if there is, they are very superficial.

20.

I think it has not.

21.

Amalgamation of the three Armies would be very difficult, if not impossible; but every endeavour should be made to assimilate the system and organization and composition of all three.

BRIGADIER W. HILL, COMMANDING HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The seniority system of promotion does not obtain in the Hyderabad Contingent. On a vacancy occurring among the Native Officers, the qualifications in reading and writing, merit, and general intelligence of the senior Havildar is always taken into consideration by the Commanding Officer of a Regiment in which the vacancy occurs, and should the Havildar not possess the above requirements for a good Native Officer, he is passed over; and whenever a junior Havildar is recommended for promotion, the names of all Havildars senior to him are entered in a Roll, with full statements of their various services and claims, which is forwarded to the Brigadier Commanding the Contingent for his remarks, who submits the Roll to the Resident, who sanctions the promotion. Those men who have attained the grade of Havildar, but who are unfit for promotion to the Commissioned ranks, though otherwise good men, are made Color Havildars, which gives them a little increase of pay.

The same rule is followed out from the grade of Jemadar to Subadar.

2.

There are some intelligent and very good Native Officers in the Infantry; but many of them neither read nor write, which mate-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

rially affects their usefulness and efficiency. Since the last three years, however none are promoted to be Native Officers except they can both read and write, and are otherwise active and intelligent.

3.

Many of the Native Officers do not possess the higher acquirements which they should have for the reasons given in the last paragraph.

4.

There is no examination prior to promotion. The Commanding Officer's knowledge of the men, and their fitness for promotion, is the only test for advancement.

5.

No reply required.

6.

In the Orders of Government by the late Governor-General of India, in January 1856, Lord Dalhousie dismissed the Native Officers of the 3rd Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent, for not having given such information to the European Officers, as His Lordship believed them to be possessed of, regarding the mutiny in that Regiment.

In July 1857, on the breaking out of the mutiny at Aurungabad, of the 1st Cavalry Hyderabad Contingent, the first intimation which was given to the Commandant of the Regiment, was by two Seikh brothers, who were Bargheers in the Regiments. Many of the Native Officers were placed in confinement in their own lines by their own men, and sentries posted over them in their tents, with orders to shoot them if they attempted to escape. A Bombay Moveable Column decided the issue of this mutiny.

There can be no doubt that in all mutinies, the Native Officers must be cognizant of all that is going on among the men, many of whom have brothers and relations in the Regiment, and it should be, I think, an understanding in all Regiments that if the Native Officers do not at once give information of any intended rising or mutiny, every one present should be dismissed on the spot.

7 to 9.

No replies required.

10.

This question regarding the pensioners of the Hyderabad Contingent, who have drawn their pensions in Hindoostan, cannot be replied to. In all probability they have paid the penalty of the mutinies about Lucknow and Benares, and have suffered equally with the pensioners of the late Bengal Army by being deprived of their pensions.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11.

This question has been replied to in Paragraph 1.

12.

A Soldier has only his pension to look to when age and long service compels him to leave his Regiment. I believe pensions to be the most powerful bond of union that the Government possesses in preserving the fidelity of the Soldiers to the State; and I consider that the system of Pensions should still be maintained.

13.

This question cannot be replied to, as all the pensioners in Hindoostan draw their pensions from the circles within which each pensioner resides.

14.

The Native Officers generally depend upon the Judge Advocate or other Officer, who superintends a Court-Martial, for the evidence elicited on trials, as the Law of Evidence, which is usually made much too complicated for their understandings, is somewhat beyond their comprehension; but in Military trials generally, where the offences are simple, the Native Officers are fit to take part in Courts-Martial.

Replies from Nos. 15 to 21 inclusive are not required in the printed form, and are not here inserted.

MADRAS ARMY.

1.

Promotion in the Native Infantry Regiments of the Madras Army is not by seniority alone. The Regulations regarding promotions recommend a medium course to be adopted, by encouraging the Seniors to look for promotion when there is no evident disqualification in the candidate; but, as a general rule, merit and professional intelligence qualify for promotion. The system of promotion in the Madras Army is good, but should be left entirely with the Commanding Officers of Regiments.

2.

There are many intelligent Native Officers in the Madras Army. There is no reason why they should not be a very useful class of men. In the Madras Army, many of these men, when well commanded and looked after, are very efficient Officers, and considering their position, perform their duties satisfactorily. I have found both in the Gwalior and Hyderabad Contingents, that from the necessity there is for giving Native Officers the command of the Companies of a Battalion of Infantry on parade, they become, generally speaking, a very efficient body, from the responsibility entrusted to them, which compels them to exert their minds more.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

Though the Native Officers of the Army have not, as a general rule, been better educated than the men from among whom they have risen, they are usually selected for their superior intelligence, and from their daily routine of instruction in Military duties, they acquire a higher knowledge of their profession than the men possess

4.

There is no examination ordered. The general supervision exercised by a Commanding Officer over the Regiment, enables him to become acquainted with those under his authority, and he is well able to judge of their qualifications for promotion to the Commissioned grades, and also for their gradual advancement in promotion to each succeeding grade in the Corps.

5.

This entirely depends upon whether the European Officer is acquainted with the Native language.

If the European Officer is ignorant of the language, his influence is weakened, and the Native Officers take advantage of this, and act at times very arbitrarily over their men; and the men do not complain against the Native Officer because the European Officer cannot understand them.

I think that the full complement of European Officers to a Company contributes to the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officer, when they know the language, and take that interest in their men which they ought to do.

6.

The Native Officers of Regiments have certainly failed in these respects. They have been found to side with the men, whom they usually thrust forward to be as it were the mouth-piece of the Corps, to avoid suspicion falling on themselves.

The mutinies which have occasionally occurred in the Native Regiments of the Madras Army, have been caused principally by some interference with their pay, and when orders connected with their pay, or on account of Pension Regulations, have not been properly explained to them, and consequently not thoroughly understood by the Regiment in general.

Were it generally understood throughout the Army, that if timely notice of any mutiny or intended mutiny be not given to the Commanding Officer of a Regiment, the whole of the Native Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers of the Regiment mutinying, should be dismissed on the spot, it would, I believe, generally deter the Native Officers from siding with the mutineers.

7.

The rank of Native Officer upholds the Military tone and respectability of the Native Army, as the grade is much coveted

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and looked up to by the men. I conceive that the rank of a Native Officer is very necessary to be continued. If that grade be discontinued, the men will be deprived of the greatest advantages and rewards they look forward to in entering the Army, and of all they most prize, and in the estimation of the Natives the rank of Native Officer adds much to the respectability of the Military profession. I believe it to be essential in the formation of the Army to study the interests and feelings of the men, and if what they prize most highly is taken from them, it must affect their willingness and zeal in serving Government.

I believe that the Native Officers can be made a very efficient and useful body of men, and that it would be most detrimental to the Native Infantry to discontinue that grade in the Army.

8.

Certainly not; the isolated position in which these few Europeans would be placed in a Native Regiment would have a very injurious effect upon them, and would be very likely to induce habits of drinking, which would lead to constant reductions, and have the effect of lessening that respect for the European character which it will be now more than ever necessary to uphold among the Natives.

9.

The graduated scale proposed in this question, instead of the grade of the Native Officer, will not, I believe, increase the efficiency of the Army. I believe that if the Native Officers are abolished, it will be a deathblow to the prospects of the Natives, as that grade is so much coveted by the men.

The Order of "British India," to which alone Native Commissioned Officers are admitted, is even now too limited; and the admissions to the 1st and 2nd classes of the Order of Merit is almost entirely closed to the Army, as none in the Madras Army have advanced beyond the 3rd class of this Order; therefore the mere pay and pension, though increased, will not, I conceive, obtain for the Government that zealous and faithful class of men we so much need. A class of men will be introduced into the Army, who will be less deserving, less useful, and less efficient; and as they will not have the feelings and bearing of the generality of Native Officers, who do give a tone to the Army, they will not be respected. One of the chief reasons of the superiority of the Irregular Cavalry over the Infantry is that their Native Officers are men of a higher and better class and more intelligent; they are, in fact, Native gentlemen; and if the Infantry is to be so totally changed in character by abolishing the grade of Native Officers, it will, I believe, be ruined as a standing Army.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

It is very evident this has not been the case with the late Bengal Army ; but I conceive the recent mutinies in the Army do not afford sufficient proof to warrant the abolishment of pensions, as there were many circumstances which led to that mutiny which need not be adduced here as a proof that pensions have not attached that Army to the British Service.

The fidelity of the Madras Troops which are now in Bengal, and have been for months employed in the field against the mutineers, is, I believe, the strongest proof that pensions are effectual in attaching the Native Troops to the British Service, more especially those payable to the heirs of men who are killed or die on foreign service.

11.

I have stated in Para. 1 that merit and efficiency are the qualifications for promotion in the Madras Army.

12.

I would recommend a modification in the system of pensions. Lord William Bentinck reduced the period of service for pension from twenty to fifteen years.

A man who enters the Army at fifteen or even twenty years of age is still an able-bodied man at thirty or thirty-five years of age, but the knowledge that they may obtain a pension after fifteen years' service if invalided by a Medical Committee is unfit for active service has, I am persuaded, been the means of producing more scheming and malingering in the Native ranks than is imagined, which cannot be prevented. This, I have no doubt, is the cause of the pension list having increased so enormously. A vast number of men enter the Army with the full intention of retiring on their pensions at the end of fifteen or twenty years' service, and every artifice is practised by them to be brought before the Invaliding Committee. There is not sufficient inducement for the old and best men to remain in the Army. I would recommend that twenty years should be substituted for fifteen years as at present established by Regulation for Invalid Pensions.

But in lengthening the term of service there should also be a corresponding increase of pay to the Native Soldiers while in active service, for I regard this as a necessary inducement for the old and best men to remain with their Regiments. What is termed at present "good conduct pay" in the Native Army is a misnomer ; it is simply "length of service pay ;" and a man cannot be deprived of it except by sentence of a Court-Martial. I would remodel it on the principle of European Corps, *i. e.*, make it really "good conduct pay," say 8 Annas a month after five years' service, 1 Rupee after ten years, 1 Rupee 8 Annas after fifteen years, and 2 Rupees

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

after twenty years' service, and so on, an additional 8 Annas for every five years up to forty years' service, dependent entirely on "good conduct."

It will be seen by the above that the "good conduct pay" as now recommended amounts to 2 Rupees to the Soldier up to twenty years' service, as at present in the Native Army. The increase, however, of 8 Annas after each successive five years beyond twenty years' service recommended as an inducement and an incentive to serve the Government faithfully and honorably. The above system will, I believe, infuse a higher spirit in to the Native Army, and it will deter men from feigning incapacity for further service at the end of fifteen or twenty years. By assimilating the rules for "good conduct pay" to those of the European Corps, the Commanding Officers would then have the power of themselves admitting well-behaved men to the privilege of "good conduct pay," and depriving them of it should they misbehave, without resorting to a Court Martial as at present, which would have a most beneficial effect.

Something of this kind is much wanted to increase the influence of Officers over their men.

It would not do to abolish the pension establishment, as it is the only means of rewarding worn-out and faithful Soldiers.

A man can earn four or five Rupees a month in his village, and though a Sepoy received seven Rupees a month, he has his Military dress to keep up, besides his Native dress; he is subjected to long and expensive marches, and he has to go on foreign service, which has become much more frequent than it was formerly.

13.

I am not able to afford this information.

14.

They are. In many cases of Native trials they are found very useful.

15.

Certainly not.

16.

I am of opinion that a standing Native Army is essential to the Country, and that it should be organized as at present established, both as regards the European Officers and the grade of Native Commissioned Officers.

There is not a doubt in my mind, and I believe it to be the universal opinion of the Indian Army, that the withdrawal of many European Officers from the Native Regiments, is a great evil, being

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

very injurious to discipline, and in the time of war incurring a positive danger from the want of that European element necessary to ensure success when taking Native Troops into action.

2. Irregular Corps are an excellent auxiliary to the Regular Native Army, and are admirably adapted to the service for which they were originally intended.

But I believe it would be very hazardous to put the whole Army on the same footing as the Irregular Troops, because the preponderance of Native over European Officers, would necessarily bring the whole Army almost entirely under Native influence.

In the question of re-organizing the Native Army, it appears to me most essential that the Service should be made popular among the people of the Country, and their interests and feelings should be considered both as to distinctions and rewards for their service to the State, and these inducements should be on as liberal and extensive a scale as has been found necessary for our own Countrymen.

This I look upon as not only just but politic.

It will be most unpopular in the Army if the grade of Native Commissioned Officers is abolished, as it is a rank which is much sought after by the men who enter the Army, for it must be remembered they do not enter it from any patriotic spirit, but to improve their condition in life.

The rank of Native Officer is much looked up to by the men ; it exercises a considerable influence over them, and the want of this influence would be severely felt in times of difficulty ; we should then find we had not so great a hold upon the Native Troops if the Non-Commissioned Officers are left to be the only link between the European Officers and the Native Soldiers. We cannot quite assimilate the constitution of the Native Army to that of the European, their idiosyncracies of character being so totally different.

Though a graduated scale of pay and pension may be substituted for the grade of the Native Commissioned Officers, I feel convinced that if so inferior a class of men enter the Service, it would entirely destroy the tone of the whole Army.

17.

An European Officer from the Army should command the Police Corps, assisted by an Adjutant. A Jemadar of Police and a Darogah for each Company should be attached. An opening

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

might be made for intelligent and deserving men in the Regular Army to get promotion into the Police Corps.

18.

I have given in Para. 16 a very strong opinion of what I believe to be absolutely necessary for the organization of the Regular and Irregular Native Service, which is comprehended in the present question ; and I have there shown that we should draw a very inferior class of recruits for the regular Army were the grade of Native Commissioned Officers abolished.

19.

As Police Corps have not yet been formed in the Madras Presidency, there has been no test or examination as here asked. The difficulty that is experienced in procuring men for the Native Infantry who can read and write will be equally felt in entertaining men for the Police Corps ; but until the introduction of a system for educating the Natives of the Country in the common rudiments of reading and writing by village schools, their qualifications generally must continue to be of a very inferior character.

I think recent events in this Country have proved that the organization of the Madras Army has been most favorable to the maintenance of our power in India, its component races having entirely separate interests from the Bengal Army.

An influence for many years past has been exercised by the Mahomedans in Upper India over the minds of the Hindoo population. It is well known that since the Affghan War, the Mahomedans commencing in the North have proselyted, to a very great extent, from among the Hindoos all over Upper India, and this was considered to be so important a movement that the writers of the day spoke of the circumstances as probable to operate at a subsequent period in a manner hostile to our interests. A serious riot was caused by this proselyting in 1847 in the city of Nagpore where I was then. This influence is not observable in the Madras Presidency ; I cannot, therefore, but be persuaded that the distinct organization of the Madras Army has proved favorable to our power in India.

21.

The Regular Native Armies of the three Presidencies should, I conceive, be assimilated in so far as having the same form of oath, the same system of discipline, and the same rates of pay throughout the Country.

But I should by no means recommend an amalgamation of the three Armies, for I believe that much of the safety of the Country depends upon keeping them perfectly distinct.

BRIGADIER P. GORDON, COMMANDING AT BENARES.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. In the Regular Native Infantry Regiments, seniority alone. Commanding Officers are required to state in Regimental Orders, their reasons for passing over a senior.
2. Quite a matter of chance ; provided nothing can be urged against a man's character, any senior in the gradation list used to be considered good enough for a Native Officer.
3. No, their acquirements must, from the system of promotion, be a matter of chance.
4. No.
5. Not if the European Officer is experienced and understands his duty ; he will use the Native Officers as an aid only, such must, to a certain extent, be the result of Companies being on all occasions commanded by European Officers.
6. No, the Native Officers as a body gave no assistance, and generally sided with the mutineers ; of course there were exceptions.
7. Discontinued, provided a full complement of European Officers are kept up, and that some suitable compensation be given for the loss of what have hitherto been considered the prizes of the Service.
8. Yes, I think so.
9. Yes, I think a liberal retiring pension, *claimable* after specified periods of service, would be so considered, especially if accompanied with a title, Commission or some other mark of distinction on retirement. I would, however, as already stated, abolish the general pension list, and only allow a limited number of pensions to each Regiment, in lieu of Commissions.
10. The pensioners are, I believe, understood to have generally joined in the late rebellion.
11. Certainly, in my opinion, I have always considered the seniority system of promotion ruinous.
12. I would abolish pensions and increase the pay of men while actually serving. The pension system has not been found to add to the security of our rule in India.
I would only allow retiring pensions in lieu of Commissions.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS

Men who have completed five years' service might be allowed an option between the old and new systems; all Soldiers look more to present advantages rather than prospective.

13.

I can't reply to question 13; but the expense is understood to have been enormous.

14.

No, not generally; the old Native Officers of Native Regiments used generally to be guided by the superior Officer.

15.

From the body in most Regiments one or two used to be found quite on a par as regards professional intelligence, but all the rest are very inferior as the whole body are in efficiency, by which I mean their power of enforcing discipline.

16.

A full proportion of European Commissioned Officers, with a competent, active, and zealous Commander, one Serjeant and one Corporal, with the present proportion of Native Non-Commissioned Officers to each Corps.

2nd.—No Native Commissioned Officers. What is called European discipline to be introduced into all Regiments of Regular Native Infantry.

17.

Besides three Officers, I would recommend a Serjeant to each Company. I have already said that I would give all Regiments two Battalions—one Service, the other Local.

18.

No, I don't consider the present rates of pay would be sufficient; I cast pensions altogether aside. I know the recruits not to be at all influenced by this consideration, nor does it carry much weight with the Army generally, in a great measure, the result of the very stringent rules under which pensions have for many years been granted, wound pensions and pensions to wives of Soldiers killed in action or who have died on foreign service, are valued because there is some certainty about them. The Invalid pension cannot be obtained while the Doctors consider the applicant fit to crawl about doing Cantonment duty. Native Officers of forty years' service have been sent back by Invaliding Committees.

19.

I don't know what is the rule in Police Corps; but when Adjutant of a Regular Native Regiment, all Sepoys, before promotion to Lance Naick, had to pass an examination in reading and writing in the presence of the Commanding Officer, Adjutant and Interpreter.

20.

No, I think not.

21.

In my idea the three Armies ought to be assimilated, and the Service Battalions of Regiments employed in any part of India without regard to Presidency.

BRIGADIER J. STEEL, C. B., COMMANDING AT UMBALLA.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. By merit and seniority combined ; promotion by favor has sometimes caused discontent.
2. The Native Officers rising from the ranks, and too often only from seniority and unblameable conduct, are not generally efficient. Though useful in minor duties of detail, their position constitutes an inducement to all ranks to behave well with the hope of succeeding to the higher grades.
3. Certainly not.
4. Not generally.
5. I do not think so, nor do I think the number of European Officers influences them ; they have each of them too little power for good or evil.
6. The Native Officers as a body have always professed ignorance of any cause of discontent, and pretend not to be parties to it. This also is equally applicable to Non-Commissioned Officers as well as to Commissioned Native Officers.
7. The grades of Native Commissioned Officers should be continued, as a reward and inducement to good conduct, being much more effectual than the fear of punishment.
8. I think not ; their conduct cannot be depended on when relieved from the control of Barrack discipline. It has not been found to answer well in the Sappers.
9. No substitute for Native Non-Commissioned Officers can supply equally their place.
10. The Invalid Establishment has been the main stay and support of our Regular Army. It has always been looked upon with the greatest veneration.
11. A test should be adopted without which an Officer should not be promoted ; a failure in any such test should be final as indicating a want of sufficient qualification for any such promotion. Promotion for any particular good conduct should always be granted.
12. The system of pensions can be improved, but not abolished. At present it has been subject to very great abuse, and many undeserving parties admitted ; a bonus might be substituted in lieu of pension according to the deserts of the individual.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

13.

I am not aware.

14.

Not generally; they are inclined to be very severe, in any case disrespectful to their own order, but reluctant to punish a Brahmin. They are frequently led by the opinion of the conducting Officer. They may sometimes be a screen for the European Officer from the vengeance or revenge of a culprit.

15.

Certainly not, when sober men can be obtained.

16.

The Corps of Regular Infantry should be treated as a superior class to those of Irregular Corps or Police in both rank and pay.

1st, 2nd, 3rd.—They should be treated as superior to a Local Service, for which the same material can be obtained at a less cost. They should be fully officered with European and Native.

17.

The Police Corps should be officered with a Commandant, Second in Command and Adjutant, or one Officer in each Zillah, in which their duties are to be performed. Their Native Officers should be denominated Toomandars, Jemadars, Duffadars, Naiks and Nujeebs, so as to keep up as much difference with them and the Regular Corps of Native Infantry as possible.

18.

Certainly not, if one is to be local and the other for general service. Police Corps should be engaged to march any where in time of war on their services being required. The former Police Battalions from Delhi and Meerut were sent on duty to the Sutledge in 1845.

19.

I am not aware if any fixed general rules have been framed for Police Corps, either as regards their formation, establishment or allowances.

20.

Certainly, no attempt should be made to assimilate the Armies of the different Presidencies. They should be kept as separate as possible, and have no interest or feeling in common.

21.

They cannot be kept too far separate in the Native grades, and the differences or jealousies of the European Officers have not been prejudicial. The Indian Army is too large to have any bond of union.

BRIGADIER J. COKE, C. B., COMMANDING AT MORADABAD.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Chiefly by seniority; but many energetic Officers labored to get rid of their old and inefficient men and to replace them with more

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

efficient Officers both as regards age and qualifications ; but what with the parsimony of the Government in keeping Officers and Men on the Rolls of the Regiments who were only fit for the Invalids, to which they would neither send them nor discharge them, and what with the obstacles which were thrown in the way of Commanding Officers by Head Quarters, to the promotion of junior and efficient men, the whole promotions for the last twenty years have been almost entirely by seniority.

2.

Taking the average, I should think from two to three Native Officers might have been found in each Regiment fit for their position.

3.

Generally speaking, of a lower grade ; as age, indolence and disease had impaired whatever energy and intelligence they might have at first possessed.

4.

None that I am aware of; there is, I think, a recent order directing that no man was to be promoted to Naick, after a certain date, who could not read and write.

5.

No, I think not ; but it appears to me that of late years there has, generally speaking, been a great want of sympathy between the European Officer and his men, a great deal too much of the "damned black nigger" style of speaking, and I think this has principally arisen from two sources—one that the Officer finding himself powerless to reward or punish ceased to take interest in his men ; the second, that every Officer who had interest or abilities only thought how he could get on the Staff and thus escape the tedious routine of Regimental duty.

Most undoubtedly, the full complement of European Officers militates against the efficiency of the Native Officers, as it causes him to take little or no interest in his duties.

6.

No, certainly not ; but the Officers now alive, who were present with their Corps in the late mutiny, will be best able to answer this question.

7.

Certainly be continued and be made responsible for their Companies.

8.

No, I don't think it advisable for the reasons stated in question No. 28.

9.

No, I don't think so.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

*10.

The late mutiny has proved it to be ineffectual to those in the Service; but it appears that a certain number of the pensioners in Oude, when called on, fought for the Government. All those that did not, should, of course, be struck off the list; but I consider the Pension Establishment a powerful instrument in the hands of Government, and every Native speaking of it looks on it as a great boon. I think it ought not to be abolished; but I consider our system of allowing men to serve on for the pension who are unfit for the Service is ludicrous; every man considered unfit for the Service up to fifteen or twenty years should be paid up and discharged, provided his incapacity does not arise from wounds. If all Soldiers who were unfit for the Service up to fifteen years were weeded out of the Corps, it would save much malingering, and reduce the Pension Establishment to a great extent.

11.

Promote by merit, efficiency and gallantry in the Field alone in the Commissioned grades; but in those Corps who have seen much service, I would not be too greedy to promote to the Non-Commissioned grade from juniors, if the seniors are able-bodied men and of good courage. It tends with the Northern Soldiers, who are jealous of their name and character, to dispirit them with the Service, and by this means many valuable Soldiers are lost to the State; but in all these matters let the Commanding Officer be the sole Judge; he alone is qualified to give an opinion; he is more interested than any other man can be in having efficient Officers. If he is fit for his position, he will endeavour, by all means in his power; to find out the men most fit for promotion; if he is unfit, remove him. A Commanding Officer in an engagement should endeavour to mark those Soldiers who distinguished themselves, and he should impress upon the European Officers the necessity of doing this also; he should also listen to all recommendations of the Native Officers, and as soon as possible after the action he should note all this down, or it is forgotten. When he comes to make promotions this is a great aid to him, and if it is done on the spot there is no time for making up stories. You are thus enabled to reward the Soldier who has distinguished himself.

12.

Grant pensions for good service to men disabled by wounds, and to heirs of Soldiers killed in action or dying on service; but don't grant pensions for fifteen years' service; discharge with one year's pay when over that period.

13.

I don't know.

14.

No; there should be no Courts Martial in the Native Army for the reasons stated at No. 3, head "Military Code and Rules of Discipline."

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

15.

Taking efficient Native Officers and efficient Serjeants, the former are infinitely their superior in efficiency and intelligence in the Command of Native Soldiers; inefficient men of both classes are equally useless.

16 to 18.

All replied to at answers Nos. 4, 19 and 20, head "Recruiting and Composition of Corps."

19.

I consider writing or reading to be no test of efficiency, and therefore would by no means insist on it as a qualification for promotion or admission.

20.

Most certainly favorable to our rule.

21.

The more distinct the organization and composition of our Armies, the better; we should, as I have before stated, use all our endeavours to prevent the amalgamation, not only of the three Armies, but of each individual Regiment, even supposing it to be desirable. No one system could be devised to suit the whole.

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE 3RD HEAD OF INQUIRY UNDER CLASSIFICATION.

The Commanding Officer should alone have the power of organization and promotion, and his recommendation be alone attended to for rewards. We have lost as good an Army as any State could desire, by that most fatal infatuation called centralization, by usurping the power of Commanding Officers, and by permitting those in power, under the pressure of public opinion in England, to legislate for Asiatics, who were practically ignorant of everything regarding them. The ruin of the Bengal Army was commenced by Lord William Bentinck, and completed by Lord Dalhousie, with the aid of Commanders-in-Chief (one excepted) who had but one idea, *viz.*, that what was considered desirable for Europeans must necessarily be the best thing they could devise for Asiatics.

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT OF BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The system of promotion is based on merit, but with some regard to seniority, where there is an equality of merit.

2.

They are.

3.

Their acquirements are not superior to those of the men amongst whom they have risen, because they gain their promotion by their good conduct as Soldiers, and not as a consequence of their acquirements of a higher kind.

QUESTIONS

ANSWERS.

4. None
5. The influence of the European Officers can in no manner be so effectually exercised over the men, as through the Native Officers. So long as the Native Officers are faithful, their intervention tends to strengthen the influence of the European Officers; but if they are not faithful, then, of course, their intervention is decidedly injurious.
- The professional efficiency of the Native Officers is not affected by the number of European Officers present with the Regiment, excepting, perhaps, in the mere routine of Parade.
6. Instances have occurred in which Native Officers have given notice to European Officers of an intended mutiny, and it has thereby been prevented; but, generally speaking, the Native Officers are not found to aid the European in checking or suppressing mutiny. The sympathies of the Native Officers are with the men.
7. I think they should be continued as an essential part of the constitution of a Native Regiment.
8. I think not.
9. No scale of pay or pension, to be earned by length of service, could compensate the young Soldier for the loss of promotion which his merits might entitle him to look for at an early period of his career.
10. If the Native Troops are attached to the British Service, the retiring pension has great effect in producing that attachment.
11. Promotion to the grade of Native Commissioned Officer should be by selection for merit and efficiency, not by seniority. This should be the rule in practice. Some regard may be paid to seniority where merit is near to an equality.
12. Pension should be maintained.
13. In round numbers Rupees 8,70,000 per annum.
14. Where promotion is by merit they are so.
15. Quite so.
16. Military Corps forming part of the Regular Army should, I conceive, be fully officered in all the present grades, Europeans as well as Natives.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

I am not competent to answer questions relating to the Police.

18.

I do not think it will

19.

I am not well acquainted with the system pursued in Police Corps.

20.

I conceive that has.

21.

I do not consider the amalgamation of the three Armies desirable, nor even their close assimilation.

COLONEL E. GREEN, ADJUTANT GENERAL, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Principally on merit; seniority having due weight, but constituting no claim.

2.

Yes, taking into consideration the little duty they have to perform, whereby their usefulness and efficiency are much impaired.

3.

In some instances they improve as they rise; in others, the contrary. It must be remembered that these men are simply Subadars and Jemadars. It cannot be expected that really good Native Officers can be found in, or be selected from the class of men who now enlist in our Infantry Regiments; but as being promoted, in a great measure, by merit, their acquirements are usually superior to those of the men from among whom they have risen.

4.

In many Regiments tests or examinations are required, and taken previous to advancement in or promotion to the Non-Commissioned grades. By these means the qualifications of the men are known, and ordinarily examinations are not taken prior to promotion to the Commissioned grades.

5.

I have never found it to have that effect when a proper understanding exists in a Regiment. I think it strengthens the influence of the European Officers.

Certainly it has that effect.

6.

Yes; timely and most valuable information, except in two instances, when the *emeute* was very partial and sudden.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

In all cases the Native Officers have sided with the European Officers, and aided them to check the mutiny.

7.

Continued ; but they should be placed on a different footing altogether.

8.

Very advisable.

9.

To abolish the grade of Native Officer would be to destroy the Native Army altogether.

10.

In my opinion very much so ; it is looked upon by all as the greatest boon.

11.

The system of promotion for merit and efficiency should be the rule, seniority carrying with it due weight, but there should be no claim (*huk*) in the matter.

12.

The system should be maintained, but modified to meet the requirements of the Bombay Army, the rules which obtain in Bengal bearing hard upon pensioners who have served in Western India and being otherwise faulty.

13.

Rupees 8,69,834-9-11 per annum, or Rupees 72,486-3-6 per month, as nearly as can be ascertained.

14.

Yes, generally so.

15.

When pains are taken with their instruction, their intelligence and efficiency is great, exceeding that of the common run of European Serjeants and Corporals.

16.

As at present ; but with four selected European Officers, selected Native Officers and men, raised from all denominations of people without respect to caste or tribe.

Article 1.—They should be fully Officered with Native Commissioned grades ; but for the performance of *Regimental* duty, and under a new organization, four European Officers, Commanding Officer, Second in Command, Adjutant and Quarter Master and Pay Master are ample. Under the present system the European and Native Officers stand in the way of each other.

Article 2.—Answered above. *Vide* reply to question No. 9.

Article 3.—Like Irregular Corps, under selected European and Native Officers. Mere Subadars and Jemadars will not answer for the responsible duty which would devolve upon the Native Officers, whose position should be analogous to the present Cap-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

tains and Subalterns. Should such a system be taken into consideration, the pay of the Native Officers must be placed on a more respectable footing, so as to induce a better class of men to enter the Service, those having property in the Country, whose interests would be exerted towards the maintenance of order, and by their superior social condition be able to exert authority over the men.

17.

The Police Corps should be Officered entirely by respectable and selected Natives of the District, but be under the supervision and inspection of British Officers especially qualified and chosen for this important duty.

18.

In my opinion the Regular Army, under such a system, would soon cease to exist, except as a useless and expensive mob.

19.

No promotion depends upon general efficiency, good conduct, intelligence and gallantry; but the advantages possessed by a Policeman who can read and write are not undervalued.

20.

I have no doubt it has.

21.

This certainly should be allowed. The races of India are as varied as those of entire Europe. Rules should be made to suit local circumstances. The attempt to assimilate is full of danger and contrary to reason when things are not equal. The Presidencies of Bengal, Madras and Bombay are totally different as regards races and castes, and to amalgamate is to ruin.

COLONEL K. YOUNG, JUDGE ADVOCATE GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

As a general rule on seniority; but merit has, to a certain extent, though a very trifling one, something to say to the matter. But this question, and indeed all those under the same head, will be better answered in the Department of the Adjutant General of the Army.

2.

Certainly not; with rare exceptions, Native Officers are mostly worn out before they attain their Commission, and from this a judgment can be formed of their efficiency; as to intelligence they are much on a par with the rest of the Regiment, and if a judgment is to be formed of their usefulness from the benefit that their services have been to Government during the late mutinies, the verdict will not be in their favor. They have seldom offered any check to the misconduct of the men, and if they have not openly

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

joined them, they have rarely been found to have given notice of their intended mutinous proceedings of which they must have been well cognizant.

But still, in my opinion, Native Officers should be maintained, for Soldiers must have something to look forward to in the way of promotion and reward, and those promoted for good conduct or meritorious qualifications of any kind, without reference to seniority, are more likely to remain faithful and attached to our rule than when a contrary system prevails. It may be argued that, in the late mutinies, Native Officers, whether promoted by seniority or by merit, having been found to be useless, they should be done away with altogether; but by a similar train of reasoning, it might be shown to be inexpedient to keep up any Native Army at all. We must have a Native Army, and we must have some system of promotion in it, call those promoted, confirmed Officers, or by whatever designation you like.

3.

As a general rule the acquirements of Native Officers are not superior to those of the men; but I may remark that a Sepoy of superior acquirements would be tolerably certain, if a well-conducted Soldier, of being promoted sooner than his less gifted comrades.

4.

No, none.

5.

No, I am not aware that the intervention of the Native Officers weakens the influence of the European Officers. A great deal depends upon the character of these Officers respectively, and if the European Officer does his duty, it is not in the power of the Native Officer to weaken his legitimate influence with his men. Of course if European Officers neglect their duty, the Native Officers can do nearly as they like.

As before remarked, there is not, as a general rule, any professional efficiency in the Native Commissioned Officers.

6.

My experience of mutineers is very limited; but I believe it may be stated without contradiction, that the instances in which Native Commissioned Officers have given timely information of intended risings are very exceptional; but when mutiny has once broken out, they have very often sided with their European Officers. During the late mutiny, however, their leaning has rather been towards the mutineers, on the ground, I believe, that they were deserting a hopeless cause, that they were abandoning in fact a sinking ship.

7.

In my opinion the grades of Native Commissioned Officers should not only be maintained, but they might be increased in

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

number, so that no Soldier should be left, during his whole service, without seeing before him the chance of continued prospective advancements.

8.

No, I do not think it would be advisable to have an increase of European Non-Commissioned Officers with Native Regiments under any circumstances. This class of men are not, as a general rule, calculated to exercise a proper supervision over Native Soldiers.

9.

I would prefer having Native Commissioned Officers, as remarked in my reply to question No. 7.

10.

The result of the late mutinies shows that retiring pensions were ineffectual in attaching Native Troops to the Service; but at the same time it may be observed that the impression amongst them was almost universal, that the British Government was extinct and that consequently their pensions were lost to them. It stands to reason that men in the receipt of pensions or expectant of them are far less likely to join in pulling down a Government that it is their interest to protect than others differently situated, and I have no doubt that under ordinary circumstances pensions work a very salutary effect. There is not likely to be another mutiny that will sweep away, as did the last apparently, all confidence in the stability of Government, and it was under the impression of this feeling that very many of the men joined in the revolutionary movement.

11.

Yes, in my opinion merit and efficiency should be the tests of promotion, and I would leave all in the hands of Commanding Officers of Regiments, removing them summarily from their Commands if they were found to abuse the trust reposed in them.

12.

The system of pensions in operation in the Bengal Army should undergo a searching examination before any thing is decided on the subject and it should be compared with the system prevailing in the Presidencies of Madras and Bombay. I know nothing of the former; but in the latter it is understood to be the practice to invalid in the Native Army men comparatively young in age and constitution, and who would be certain of being rejected if sent up before an Invaliding Committee in Bengal. No doubt the pension list in the Bombay Presidency is proportionably much larger than in Bengal; but the Bombay system, in my opinion, is the correct one, and I may add also that it is actually the cheaper of the two; for in Bengal the worn-out men so frequently seen in our ranks, are in fact pensioners and receiving a higher rate of pay than they would if invalided. It is true the amount paid them does not appear under the head of pension; but it ought to be so included whenever pay is given to men unable to do longer.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

service. It would be far better to decrease the strength of your Army than keep ineffectives in it.

13.

Pension Pay Masters will be able to answer this.

14.

Native Commissioned Officers are of use at a Court Martial in sifting the particulars of the case under trial ; but this, I think, is all. They have a voice in the verdict ; but as regards the sentence they are mouthly guided altogether by the European Officers superintending the proceedings, and it is perhaps as well that it should be so, their ideas and ours of the punishments required to maintain discipline being very different. I remember some years ago, when conducting the proceedings of a Native General Court Martial upon the trial of a Sepoy charged with wounding a British Officer at Loodianah, that after the man was declared guilty, and the sentence came under the consideration of the Court, the first Native Officer gave his opinion that a month or six weeks' imprisonment in the Quarter Guard would be a sufficient punishment. The matter was argued amongst them for some time, and a sentence of death was at last decided upon, and the man was executed.

But it was a long time before the Court arrived at this decision, and had they been left to themselves, it is possible enough that the punishment might have been, as originally proposed, a few weeks' imprisonment in the Quarter Guard. I should see no objection to Native Officers sitting on a Court Martial so long as they are under proper control.

15.

Certainly not.

16.

I think the best organization for Native Corps will be to have them as Irregular Corps are at present, but with a slight addition of European Officers.

17.

This question will be best answered by those who have had more to do with Police than I have, but in my opinion their organization should be of a similar nature to that of the Native Army as recommended in my previous reply, but with fewer European Officers ; the authority of the Commanding Officer of a Police Regiment being supremè in every thing relating to his Corps.

18.

With reference to previous replies, no reply to this question seems called for.

19.

The Superintendent of Police will answer this.

20.

Yes, to my judgment the distinct organization of the Armies of the three Presidencies have proved very favorable to our power

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

in India. The differences that there are between them have prevented a coalition that would probably have been fatal to our rule.

21.

There no doubt is much in the system of the Army of each Presidency that might with advantage be grafted in the others ; but I would advocate as little interference as possible with what each Presidency considers best for its own Native Army, and there is an undoubted benefit to be derived in troublous times like those through which we have passed in having Armies or portions of Armies swayed by different interests. Had the three Armies been assimilated, as argued for by some people, we might have had the whole of our Troops in mutiny instead of only the Bengal portion of it. I may remark, however, that supposing it were in contemplation to carry out, what appears to me very objectionable, the measure of assimilating or rather amalgamating the three Armies, I fear in practice there would be inseparable difficulties, especially as regards the Madras Army. It is to be hoped these difficulties will operate to prevent any attempt at amalgamation, which, I am convinced, would be a step in the wrong direction.

COLONEL H. P. BURN, SUPERINTENDENT OF ARMY CLOTHING.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Promotion in the Bengal Army has, in all ordinary cases, been regulated by seniority. It had become so much the practice, that it was looked upon as the right of the senior, and any deviation from this practice was regarded by the whole Corps as an infringement of what they considered an established law of the Service. Some Commanding Officers took advantage of the invaliding season, when a great many vacancies occurred, to promote smart and deserving men ; they were generally selected from amongst the Drill Instructors ; others stoutly upheld the seniority system as the only safeguard against misconduct in the Field and in Cantonments.

2.

The Native Officers in general of the Bengal Army were very old men and were perfectly useless. One great blunder of the mutineers has been the selection of these old and worn-out men to Command them. It was the saving of our small Army before Delhie that such men as Subadar Bukht Khan and others equally infirm were the leaders of the rebels.

3.

The acquirements of the Native Officers are of the same grade as those of the men.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4.

There is no test or examination prior to promotion to a Commissioned grade, or in promotion from one Commissioned grade to another.

5.

The intervention of the Native Officer between the European Officer and his Men might be made very beneficial. To effect this the Native Officers must be men of education, and of a better class of society than the Privates.

If we had men of this stamp in the Army in 1857 to explain to the Sepoys the utter groundlessness of their fear of being made Christians, there would have been no mutiny. A full complement of European Officers need not necessarily militate against the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officers.

The Native Officers in Irregular Corps, except those who are selected men of some little education and family, are not a bit more intelligent than their brethren in the Regular Army.

6.

The Native Officers being of the same class in society and generally closely allied to a portion of the men under them have, in all mutinies aided and abetted the mutineers. They are all equally affected by the same cause, and being equally ignorant, any common ground of offence is as much a grievance to the Commissioned Officer as it is to the Private Soldier.

7.

I would continue the grade of Commissioned Officer in the Native Army; but I would appoint them from the educated and wealthier classes in the Districts where the Corps is enlisted.

On entering the Army they should be examined, and one requisite for their admission into the Service should be a knowledge of English.

Native Commissioned Officers are necessary in the Native Army as a medium of communication between the Soldier and his European Officer. They would listen with patience to the child-like complaints of the Soldier, and send him away in good humour. The European Officer might not receive him with similar patience, and he would return to his Mess dissatisfied and grumbling.

8.

I don't see any good to be derived from the substitution of an European Serjeant and Corporal in each Company in lieu of its Native Officers. It would be a waste of European Soldiers to fritter them away in Native Corps.

9.

The rates of pay are high enough to ensure excellent recruits. An increase is given after specified periods of service. I would

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

break through the old system of seniority promotion, and select men for the Non-Commissioned grades. Promotion to those grades, with good service pay and pensions, as at present given, are quite sufficient to ensure an ample supply of good recruits, and to satisfy the men when enlisted. The pay is better than they could earn at the plough, or in any of the ordinary walks of life.

10.

As a general rule, the practice of granting pensions has not, it would appear, attached the men to the Government; but the conduct of the pensioners in the monster deluge which has swept through the land, ought not to be allowed to sweep away with it our rates for pension. Without them any future Native Army must be filled with old and inefficient men.

11.

If promotion to the Native Commissioned grade is to continue as hitherto by advancement from the ranks, it ought to be by selection from the Non-Commissioned grades. Once a Commissioned Officer, the promotions ought to be made by seniority, except for some very sufficient cause it be found necessary to pass a man over in promotion, or to promote a junior for some good or gallant act.

12.

The Pension Establishment ought to be maintained as at present, both as a reward for old and well-behaved Soldiers, and as a means of draining the Army of its old and worn-out and inefficient men of every class.

13.

I have not the means of ascertaining the cost of the Pension Establishment.

14.

The questions brought before a Native Court Martial are generally very simple, and have been dealt with by the Native Officers in a satisfactory manner under the guidance of the European Superintending Officer. One advantage of a Native Court is, that they thoroughly understand the Native witnesses.

15.

European Serjeants and Corporals are picked men, and are generally far superior in professional knowledge and efficiency to the Native Commissioned Officers who are promoted by seniority.

16.

I would beg to suggest the following plan for the reorganization of the Infantry of the Bengal Army. It embraces also a Police Force.

The European Infantry to consist of Regiments organized in the same manner as the existing European Corps.

The Native Army to consist of forty Regiments of two Battalions each; these sixty Corps to be officered as at present; the 1st

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Battalion to be the active or service Battalion, and the 2nd to be employed on public duties; recruiting to be confined to the 1st Battalion, and the 2nd to be completed, as vacancies occur, by drafts of the oldest Soldiers from the 1st Battalion. The men of the 1st Battalion would thus be young and active, and fit for any duty; the 2nd Battalion would be composed of old Soldiers well trained for the duties of a Military Police. Of the forty Regiments I would propose to form—

Of Seikhs	15
„ Punjabee Mahomedans	5
„ Oudemen, Hindoos and Mahomedans ...	10
„ Beharmen, Hindoos and Mahomedans ..	5
„ Other classes... ..	5
Total	40

Besides these the Goorkhas must be kept up as at present in distinct Regiments, and located in the Hills. If this useful body of men could be increased, a few more Regiments might be added to the Army with great advantage to the State.

We should thus have for the new Army as compared with the old—

	<i>Old Army.</i>	<i>New Army.</i>
Europeans	3	20
Native Regiments, Regulars	74	40
Ditto Ditto Police	0	40
Irregular Corps that have mutinied or been disarmed	24	0
Total	101	100

The Punjab Irregular Force, and all local Corps that have not been disarmed, to be maintained as at present. The forty Native Regiments to be Officered as at present, and the Officers to be available for duty with either Battalions. Those attached to the 2nd Battalion to be limited to a Commandant, a Second in Command, and Adjutant, with Staff salaries as at present in Irregular Corps.

The 1st or Service Battalion to be always fully Officered and kept in the highest state of discipline.

Irregular Corps, with a limited number of Officers, have done excellent service at times, and never better than during the present

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

mutiny ; but it must not be argued from this that Irregular Native Corps with few Officers are better than Regular Corps with a proper complement of good and efficient Officers.

The higher the discipline the more efficient the Corps will be, and the greater the number of good European Officers with a Corps on service, the more effective will be the service rendered by that Corps. The Irregular Regiments before Delhi and at Lucknow were glad to have an addition to their established complement of Officers. Out of fourteen Officers with the 4th Punjab Regiment before Lucknow, *twelve* were wounded. The Sirmoor Battalion, the Guides, and the 1st Punjab Infantry suffered severely in Officers before Delhi.

Even with our two European Regiments, the want of Officers was greatly felt at Delhi. Several were appointed to do duty with these Corps ; but the men prefer their own Officers. They did not serve with a good will under "Sepoy Officers" as they called them.

17.

This question is answered above.

18.

Whichever system is adopted, the recruits will follow their relations wherever they may be serving. I don't think that the distinction, if made, of having no Native Commissioned Officers in the Regular Regiments, would render them less popular than Police Corps organized on a different system.

19.

I can't say.

20.

The distinct organization of the Native Armies of the three Presidencies has, without doubt, proved favorable to the existence of our power in India.

The Madras Army is as distinct in every way from that of Bengal as the Armies of any two nations of Europe.

The Bombay Army is almost as much divided from that of Bengal as the Madras one. There are some Poorbeahs in its ranks, and they keep up a communication with their homes in Oude and elsewhere. Jacob's celebrated Horse are almost all Poorbeahs. Notwithstanding this connection, the greater portion of the Bombay Army has remained staunch, even when brought into actual conflict with our own rebellious Sepoys.

I would, therefore, maintain a distinction which has proved so beneficial.

21.

After the warning we have had, I would, on no account, assimilate, or even attempt to amalgamate the three Armies ; it would be only paving the way to future and greater mutinies than that which we are now putting down.

COLONEL F. BERKELEY, C. B., COMMANDING HER MAJESTY'S 32ND LIGHT INFANTRY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.	ANSWERS.
1 to 7.	I can give no opinion on these questions.
8.	Not advisable.
9.	I can give no answer to this question.
10.	I can give no opinion on this question.
11.	Yes.
12.	I can give no opinion on this question.
14 & 15.	I can give no opinion on these questions.
16.	Battalions of six hundred men each, two to be permanently attached to each European Corps. <i>1st and 2nd—No.</i> <i>3rd—Yes.</i>
18 to 20.	I can give no opinion on these questions.
21.	I would amalgamate the three Armies under the title of the "Royal Indian Army," under one Commander-in-Chief, and assimilate and simplify the working of Corps and Detachments. I would divide the Army into three or four Corps. Local circumstances might cause a difference in the organization and composition of Regiments.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL W. MAYHEW, ADJUTANT GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

QUESTIONS.	ANSWERS.
1.	Promotion in the Army is based almost exclusively on seniority, although by regulation it should depend somewhat on merit and education; and Government, in its anxiety to secure the affections of the Sepoys, has countenanced the practice, till it has grown into a system which the general good behaviour of the Native soldiery has, to a great extent, rendered comparatively harmless.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2 to 4.

The Native Officers, in most Corps of the Line, are old and worn-out before they obtain the rank of Jemadar, and their struggle onwards for a higher rate of pension, is an incumbrance to the Service, and a pain to themselves. They are in no wise superior to the generality of the men, amongst whom they have risen merely by seniority. Old age and decrepitude have not generally been considered bars to promotion to the Commissioned grades, nor has any test or examination, as to mental or bodily fitness, been generally resorted to, where character has been respectable.

5.

Such Native Officers are not likely to weaken the influence of their European superiors; indeed every trifle in a Company is generally referred to the latter by the former, who cares not to take upon himself the responsibility and risk of deciding a case that may be reversed by his superiors.

6.

The Native Officers have apparently always been the tools rather than the leaders of their Corps, and have joined them in all the excesses they have been guilty of. In the present disorganization of the Bengal Army, but few of them appear to have been influential for good or evil, and fewer still have sided actively with their European Officers, although all of them must have been well aware of the mischief that was brooding in the ranks of every Regiment.

7.

In an Army composed on the Irregular system, such as I have suggested, Native Commissioned Officers will be necessary on the duties of a Corps; but they should be selected for superior education and intelligence and character, and never advanced in grade unless found fully equal to their position, morally and physically.

8.

Certainly, European Serjeants and Corporals would be a bad substitute for Native Officers in a Corps. It is with great difficulty that we have managed to secure two good Staff Serjeants to a Native Regiment, and I apprehend that such an experiment, on a larger scale, would be found impracticable, and that these men would have no weight.

9 & 10.

The first question has been disposed of, and the inefficiency of every bond, whether of pay, pension or honors, to secure the fidelity of the Native Army, has been proved beyond a doubt by the rebellion still prevailing generally in its ranks.

11.

Most certainly, as I have said before.

12.

The whole system of pensions, as a *right*, should be withdrawn from the Native Soldier, and he should be very distinctly taught, that in future they will be granted solely as *rewards* for

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

merit and efficient service, and the sooner this is proclaimed the better, as I fear a misconception on this point prevails in the Native Army now arising in every quarter.

13.

I have not the means of answering this question.

14.

Not one Native Officer in a hundred has any acquaintance with the system on which trial by Courts Martial is based. In their own Corps they generally prejudge a case, and are obstinate in adhering to their opinion, however opposed to the evidence produced, and they finally conform, solely at the instigation of the European Officers on the Court, to a legal judgment.

15.

Certainly not generally at present.

16.

The organization which prevails in the Regiments of Khelat-i-Ghilzie, Loodianah and Ferozepore, is the best adapted to a Native Army, such as I have proposed to reconstruct. European Officers can be lent to such a Corps when required for field service, and at other times the full complement of Native Officers would, under the supervision of its European Staff, be fully equal to its discipline and various duties in Cantonments.

17.

Not applicable.

18.

If Commissions, with present rates of pay and advantages, be given to the Irregular and Police Corps, and denied to the Regular Corps, and good service pay and pensions substituted, of course the former Service will offer the greatest advantages and be the most popular.

19.

Not applicable.

20 & 21.

The distinct organization of the Armies of the three Presidencies is beneficial to the security of the British power over so extended a Territory, and amongst such various tribes, all of whom are closely attached to their homes and customs, I conceive that amalgamation would be impracticable. Indeed, the Bombay Army has at present a larger admixture of the Bengal element than is desirable, and the fidelity of these Troops has, in consequence, been more than suspected during this rebellion.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL C. DAVIDSON, RESIDENT AT HYDERABAD.

HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

On merit and seniority combined with efficiency.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 2.** Yes, as far as the duties at present required from them extend.
- 3.** No.
- 4.** They are expected to read and write, and have a knowledge of the elements of drill.
- 5.** No reply required.
- 6.** There has been no general mutiny of any Infantry Corps of the Contingent, during the forty years it has been in existence. On a late occasion, when a portion of a Cavalry Corps of the Contingent mutinied, the conduct of two or three men of the Infantry implicated was brought to notice by the Native Officers, and the good conduct of the Regiment was attributed to the fidelity of the Native Officers, who decidedly took the side of the European Officers.
- 7 to 9.** No replies required.
- 10.** No ; the Native Soldiery act so much on impulse, that they are reckless of the sacrifice of their pensions.
- 11.** The promotion by seniority is most objectionable ; promotion should be made solely for merit and efficiency.
- 12.** The pensions should be retained.
- 13.** About Company's Rupees 99,176 per annum.
- 14.** Yes, to a certain extent. *Vide* answer to question 3 under the head of "Military Code."
- 15 & 16.** No replies required.
- 17.** An European Officer to command and a Native Commissioned Officer to every hundred men.
- 18.** No reply required.
- 19.** None.
- 20 & 21.** No replies required.

MAJOR G. W. WILLIAMS, SUPERINTENDENT OF POLICE BATTALION, N. W. P.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. On seniority; - hence the noted inefficiency of the superior grades.
2. With rare exceptions, useless and inefficient.
3. On a par; but on attaining the higher grades they become indifferent; old age overtakes them ere they reach the coveted rank of Native Officers, by them considered a post of ease and indolence.
4. I believe not; it required a strong case against the senior to set aside his claim, and was considered by the men an infringement of their rights.
5. The Native Officers on the late system were rather a hinderance; a few Europeans judiciously selected are, I think, preferable to many of the former.
6. I believe there have been rare instances where information was given, and support afforded their Officers; but as a body they sided with the mutineers.
7. I would discontinue them, if the Army is not to be broken up, as heretofore, into small Detachments. The grade of Jemadar might be retained, if individuals for that rank be selected for smartness and efficiency.
8. I should say yes, and propose Serjeants for the Military Police in lieu of Subadars.
9. I think there would be no difficulty in getting recruits for a limited Native Army. Graduated scale of good service pay would suffice. I would only give pensions for special cases, such as distinguished conduct in the field, or perhaps for a long period of uninterrupted good conduct.
10. No. I however imagine simply because the Native Army believed the British Government and with it all pensions, &c., were at an end.
11. If Native Officers be retained, all promotions from the Private upwards should be for merit and efficiency only. *Vide* Rule 24th.
Promotions must not go by seniority, but be given to the most deserving and best qualified parties.
12. They might be greatly modified or even abolished, as stated in reply 9th; in certain special cases pensions might be given. In

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the Dacoity Department a Chund Fund is established which works well ; a like system is proposed for the Military Police.

13.

I cannot state the exact amount ; but a very great draw on the State doubtless and I believe abused.

14.

Generally speaking unfit. They have no voice, and are ruled by the Superintending Officer.

The Native Court of Requests especially proved their unfitness for duties of this nature.

15.

Not on a par certainly ; but I believe European Serjeants and Corporals are chosen for their intelligence and efficiency.

16.

Premising that Corps consist of six Companies, 80 men strong, each Company formed of a distinct tribe or caste with European Serjeants in place of Subadars, I would suggest a complement of Officers as follows—A Commandant, Second in Command and Adjutant, all carefully selected for their knowledge of Native character and energetic habits.

17.

Whilst the Police take all Civil and Military duties, a full complement of Officers and Men are needed. Divisional Police Battalions of Horse and Foot, consisting of 2,000 to 2,500, according to the respective wants of Districts, with 12 European Officers, have sufficed to restore order ; peace and tranquillity once re-established, the number of Officers and Men can be somewhat reduced.

18.

I have suggested that the Native Corps be on the same footing as the Irregular. The Regular Army of India would, I imagine, be the European.

19.

At present there exists no test, owing to the urgent demand of Police, for immediate employ. Promotions hitherto have been awarded only for smartness and efficiency. It is, however, without doubt desirable that the higher grades should read and write.

20.

I am not able to answer this question ; but I should say the more diversity of opposing interest the less likelihood of combination. I think the general belief that the British rule was at an end made many Regiments fall. What would have been the result at any of the other Presidencies of a like out-break as that of Meerut, where the rebels, in the face of a large body of Europeans, escaped unpunished, it is difficult to say. Mutiny effected with impunity, especially in a mercenary Army, is naturally infectious.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

21.

I would not endeavor to amalgamate, nor even assimilate the three Armies. Whilst with General Campbell at Malligaum, I saw one of the best of the Bombay Regiments, and though the Bengal Army might take a lesson from others, each Presidency, I think, requires its own particular system.

CAPTAIN H. SHAKESPEAR, COMMANDING NAGPORE IRREGULAR FORCE.

NAGPORE IRREGULAR FORCE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

On merit and seniority combined.

2.

Yes.

3.

Yes.

4.

Yes, Commanding Officers examine the Non-Commissioned for the Commissioned grade, and recommend for promotion those only who can stand the test; but from one Commissioned grade to another, general proficiency and good character rule in making the recommendation.

5 to 9.

No replies required.

10.

Certainly, inasmuch as the Troops have throughout this mutiny remained faithful.

11.

Merit and efficiency should be the rule, which indeed it virtually is now.

12.

The system of pensions, as far as the amount, should be strictly maintained, for indeed such is guaranteed by the Government to the late Rajah's Troops. I am of opinion, however, that a man should be enabled to claim the pension of his rank after thirty years' service, irrespective altogether of the opinion of a Medical Committee as to his efficiency for further service. Such indeed would be a bond of attachment between the Soldier and Government.

13.

Rupees 77,000 annually. This sum is chiefly paid to Native Officers and Men of the late Rajah's Army.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

Yes.

15 & 16.

No replies required.

17.

The only Police Corps with which I am acquainted in the province is the Moolkee Horse, numbering seven hundred sabres, Officers and Men, in five Troops. In raising the Nagpore Irregular Force in October 1854, the above Moolkee Horse were formed by me from the five Regiments of Cavalry in the service of the late Rajah, and made over to the Civil powers for service in the different Districts. I would recommend that a European Commandant and Adjutant be appointed, and that they be assimilated, with respect to the Native Commissioned grades, to those of the Regiments of Nagpore Irregular Cavalry, not, however, decreasing the pay of present incumbents, some of whom might, indeed, soon be pensioned. Should it appear proper to Government, this Police Corps might be placed under the Command of the Commandant of this Force.

18.

No reply required.

19.

I cannot say.

20 & 21.

No replies required.

 OUDE COMMITTEE

OUDE POLICE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 16.

No reply.

17.

1 Chief of Police.
 1 Assistant Ditto.
 4 Divisional Commandants.
 4 Ditto Second in Command.
 4 Ditto Adjutants.
 8 District Commandants.
 8 Ditto Adjutants.

18.

No reply.

19.

Not as yet.

OUDE COMMITTEE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. As a rule in seniority, exception very rare.
2. You have the usual proportion under a seniority system.
3. No, rules for promotion being seniority.
4. No.
5. No.
2nd—No.
6. None, mutineers very frequently.
7. Continued.
8. No.
9. Graduated scale, in addition to Native Officers, is good.
10. No.
11. Decidedly.
12. Modified.
13. No reply.
14. No.
15. Cannot be compared.
16. 1st and 2nd.—Irregular.
3rd.—Yes.
- 17 to 19. No reply.
20. Certainly.
21. Assimilation would be destructive.

G. PLOWDEN, Esquire, COMMISSIONER OF NAGPORE

NAGPORE IRREGULAR FORCE.

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

1. On merit and seniority combined.

2. Yes.

3. Yes.

4. Yes, Commanding Officers examine the Non-Commissioned for the Commissioned grade, and recommend for promotion those only who can stand the test, but from one Commissioned grade to another, general proficiency and good character rule in making the recommendation.

10. Certainly, inasmuch as the Troops have throughout this mutiny remained faithful.

I conclude that it cannot be doubted that retiring pensions must greatly, if not chiefly, conduce to attaching the Native Troops to the British Service.

11. Merit and efficiency should be the rule, which indeed it virtually is now.

I agree with the Officer Commanding. Promotion for merit and efficiency should be the rule, the preference being given to the senior only when he is on a par in merit and efficiency.

12. The system of pensions, as far as the amount, should be strictly maintained, for indeed such is guaranteed by the Government to the late Rajah's Troops. I am of opinion, however, that a man should be enabled to claim the pension of his rank after thirty years' service, irrespective altogether of the opinion of a Medical Com-

The system of granting pensions should be maintained, but the Rules might be abolished.

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner of Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

mittee as to his efficiency for further service. Such, indeed, would be a bond of attachment between the Soldier and Government.

13.

Rupees 77,000 annually. This sum is chiefly paid to Native Officers and Men of the late Rajah's Army.

The proportion of charge on account of Officers and Men of the disbanded Army of the late Government is Rupees 63,237 annually. The charge on account of the Nagpore Irregular Force is only Rupees 10,820. The total charge against this Province, including Rupees 1,307 on account of the Military Pensions of the late Government, is Rupees 74,564.

14.

Yes.

17.

The only Police Corps with which I am acquainted in the Province is the Moolkee Horse, numbering seven hundred sabres, Officers and Men, in five Troops. In raising the Nagpore Irregular Force in October 1854, the above Moolkee Horse were formed by me from the five Regiments of Cavalry in the service of the late Rajah, and made over to Civil powers for service in the different Districts. I would recommend that a European Commandant and Adjutant be appointed, and that they be assimilated, with respect to the Native Commissioned grades, to those of the Regiments of the Nagpore Irregular Cavalry, not, however, decreasing the pay of

The present strength and pay of a Rissalah of Moolkee Horse is as follows :—

1 Rissaldar	300
1 Naib Ditto.....	100
2 Jemadars, at 45 each	90
6 Duffadars, „ 28 „	168
6 Naib Ditto „ 25 „	150
1 Nugarchee	25
1 Trumpeter.....	25
1 Nissanchee	25
1 Farrier	25
120 Sowars, at 20 each ...	2,400
	<hr/>
	3,308
	5
	<hr/>
Total per mensem for 5	
Rissalahs ...	16,540
	12
	<hr/>
Total per annum ...	1,98,480
	<hr/>

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner of Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

present incumbents, some of whom might, indeed, soon be pensioned. Should it appear proper to Government, this Police Corps might be placed under the Command of the Commandant of this Force.

I am about to propose that the 5 Rissalahs be formed into a single Regiment of 5 Troops, of 100 Sowars to a Troop, to be officered and paid as follows, in assimilation, as much as possible, to Mounted Police elsewhere, and placed under the inspection of the Commandant of the Nagpore Irregular Force :—

1 Commandant	800
1 Second in Command...	500
1 Adjutant	450
5 Rissaldars at 150 each	750
5 Naib Ditto „ 75 „	375
5 Jemadars „ 50 „	250
20 Duffadars „ 31 „	620
20 Naib Ditto „ 28 „	560
5 Trumpeters „ 30 „	150
500 Sowars „ 25 „	12,500
—	—
563	16,955
—	12
Total per annum ...	2,03,460
Deduct present cost...	1,98,480
	—
Increase ...	4,980
	—

But if the pay of the European Officers, and the addition to the pay of the Sowars, which charges are increased in all other Corps of Police Horse, be deducted, the result shows not an increase of Rupees 4,980, but a saving of Rupees 46,020 per annum.

19.

I cannot say.

Yes, as far as at present practicable. On the change in the Government a certain number of men having to be provided for, more with reference to their wants and previous positions than with

Reply of the Officer Commanding the Nagpore Irregular Force.

Reply of the Commissioner of Nagpore Province.

QUESTIONS.

any special regard to their actual capabilities or qualifications, the Authorities have, to a certain extent, had their hands tied in this respect; but as vacancies occur amongst the higher grades, every endeavour is made to secure the services of those best qualified for advancement.

E. A. READE, Esq., CIVIL SERVICE, AGRA.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

- A Commandant for the whole Division.
- A second in Command* for the same.
- An Adjutant for the same.
- A Sub-Commandant for each District.
- A Subaltern Adjutant for the same.
- A Serjeant Major for each District.
- A Serjeant, European or East Indian, or a Subadar, Native, for each Company.
- A Jemadar for each Company.

18.

If Native Regular Corps are retained in the Army, I do not see how Native Commissioned Officers can be dispensed with; but even if it were so, the good service pay and pensions and distinctions would, I conceive, always make the Army sufficiently attractive to ensure its obtaining, under good supervision, as good men as Police Battalions.

But at present it must be remembered there is much and universal doubt whether pensions will be continued by the British Government. Vast numbers have been forfeited, and many, it is to be apprehended, have lapsed by non-attendance, though in the case of veterans especially, the journey would be hardly safe going, and wholly unsafe returning. Confidence must be required before this question can be practically answered.

19.

I am not aware of any at present; there has not been time as yet. I am of opinion that literary tests are not desirable. The capability to read and write should be encouraged, but the inability should not bar promotion.

* Also Sub-Commandant of the Head Quarters District.

H. B. E. FRERE, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER IN SCINDE.

SCINDE POLICE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 16.

No replies required.

17.

The present number of European Officers is hardly sufficient. There should be one Captain and one Lieutenant or Adjutant of Police in each of the three Divisions, and a Superintendent with an Assistant, over the whole Province. The European Officers should be generally taken from the Army; but Uncovenanted Officers, if otherwise fit, should not be excluded.

The Native Officers should be, as at present, promoted at the discretion of the Captain and Superintendent, from the ranks of the Police; their pay at present is too low and should be raised.

18.

I should say decidedly not. Native Officers are, in my opinion, absolutely essential in any Military body composed of Natives.

19.

There is no test beyond what the Captain and Lieutenant of Police may choose to impose. The selection rests entirely with them, and I do not think it could be in better hands.

20 & 21.

No replies required.

H. B. E. FRERE, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER IN SCINDE.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

On merit and seniority combined. The senior who is thoroughly qualified is generally taken, but simple seniority and merely blameless service confer no insuperable claim.

2.

I should say remarkably so. They are, as a body, excellent Officers.

3.

Yes, as far as I have seen they are very generally much superior to the average of the ranks from which they rise.

4.

None that I know of. The man's character, as known to his European Officers, is the test.

5.

As far as my observation goes, I should say, the intervention of the Native Officers between the European Officers and their men, greatly added to, if it be not essential to the full influence of

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

good European Officers. I cannot see how the legitimate influence of the European Officer could be communicated to the men, generally without the intervention of the Native Officers.

I should think a full complement of European Officers must militate against the professional efficiency of the Native Commissioned Officers. The best managed Regiments I have known, have generally been those in which the complement of European Officers was far from complete. There is not occupation with a Native Corps of the Bombay Army in time of peace for more than 3 or 4 Officers, and if more are present, they not only take work which is better left to, because it is better done by Native Officers ; but deteriorate themselves for want of full employment.

I believe it is different in the Madras Army where the system affords more occupation to the European Officer without interfering with the Native Officers.

6.

In all the cases, 3 in number, in Scinde, which came under my personal observation, the Native Officers gave information of the disaffection of their men. In each case the information was given in time to prevent a successful rising, and in at least one case, it was given long before hand, and in such a manner as admitted of every precaution being taken.

In none of these cases did any of the Native Officers openly side with the mutineers ; but some were suspected of secretly conniving at their plot.

In the Scinde Horse, under great and continued temptation, the Native Officers behaved with exemplary fidelity as well as intelligence. No mutiny took place where they were quartered ; but they aided to obtain information of an intended rising of the Frontier Tribes, and to arrest the ring-leaders exactly as European Officers with the same opportunities might have done. In their own ranks there never was a single case of even well-grounded suspicion of want of fidelity in either Officers or men, and their simple presence kept to its duty another notoriously disaffected Corps of Bengal Irregular Cavalry which was quartered at the same place.

7.

I consider it essential to the very existence of a useful Native Army that Native Officers should be continued very much as at present, but they should be differently treated.

The number of European Officers with a Native Corps should be diminished, they should be all selected men. The work of Officers

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

of Companies should all be done by the Native Officers, and they should not be the puppets of a formal system of Drill and paper returns.

8.

I should say that unless the Serjeant and Corporal were fully equal to most European Commissioned Officers, the effects of such an arrangement would be fatal to the Native Army, and even if they were so qualified the arrangement would be mischievous in the extreme.

I entirely concur with what has been recorded by many eminent authorities, and especially by General Jacob, as to the absolute necessity if we would keep India, that we should allow none but educated European gentlemen in feeling and principles, and if possible, by birth and station, to have any immediate connection as Officers with our Native Army, and no more of them than can be supplied with full and responsible employment.

The substitution of two European Non-Commissioned Officers for the Native Officers of each Company would, if the Europeans were not superior to the generality of that class at present, exclude all the best Native Soldiers from our ranks, and add infinitely to the hostility of race, of which we have lately had so many symptoms, and which unless corrected, must lead to irreparable mischief and disaster.

I can conceive few single measures better calculated speedily and irretrievably to ruin our Native Army, and however individually excellent the Europeans may be, it is morally and physically impossible that they should ever supply the place which the present race of Native Officers fills in the Bombay Army, by forming a link between the European Commissioned Officer and his men.

But while they would not form such a substitute for what we have got, even if fully equal as Officers and gentlemen to our present race of Commissioned Officers, they would in other ways be a very mischievous superfluity. There is not work enough to afford full regular occupation for even one active-minded European in a well disciplined Company of Natives, and the 2 Europeans must, like all half-idle men, become actively mischievous to an extent directly proportioned to their capacity for fuller employment.

9.

I should think certainly not. Our best Native Officers and Soldiers do not serve simply for pay, but for distinction, and would not enter at all if debarred promotion to posts of influence and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

honor. I do not think, from all I can learn, that good service pay and pension, at all influence men till they have been some time in the service. They have a great effect in deciding the old Soldier to serve on or to retire; and in influencing his conduct while such rewards are in near prospect. I should much doubt if they ever influence a recruit, as the prospect of promotion to honorable office certainly does.

10.

They have no doubt had a considerable effect; but I think we impair that effect by giving the pension indiscriminately, and as a right to good and bad Soldiers indifferently, and on Medical examination, which gives rise to much maligning.

11.

I should say yes, assuredly.

12.

I think no pensions should be given as matter of right. They should be given at the recommendation of the Commanding Officer to men of a certain age, and of approved service, when disabled by loss of health, or worn out in the service. Instead of the present matter of course pension, I would propose that after a certain number of years of good service, the Soldier should, if he wished it, and if his Commanding Officer approved, be absolved from further ordinary duty, continuing to receive a certain portion of his pay, on condition that he presents himself for muster periodically at the fixed Head Quarters of the Regiment, does duty there at a slightly enhanced rate of pay for a number of days in each year, sufficient to keep up his drill, and is ready to be called out for permanent garrison duty when summoned by proclamation, becoming eligible for pension and exemption from further service when fairly worn out.

The benefits I should expect from such a system would be,

1st.— Some reduction in the expense of the Pension List.

2nd.— A reduction in the number of men necessary for the peace establishment of a Regiment.

3rd.— We should have always at hand a Force of old Soldiers sufficient with a few recruits to take much garrison duty, and set free for distant service, a large and very efficient proportion of our Army on the active establishment.

I have always seen reason to believe that pensions, when fairly earned and given with discrimination to men who have given the best part of their lives to the State, have a very beneficial effect, and that the money is well laid out, and this belief has

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

been in no way modified by the fact, apparently well attested, that large numbers of pensioners in the North-Western Provinces behaved as badly and some even worse than the general run of mutinous Soldiers. The classes whence they were drawn, their habits and feelings, were all identical with those of the Sepoys, and it was even less matter of surprise that a pensioner should misbehave than a man in active service. Old servants, whether of the State, or private individuals, are proverbially discontented. It is notorious that the inhabitants of Chelsea and Greenwich Hospitals are, as a body, less content with their position, than their brethren on active service.

But we must look for the effect of the pension, not to the Pensioner, but to the expectant, and on the public at large. Whatever fault a Native may find with our Government, he generally makes some exceptions grounded on the liberality and the good faith of our Government in this matter, and I much doubt if the same effect would be produced were the amount of the Pension List added to the pay of men on active service. I think it a mistake to judge of the effect of pensions, or any similar arrangement, from what occurs during an exceptional period, like that of the late mutinies. It was unmistakeably a period of national delerium, and it is not the best mode of guarding against a recurrence of the paroxysm to treat the patient as though his delirious ravings and acts were any guide to his ordinary course of conduct when in his sober senses.

13.

I am not aware of the exact amount.

14.

I should say they were generally proportionately as well qualified for such duty as the Officers of any other Army I know. I have occasionally obtained their assistance as assessors on civil trials, and have always had reason to be satisfied with their efficiency.

15.

I should say generally that, in professional intelligence, the Native Commissioned Officers were, as a body, very much superior to the general run of European Non-Commissioned Officers, and for duty with Natives, very conspicuously superior in efficiency; sometimes, as in the Scinde Irregular Horse, they seem to me even better fitted for detached duty than great numbers of English Commissioned Officers.

I have no doubt whatever that, as far as Regimental duties go, Native Officers are to be got for our Indian Army, as efficient generally as any large number of European Officers we could spare for such duty. It is as Commanding Officers that the superiority of the selected European is very decided.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

16.

I should say—

1st.—That the separation of Military from Police Corps was imperative.

2nd.—That every Native Regiment should be Officered on the 3rd of the plans above alluded to, with a full complement of Native Commissioned Officers, and with, not more than three or four European Officers, all of them selected men. There are few things connected with India, regarding which I feel more strongly convinced, than that this is the least costly because it is the most efficient mode of Officering Native Regiments.

17.

Fully with Native Officers, and from one to three European Officers according to the character of the people and the work to be done.

18.

Having expressed an opinion above, adverse to any such scheme, I need only add that I do not think any possible amount of good service pay and pension would make the Regular as popular as the Irregular Corps, or draw to them as good recruits.

19.

I believe not. It is, as far as I know, left entirely to Commanding Officers of Police Corps to impose or withdraw such tests. Any such test, if rigorously applied, must exclude some of the best natural born Policemen.

20.

I believe it has been one of the main causes of our safety lately. I do not see how, if the three Armies had been assimilated, the late mutiny could have been otherwise than universal, and India, for the time at least, must have been lost to us.

I am convinced few things can be more dangerous to our power than compulsory uniformity.

21.

I think that all such individual peculiarities as indicate individual character should not only be allowed but encouraged. I cannot imagine any really healthy organization existing without them.

Whenever the Local Government recommended any peculiar arrangement on the ground of its being called for by temporary or local circumstances, the presumption should always be that they had good grounds for so thinking, and the point should always be conceded, unless some very clear and obviously valid objection could be stated. The reverse of this has been our usual policy. The peculiarity may not be in truth really necessary in

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

itself, but it is an absolutely necessary symptom of that which distinguishes the separate individual from the lifeless copy—and its removal destroys individuality. It must be borne in mind that there is no such thing as stereotyping any branch of the administration of human affairs, least of all is such a process possible in the organization of an Army. Thirty years of profound peace may, and often has, changed the best Army of the age into a set of lifeless automata easily defeated by any rabble which had the individual spirit and other characteristics of a living body. It may be fairly doubted whether any great General ever found his Army ready-made to his hand. Re-organization more or less in accordance with his own personal views and temporary exigencies has usually been his first task.

But though no Army can maintain its perfection for more than a few years, and constant change for the better or the worse is as much a law of nature in Armies as in all other human contrivances, much may be done to defer decay, and to keep up in time of peace that spirit and martial pride, that fidelity to a particular dynasty or service, and those other characteristics which will be most useful when the Army comes to be re-modelled to suit some future exigency. All assimilation, no matter how perfect a model, which aims at removing individual peculiarities, has a tendency to injure such characteristics of vitality, and consequently to hasten decay.

There are in my opinion but very few points in which diversity of system causes any practical inconvenience, even when the diverse bodies are serving together. Diversity of organization or composition is of comparative little consequence, if each separate body be large and commanded by its own Officers, and I can think of no points save the rates of pay for similar Arms, the mode of promotion of Officers likely to command, and the general principle of formation in the field, in which diversity can be of real practical inconvenience, and regarding which assimilation is desirable.

I cannot but think that any attempt to assimilate the Indian Armies to each other, beyond those points in which diversity is of practical importance in the field, must hasten the deterioration of the whole body.

The course I would, in preference, most strongly recommend is the direct reverse to assimilation and amalgamation. The unwieldy size of our Bengal Native Army was no doubt one element of its ruin by precluding any Officer, but more especially the Commander-in-Chief, with his five years tenure of Office from gaining even a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

general knowledge of the whole body. It seems to me that our Indian Forces should be re-divided into at least four, if not more Armies, so as to admit of a really active Commander-in-Chief gaining a general knowledge of the whole body under his Command, and the utmost latitude in organization should be allowed to local authorities within the limits imposed by a due regard for the finances of the Empire.

Even with regard to the three points on which I admit assimilation to be in some respects desirable, there are exceptions and limitations so numerous as almost to negative the rule. For instance, it is doubtless desirable that the rates of pay for similar Arms should be in some respects similar, yet this must be subject to many local variations. Every Military man knows the inconvenience of having the same rate of pay for service in an expensive Presidency Town, and at a cheap out-station. The best Military races in India who will serve for Rupees 7 in the Valley of the Ganges or at the Nizam's Hyderabad, will not voluntarily take service in Scinde on Rupees 10, and the Irregular Cavalry Soldier who finds Rupees 20 enough for himself and his horse in one part of India, would starve on 30 in another. It is only, therefore, when different bodies of the same Arm are serving together in the same place, that uniformity should be insisted on.

So in the promotions of Officers likely to Command, a system, say that of seniority, which might answer admirably for Engineers or Artillery, might fail to secure in Cavalry that youthful vigor and dash required for a good Captain of a Troop. Again, a system which secures the flower of our aristocracy for Her Majesty's household Troops, might fail to secure good Officers for distant and inconspicuous service in a tropical climate. Even with regard to formation in the Field, much allowance must be made for national character.

The formation which suits the steady and enduring English Soldier is not equally liked by the impetuous Frenchman. The diversities of national character in our Indian Army are at least as great as among the nations of Europe, and the Oude or Sikh Sepoy, the Affredee and the Goorka, have each their favorite mode of fighting, and some of them must act to disadvantage if all are compelled to adopt one uniform mode of formation.

PRECIS
OF THE
REPLIES TO THE QUESTIONS ON INFANTRY
EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

QUESTIONS.

1.

ANSWERS.

THE Commander-in-Chief's reply is—"They have been diminished practically, though not avowedly. Commanding Officers have been much hampered with regard to promotions, and Courts Martial sentences, approved and carried out by them, have been constantly upset, either in consequence of petitions to Head Quarters, or owing to flaws discovered in proceedings. The Deputy Judge Advocates of Divisions are principally employed in endeavouring to discover mistakes in Regimental Courts Martial, in which they are often successful. Then again, a Commanding Officer sees his best Officers often withdrawn for Staff employ when he can ill spare them. At other times, the bad Officer who has set him at defiance and neglected his duty, is taken away, without the Commanding Officer being consulted. All these things tend to weaken a Commanding Officer's authority, and are believed to have increased of late years."

The Punjab Committee are of opinion that "the powers of Commanding Officers have certainly been diminished for many years, till it had become a standing complaint in the Regular Native Army; but this seems to have been effected not so much by actual orders and measures, as by the changing practice of the service; by a gradual interference at Army Head Quarters with the internal economy and discipline of Regiments, and the consequent centralization of influence not in the Commandant of the Regiment, but in the Adjutant General and Commander-in-Chief. Rewards and punishments are the two great sources of a Commanding Officer's influence over his men; and both seem to have been almost taken out of his hands. The principle of seniority promotion has been so hedged in, watched and enforced, (even by such a professed Military reformer as Sir Charles Napier, whose General Order on the subject is the strangest on record,) that practically the Commanding Officer had no discretion whatever and promoted the Senior on the Roll

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

"rather than enter upon a vain struggle to prefer a better man.
 "No doubt the Sepoys as a body liked this. It gave every man in
 "the Regiment, whether fit or unfit, a vested right in the upper
 "ranks, to which a system of merit promotion would only have
 "admitted the most efficient. The one system only asked them
 "to live, the other would call upon them to exert themselves.
 "The Regimental Commandant was interested in superseding the
 "inefficient; and the influence found a readiness at Head Quar-
 "ters to believe injustice had been committed. One or two such
 "unsuccessful struggles after better things, disheartened the most
 "zealous Commanding Officer, who gradually lapsed into indiffer-
 "ence, leaving the Regiment to the undisturbed enjoyment of its
 "vested rights, its life without emulation, its poor opinion of the
 "Colonel, and its reverence for the central institutions. Nor was
 "more discretion left to the Commandant in the matter of punish-
 "ments. The authority given him, by Article of War 112, is
 "altogether inadequate to the control and discipline of a merce-
 "nary Regiment. His powers of summary punishment were so
 "small as to be ridiculous. He could neither flog for insubordi-
 "nation, nor dismiss for general bad character. He could not
 "give extra duty to the negligent Soldier, nor refuse furlough to
 "an habitual offender. He could not send a Non-Commission-
 "ed Officer to drill, nor reduce him, without formal trial, and
 "he was even prohibited from confining one before trial, and
 "required to put him simply under arrest. When to all these
 "restrictions is added the facility of direct appeal through the
 "Post Office, by any Sepoy to the Commander-in-Chief, and
 "even the reception of anonymous petitions, we can understand
 "how such a system in course greatly undermined the legitimate
 "influence of the Commanding Officers, and gradually reduced
 "them to the cyphers they were found to be in 1857."

There is great unanimity as to the fact of the gradual dimi-
 nution of the powers of Commanding Officers, but the foregoing
 quotation of the opinion of the Punjab Committee comprises so
 clearly the main points advanced by the other authorities consult-

Lieut.-Col. Macpherson.
 Brigadier Farquharson.

" Coke.
 " Steel.
 " Troup.

Colonel Burn.
 Major Williams.
 Sir S. Cotton.
 Sir J. Hearsey.
 Sir J. Hope Grant.
 OUDH COMMITTEE.

ed (marginally noted), that it will only
 be necessary to complement the above
 summary by adding a few observations
 on the part of Regimental Officers of
 long experience with Native Troops, and
 of others whose opportunities of watch-

ing the system have also been considerable.

Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson, after sketching the oscilla-

QUESTIONS,

ANSWERS.

tions of increase and decrease in the powers of Commanding Officers, remarks that there can be no doubt that the attempts made to rule and govern the Sepoy, as if he were a British Soldier, have caused a great deal of hurtful and unnecessary interference with the Commanding Officer's authority, even in trivial matters. He quotes a case in which a Sepoy, of indifferent character, had his furlough stopped, because he was in debt and his creditors objected. The man petitioned against this, and Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson states that it was ruled in the Judge Advocate's department that the Commanding Officer was not justified in stopping mere debtor's leave. Very good law, but a very bad way of ruling a Sepoy in Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson's opinion.

Brigadier Farquharson notes among other proceedings, derogatory to the authority and influence of Commanding Officers, the promotion of men not recommended by them. Brigadier Steel, noting, like others, the restrictions as to promotion and punishments, considers, like Lieutenant Colonel Macpherson, that general assimilation to the rules in Her Majesty's Service proved prejudicial.

Brigadier Coke states that the powers of Commanding Officers were diminished to such an extent as to have been, in his opinion, one of the principle causes of bringing about the Mutiny. After touching on the abolition of corporal punishment, the abrogation of the power to discharge Soldiers unfit to remain in the service, of the power to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers to the ranks, and of the discretion to promote save by seniority, he adds, the having men sent back to them who had been dismissed as unfit men, and even by sentence of Regimental Courts Martial, on their presenting petitions to Head Quarters, and the general feeling engendered by these and other similar acts, that the Commanding Officer was helpless to punish or reward. Sir J. Hearsey dates a constant diminution of the powers of Commanding Officers since the half batta question, and considers that Government and the Commander-in-Chief have usurped the powers of Commanding Officers, who can neither punish nor reward.

Sir S. Cotton notes the facilities of appeal given to Sepoys, and the notorious manner in which they congregate at Simla, to present petitions to the Commander-in-Chief, and the numerous instances in which Sepoys dismissed by Regimental Courts Martial have subsequently been reinstated.

The timidity which has prevented corporal punishment and solitary imprisonment from being really carried out in the Native Army, and the quickness of the Sepoys to take advantage of such

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

indecision; the rigid adherence to promotion by seniority; the incompetency of Officers, in consequence of old age to command their Regiments, observing that in eight Regiments in the Peshawur Division, he had not three who were able to command their Corps efficiently. The lenity with which various acts of misconduct, all more or less bordering on Mutiny, were on several occasions dealt with, in consequence of which the Sepoys ceased to hold the power of the Government, and much less the authority of his Military superiors in dread; unable to appreciate such leniency, men who, under their own systems of Government, would have been ruled with a rod of iron, lost the awe necessary to the preservation of discipline in a large Army. Sir J. Hope Grant likewise admits the gradual reduction of the powers of Commanding Officers since 1806, and adverts to the Sepoys being directly *en rapport* with Army Head Quarters.

Brigadier Troup's summary touches on some additional points, and may be given in his own words, where, after noting the almost total abolition of corporal punishment, the abrogation of powers of discipline, and the almost compulsory seniority promotion, he adds to the catalogue,—“The withdrawal of the privilege of granting letters to Soldiers having Civil suits, and of leave beyond that for a month to Officers or Soldiers, the withdrawal of the power of franking Soldier's letters, the order regarding good conduct pay and badges, by which a bad man, if he show a clean sheet for one year, was necessarily rewarded; the new rules of Courts of Requests, by which a Soldier could get irremediably in debt in defiance of both his Captain and Commanding Officer; the increased number of detached guards; the constant references required on every point; the interference on the part of the different Departments, especially the pay and audit; all and each rendering the Commanding Officer and his Captains of Companies perfect cyphers, without the means of rewarding good, or effectually and readily punishing bad characters.” After which he proceeds to observe upon the system of withdrawing Officers for Staff and Civil employment, without reference to the Commanding Officer's opinion, in terms very much like those used by His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief.

Major General Birch gives an analysis of the past and present powers of Commanding Officers, under the three heads of primitive powers, independently of Courts Martial powers in confirming sentences of Courts Martial and power to reward.

It appears that before 1828, Commanding Officers exercised discretionary powers not authoritatively conferred, such as dismissal of Native Soldiers, reduction of Non-Commissioned Officers, chas-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

tisement with the rattan, extra drill and duty, refusal of furlough. On the 1st September 1828, the standing orders, compiled by order of Lord Combermere, limited the discretion to discharge Sepoys, and Commanding Officers were declared to have no power to dismiss men as a punishment for offences committed. Article 2 of the Articles of War of 1845, enacted by law that which was before established by Regulations of the Army, and for upwards of 30 years had been the rule. But the revised Code of Regulations for the Army published in 1855, take away from Commanding Officers the power to discharge men physically unfit for the service, which had been left them in 1828. Major General Birch states that the old Articles of War (those in force from 1796 to 1845), did not touch the point of the reduction of Non-Commissioned Officers, and that there was no recognized authority for Commanding Officers inflicting this punishment; one that now (Article 110) can only be awarded by sentence of Court Martial, or by order of the Commander-in-Chief of the Presidency.

Major General Birch points out that in the old Articles of 1796, except in one clause empowering Commanding Officers to punish Non-Commissioned Officers and Soldiers not in quarters or camp by beat of retreat, no allusion was made to minor punishments; the same in the Regulations of 1828. In those of 1855, chastisement with the rattan was strictly prohibited. He then quotes Article 112, which defines the powers of Commanding Officers in minor punishments; and remarks that the Regulations of 1855 follow up this Article by prohibiting extra duty as a punishment, and declaring no punishment to be legal that is not specified in the Article. He then adverts to a G. O. by the C.-in-C. of the 16th October 1854, as greatly interfering with the power of Commanding Officers.

Upon the second subject, the powers of Commanding Officers in confirming the sentences of Courts Martial, it appears from Major General Birch's analysis that from 1796 to 1818, there was no restriction. That from the 6th November 1818 the supervision of the proceedings of inferior Courts Martial by General Officers Commanding Divisions, and registry by the Deputy Judge Advocates General began, that the laxity and irregularity of Regimental Courts Martial were considerably remedied, and forms of procedure were rendered more exact and uniform, but that, as General Officers Commanding Divisions could set aside for illegality the punishments confirmed by Commanding Officers, the powers of these Officers were weakened. In 1832 full powers were conferred by the Commander-in-Chief on Commanding Officers to execute, to mitigate or to remit sentences, and the practice was

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

abolished of referring certain sentences previous to execution to the General Commanding the Division.

In February 1835, corporal punishment was abolished, and dismissal substituted, the latter requiring the sanction of the General Commanding the Division; this took away the powers conferred in 1832. Act XXIII. of 1829 further restricted the powers of Commanding Officers, who were now not allowed to carry into effect any imprisonment exceeding 6 months, nor to discharge men so sentenced.

In 1845, the Articles of War, framed by Major General Birch when Judge Advocate General, enlarged the powers of confirmation and of commutation of sentences assigned to Commanding Officers; and the second edition of the Articles made in 1847, and now in force, afforded Major General Birch, (in the same capacity) an opportunity of which he availed himself still further to enlarge the powers of Commanding Officers. In advertence to the restoration of corporal punishment by Lord Hardinge, and the resolution of Government, dated 30th August 1845, framed in connection with the Articles as made in that year, Major General Birch observes, that if it interferes with the powers of Commanding Officers, it does the same with that of superior Officers, but in his opinion in a very reasonable and proper way.

After observing that the present practice of the retention in the service of men flogged for Military offences, furnishes, in his opinion, a powerful argument for inflicting corporal punishment as seldom as possible; Major General Birch concludes his analysis: "on the whole the occasional curtailment of the powers of Commanding Officers, and the want of uniformity of system throughout, as exhibited in the preceding notes, cannot but have had a tendency to weaken their authority; but matters have been on much better footing since the enactment of the Articles of 1847, and with a few additional powers which I propose to suggest in my reply to a subsequent question, and which have already been noticed in the preceding sheets, it appears to me that the position of Commanding Officers will be very satisfactory, and the discipline of Regiments will thereby be restored."

2.

The Punjaub Committee reply that, in proportion as the Commandants of native Corps lost their own power, so they and their Adjutants absorbed the power of the Officers in charge of Companies, who had really less influence than the Havildar Major, and ceased to take much interest in the Corps.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Commander-in-Chief also considers that the powers of Regimental Officers have been restricted.

<p>There is much agreement on this point; all noted in the margin hold that the powers of Regimental Officers have been diminished; the dread of responsibility increased, as remarked by Brigadier Farquharson, and having, as Sir S. Cotton observes, little power to punish and less to reward, the European Officers became cyphers, and lost their influence.</p>	<p>There is much agreement on this point; all noted in the margin hold that the powers of Regimental Officers have been diminished; the dread of responsibility increased, as remarked by Brigadier Farquharson, and having, as Sir S. Cotton observes, little power to punish and less to reward, the European Officers became cyphers, and lost their influence.</p>
------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

ONDE COMMITTEE.
 Sir S. Cotton.
 Sir J. H. Grant.
 Sir J. Hearsey.
 Brigadier Farquharson.
 „ Coke.
 „ Steel.
 „ Troup.
 Colonel Burn.
 Lieut.-Col. Macpherson.

Major General Birch is of the opinion, that the powers of Regimental Officers have been neither increased nor diminished in any perceptible degree during the period of his experience.

3.

The reply of the Punjaub Committee is, “a laxity of discipline throughout the Native Army, which made it ripe for mutiny on any difficulty. For years the Regimental Officers have been driven to coax instead of command their men. The policy of Government indeed wore the same appearance, attributable probably to that sense of weakness which necessarily sprung from the inadequate European Force in the country. So far however from this being a good reason for weakening the European Officers, and strengthening the Sepoys, it was in our opinion the very reverse.”

The Commander-in-Chief says,—“The result has been, I will not say the Mutiny, for that is doubtless owing to many things, but certainly the result has been to render the Commanding Officers almost cyphers, and their position undesirable. The Commanding Officer being thus crippled, found his only means of getting influence with the men was by flattering and coaxing them, and thus discipline was still further shaken. In truth it was only when it suited the pleasure and convenience of the Sepoy, that he went heartily with his Commanding Officer.”

The Onde Committee are of opinion that the “Mutiny” owes much of its extent and virulence to the want of power of Commissioned Officers. Brigadier Farquharson also states that, although political causes existed, the system precipitated the “Mutiny;” and both Sir J. Hope Grant and Brigadier Coke regard the diminution of the powers and influence of Commanding Officers as a principal cause of the Mutiny.

The working of the system is thus given by Brigadier Troup:—
 “The result has been most detrimental; the good Officer and man

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ was disgusted at finding that his Captain and Commanding Officer had not the means of rewarding him, and that there was nothing to be gained by showing his good character ; and the smart intelligent Officer and Soldier was disgusted, because there was no opportunity given him of gaining distinction ; while the slothful, careless or bad knew that the Commanding Officer could do them but little harm, and that they might go to a very great extent without incurring permanent disgrace, and consequently defied him. Commanding Officers of Companies and Corps generally lapsed into a state of indifference, finding that those who followed the ‘ laisy faix ’ system were considered the best Officers, as they gave least trouble, and the men conducted themselves according to their natural dispositions, certain that so long as they were not outrageously slothful or ill-behaved, each had good pay, must see his family in turn, and, at the end of a specified period, must get an increase of pay, or promotion, or transfer to the Invalid Establishment, and consequently cared little or nothing for his Officer ; the more so, that their Officers, for these reasons, seldom mixed with them, and indeed, as a rule, cared little about their Corps, and were constant and urgent in their endeavours to get away from it.”

Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson, Major Williams, Sir J. Harsey, and Colonel Burn concur as to the result being to render the Sepoy independent of, and indifferent to, the European Officer ; and that contempt of the latter loosened necessarily the bonds of discipline. Sir S. Cotton states the result as being no discipline whatever. Colonel Burn advocates the restoration of primitive powers to Commanding Officers, without reference to Station and Divisional Commanders, and that for some time to come we must establish the old and inflexible maxim of Roman discipline, that a “ good Soldier should dread his Officers far more than the enemy.”

Major General Birch conceives “ that the greatly extended powers granted to Officers Commanding Regiments by the Articles of War, as now in force, must have had at least a beneficial tendency on the discipline of Regiments, and that where such has not been the case, the fault lies with the Officers themselves.”

4.

There is a pretty general concurrence that the diminution of the influence of Captains or Officers in command of Companies, led to the result, that the Sepoys lost respect for them, and that the Officers lost zeal, so that the

Commander-in-Chief.
PUNJAB COMMITTEE.
Sir S. Cotton.
Sir J. Harsey.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

effect was necessarily bad. Some observe that the result depended more upon the individual character of the Officers than upon any thing else, as they had little or no real power. Others, that the effect was to convey to the Adjutant and Havildar Major the authority and influence which Officers Commanding Companies ought to possess, or that if less affected by the centralization system than Commanding Officers, it told through the latter on the Officers in Command of Companies. Some say it produced want of sympathy with the men, dislike to the Service, and an incessant desire to escape from the irksomeness of Regimental duty by leave, Staff employ, the Invalids, or retirement from the Service. Others again assign it as a main cause, among others, for the loss of our Army.

Lt. Colonel Macpherson.
Major Williams.
Brigadier Steel.

Brigadier Farquharson.

Brigadier Coke.

Sir J. H. Grant,
OUDE COMMITTEE.

Colonel Burn observes that Captains and Officers Commanding Companies have complained much of late years of want of power to reward or punish; but that the Commanding Officer, to be of real use, must be supreme, and should command through the Captains of Companies, vested with such authority as he may think right to delegate to them.

Major General Birch does not think there has been any perceptible alteration in the influence of Officers Commanding Companies.

5.

There is a general assent that "the discipline of the Regiment must mainly depend upon the influence of the Commanding Officer, and of the Officers Commanding Companies," as stated by the Commander-in-Chief, and Brigadier Coke, after expressing himself to the same effect, observes that, "the reasons that Corps have so seldom, if ever, mutinied on service are, that the pernicious influence of Head Quarters is there partially in abeyance. Commanding Officers then take some of the requisite power into their own hands, and men are punished in a manner commensurate with their offences. Although the power assumed by the Commanding Officers when in service, are not what they ought to be, still it is sufficient to act as a check and keep men in order."

Colonel Burn considers that the discipline of a Corps on service depends entirely on the capacity for command of a Commanding Officer.

6.

The Commander-in-Chief's reply is, "rather increased than diminished," and that of the Punjab Committee is, "certainly increased." There seems to have been "in this, as in many other particulars of our Military policy, a growing forgetfulness of our

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ position in India, and of our relations to a large mercenary Army; evincing itself in an exaggerated protection of the Sepoy, and jealous depression of his European Officer. Late events have shown that both cannot command, and we would strongly advocate making our own countrymen the depositories of power; train them to its exercise; supersede them unhesitatingly if they prove unequal to the trust, and heavily punish them if they abuse it. We may then hope to hear no more of mutiny.”

There is not a dissentient opinion as to the necessity of

Sir J. H. Grant.
Sir J. Hearsey.
OUDE COMMITTEE.
Brigadier Coke.
Brigadier Troup.
Colonel Burn.
Major Williams.
Lieut.-Col. Macpherson.
Brigadier Steel.
Brigadier Farquharson.
Sir S. Cotton.
Major-General Birch.

increasing the powers of Commanding Officers, some would have them supreme, with a power as nearly absolute as possible. Others would have them much increased, as also those of Officers Commanding Companies, and would allow Courts-Martial only for grave offences.

Major-General Birch would give Commanding Officers the power to reduce and to appoint Non-Commissioned Officers; to inflict summary chastisement with the rattan, not exceeding three dozen strokes; but would not confer the power of summary discharge, reserving such cases for Courts-Martial, nor would he relax the Government Resolution of the 30th August 1845, regarding corporal punishment. Dismissals by Courts-Martial should not, in his opinion, be set aside by errors in proceedings, deficiency of evidence, and the like. No man thus dismissed should ever be restored to a Regiment. Major-General Birch is not in favor of rejecting appeals. He would cancel the G. O. C. C. of the 16th October 1854. The powers conferred on Commanding Officers by G. G. O. of the 19th May 1857, should not, he thinks, be continued beyond the period of disturbance for which it was specially granted. The recommendations of Officers, who had been long enough in charge of Companies to know their men, should be strictly attended to, and no leave granted without the concurrence of Captains of Companies.

7.

The Commander-in-Chief suggests enlarged powers being conferred on Commanding Officers, that they should have authority to discharge a Sepoy, to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers, to confine Sepoys for—days, with stoppage of pay for the days in confinement, as in the Queen's service, always recording offences and punishments in their Regimental Orders; that they should be able to refuse furlough; but above all, in matters of Regimental detail, they should be as little interfered with as possible by superior authority; but if a Regiment were in bad order, and the Commanding Officer obviously inefficient, the Commander-in-Chief should be able to deprive him of command at once, and to place an efficient Officer in his place.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

To the suggestions they have already made, the Punjab Committee adds, that, "the root of all discipline is efficiency of command, and this can only be secured by a persistent course of selection of European Officers for the Native Army. No Irregular can be efficient without picked Native Officers; but these can only be selected and controlled by a good European Commandant. It will behove Government therefore to exercise a close and firm supervision over the selection from the European Regiments, or otherwise of Officers for the Native Army, and at first they should only be appointed on probation." They then express a hope that a really efficient Staff may, by the establishment of a Military College at Presidency, be secured, and the Army kept in working order, by an "unemployed List" for inefficient Officers; and they further recommend the introduction into the Army of a rule limiting the continuance of an Officer's service to 35 years, on completion of which every Officer, unless invited to serve longer must retire. Present incumbents to have five years' notice, but a premium of increased pension to be offered them to go at once. Above all, however, the Punjab Committee draw the earnest attention of Government to the necessity of selecting efficient Brigadiers and Generals of Divisions, and of not allowing those commands which demand faculties, both mature and unimpaired, to be regarded as mere rewards for length of service. They observe,—“The Army is in truth nothing, but an organization of mental and physical force, and it is the last institution in the State in which any thing, weak or worn-out, can be safely left. From the highest to the lowest every link in the chain of discipline must be equal to the strain it is to bear.”

They note the daily relief of Guards within the distance of a mile, and the discontinuance of petty Guards on detached duty.

Major General Birch is, similarly with the Punjab Committee, of opinion, that the main point towards securing improvement of discipline in Regiments, is that the Commanding Officers should be selected with reference to qualifications for command, and that inefficiency should inevitably lead to removal. Also, that Adjutants should be most carefully selected; moreover that Majors should be available for the Command of other Regiments than their own, when the Lieutenant Colonels attached to such Corps or their Majors or Senior Officers present, were unfit to command, also that it should be in the power of the Commander-in-Chief to send Officers of all ranks from one Regiment to another, to do duty when occasion required.

The Oude Committee likewise make a judicious selection of Commanding Officers, and the investing them with full powers, flogging included, leading measures for the improvement of discipline.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Both Colonel Burn and Brigadier Farquharson advocate giving Commanding Officers Magisterial powers, as also ample powers to promote, dismiss, inflict corporal punishment, reduce to the ranks, but says Brigadier Farquharson, such Commanding Officers must be selected men, and all their acts subject to review by Inspectors of Native Troops, who should be appointed one to every 15 Regiments, and who should submit periodical reports to Commanders-in-Chief and heads of local Governments of Provinces, in order that the latter may be acquainted with the tone and feeling of Native Troops in the Province. Brigadier Coke would also have the Commanding Officer invested with Magisterial powers, to try his men for all crimes, murder excepted, which crime should be submitted to the superiors. The Commanding Officer to have full powers to reward, punish, reduce to the ranks, and discharge unfit men. He would have no Articles of War, no oath, the standing orders of the Army, and the field exercise being all that is necessary for drill and discipline; but separate standing orders for Seikhs, Puthans, Hindustanians. Plain rules for drawing the pay of Officers and men, "so as if possible to protect the Army from the injustice of the Audit Office, which has been the cause of greater disgust to the Army, than any other establishment in India."

Brigadier Troup observes, that a system of discipline should be adopted, which would show the Soldier that his Commanding Officer had the confidence of his superiors. He would have rules few, clear and simple, altered as seldom as possible, and the same for every Regiment, such as to ensure an uniform rate of pay in all situations, and pensions claimable after prescribed periods of service. Certain and speedy punishment awardable by the Commanding Officer, modified only by his own known good character, leave and promotion given by the Regimental roster, except where his bad character or his qualifications should deprive him of the indulgence and reward, instruction in reading, writing, arithmetic well-grounded, and not superficial. A clear understanding of all that is required of him, a knowledge that, while his conscientious scruples would not be interfered with, he must, while taking and while he retains the service of his master, act as a Soldier, and make his prejudices bend to the requisition of the Service at present. The present pay and audit rules are so complicated that no one understands them; the pensions are claimable only on the medical opinion of perfect strangers; punishments and rewards are uncertain, and from their general ignorance, they cannot understand what is required of them, and find that many of their European Officers are quite ignorant of their manners and customs, and can therefore be easily imposed upon or demand of them what they have been told shall never be required, duties which make them out-castes at home.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Sir J. Hearsey advocates full powers to Commanding Officers to punish and reward, and to Captains of Companies, with consent of Commanding Officer.

Sir J. Hope Grant repeats his recommendations that the Commanding Officer be absolute, seniority system abolished, and caste ignored.

Sir Sidney Cotton is of opinion that real discipline can only be maintained in the Native Army by the European Soldier, and advises that Native Corps be always cantoned alongside European Corps.

8.

There is no difference of opinion upon this point, and all agree that war, which throws men and Officers more together, and makes them know each other better, is the time most favorable to the influence of the European Officer, and when the latter are most looked to and valued by the Sepoy.

9.

The Commander-in-Chief is of opinion that Regiments should not be too strong; that 640 or 700 Sepoys is ample for Infantry, and 420 or 480 Troopers for Cavalry, and that if the Native Army is maintained on such a reduced scale, as is hoped will be the case, the various duties of Guards, Escorts and Detachments will find full employment.

The Punjaub Committee think that 800 Privates should be the maximum in time of war for a Native Infantry Regiment, and that in peace it might be gradually reduced to 700 or 600, if the Service admit of it. They note the great political importance of avoiding masses of armed Natives, and advocate small Corps as best, both in the Infantry and Cavalry. They consider that such corps can only be advantageously employed in instruction drill, regular exercise, Guards and Escorts, but would have them constantly handled, and every day under arms even if only for ten minutes.

Major General Birch, Brigadier Steel and Brigadier Coke would employ Native Corps in time of peace as heretofore. Guards, Escorts, their own drill and discipline; those occupations will find them enough to do and save the necessity for enormous establishments. Brigadier Coke does not advocate working Native Troops at road-making or in public works, he is averse to employing Soldiers as laborers except on service. He would have Regiments 800 strong in time of peace, and 1,000 in time of war. Colonel Burn proposes the same strength, and is also opposed to employing Native Troops on public works, though he considers that in the drilling season the ordinary drill should include the construction of field works, and that no Recruit should be dismissed his drill without having gone through a regular course of instructions in the use of the pick-axe

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and shovel. He thinks that this would remove the prejudice against working in the trenches, which existed in the old Bengal Army.

Brigadier Troup would never have a Native Regiment above 800 strong in time of peace, and would employ them in learning or keeping up the knowledge of all the duties required of an European Soldier ; of reading, writing, and arithmetic, in one or other of the vernacular languages, of scaling, and the duties of Sappers and Miners, and in furnishing Military Guards ; the Police taking all civil duties, and Guards and Escorts.

The authorities noted in the margin advocate the enlistment with a stipulation to labor, and that Native Troops should in time of peace be employed on public works, such as roads, line, &c. &c. Sir J. Hope Grant and Sir J. Hearsey would have the Corps 800 strong in time of peace. Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson 640 strong, and the Oude Committee would keep them at a minimum of strength and work them well. Major Williams would also keep the Native Corps at a minimum in time of peace, and employ them upon the duties which European Troops cannot undertake. He remarks that the Military Police with fewer men have done double the amount of work the Native Army formerly accomplished.

Sir J. H. Grant.
Sir J. Hearsey.
OUDE COMMITTEE.
Brigdr. Farquharson.
Lt.-Col. Macpherson.

10.

The Commander-in-Chief replies, that it is not believed to have been equal to more than the performance of its Military duties, but that this arose not from necessary employment, but from the innumerable and most unnecessary Guards and Escorts required to be given by Regiments.

Major-General Birch considers that the strength of the Native Infantry has, for a long time past, been scarcely adequate to the duties required of it.

Sir J. Hope Grant also holds the opinion that it was never too strong for what it had to perform, and Colonel Burn is of the same opinion. Sir S. Cotton too holds that with due consideration to the efficiency of the Army, it could not have been otherwise employed. Brigadier Coke after giving it as his opinion that the Native Infantry was not by any means too strong, says, " I think, as before stated, it might well have been employed in Police duties, but since the extension of our empire and the triennial change of station which I consider unnecessary, I think our Native Army has been rather over than under-worked, and that this to a considerable extent, rendered the Service less popular than it formerly was, when our empire was of smaller extent. To march a Re-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ giment from Peshawur to Barrackpore is a serious undertaking, and puts men to a very considerable expense.”

Brigadier Farquharson thinks that the men had too little to do at some Stations, and Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson is of opinion, that at the larger Military Stations they might have been employed otherwise than on mere Military duties ; so too Brigadier Steel, who would have it a condition of enlistment that men were to work, and who traces reluctance to work to the reduction of batta, which in our earlier campaigns was given for labor in the trenches. Sir J. Hearsey, like Brigadier Farquharson, adverts to the frequently great strength of the Native Infantry Corps, and considers men could not have been spared for work ; but he notes the numerous Guards and Escorts, &c., detrimental to discipline, and a consequent necessity of perpetual re-drilling of the men returned from detached duty where they had been neglected.

Of those holding the like opinion, that Native Infantry might have been put to other employment, the Punjaub Committee remarks that, it would have been against the prejudices of the Sepoys to do any thing but Military duty, and Brigadier Troup considers that employment otherwise than on Military duties as highly objectionable.

ODE COMMITTEE.
PUNJAUB COMMITTEE.
Major Williams.
Brigadier Troup.

11.

The Commander-in-Chief is of opinion that as the Army was constituted, it would not have been practicable, and also that it is not desirable to have a Native Army of such strength as that it can spare men for public works ; and shows, taking a most favorable case, that a Regiment of 640 Sepoys, without a man on leave, will only have 392 men in the lines, to relieve at least estimate 90 men, on guard.

The Punjaub Committee answer,—“ No, the men would have mutinied in time of war ; they will throw up field works, but even then they do not like it.” Major General Birch also thinks that it would not have been practicable, and Brigadier Coke states that the late Bengal Army would (in his opinion) have mutinied, had they been ordered to labor at public works. So too Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson, who says that undoubtedly it would have been practicable had not the Bengal Army been in a state of chronic mutiny, and certain to resist any attempt to make them labor. He adverts to a scheme published by Colonel J. S. Hodgson for the employment of the Native Army on public works, one which some few Officers might have succeeded in carrying out, but which, according to general conclusions, would have caused an outbreak.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The authorities who are of opinion that, under a proper system, making it a stipulation of enlistment, abolishing existing rules and customs, and working the men under their own Officers, the employment of Native Troops upon public works is a practicable measure, are given in the

Sir J. Hearsey.
 Sir S. Cotton.
 Sir J. H. Grant.
 OUDE COMMITTEE.
 Brigadier Troup.
 Major Williams.

margin.

12.

The Commander-in-Chief and the Punjaub Committee refer to the answers given to No. 16 of the Infantry Paper No. 3, on "Organization, Promotion and rewards." Major General Birch also refers to a previously recommended scale in which the abolition of the grades of Native Officers and the appointment of two Serjeants to each Company were conditions. The strength of the European Officers besides Field Officers being 6 Captains, 6 Lieutenants and 4 Ensigns.

Brigadier Steel, Colonel Burn and Sir J. H. Grant advocate the first system or scale ; Colonel Burn for his Service Corps only, his reserve or Police Battalions being upon No. 3 scale.

Those who advocate No 2 scale are Sir S. Cotton for the Regulars, for Irregulars he proposes No. 3 scale, and Sir J. Hearsey.

The advocates for the 3rd scale are Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson with an increase to the number of grades of Native Officers. Brigadier Farquharson in connection with his proposal for Auxiliary Corps officered from their European Battalion, Brigadier Coke who, in addition to the Commandant, 2nd in Command, Adjutant, and Quarter Master, would have from 3 to 5 Officers doing duty, but all mounted, and would hold the 2 Native Officers to each Company responsible for the conduct of their men, Major Williams, Colonel Berkeley and the Oude Committee.

13.

In the opinion of the Commander-in-Chief " all Cadets should do duty with a European Corps for at least a year, before joining Native Troops, a longer period perhaps would be better." The Punjaub Committee would also keep Cadets with European Corps till they have thoroughly learned their duty. The authorities who ad-

Sir J. H. Grant.
 Sir J. Hearsey.
 Colonel Berkeley.
 " Burn.
 Major Williams.
 Brigadier Farquharson.
 Lieut.-Col. Macpherson.

vocate this course are noted in the margin ; among these Sir J. Hearsey says, " Never for the future allow your Cadets or young European Officers to be placed under the instruction of Natives of any grade. Young Offi-

cers on arriving in India ought to be attached either to Queen's Regiments or to the Hon'ble Company's Regiments of European Infantry, and they should not be allowed to join a Native Corps

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“until they were taught, and were *au fait* in all the duties required to be attained by an accomplished Subaltern of the Army. A perfect knowledge of Company drill, of the use of the Enfield rifle, sword exercise, fencing, *single stick* and *horsemanship*.”

Colonel Burn proposes a Cadet College at Hazareebagh, if made a European station, or at the nearest hill station for a European Regiment, Sir S. Cotton would attach Cadets to Regiments in England or the Mediterranean, and after a year's training send them on to India. The Oude Committee would have no Cadets in India, but would train them in England. If, however, in India, would form them with European Corps.

Brigadier Coke would send Cadets, on first arrival in India, to a College such as Roorkee, on 200 Rupees per mensem, where they should be kept until they passed their examination, whether for the Infantry or the Cavalry. He notes the nature of the examination and the athletic training that Cadets should pass through, and he expresses the opinion that half the young Officers in the Army, on their first arrival in the country, contracted habits of indolence, if not worse, which unfit them for the service of the State in after-life.

In continuation with the Cavalry training he dwells on the opportunity for drilling the four newly embodied Corps of Cavalry after the principle laid down in Captain Nolan's book, and the necessity for making these Light Troopers individually good horsemen, skilful in the use of their arms, and efficient for long sustained and destructive pursuits.

Brigadier Steel takes a different view from any of the foregoing, being of opinion that nothing can be more disadvantageous than the attaching Cadets for any length of time to European Regiments where they acquire ideas and opinions derogatory to the Native Army, a thing not desirable when they are to serve with that Army.

Brigadier Troup also is of opinion that Cadets on arrival should at once be posted to a Native Corps, to which they are to belong.

Major General Birch advises the same course, and considers that if eventually posted to a European Regiment, the Cadet will not have lost time by doing duty at first with a good Native Regiment, whilst if to be at last posted to a Native Regiment, the sooner he begins to serve with one the better, that he may as soon as possible know the men and their language.

14.

The Commander-in-Chief would have them “learn their Military duties as Officers of Companies with a European Regiment. Their subsequent complete training should be with Natives.”

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Punjab Committee would send every Cadet for 2 years to a European Regiment. After that time if an Officer wished to qualify himself for a Native Corps or any other Staff appointment, they would send him, provided he had passed an examination in Hindustanee, to the Military College, there to go through a course of study in vernacular languages and professional knowledge. Two years to be the time allowed for passing through the College, after which the Students to return to their Regiments, their respective qualifications and fitness being reported to Government, and the latter could then select as many as were wanted for Staff employ. Those assigned to Native Corps to "do duty" on probation for one year, after which they could either be permanently posted or transferred to some other department or remanded to the European Regiment. Should there be no College, there would be no better way than to send an Officer after two years with a European Regiment to do duty with a Native Corps.

Brigadier Farquharson would, after training with European Corps, attach European Officers at their own request if competent, and selected to do duty with Native Battalions; Major Williams the same.

Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson considers that with the professional knowledge they would acquire in European Regiments, and a knowledge of the languages, the Officers would not necessarily require any further special training, and he observes, naming Colonel Edwardes, C. B., the late Major Hodgson, Major Daily and others, that some of our best Irregular Officers have been drawn from our European Regiments,

The Oude Committee would select the Officers for Native Corps from full European Regiments,

Brigadier Steel and Major General Birch would train them by attaching them to Native Troops from the first, as before stated.

Brigadier Troup hopes that the assigning a smaller number of European Officers to Native Corps may never occur.

15.

In reply to this question, the Commander-in-Chief states that the efficiency of Regiments has been grievously affected from this cause, and in this opinion many concur, stating that the best men were taken, and the Native Officers were useless or worse, that although it is the quality of the European Officers, not their numbers that is of use in *awing* and *governing* the mind, yet that, under the present system, the efficiency is impaired by so many selected Officers being withdrawn from his Regiment, being rendered a discontented and dissatisfied man. Others merely remark that efficiency has undoubtedly been materially affected from the above cause.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Brigadier Steel is of a different opinion, and thinks, except in the field where leaders are required, to give Native Troops confidence, the efficiency of Regiments has not suffered.

Major General Birch also thinks that efficiency is not affected by the withdrawal of Officers for Staff employ, for that is well known; a Regiment, well commanded, will be quite as efficient with a few Officers as a Regiment indifferently commanded by a larger number of Officers, and he instances the Kelat, Ferozepore and Sirmoor Battalions.

The Punjab Committee reply,—“No, it was not the paucity of Officers, but the bad system which ruined the Regiments.” As a general remark the Officers taken for the Staff were not superior (when taken) to those left, though they usually became so by more active employment in a sphere which gave more scope for exertion and discretion. The few Officers left with the line Regiments, ought, under any other system, more to do and more call upon their faculties, more room for usefulness. But the more Companies they got charge of the more they said that they had no power, and that all authority and hope and fear, centred in the Adjutants and Adjutants General. Thus they lost heart and retrograded rather than advanced in zeal and efficiency.

16.

The Commander-in-Chief replies that the Officers generally seemed to have no ordinary *esprit-de-Corps* when many were with the Regiments, but that the Sepoys had made up their minds to rise. And neither number of Officers nor the efficiency of Commanding Officers appeared to have effected the course they took, one way or the other. So likewise the Punjab Committee answer,—“No, the Mutiny seems to have been quite irrespective of the number of Officers.” The opinion of Major General Birch is to the same effect, and that if the influence of European Officers has kept any Regiment from Mutiny it has been that of the Commanding Officer or the Adjutant, or some highly respected and efficient Officer in the Corps. The unanimous opinion is in short that there was no difference whatever, and Brigadier Troup remarks that in the present system the number of Officers was quite immaterial, as they had no influence. Sir J. Hearsey points out that all the Contingent revolted as well as the Regular Troops, and that it was a general movement among the Soldier class of Hindostan intended to have been simultaneous, and to have crushed the British Officer in India. That the object was to throw off the dominion of a foreign race and then to sell their services to the highest Native bidder, but certainly to a Hindoo Ruler. Brigadier Steel observes that until the present crisis, promotion, allowances, or the infringement of any usage on such points, have been the cause of dissatisfaction in the Bengal Army. He adverts to a curious circumstance in these words,—“The order of General

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Wemyss for the Bengal Volunteers to attend Church in Ceylon in 1805, did not cause any discord. They attended twice before the Officers got the order cancelled. The attendance of Detachments of 39 Corps each with an Officer at Umballa, 20 at Sealkote and 12 at Dum-Dum, for rifle practice and their dispersal to their several Regiments, caused a union of action that could not have otherwise occurred, combined with the proceedings at Head Quarters on the subject.

Sir S. Cotton after stating that as the Officers had little or no control over their men, the number of European Officers made no difference, adds that the case is widely different in action, where there is no comparison between the conduct of Native Regiments with few and those with many European Officers, a fact that has not only come under his own observation, but has been remarked in all other campaigns, and that without them in action a Native Regiment becomes a disorderly rabble, more dangerous than useful.

17.

The Punjaub Committee advocate the general gradation list for the Army of each Presidency proposed by Brigadier General Jacob, C. B., with some modifications chiefly in his scale of employed and unemployed pay. The Punjaub Committee propose considerably lower rates of pay for Generals and Lieutenant-Generals, so as to remove the inducement to remain too long in the country. They also add a third rate or "Subsistence Allowance" of exactly one-half the "unemployed" scale; this is proposed for Officers who, for any reason of incapacity or *vice versa*, are thoroughly inefficient, yet cannot be brought under the lash of a Court Martial.

After touching upon the status of the Medical Officers of the army of and proposing a new table, precedence, the Punjaub Committee signify their dissent from the proposal of Brigadier General Jacob that "a distinct and separate Civil Service be abolished." The also would modify the proposal made by Brigadier General Jacob with regard to candidates for the Indian service being educated at Military Colleges in England, by proposing that half the appointments be direct, and that all be obtained by competition, those to College on entrance, and the direct ones on appointment to the Army. They would have a senior Military College established in India for completing the Military training of Staff Officers.

In the opinion of the Punjaub Committee, "the general gradation list secures that degree of conservatism and equal promotion which must ever be popular with the majority of any service. The principles of selection for employment secures for Government the abilities of its best servants in the most important posts, and throws open the highest offices to emulation, while the three gradations of pay enable Government to deal effectively with

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“delinquents without absolutely removing them, and will thereby carry public opinion along with such decisions. The junior and senior Military Colleges ensure the means of obtaining a sound professional education to every Officer who desires to acquire it. The modified system of Brevet, while increasing the inducement to render gallant service, provides a check upon the abuse of the prerogative, and diminishes the risk of unjust supercession. On the whole a and effective Staff will be produced without depriving the Line of its Officers or the Officers of hope.”

Sir J. Hope Grant.
Sir S. Cotton.
Sir J. Hearsey.
Brigadier Farquharson,
“ Steel.
Colonel Burn.
Major Williams.
ODD COMMITTEE.
Col. Berkeley.

The Commander-in-Chief proposes having an unattached list for the Staff; an expedient in which, under various modifications, the Officers noted marginally also find a remedy for the objections raised to the existing system.

Colonel Burn would have all Officers not employed in purely Military duty removed on appointment to the Staff, and their places in Corps filled up in the ordinary manner. He would divide the Staff Corps into grades like other Regiments, and would give promotion in it after fixed periods of service. No Officers, under any circumstances, to remain on the effective branch of the Army after forty years' service. Colonels removed to the non-effective allowance (in lieu of the Colonel's allowance) of £300 a year.

Ensign 3 years.
Lieutenant 8 „
Captain 9 „
Major 5 „
Lieut.-Col. 7 „

This sum to be given in addition to the pension, and to be subscribed for by the Officers themselves, by the payment of a fee or donation on promotion to each higher grade as in the Military Fund. In order to prevent any undue pressure on the finances of the State, the removals during the first few years to be limited in number. Colonel Burn thinks that this would in time relieve the Army “of the old Indian Lieutenant-Colonels,” to whom Sir Charles Napier ascribes the inefficiency of the Regular Corps of the Bengal Army.

On Promotion	Rs.
To Lieutenant,	100
„ Captain,	500
„ Major,	2,500
„ Lieut.-Col.,	4,400
„ Colonel,	10,000
Total..	17,500

Sir J. Hope Grant would have Deputy Assistant Adjutant General, Deputy Judge Advocates General, and Majors of Brigades filled by selected Regimental Officers, all other Staff appointments by Officers from a Staff Corps.

Brigadier Steel, besides a Staff Corps, proposes the alternative of having 10 Captains, with a suitable proportion of Lieutenants

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and Ensigns to each Corps. Brigadier Troup also suggests the remedy of adding to each Corps; he combines with this that no Officer be taken for Staff employment until he has served not less than 5 years, exclusive of absence on leave with his Regiment, and then only with the concurrence of his Commanding Officer.

Major General Birch remarks that the question implies an affirmative answer to the 16th question, to which, on the contrary, he has given an answer in the negative. He has it as his opinion that the attaching of Officers to the extent demanded for Staff employment by no means necessarily impairs the efficiency of Regiments, that there should be a limited number below which a Regiment should not be allowed to fall, and that with 2 Sergeants per Company it would suffice that besides the Commanding Officer the Adjutant, and the Quarter Master, 3 Captains and 3 Subalterns should be present. He is, however, of opinion, that much might be done to relieve the pressure on Regiments by the employment of Unconvenanted persons and of Officers who have retired from the Service, but would be often glad to return to India for employment.

18.

The Commander-in-Chief replies,—“No, and it is presumed the State must have Officers for special employment. There is no other source of supply open; certainly not on the same terms.”

The Punjaub Committee are of opinion that nothing could be more depressing and injurious to the Officers of the Army than to cut off the inducements to study, furnished by the hope of Staff employ. In this view Major General Birch's opinion concurs, but he anticipates great services to the Army by the establishment of a higher test prior to obtaining commissions in the Army. In short all are unanimous in the disadvantage which must arise to the service from cutting off the hope which frequently forms the inducement to qualify; but at the same time consider the various schemes and modifications of Staff Corps proposed, do not strike at this service of exertion. Thus Sir S. Cotton is of opinion that if the Army be re-organized in the way he proposes, and the Command and Staff appointments filled by selected Officers in the manner he suggests there should be sufficient inducements in the Army itself for Officers to acquire a knowledge of languages and of professional studies. He condemns the present system as depriving the Army of its best and most intelligent Officers for Civil and other duties, which he considers totally opposed to their own profession. Sir J. Hearsey, Colonel Burn, Brigadier Troup, and Brigadier Coke all refer to their several suggestions and systems as not open to the objection of removing a spur to study and qualification.

QUESTIONS,

ANSWERS,

The Oude Committee would strike off Officers when they left for Civil employ.

19.

The Commander-in-Chief is of opinion that this probably would, as there would then be no inducement for Officers to obtain proficiency in many branches of knowledge in which they now qualify themselves. The Punjaub Committee ask how it could be otherwise; a few men pursue knowledge for its own sake alone. Major General Birch says it assuredly would, in which view Brigadiers Troup, Steel, and Farquharson, and Lieutenant-Colonel Macpherson concur, as also Colonel Burn, in nearly the same words as the Punjaub Committee, so too Sir J. H. Grant, Colonel Berkeley and the Oude Committee think the tendency of any such measure unfavorable, and Sir J. Hearsey observes that too much encouragement cannot be held out to Officers to qualify themselves for Staff situations, and that the opening should be left wide. He adds: "Sir Charles Napier in conversation with me said the European Officers of the Bengal Army made *the best, the most excellent Staff Officers*, but their Regiment ought not to be left with such few Regimental European Officers, for it made the Native Officers of opinion, they could do just as well *without* European Officers altogether and I deem the late Sir Charles Napier to have been a most unprejudiced and competent judge on that head."

Brigadier Coke considers that, according to his proposed system, the general standard of acquirements would be very much raised. Major Wilhams says,—“Any Officer who loves his profession would seek to qualify himself for the higher position attainable in it; those who only strive to excel in hope of gaining Staff employ, would not much benefit the State either in that position or with their Regiments.”

Sir S. Cotton is of opinion that cutting off the hope of employment in the Civil Department would improve the standard of Military acquirements and general efficiency of Officers; whereas he considers that the present encouragement afforded by Civil employ to take up appointments for which they are not qualified, unsettles the minds of Officers, and unfits them for their ordinary Military duties.

SCHEME FOR THE RE-ORGANIZATION OF THE INDIAN ARMY BY BRIGADIER
GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.

The Queen of England formally to assume the style and title of Empress of India and to be proclaimed accordingly.

The Armies of the several Presidencies to be henceforth styled the Royal Armies of India.

In each of these Armies the whole of the European Officers of the Artillery and Engineers, above the rank of Colonel, to be formed into one general Gradation List, in which, under ordinary circumstances, all will rise by seniority.

Rank in this list to be the only permanent rank, being temporary only, and to continue only as long as Officers may be serving with Regiments, or be otherwise employed in a Military capacity.

In case of Officers being promoted for good service, &c., by the Queen, they are to take their places in the general Gradation List, according to the dates of their promotions, and are to enjoy every advantage exactly as if they had risen to such places by seniority only. This general Gradation List to be styled "The Unemployed List." All the Officers borne on it who may hold no special appointments, will reside in India at such places as Government may direct, but will have no public functions to perform.

A fourth Presidency to be styled the North-West Presidency, and a fourth Army to be formed; our present Bombay and Bengal Armies together being divided into 3 equal parts for this purpose.

Ultimately, the whole establishment of European Officers may probably be somewhat less than at present, but under the proposed arrangements the number of Officers in the whole general list of each Army can readily be adjusted in practice to meet the demands of the public service; when these shall have been correctly ascertained no further changes will probably be requisite.

For an Army of the strength of the present Army of Bombay, the following establishment might be proper:—

Battalions or Regiments.	Colonels.	Lieut.-Colonels.	Captains	Lieuts.
5. Artillery.....	5	10	50	50
4. Engineers.....	4	8	40	40
3 Cavalry.....	3	6	30	30
33 Infantry.....	33	66	330	330
<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
45	45	90	450	450
Generals.....	5	The rank of Major and Ensign to be abolished.		
Lieutenant Generals.....	10			
Major Generals.....	5			

The several ranks of Officers while unemployed in India to receive pay as follows:—

General.....	1,500	Rupees per mensem.
Lieutenant-General.....	1,200	" "
Major-General.....	1,000	" "
Colonel.....	600	" "
Lieutenant-Colonel.....	400	" "
Captain.....	300	" "
Lieutenant.....	200	" "

These rates of pay to be allowed to Officers wherever residing by permission in India, and the like number of pounds per annum to be allowed to each when absent on leave from India to Europe or elsewhere.

The option of retiring on full pay of the rank attained to in the general list to be allowed after thirty years, and on half pay after twenty years.

Leave of absence to be granted at the discretion of the local Governments.

Subscriptions to Military and all other Funds to cease to be compulsory.

A distinct and separate Civil Service to be prospectively abolished.

Officers while unemployed or employed in Civil capacities are not to be in any way subject to the authority of the Commander-in-Chief of the Army or to Military rule or etiquette.

All candidates appointed to the Indian service to be educated at a Military College in England, and to reside at such College for at least two years, and not more than four years.

The minimum age of admission to be fourteen and the maximum eighteen years.

The course at the College to include full instruction in Mechanical and in Physical Science generally, and in Political economy, also riding, rifle practice, and hardy exercises.

The residence at the College to be free of all pecuniary charge to the Cadet, unless he decline proceeding to join the service in India in due course, in which case, to cover all cost to the State, he should pay at the rate of 100 pounds per annum for the period during which he has resided at College.

From the general list formed as above mentioned, Officers are to be selected for every species of public employment, Civil and Military.

For each Native Infantry Regiment, the establishment of English Officers may be as follows :—

	<i>Pay.</i>	
1 Colonel.....	600	Rupees per mensem.
1 Lieutenant-Colonel.....	400	” ”
2 Captains. { to be each Adjutant } { and Quarter Master. }	300	” ”

The pay assigned to each being in every case Staff pay, to be drawn in addition to the pay due to each according to his rank in the general list. But though an Officer may hold a lower rank in the general list than that which is assigned to his position in a Regiment, or in other Military employment, the temporary rank is always to hold good for precedence and command during the period of employment.

For the Cavalry the like establishment of Officers may be allowed, with one hundred Rupees extra pay to each rank, to cover the cost of horses and other expences.

For a Brigade of any strength:—

	<i>Staff Pay.</i>	
1 Major-General.....	1,000	Rupees per mensem.
1 Captain, Major of Brigade	400	” ”

For a Division:—

1 Lieutenant-General.....	3,000	Rupees per mensem.
1 Lieutenant-Colonel, Adjutant General	400	” ”
1 Lieutenant-Colonel, Quarter Master General.	400	” ”
1 Captain, A. D. C.....	300	” ”
1 Major-General, Adjutant General of the Army	1,500	” ”
1 Major General, Quarter Master General.....	1,500	” ”
1 Colonel, Deputy Adjutant General	500	” ”
1 Colonel, Deputy Quarter Master General.....	500	” ”

Proper office establishment, &c., to be allowed to Commanding and Staff Officers, Company and Troop allowances and contracts as usual.

All Officers when absent on leave beyond the division in which they may be serving, are to receive unemployed pay only, and if other Officers act for them when absent, even within the division otherwise than on duty, the Officer acting for the absentee is to receive his Staff pay in addition to his own.

Officers of the rank of Captain in the general list are to be considered eligible for selection to fill any of the Regimental ranks or other appointments. Lieutenants on the general list are not to be considered eligible for higher Regimental or other Military appointments than that of Lieutenant-Colonel.

At their own request and with the approval of the Regimental Commanding Officers any unemployed Officers may be attached to do duty with Regiments or Departments without extra pay.

The recommendations of Officers Commanding Regiments with respect to the appointment of Officers to fill vacancies in their Corps, or to their removal therefrom to the unemployed list in consequence of proved incapacity, &c., are to be attended to. All enlistments, discharges, promotions to and reductions from all ranks of Native Officers and Soldiers are to rest with the Colonels of Regiments, and are to be signified by them with reasons, &c., if necessary in Regimental orders,

Articles of War for Native Indian Troops to be entirely abolished.

Colonels Commanding Native Indian Regiments are to have full Magisterial authority over all ranks of natives of India in their Regiments, followers as well as Soldiers. Such powers to extend to the award and infliction of imprisonment with hard labor for a period of 7 years, without the confirmation of higher authority being required: to imprisonment for 14 years, subject to the confirmation of the General Officer Commanding the Brigade: to transportation and capital punishment, subject to the confirmation of the General Officer Commanding the Division.

Regimental Lieutenant-Colonels and Captains are likewise to exercise Magisterial powers under the control of the Colonels Commanding their Regiments, and to such extent as he may think proper to authorize.

In all cases involving the award of a graver punishment than 3 months imprisonment with hard labor, the infliction of corporal punishment above 25 lashes, or of a fine of above 50 Rupees, regular proceedings of the trials are to be recorded in full, to be laid before the General Officer Commanding when required.

Cases of less serious nature may be dealt with summarily, on due investigation by the Commanding Officer at the public Regimental Orderly-room. A record of all such proceedings is to be entered in a proper book kept for that purpose, and preserved among the Regimental records for the inspection of General Officers.

Colonels of Regiments are to be held strictly and solely responsible to their superior Officers and to the State, but not to the Native Indian Soldiers, for the propriety of all such proceedings.

Permanent Head-Quarters to be established for each Native Indian Regiment, and complete carriage for every Corps to be always kept up ready for a march, at a day's warning.

For the European Infantry the establishment of Officers per Regiment may be :—

1 Colonel	...	...	...	...	...	600 Rupees per mensem.
2 Lieutenant-Colonels, each	...	.....	400	„	„	
10 Captains	...	...	...	...	300	„ „
1 Adjutant	...	...	...	.....	300	} To rank above the Lieutenants.
1 Quarter-Master	...	...	...	...	300	
10 Lieutenants	...	...	...	.....	200	Rupees per mensem.

The Officers of Artillery and of Engineers each to be borne in a separate list, up to the rank of Colonel inclusive; and thereafter to be incorporated in the general list of the whole Army. The Senior Colonel of Artillery or Engineers when Senior in the Army being promoted to Major-General as vacancies may occur.

Unemployed pay to be the same for all arms.

Employed pay, whether Regimental or Ordnance, &c., to be allowed as for the Cavalry.

Each Battalion of Artillery to have Field Officers and Staff as for an European Regiment, the numbers of Captains and Lieutenants being adjusted according to circumstances, to the number absent on leave and the number required for the Ordnance Department and other Artillery Staff duties. All Artillery Officers in India to be considered as employed when not on leave.

In the Ordnance Department the rank and pay of the various grades to be adjusted as follows :—

Senior Commissary as	...	...	...	Colonel
Senior Deputy Commissary as	...	.....	Lieutenant-Colonel	
Commissaries of Divisions as	...	...	Captains	
Assistant Commissaries as	...	.....	Lieutenants	
Commandant of Artillery, Major-General	...	...	...	1,100 Rs. per mensem.
Major of Brigade Captain	...	...	...	500 „ „
Inclusive of Horse allowance.				

No difference of pay between Horse and Foot Artillery.

Engineer Officers attached to the Engineer Corps, or holding other Military appointments, to be on the same footing as Artillery Officers ; but the duties of Engineer Officers in India are generally purely civil, and their salaries, &c., should be adjusted specially for each appointment.

In all appointments other than Military, Officers will receive their unemployed Military pay in addition to such emolument as may be assigned to them in their Civil capacities ; and when absent on leave or on any account other than public duty beyond the range of their immediate superior, they will receive only the unemployed rates of pay.

(Signed) JOHN JACOB.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5, 6.

Without noticing the first four Questions relating to the increase or diminution of the powers of Commanding Officers of Regiments and of Companies, and the result thereof, Sir W. Mansfield replies to Question 5, that the discipline of a Corps upon service mainly depends on Officers in Command of Regiments and Companies, and not on the Head Quarters. And (Question 6) he would increase the power of such Officers ; being of opinion, that in the eye of the native there should be no apparent limit to the power of his immediate Chief.

8.

He observes that the influence of one man on another is always greatest in times of excitement ; that Soldiers are men, and are acted on like their fellows, in Civil life ; that consequently the influence of real Leaders or Commanders of men is greatest in war, while that of a mere Regulation Colonel, who has not the " quality " of command in him, will be a stronger in time of peace.

Sir W. Mansfield has not noticed the important Question numbered 7,—“ What other measures can you suggest for the improvement of the discipline ? ”

No. IV. EUROPEAN OFFICERS.

INFANTRY.

QUESTIONS.

1. Within your experience, have the powers of Commanding Officers of Native Corps been increased or diminished in the _____ and state the orders or measures, or changes in the practice of the Service to which you attribute such effect?

2. During the above period have the powers of Officers of European or Native Corps been increased or diminished?

3. What has been the result of the increase or diminution of the powers and influence of Commanding Officers of Corps upon the discipline of Corps in the _____ of _____

4. What has been the result of the increase or diminution of the influence of Captains or Officers in charge of Companies?

5. Upon what does the discipline of a Corps upon service mainly depend, especially of a Native Corps? Upon the distant authority of Head Quarters, or upon the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Companies, and of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment?

6. Should the power of Commanding Officers, and of Officers in charge of Companies, be increased or diminished?

7. What other measures can you suggest for the improvement of discipline?

8. Is the influence of the European Officers among Native Troops, greatest in time of peace, or in time of war?

9. What conclusions do you draw as to the course to be pursued with Native Troops in times of peace, with regard to the strength at which Regiments should be maintained; the occupation to be found for them, and the like?

10. Has the strength of the _____ ever been so great in times of peace, that it might have been in part employed otherwise than on mere Military duties?

11. Would it have been practicable to employ the Troops upon public works?

12. In apportioning European Officers to Native Troops—

1st.—Should Native Corps have a full complement of European Officers according to the present scale, besides a full complement of Native Commissioned Officers; or,

(a)

2nd.—A full complement of European Officers and no Native Commissioned Officers;
or,

3rd.—A smaller number of European Officers than at present, and a full complement of Native Officers ?

13. If a full complement of European Officers, would you attach Cadets at once to Native Corps, or first to European Corps ?

14. If a smaller number of European Officers is assigned to Native Corps, how would you train them for this special employment ?

15. Is the efficiency of Regiments affected by the number of Officers taken from Corps for Staff employment ?

16. Speaking from your own experience, has any difference been observable in the course of mutinies between the conduct of Regiments with few, and those with many European Officers present ?

17. How can the demand for European Officers for Staff and detached employment be best provided for, without injuring the efficiency of Regiments ?

18. Would it be advantageous to the efficiency of the Officers of the Army as Regimental Officers, to cut off the inducement which the hope of Staff employment affords to young men, to qualify themselves in languages, sciences and special branches useful to the State ?

19. Would the standard of acquirements amongst the Officers of the Army at large be lowered by any measure having such a tendency ?

HIS EXCELLENCY GENERAL THE RIGHT HONORABLE LORD CLYDE, G. C. B.,
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

They have been diminished practically, though not avowedly. Commanding Officers have been much hampered with regard to promotions; and Courts Martial sentences approved and carried out by them have been constantly upset either in consequence of petitions to Head Quarters, or owing to flaws discovered in proceedings. The Deputies Judge Advocate of Divisions are principally employed in endeavoring to discover mistakes in Regimental Courts Martial, in which they are often successful. Then again, a Commanding Officer sees his best Officers often withdrawn for Staff employ when he can ill spare them; at other times, the bad Officer who has set him at defiance and neglected his duty, is taken away without the Commanding Officer being

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

consulted;—all these things tend to weaken a Commanding Officer's authority, and are believed to have increased of late years.

2.

They have been restricted.

3.

The result has been, I will not say the "mutiny," for that is doubtless owing to many things; but certainly the result has been to render the Commanding Officers almost cyphers, and their position undesirable. The Commanding Officer being thus crippled, found his only means of getting influence with the men was by flattering and coaxing them, and thus discipline was still further shaken; in truth, it was only when it suited the pleasure and convenience of the Sepoy, that he went heartily with his Commanding Officer.

4.

The result necessarily must be bad.

5.

The discipline of the Regiment must mainly depend upon the influence of the Commanding Officer, and of the Officers Commanding Companies.

6.

Rather increased than diminished.

7.

I have already suggested enlarged powers being conferred on Commanding Officers. They should have authority to discharge a Sepoy, to reduce a Non-Commissioned Officer, or to confine a Sepoy for — days, and with stoppages of pay for the days in confinement as in the Queen's Service always recording the circumstance in the Regimental Orders, and stating the nature of the offence. They should have power to stop a man's furlough, but above all, they should be as little interfered with as possible, by superior Authorities, in matters of Regimental detail. The Asiatic Soldier must look to his Commanding Officer as very powerful. If a Regiment is in bad order, and the Commanding Officer obviously inefficient, the Commander-in-Chief should be able to deprive him of Command at once, and to place an efficient Officer in his stead. This will answer much better than a constant vexatious interference.

8.

The good Officer will always have influence, but with Native Troops most so in time of war, because he is then thrown more with them; they know him better, and he becomes more acquainted with his men individually.

9.

Regiments should not be too strong,—640 or 700 Sepoys is ample for Infantry; 420 or 480 Troopers for Cavalry. If the Native Cavalry is maintained on such a reduced scale, as it is hoped will be the case, there will be ample employment for it in the various duties of Guards, Escorts, Detachments, &c.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

No, it is believed not, but this has arisen not from necessary employment, but from innumerable and most unnecessary Guards and Escorts required to be given by a Regiment.

11.

Not as the Army was constituted, and it does not seem desirable to maintain so large a Native Army as to have any number available for public works.

A Regiment of Sepoys will have, say—

Sick	...	...	...	...	30
Recruits	...	...	...	...	50
On Regimental employ	...	...	...	...	32
On Regimental Guards	...	...	...	...	40
On Garrison Guards (a small estimate)	...	...	...	...	50
On Escort or Detachment (a small estimate)	...	...	...	...	50
					252

Leaving, if not a man was on leave, only 392 men in the Lines to relieve 90 on Guard, and to be in reserve to furnish Detachments, &c. The above would be a most favorable case, and it will be seen there are none to spare for public works.

12.

Already answered in question 16, Section III. of Infantry.

13.

All Cadets should do duty with a European Regiment for at least a year before joining Native Troops; a longer period perhaps would be better.

14.

They should learn their Military duty as Officers of Companies with a European Regiment; their subsequent complete training should be with Native.

15.

It has been grievously so.

16.

The Officers generally seem to have more *esprit de corps* when many were left with the Regiment; but as respects the mutinies, the men made up their minds to rise, and neither number of Officers nor the efficiency of Commanding Officers appear to have affected the course they took one way or the other.

17.

By having an unattached list for the Staff.

18.

No, and it is presumed, the State must have Officers for special employment; there is no other sufficient source of supply open, certainly not on the same terms.

19.

It probably would, as there would then be no inducement for Officers to attain proficiency in many branches of knowledge in which they now qualify themselves.

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, G. C. B., K. H.,
COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. Yes, by authority to discharge at discretion any Soldier who may apply for his discharge, or whose removal from the Service might be desirable under present circumstances, a report being made to Army Head Quarters of the cause of the measure.
2. They have neither been increased nor diminished.
3. As the increased power referred to in No. 1 Answer was given to Commanding Officers in August 1857, there has hardly been time to ascertain the result of the measure.
4. There has been no increase or diminution of the influence of Captains or Officers in charge of Companies.
5. Upon the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Companies, and of the Officer in Command of the Regiment.
6. Increased.
7. Magisterial power to the Commanding Officer answers admirably in the Irregular Regiments, which might with advantage be introduced generally. Flogging should be ordered for theft, insubordination and any disgraceful conduct, to which should be added imprisonment, and, as a consequence, expulsion.
8. It is at all times great, and would be greater if Officers were not so frequently taken from the Regiments for Civil Staff duties—a system most injurious to the Service.
9. The duties of the Native Troops in Garrison are at all times severe; they have their own amusements, in which they are encouraged and indulged by their European Officers.
10. Never.
11. On Military Field works, for which they should receive a small addition of pay.
12. The want of a full complement has been greatly felt, caused by the circumstances before alluded to.

2nd.—A full complement of European Officers, and no Native Officers whatever.

(b)

QUESTIONS.

3rd.—No Native Officers.

13.

If a full complement of European Officers was maintained, I see no reason why Cadets should be at first posted to European Regiments. They should be posted to Native Regiments, and be made to study the Native languages, time and opportunity being given for that, with only a very little drill, until the first object is attained.

14.

I have already suggested that the complement must be complete.

15.

Most materially and injuriously.

16.

I cannot say; all the Regiments have been equally inefficient in Officers.

17.

For certain Staff appointments, I would have a Staff Corps; but it is the demands of the Civil Staff that destroy the efficiency of Regiments.

18.

I would not cut off the inducement (except for Civil employ); Officers cannot be too highly educated even for Regimental Service.

19.

I do not conceive it would; but on this point I write a separate minute.

MINUTE BY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR H. SOMERSET, G. C. B., K. H., COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, BOMBAY ARMY, WITH REFERENCE TO THE PAUCITY OF OFFICERS IN NATIVE REGIMENTS.

1. I feel it impossible to speak too strongly upon the injurious effects to the Army, to Regiments and to discipline, by the system that exists of taking so many Officers from their Regiments for Staff and Civil employ.

2. This point has been brought, I believe, under the notice of Government by many Commanders-in-Chief and General Officers, more particularly by the late Sir Charles Napier; but their remarks and observations have had little or no effect.

3. With the example that we have so recently had before us in Bengal, where the whole of the Native Officers have mutinied with their men, it cannot be necessary to dilate on the utter uselessness of Native Commissioned Officers. I will, therefore, only remark on the necessity of having a full complement of European Officers, and endeavour to show the injurious effects to discipline by the system of depriving Regiments of their Officers, and the encouragement held out to them to obtain Staff employment, Civil or Military.

4. The discipline of a Regiment can only be carried out by every Member of it minutely attending to the duties assigned to him;—The Subaltern to his Squad of men, the Captain to his Company, and the Commanding Officer to the whole.

5. Every Officer, on joining a Regiment, should go through the regular drill, and should be taught the mode of looking after his men, learning the system of accounts, and the system of discipline as laid down in the Articles of War and the Regulations of the Service, and for his efficiency on these points he ought to look up to his Commanding Officer for encouragement, approbation and protection.

6. By the practice of Government, a totally different system is encouraged and prevails. It is perfectly well-known that a Cadet from his first joining is told by his friends to look out for a good Staff appointment; he comes out armed with letters from influential friends and Members of the Court of Directors, to Governors and Secretaries, &c., but is careless of any introduction to his Commanding Officer.

7. These recommendations particularly if coming from persons of influence and power, are carefully recorded to be acted upon as occasion may offer.

8. The young man joins his Regiment, learns a little of his drill, but very shortly finds himself selected for Military or Political employ on the Staff, and this without any reference to his qualifications, and invariably without any reference to his Commanding Officer.

9. The Court of Directors have laid down a rule that no more than a certain number of Officers can be taken from a Regiment; but this is frequently broken through, either as an emergent case or for special reasons. The consequence is that Regiments are left almost entirely without Officers, which renders it impossible to carry out any system of responsibility throughout the various ranks, and thus discipline falls to the ground; and this system is carried through all ranks, from its Lieutenant-Colonel to the Ensign, to the injury of every Regiment in the Service, and to the Army generally.

10. Thus Officers taken from their Regiments for Staff employ, rejoin, on promotion, after some years' absence, totally ignorant of their Regimental duties, and of discipline, &c., and many of them positively not knowing how to put on their uniform.

11. During my experience in Command in India, I have known Officers, after fourteen and eighteen years' absence on Civil employ, rejoin, on promotion, to take up the Command of a Regiment. How can such a man know any thing of his duty, and how can any discipline be carried on in any Army where such a system exists?

12. Many of the Regiments of the Bombay Army are commanded by Captains others have but one Captain for duty, and one Regiment now in the Field (should the present Commander—a Captain—have to come away sick) will be commanded by a junior Lieutenant. Another point is the great injury to discipline and Military *esprit* by such a system. An Officer gets appointed to Civil employ, the Commissariat, Revenue Survey, Police, or Deputy Collector of a District, or other non-Military employment, he immediately throws off his uniform, swaggers about in all kinds of costumes, grumbles at having to pay the slightest subscription towards the expenses of messing or entertainments given by his Regiment (while more worthy men are doing double Regimental duty), sets for a time his Commanding Officer at defiance, thinks it the greatest possible

bore to have any thing to do with his Regiment, and when he does rejoin, he returns to it more ignorant than the recruit of yesterday.

13. Experience has shown us, that when the day of trial comes, Native Officers are useless, nay more than useless, and yet there are not, for the reasons I have stated, sufficient European Officers left to look after the Companies, or to carry on the current duties of the Regiment.

14. In several Regiments Subalterns are in Command of three and four Companies, how then is the interior economy of those Companies, or their organization and discipline, attended to ?

15. I believe the Natives to be greatly attached to their Officers, and they would be more so if the Regiments were kept complete, and by doing away with the Native Officers, bring the European Officers more frequently and necessarily in contact with their Non-Commissioned Officers and Men. I can speak from more experience than most men, having been many years in the Cape Mounted Riflemen and having Commanded the Regiment for upwards of twenty-eight years—a Regiment 1,000 strong, with a full complement of forty-five Officers, more than three Officers never having been permitted to be absent at one time. The whole Regiment looked up to their Officers as their fathers and protectors, and followed them to the death.

To have the Native Army efficient, it should have its full complement of Officers, who should, from their first joining, be made to learn to conduct their duties on the system established by the Regulations, and no Officers should be taken for any other Staff employ but these—Adjutant General, Brigade Major, Military Secretary or A. D. C., and those only under the distinct sanction of the Commanding Officer.

The Quarter Master General's Department being a scientific branch of the Service, should be taken from a Staff Corps. The Commissariat should also be a totally and entirely distinct branch of the Service, as also the Police.

16. More Officers should be appointed to Native Regiments, and a better system of promotion established, and Officers encouraged to learn their duties as Officers, and to remain with their Regiments, and above all, to be taught to look up to their Commanding Officer for recommendation as to their qualifications. By the present system, the Commanding Officer is totally and entirely set aside; he is never asked the question as to an Officer's fitness or qualification, neither is the General Officer, or indeed the Commander-in-Chief, except to ask if there are more than the usual complement of Officers away from their Regiment.

17. I have known Adjutants and Quarter Masters of Regiments (the most important and responsible Officers of a Regiment) taken away and appointed to Staff and Police appointments without a question being asked, and thus the whole efficiency of a Regiment becomes completely and entirely upset.

18. Until this system is discontinued, and a rule laid down that no Officer shall be selected and taken from a Regiment without the consent of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment, obtained through the Commander-in-Chief, it is utterly hopeless to carry on discipline in a manner to ensure Regiments being efficient, or the comfort and well-being of the Soldiers of the Native Army attended to and secured.

19. I enclose a return of the number of Officers on Staff and Civil employ, in the Bombay Presidency, exclusive of those from the Artillery and Native Cavalry.

The established strength in European Commissioned Officers, exclusive of the Colonels of the twenty-nine Regiments of Native Infantry of the Bombay Army, is	725
From which must be deducted the vacancies of Ensign, requiring to be filled up	78
	<hr/>
	647
Out of which number, the absentees on Staff employ amount to ...	218
	<hr/>
	429
From which deduct number absent on furlough beyond Presidency limits	67
	<hr/>
Remaining	362
	<hr/>

HIS EXCELLENCY LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR P. GRANT, K. C. B, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, MADRAS.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

During my experience of two years as Commander-in-Chief of the Madras Army, it has been my constant aim to strengthen the hands of Commanding Officers of Native Corps.

1st.—By insisting that all applications for appointments to the Staff shall be transmitted through Commanding Officers, who are required to give their opinion on the qualifications of the applicants, and especially to state whether they have received from them all due support and assistance.

2nd.—By confirming, in the case of Native promotions, the recommendations of Commanding Officers as far as possible.

3rd.—By directing Inspecting Officers personally to ascertain and report whether Officers in Command of Companies are thoroughly acquainted with the names, characters and history of their men, insufficient information on those points being, in my opinion, fatal to the influence over their men of European Officers serving with Native Corps.

2.

The powers of Officers of Corps have been increased as above specified.

3.

I persuade myself that a favorable result has been obtained by the increase of the powers and influence of Officers of Corps as above described.

4.

The reply to 3 answers this question.

(c)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5. The discipline of all Corps upon service mainly depends upon the influence and judicious exercise of authority of the Commanding Officer and the Officers in Command of Companies, but more especially upon the Commanding Officer.

6. If we could always arrange to have none but sensible, judicious and thoroughly competent Officers in Command of Regiments, it would certainly be desirable to increase their powers and to give them every latitude ; but constituted as the Service is, and that an Officer not notoriously incompetent must obtain Command of a Regiment when he attains a certain rank and standing, the restrictions imposed on the powers of Commanding Officers have been salutary I conceive.

As respects the powers and influence of Officers of Companies, I refer to my reply to 1.

7. The other measures I would suggest for the improvement of discipline are these :—

1st.—I would (experimentally) concede to Commanding Officers of Native Regiments power to confirm and execute the sentences of all Regimental Courts Martial, including sentences of forfeiture of good conduct pay, without referring to any superior authority.

2nd.—I would allow Commanding Officers of Native Regiments, at their own discretion, to punish Native Non-Commissioned Officers, without the intervention of a Court Martial or superior authority, by extra drill, pack drill, and placing their names lower on the list of Naick and Havildar.

3rd.—I would restore to Commanding Officers of Native Regiments a power exercised by them (and with great advantage to discipline) up to 1827, when the practice was peremptorily prohibited, as well as corporal punishment, by Lord William Bentinck—that of caning men in the ranks and recruits at drill at the discretion of the Commanding Officer and the Adjutant.

If an Officer is so wanting in judgment, temper and discretion as to be incapable of fitly exercising these increased powers, he is unfit for Command, and it should be competent to the Commander-in-Chief to remove him from the position of Commanding Officer of a Regiment.

8. The influence of the European Officers among Native Troops is greatest in time of war, when Officers and Men are much more thrown together and learn to know and to appreciate one another's good qualities.

9. The discharge of the duties imposed upon them as Soldiers has found the Native Troops in more than a just amount of occupation

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

during the thirty-eight years I have been in the Service. When Adjutant-General in Bengal, I placed before the Commander-in-Chief (Sir Charles Napier) a Return showing that one-third of the entire Native Army was permanently on duty, day and night, from year's end to year's end, and since I have been in Command of the Madras Army, I have made repeated representations that that Army also is similarly overworked, and the energies and exertions of the Troops most unduly and injuriously overtaken in like manner.

10 & 11.

Reply to question 9 answers these; but I have to add that the Madras Native Troops are habitually liable to be employed on public works of a Military character, when not fully occupied on ordinary Military duties, and I desire to state here that I have never known the Bengal Sepoy refuse to engage in such works on Field Service. That calumny of Lord Melville's was, I contend, fully refuted by the evidence I placed before the Committee of the House of Commons on Indian affairs in March 1853.

12.

My replies to questions 7, 16 and 17, Head "Infantry,—3 Organization, Promotions and Rewards," answer this question, Clauses 1, 2, 3 included.

13.

I would attach all Cadets to European Corps until they should be thoroughly drilled and fitted to assume Command of a Company on parade. I think it most objectionable that this indispensable professional instruction should be imparted to European Officers by any Native, or in conjunction with Native recruits by a European instructor. A European Officer should join a Native Corps so well up in his drill as to be capable of teaching others, and not be dependent on those under his Command for instruction in his Military duties.

14.

If a smaller number of European Officers is assigned to Native Corps, I would select, for such special employment, those distinguished for superior energy and vigor of mind and body, temper, judgment, unbending resolution, and a good *colloquial* knowledge of the language of their men.

15.

The efficiency of Regiments, in my opinion, is most injuriously affected by the number of Officers taken from Corps for Staff employment. Either Regiments are drained of their best and most deserving Officers, or patronage is not dispensed with justice to individuals and solely with reference to superior merit. On this head, in a Minute dated the 21st May 1857 (duly forwarded to the Supreme Government and to the Home Authorities) I wrote as follows, and I adhere now to the opinions I then expressed, *viz.*—
"I repeat that in the Madras Army the principal causes of com-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“plaint are the unceasing ‘demands upon the energies of the
“ ‘men,’ their poverty, and more than all, the great paucity of
“ European Officers of standing and experience present with Regi-
“ ments. Officers and Men must be brought more together, and
“ the European Officers must be taught to look upon their Regi-
“ ments as their home, and not to fix their whole thoughts, as they
“ now do, on devising means of getting away to Staff or other de-
“ tached employ—Any thing rather than Regimental duty is the
“ universal feeling. The consequences of this craving are utter
“ indifference, not to say positive dislike towards their men, and the
“ engendering of a restless discontented disposition, which is, I
“ doubt not, communicated to the Soldier.” See also my Memorandum of the 29th June 1857, placed in the hands of the Governor General on that date.

16.

The conduct of Native Regiments in quarters, either in the course of mutinies or at other times, is not influenced so much by the number of European Officers present, as it is by securing the presence with Corps, of a really competent Commanding Officer and a proportion of experienced and contented Officers of Companies, who take an interest in their men, and know how to deal with them and to secure their attachment.

On Field Service the presence, with Native Troops, of a full complement of European Officers is very important. The youngest and most inexperienced will inspire the Native Soldier with far more confidence than the very best Native Officer ever does.

17.

In answer to this question, I quote again from my Minute of the 21st May 1857 :—“Either form a Staff Corps or completely
“ change the system by which Local and Irregular Forces are at
“ present officered from the Line, the effect of which is to deprive
“ the Regular Army of its most valuable Officers, thus making the
“ main Army of minor importance to those local and irregular
“ excrescences and make-shifts.”

“Take the Officers who are to serve with these Local Forces
“ from the Line, but let them understand that they will be struck
“ off the strength of their own Regiments, and have no further
“ claim to promotion therein or to any of the Staff appointments
“ of the Regular Army.”

* * * * *

“Local and Irregular Forces should be available for employ-
“ ment on Field Service so as to occasionally open to all ranks a
“ field for distinction ; but once an Officer makes his election and
“ enters the Local and Irregular Levies, all connection between
“ him and the Line should be for ever severed, and his place in the
“ Regular Army at once filled up.”

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

“ And let this principle be made applicable to the Department
“ of Public Works also.”

Note.—As regards officering the Bengal Army, see also my Memorandum of the 11th August 1857, submitted, on that date, to the Governor General, Copy (F) accompanied my letter to Lieutenant-Colonel Durand, dated 18th June.

18.

The system I have suggested for providing for Staff and detached employment would not, I conceive, cut off from the Officers of the Army inducements to qualify themselves in languages, sciences and special branches useful to the State, while it is calculated, I think, most essentially to promote the efficiency of Regiments of the Line and of Regimental Officers.

19.

My reply to 18 answers this question also.

Note.—The same series of questions in reference to the Bengal Army has been sent to me ; but I am not aware that I have here stated any thing with respect to the Madras Army that is not equally applicable to the Bengal Native Troops. To reply separately would, therefore, be a mere repetition of what I have already written on the several points adverted to under this particular head.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR W. R. MANSFIELD, K. C. B., CHIEF OF THE STAFF.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

Officers in Command of Regiments and Companies, and not on the Head Quarters.

6.

Increased. In the eye of the Native there should be no apparent limit to the power of his immediate Chief.

8.

The influence of one man on another is always at the greatest pitch in times of excitement.

We must look on Soldiers as men, and consider they are acted on like their fellows in Civil life.

Consequently, the influence of real leaders or Commanders of men is greatest in war, while that of a mere Regulation Colonel, who has not the “ quality ” of Command in him, will be stronger in times of peace.

MAJOR-GENERAL R. J. H. BIRCH, C. B., SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT
MILITARY DEPARTMENT.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

This subject is a very comprehensive one. It embraces the punitive powers of Commanding Officers independently of Courts

(d)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Martial, and their powers in confirming the sentences of Courts Martial, and further their power to reward men.

And *First*, as to the punitive powers of Commanding Officers independent of Courts Martial.

Before there were Regulations compiled for the guidance of Officers, Commanding Officers often exercised powers such as that of dismissing Native Soldiers and of, reducing Non-Commissioned Officers, of chastising with a rattan, of awarding extra drill and duty, of refusing furloughs for offences committed by their men ; but such powers were not authoritatively conferred upon Commanding Officers. I speak of the period from 1821 to 1828 inclusive, which formed the early part of my experience in the Service.

On the 1st of September 1828, the standing orders for the Bengal Native Infantry were compiled by order of Lord Combermere, then Commander-in-Chief. Those orders limited the power to discharge Sepoys to the cases of men who, from bodily defects, sickness or accident, might become incapable of performing the duties of a Soldier, and who were not entitled to the benefit of the Invalid Establishment. Recruits who, from awkwardness at the drill, were obviously unlikely to become smart Soldiers, were also liable to dismissal by Commanding Officers. But in all other cases of unfitness for the Service, or when Commanding Officers were desirous to have Sepoys discharged, they were required to obtain the sanction of the Commander-in-Chief.

In other words, Commanding Officers were declared to have no power to dismiss men as a punishment for offences committed.

The first Articles of War made for the Native Armies of the three Presidencies were enacted in 1845 (Act XX. of 1845 of the Government of India). Before that time there were Articles of War established in each Presidency by its own Government. Those for Bengal were established in 1796, and they continued in force till 1845. Of the Articles of 1845, Article 2 provides that "no Non-Commissioned Officer or Soldier shall be discharged as a punishment, except by the sentence of a Court Martial or by order of the Commander-in-Chief at the Presidency to which he may belong."

This Article merely enacted by Law that which was before well-established by the Regulations for the Army, that Commanding Officers had no power to dismiss men for offences committed. And now for thirty years this has been the rule, and for even a longer period.

A revised Code of Regulations for the Army was published in 1855. They take away from the Commanding Officers the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

power to discharge men physically unfit for the Service, which the Regulations of 1828 had granted. All such cases are now to be referred to the Commander-in-Chief for orders.

There has never been any recognized authority on the part of Commanding Officers to inflict this punishment. The old Articles of War did not touch the point. The Articles now in force, Act XIX. of 1847, enact that "no Non-Commissioned Officer shall be reduced to the ranks but by the sentence of a Court Martial, or by order of the Commander-in-Chief of the Presidency to which the offender shall belong" (Article 110).

Under the old Articles of 1796, it was provided (Article III Section XI) "that every Non-Commissioned Officer and Soldier shall retire to his quarters or tent at the beating of the retreat, in default of which he shall be punished, according to the nature of his offence, by the Commanding Officer." This is the only Article which alluded to the power of a Commanding Officer without the intervention of a Court Martial.

In the Regulations of 1828, minor punishments are not mentioned; in those of 1855, "the punishment of Soldiers with a rattan, at the pleasure of individuals entrusted with the instruction of recruits, or on any other occasion whatever, is strictly prohibited." The Government General Order, dated 25th February 1835, had already prohibited the use of the rattan. The words in Italics are those now in point; the allusion is to an old practice now perhaps obsolete, but which I have myself witnessed five and thirty years ago, of Sepoys being caned not at drill only, but for stupidity or obstinacy on parade at Regimental exercise.

The Articles of War now in force thus provide for minor punishments:—

Article 112.— "In cases of light offences a Commanding Officer may, without the intervention of a Court Martial, award extra drill, with or without pack, for a period not exceeding fifteen days; restriction to Barrack limits not exceeding fifteen days; confinement in the Quarter Guard or Defaulter's Room not exceeding seven days; solitary confinement not exceeding seven days; removal from Staff situations or acting appointments, or may order Soldiers to be employed in piling and unpling shot, and in cleaning accoutrements of men in Hospital."

The Regulations of 1855 follow up this Article of War by prohibiting extra duty being awarded as a punishment to a Native Soldier, and by declaring that no punishment not specified in the Article is

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

legal. But intermediately on the 16th of October 1854, a General Order was issued by the Commander-in-Chief which greatly interfered with the powers of Commanding Officers. It directed that men to whom drill exceeding six days might be awarded by their Commanding Officer or confinement to Barrack limits for six days, (afterwards fixed at drill for fifteen days or imprisonment in the Quarter Guard or Defaulter's Room or restriction to Barrack limits for six days—G. O. C. C. 23rd January 1855) should have an entry of such punishment recorded in the Defaulter's Book, and that two such entries existing together should render the man ineligible for good conduct pay for two years. But it also provided that any man who might be ordered such punishment, but denied the commission of the offence, should have the right to demand trial by Court Martial, and that an intimation of this privilege should be invariably made to the Soldier, who might assert his innocence of the offence charged against him.

Secondly.—As to the powers of Commanding Officers in confirming the sentences of Courts Martial.

The Articles of War of 1796 directed that no sentence of a Regimental Court Martial should be executed till the Commanding Officer (not being a Member of the Court Martial), or the Governor of the Garrison should have confirmed the same. There was no restriction then on the power to confirm sentences.

Matters continued thus till the 6th of November 1818, when, for the first time, Regulations were made for the supervision of the proceedings of inferior Courts Martial by General Officers Commanding Divisions, and for their registry in the Offices of Deputies Judge Advocate General. By these Regulations the forms of procedure were rendered more exact and uniform than they had previously been, and the laxity and irregularity by which trials by Regimental Court Martial had been distinguished were considerably remedied. But as General Officers Commanding Divisions were authorized to set aside, for illegality, the sentences of Courts Martial confirmed by Commanding Officers, the operation of the new Rules could not but weaken the powers of those Officers. Reversal of sentence was never directed without the most cogent reasons; but no doubt the practice was one which worked ill for the discipline of Regiments.

In November 1832 the Commander-in-Chief, Sir Edward Barnes, conferred full power on Commanding Officers to carry into effect all sentences, or to mitigate or remit them, and abolished the practice of referring certain sentences to the General Commanding the Division previous to execution. The same Order gave a Commanding Officer power to confirm or not a sentence of corporal punishment, and to discharge a Sepoy sentenced to flogging instead of inflicting that punishment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

In February 1835, the Governor General in Council prohibited the punishment of flogging either with the cat or the rattan, and substituted dismissal as a sentence for any offence for which up till that time corporal punishment might have been awarded; but the carrying into effect such sentence of dismissal was not left to Commanding Officers; it required the sanction of the General Commanding the Division. This Order took away the powers conferred by the Order of 1832.

The Act XXIII of 1839 empowered Courts Martial to sentence Native Soldiers to imprisonment with hard labor, and provided that all men so sentenced for any period, or sentenced to ordinary imprisonment exceeding six months, should be dismissed the Service; but all such sentences were to receive the sanction of the General Officer Commanding the Division. Commanding Officers of Regiments were not allowed to carry into effect any sentence of imprisonment exceeding six months, nor to discharge men so sentenced.

In 1845, the Articles of War, made for the first time for the Native Armies of the three Presidencies, gave some enlarged powers to Officers Commanding Regiments, both of confirmation and of commutation of sentences, this last power being quite new. I beg to be permitted to say that I framed them, as Judge Advocate General, expressly with that object, under the sanction of the late Lord Hardinge, Governor General. The second edition of the Articles made in 1847, and now in force, gave me in the same capacity the opportunity of still further enlarging the powers of Commanding Officers, and it was readily embraced. The Articles of 1847 give power to Commanding Officers, whenever the good of the Service requires to exercise, to try offenders by Regimental Courts Martial for offences ordinarily cognizable by District Courts Martial; only offences restricted to the cognizance of General Courts Martial were not within the discretion of Commanding Officers, such as violence to superiors, desertion, &c. They are empowered also to carry all sentences into effect without exception, and to instruct Courts Martial not to award, in particular cases, either solitary imprisonment or corporal punishment.

There was, however, a Resolution of Government, dated the 30th of August 1845, framed in connection with the Articles as made in that year, which laid down Rules for corporal punishment, then restored by Lord Hardinge after having been abolished for ten years under the Orders of Lord William Bentinck. It has been given *verbatim* in the reply to a previous question.

It limited the infliction of corporal punishment to the following offences—

1st—Mutiny, insubordination, violence, or using or offering violence to superiors.

(e)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2nd.—Drunkenness on duty.

It directed that under ordinary circumstances, and in Cantonments, corporal punishment should not be inflicted for disgraceful conduct.

The Resolution further declared that, if at any time the discipline of the Army should require that the restrictions imposed by it should be taken off, it would be rescinded.

And lastly, that on the line of march, on board ships, or boats, and on service in the field, the full powers of the Articles might be exercised according to the absolute necessity of the case, and on these occasions the Resolution was not applicable. The object, however, of the Resolution was stated to be to inflict corporal punishment as seldom as possible, commuting it in all cases where it could be done with safety to the discipline of the Army.

This Resolution is still in force. If it interferes with the powers of Commanding Officers of Regiments, it interferes likewise with that of superior Officers, but, in my opinion, in a very reasonable and proper way. The supervision of proceedings of Courts Martial by General Officers still continues, and numerous are the cases in which even, with all the extent of power confided to Commanding Officers, they lose sight of the plainest directions of the Articles of War by trying by Regimental Courts Martial offences of which the cognizance is restricted to General Courts Martial, and by other similar neglects, necessitating the setting aside of sentences illegally confirmed by them.

With regard to corporal punishment, (I use this term as it is usually understood, a flogging with the cat) having said that I think the restrictions of the Government Resolution of the 30th of August 1845 should not be relaxed, I beg to be permitted to quote the following passage of a Circular from the Adjutant General's Office, issued in 1847, in connection with the Articles of War then made and now in force. It appears to me to contain the most just views, and to meet successfully the clamorous call now made in many quarters for the free use of corporal punishment :—

“ Officers and Men of the Native Army require neither austerity
 “ of manner nor severity of treatment ; but at the same time it is in-
 “ dispensable to the maintenance of discipline that authority should
 “ be exercised with a firm though gentle hand, and every instance of
 “ breach of discipline visited with promptitude and decision. Though
 “ it may not always be possible to humour their prejudices, the men
 “ may, at all times, be convinced, by judicious treatment, that their
 “ European Officers are incapable of disregarding their feelings, and
 “ their attachment will thus be secured even when recourse is had
 “ to reproof or punishment in support of discipline.”

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The discharge of men flogged is no longer the rule, except when they are flogged for disgraceful conduct. This very circumstance of the retention in the Service of men who have been flogged for Military offences, furnishes, in my opinion, a very powerful argument for inflicting corporal punishment as seldom as possible, for the sufferers are certainly looked upon among their Native comrades as, to a certain extent, disgraced

On the whole, the occasional curtailment of the powers of Commanding Officers, and the want of uniformity of system throughout, as exhibited in the preceding notes, cannot but have had a tendency to weaken their authority ; but matters have been on a much better footing since the enactment of the Articles of War of 1847, and with a few additional powers which I propose to suggest in my reply to a subsequent question, and which have already been noticed in the preceding sheets, it appears to me that the position of Commanding Officers will be very satisfactory, and the discipline of Regiments will thereby be secured.

2.

Neither increased nor diminished, I think, in any perceptible degree.

3.

I conceive that the greatly extended powers granted to Officers Commanding Regiments by the Articles of War as now in force must have had at least a beneficial tendency on the discipline of Regiments, and that where such has not been the case, the fault lies with the Officers themselves.

4.

I do not think there has been any perceptible alteration in the influence of Officers Commanding Companies.

Some Regiments are what are called Adjutant's Regiments, in which the influence of Officers Commanding Companies is diminished, and with very bad effect, by the centralization of the power to reward by promotion, &c. But no good Commanding Officer could suffer this, and I look upon it as occasional only, and very far from the system of the Service.

5.

Mainly on the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Companies, and of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment.

6.

I think Officers Commanding Regiments should have power to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers, as well as to appoint them. In Her Majesty's Service and in the Company's European Regiments Commanding Officers do not possess this power, and therefore it was withheld from Commanding Officers of Native Regiments when the Articles of War for the Native Army were made. But this power would greatly strengthen the hands of Officers Commanding Corps, and might, I think, be unobjectionably given. I would also give Commanding Officers power to inflict summary chastise-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

ment with a rattan not exceeding three dozen strokes, on Sepoys offending. The power of summary discharge I would not confer upon them. Cases requiring the dismissal of the delinquent should be brought before a Court Martial, and Commanding Officers have power already to confirm the sentences of Courts Martial. I would not relax the Government Resolution of the 30th of August 1845 regarding corporal punishment.

I think no man dismissed from a Regiment by a sentence of a Court Martial, confirmed by the Commanding Officer, should be restored. Errors in proceedings, deficiency of evidence, and the like, should be pointed out, and, if necessary, in severe terms, to the Commanding Officer; but his dismissal of a man so sentenced by Court Martial should never be set aside.

Numerous have been the cases of injustice done to men in dismissing them; but the sufferers might be employed elsewhere, or recompensed in some way, and should never be reinstated in opposition to the Commanding Officer's authority. It is an opinion entertained by many Officers that no appeals should be received, and that the entertainment of appeals paralyzes the authority of Commanding Officers. I do not subscribe to this opinion. If an appeal is made on frivolous grounds or is otherwise untenable, its rejection is certain and the authority of Commanding Officers in this upheld; but where there are just grounds of appeal and a clear wrong has been done, it is quite too much to say that there shall be no remedy. It is the perpetration of such wrong, and not the entertainment of the appeal, that really injures the authority of a Commanding Officer. But though I am not in favor of rejecting appeals from men who consider themselves injured, I would not adopt any measure in consequence of any proof of such injustice which could at all wound the authority of the Commanding Officer.

I would propose to cancel the G. O. C. C., dated 16th October 1854 (mentioned in my reply to question 1 of this Section), and to allow Commanding Officers full power to decide on the punishment to be awarded to a Native Soldier, though it may affect the man's right to good conduct pay; and I would not give the latter the option of demanding a Court Martial, which is very unsuitable in the case of Natives.

The power to promote men to the Non-Commissioned ranks for eminent gallantry or conspicuous loyalty to the State, conferred on Commanding Officers by Government General Orders of the 19th May 1857, should not, I think, be continued beyond the period of disturbance, for which it was especially granted.

As respects Officers Commanding Companies, I think their recommendations of Sepoys for promotion and of Naicks for advancement to Havildar should be strictly attended to, provided they have

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

had charge of the Company for a sufficient time to enable them to pronounce on their men. Officers Commanding Regiments should never grant leave of absence to Non-Commissioned Officers or Sepoys without first ascertaining that Officers Commanding the Companies to which they belong concur in the grant of leave.

7.

The subject is too full of minutiae to be embodied in an answer to this question; but in general terms I would suggest that it be impressed upon European Officers punctually and exactly to fulfil their own duties, with Detachments especially, as an example to their men, and they should go more often into the Lines and among the men than is generally done.

But the main point towards securing the improvement of discipline in Regiments is that the Commanding Officers should be selected with reference to qualification for Command, and that proved inefficiency for Command should inevitably lead to removal.

Adjutants of Regiments should be most carefully selected.

I think Majors should be made eligible to do duty with other than their own Regiments for the purpose of Commanding such other Regiments when the Lieutenant-Colonel attached to any Corps or the Major belonging to it or the senior Officer present is unfit to Command.

And also that it should be in the power of the Commander-in-Chief to send Officers of all ranks from one Regiment to another to do duty when occasion requires.

8.

Influence acquired in time of peace will carry with it influence in time of war.

But it is in time of war, I think, that the Native Troops look most to their European Officers.

9.

I do not see how our Native Regiments are to be employed in times of peace, otherwise than in the performance of their own duties, any more than our European Regiments. The strength I would propose for Regiments is noted elsewhere.

10.

The strength of the Native Infantry has, for a long time past, been scarcely adequate to the duties required.

11.

I think not.

12.

I would not adopt either of these scales.

I have advocated the appointment of two Serjeants to every Company of our Native Infantry Regiments and the abolition of the grades of Native Commissioned Officers.

(f)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

If these measures are adopted, especially the first, I think the complement of European Officers might be diminished. It would suffice to have six Captains, six Lieutenants and four Ensigns with each Regiment of Native Infantry, besides the Field Officers.

13.

I would send Cadets to Native Corps that are well commanded in preference to sending them to European Corps. If the Cadet is to be eventually posted to an European Regiment, he will not have lost time by doing duty at first with a good Native Regiment. If he is to be posted at last to a Native Regiment, the sooner he begins to serve with one the better, that he may commence, as soon as possible, to know the men and to acquire their language.

14.

I see no difference, whether the number of Officers be greater or less, in the means of training Cadets.

15.

I think it is not for all ; it is a well-known fact that a Regiment well commanded will be quite as efficient with but a few Officers as a Regiment indifferently commanded with a larger number of Officers, and even more so. We have some Regiments, the Kelat-i-Ghilzie, the Ferozepore, the Sirmoor Battalion for instance, with only a few Officers, which in efficiency are probably not far if at all behind the Regular Native Infantry Corps.

16.

I have no personal *experience* of mutinies in Regiments ; my *observation* has led me to the conclusion that the number of European Officers with a Native Corps makes no difference if the men are determined to mutiny. If the influence of European Officers has kept any Regiment from mutiny, it is that of the Commanding Officer or the Adjutant, or some highly respected and efficient Officer in the Corps that has had the effect, and quite independently of the number present.

17.

The terms of this question seem to imply an affirmative answer to the 15th question, to which, however, I have ventured to give an answer in the negative. In reply to the present question I beg to say that I think it by no means necessarily follows that the detaching of Officers to the extent demanded for Staff employment injures the efficiency of Regiments. There should be a limited number below which a Regiment should not be allowed to fall in point of Officers present. If two Serjeants per Company are given, I think it will amply suffice that the number of Officers required to be invariably present with a Native Regular Corps should be, besides the Commanding Officer, the Adjutant and the Quarter Master, three Captains, and three Subalterns. Leave within easy recall might still be given to Officers, though for the time the minimum number be thereby diminished. This, with eight Companies in a Regiment, gives one Officer to each Company including the Staff, and it leaves half the Officers, eight per Regiment, for Staff employ and occasional absence on furlough.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

But I am persuaded that much might be done to relieve the pressure on Regiments for the demands of the Staff, by largely employing Uncovenanted persons and Officers who have retired from the Service, but who would be only too glad, in many instances, to come back to India to take employment.

18.

I think not ; but it is understood that a higher test than that now undergone will be established, which young men must pass before they can obtain Commissions and before promotion can be obtained. This will be of great service to the Army.

I cannot imagine any beneficial influence being exercised on the minds of Officers by cutting off the hope of Staff employment. They would look upon themselves as to a certain extent kept back in the course of life.

I do not think this measure would give us such good material for our Army as is now available, nor that any peculiar or increased attachment to the profession would ensue therefrom, but rather the contrary.

19.

I think it assuredly would.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. B. HEARSEY, K C B., COMMANDING PRESIDENCY DIVISION.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers of Native Corps of the Bengal Army have been very much diminished ever since the half batta question, during the Governor Generalship of Lord William Bentinck. The centralization of power has been going on, until it has been entirely usurped by Government and the Commander-in-Chief.

The Commanding Officers now can neither punish nor reward.

Even Courts Martial have been forbidden to punish a Native Sepoy for misbehaviour, which would bring an European under the lash ! I have not the series of Orders by me to refer to, or the Circulars or Memorandums issued on various occasions ; but they surely can be looked up in the Adjutant General's Office.

2.

Very much diminished in Native Corps.

3.

The Native Officers and Sepoys, finding the immediate authority for punishment or reward taken from Commanding Officers, and from the Captains of Companies, soon began to hold those Officers in contempt ; even Courts Martial were curbed in the infliction of punishment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

I have heard Sepoys have said—"Oh! what can he do, or a Court Martial either; the worst that can happen will be dismissal from the Service, and we can get that elsewhere." This was before so many Countries were conquered, or annexed, or had lapsed (deficit of direct heirs) to the British Government.

4.

The result of diminution of influence has been carelessness of demeanor, of duty, and a sneering contempt of their Commanding Officer and the Captains of their Companies and generally of their European Officers.

On the immediate authority of the Commanding Officer of the Corps, and Captains of Companies, who should have full power to punish when required, and also to reward by immediate promotion for gallant conduct and good service, without further reference to any higher authority. The Native Officers would then look up to their Officers as the source of honor and of reward, and the Sepoys be instant in obedience. Captains or Officers in Command of Companies could recommend to their Commanding Officer if he was present, and when he was absent have the same authority to promote or punish even without a Court Martial. *Asiatics to be governed well* must have a despotic rule; they cannot understand any other kind of government.

6.

Increased, so as almost to be independent of reference to higher authority, especially in granting rewards.

The Hindoostanee proverb fully illustrates this, *viz.*—"Jes ke pass dooce, ooske pass hur koee," which translated means—"He who owns the ladle has every body for friends."

7.

The great measure is, full power to punish or reward conferred on the Commanding Officers of the Native Regiments, also on Captains of Companies with the consent of their Commanding Officer.

8.

In time of war, for a Commanding Officer does manage now and then to reward merit in action *by sending strong representations* of good conduct to the Commander-in-Chief. The Commanding Officer of a Native Regiment ought to have the same power as the Captain of a Man-of-War over the men under his authority.

9.

Regiments of Native Infantry might be reduced to 800 men including *Non-Commissioned* Officers. The men should be entertained under the proviso that they should work with the spade, pick and axe, in making roads, clearing away jungle, levelling parade grounds, laying out cantonments, clearing drains, building their own huts or lines, and any other labor that fatigue parties should be put to,—these works in times of peace; in times of war, clearing and levelling their encamping ground, erecting defensive works, redoubts, batteries, making trenches; field entrenchments also during the times both of peace and war.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

10.

The Native Regiments have frequently been 1,000 men strong during peace, and the men could have been spared when not at exercise Division work described in answer to question No. 9. I certainly think the Native Infantry ought not to be employed in the numerous small escort duties, during which for twenty days and one month or more they are away from the Head Quarters of their Corps under a careless Commissioned or Non-Commissioned, who will not take the trouble to look after them or keep them strictly to their duty; their clothing, arms, accoutrements are neglected, and when they return, they have to be sent to drill to re-learn all they have forgotten or become unused to, besides learning careless sloughing habits.

11.

Certainly; they must be enlisted under the proviso that they are to be employed on public work or any manual labor the State may require from them; a certain daily sum to be given to them as *working batta* whilst so employed.

12.

Article 1.—One Captain, one Lieutenant and one Ensign to each Company, also two European Serjeants.

Article 2.—A full complement of European Officers as above detailed, or—

Article 3.—No Native Commissioned Officer, two European Serjeants in their stead, merely Non-Commissioned Officers.

13.

No; never, for the future, allow your Cadets or young European Officers to be placed under the instruction of Natives of any grade. Young Officers, on arriving in India, ought to be attached either to Queen's Regiments or to the Honorable Company's Regiments of European Infantry, and they should not be allowed to join a Native Corps until they were *au fait in all the duties required* to be attained by an accomplished Subaltern of the Army;—a perfect knowledge of Company drill, of the use of the Enfield rifle, sword exercise, fencing, *single stick* and *horsemanship*.

14.

All Officers ought to be expert in the use of all arms, either on foot or on horse-back. If they went through a course of Cavalry drill, also Artillery practice, and were sent to the Thomason College, Roorkee, to go through a course of Engineering, so much the better for the Service.

15.

Certainly; all Regiments ought to have their full complement of Officers at all times.

16.

Regiments have mutinied whether with many or with few Officers present with them. All the Regiments forming the different

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Contingents, *viz.*, Scindeah's, Kotah, Lahore, Joudpore, Mehedpore, Hansee, Ramghur and other Local Corps, in fact all Regiments recruited from Behar, Shahabad, Oude and the Dooab, whether they had 3 or 16 Officers present, all—all mutinied; it was a general movement amongst the Soldier class of Hindoostan Proper; all consideration was thrown to the winds. Count up the separate Corps, whether Contingent, Local, Irregular or by any other denomination, and you will find very little, if any difference between them. It was planned and was intended as a simultaneous movement, to crush British power in India, that they might throw off the dominion of a foreign race, and then *sell their services to the highest Native bidder*, but certainly to a Hindoo ruler.

17.

I have answered this question by pointing out how a Staff Corps could be formed without injuring a Regiment by reducing the number of Officers present with it.

18.

I would never banish *the hope* of preferment. If Officers show themselves competent for different Staff situations, and are selected for such of their own good-will, by all means take them, but appoint (or promote) other Officers to fill the vacancy thus caused in the Regiment (*Vide* my plan of a Staff Corps).

19.

Too much encouragement cannot be held out to Officers, generally to fit themselves for Staff situations such as may suit their dispositions or tastes. You may depend upon it, that the more the mind is exercised, the more useful to the State will the Officer prove, leaving the opening *wide* by which Officers may be encouraged to fill Staff, nay *responsible Staff* situations. Sir Charles Napier, in conversation with me, said—"The European Officers of the Bengal Army made *the best, most excellent* Staff Officers; but their Regiments ought not to be left with such few Regimental European Officers, for it made the Native Officers of opinion that they could do just as well *without European Officers altogether*"; and I deem the late Sir Charles Napier to have been a most unprejudiced and competent judge on that head.

 GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE 4TH HEAD OF ENQUIRY.

To each Company of Europeans, also to the Company of *Christian* Africans as also Natives, should be attached or posted three (3) European Officers, *viz.*, a Captain, a Lieutenant and an Ensign, besides the usual number of Non-Commissioned Officers, buglers, drummers and fifers.

It should be the duty of the European Officers to go to the Lines, *i. e.* the huts of their men, every morning and every evening, to listen to any complaint or grievance, and if

in their power, remedy it ; if not in their power to do so, to report the circumstance in person (the Senior Officer of the Company, the Captain) to the Commanding Officer of the Regiment. These Officers should encourage their men to tell them of *their home, their village difficulties*, and to show them they take an interest in their welfare and also of their families. I have often assisted my men *by advances of money* when they required it, *to marry their daughters, to pay arrears of rent to Government*, to re-build their houses when their families had the misfortune to be burnt out of them by accidents, to buy fresh cattle for the plough when the old ones had died or become useless from age or hurts.

In this manner I gained their hearts. The money I advanced was paid me by instalments (*i. e.*, kists) from their monthly pay. I thus became intimately acquainted with the names and characters of my men, their habits, their homes and their village interests. Of course I never took interest for any loan I made them. I lost *it*, *but I gained their good-will*. All crimes, faults or negligences I invariably and severely punished, but I never cast their detelictions in the face of those men ; they had committed a fault and they had been punished, and there the matter ended ; if they afterwards behaved well, they were rewarded. In action my men clung to me like bees. I have often had to strike them with the flat of my sabre, and ask them if they wished to disgrace me, by not allowing me to lead them into danger. Their reply was, *who will look after us if we lose our father !* shall we not be disgraced if we permit you to be hurt !! Now, alas, the Regiment I was brought up in—the 6th Regiment Bengal Light Cavalry is gone. I left it in 1829, and have only seen it once since, and that in the disastrous battle of Chillianwalla. I commanded the Irregular Brigade and the Rear Guard of the large Army on that day. The Native Officers and Men of my old Regiment (the 6th Cavalry) came to me the next day, and said the flight of the Cavalry would not have occurred if I had been with them. The 6th Light Cavalry (only three Troops were present with two standards) was left fighting alone and had to cut its way through large bodies of Seikhs, back. The three Troops lost both standard-bearers (Jemadars) killed ; one of them had tied the standard pole so tight to his body that it could not be undone, and the cords were cut with the sword on that day.

Regiments should be commanded by young and active men in the prime of life, *good horsemen*, who would give *their whole* time to their men and look strictly *into the interior economy* of their Regiments. There are instances of Lieutenant-Colonels and Brevet-Colonels of more than fifty years of age being able to do so ; but I am afraid not many ; they should be selected, and Officers deemed incapable of Command should be set aside, and sedentary employments given to them,—Inspectors of Offices, of papers, and such like, until they rose to the rank of Colonel and their services could be dispensed with altogether,—for though from age or inertness these Officers are found to be incapable, they may have done good service to the State in the earlier portions of their servitude.

A Staff Regiment or Regiments of Officers alone could be formed.

The Officers in it should have the option given to them of remaining Staff Officers distinct from their Regiments, or at once rejoining it, never to leave it again during their Service, except on the usual Furlough or on Medical Certificate, or the casual leave of a month every six months as allowed by the Regulations.

Officers belonging to the Staff Corps to have their names retained on the lists of their Regiments and returned as supernumeraries or non-effective, holding their rank and being promoted on vacancies or casualties occurring in their Regiments. For example, when the first Captain or any other rank on the list for promotion was a Staff Officer, he should be promoted *and take rank in the Staff Regiment*, but being non-effective, the Second Captain on the effective list and present with his Regiment, should also be promoted from the same date, and be the effective Major of his Regiment, and so on through all the ranks from Ensign upwards. If possible, Staff Officers are to be selected for Staff Corps in the same number and rank or from each grade, and this is to be continued as casualties occur in the Staff Corps, so that one Regiment should not have more promotion than another. There would be plenty of room for selection. The situation of the casualty could be filled up by a competent Officer. If one Major, one Captain, two Lieutenants and one Ensign were thus taken from each Corps for Staff situation, or if required, the number might be increased to two Captains, three Lieutenants and two Ensigns, but their vacancies to be immediately filled up. *Once on the Staff, always on the Staff.* The Officers once selected, not to be permitted to return to Regimental duty. If Staff Officers commit faults, let them be punished, by being turned out of the Service, or reduced to half or quarter pay of their rank, or be put on half or quarter pay list as incapables or disobedients, in the same mode Civilians are now punished. Not only the Adjutancies but the Quarter Master and Interpreterships of a Regiment should be held open as a reward for a correct knowledge of the language of their men. They should not only study Persian and Hindoostanee but Poooshtoo and the dialect of the different tribes in their Corps, for example, Cashmere, Punjabee, &c., &c. Money rewards of not less than 1,000 Rupees should be given to all Officers who passed a District examination for Interpreters, and 500 Rupees more when they passed a College examination in Calcutta.

I passed the latter when only six months in the Service, and when I was not more than 16½ years of age. I was rewarded by Government, as was usual in those days, (1808) by a donation of Sicca Rupees 1,200 and a sword with an honorary inscription on the sheath. I was invited to *tiffin* with Lord Minto, the then Governor General, and made much of. This is the way to encourage young men, not as now deprive them of allowances, their due for the performance of Regimental duties; by so doing you throw them into debt, they cannot afford to pay Moonshees for they have not the means, and eventually causing them to seek excitement in billiards, cards, shooting, racing and in gambling generally. I speak, I write from experience, from what I have seen, what I have witnessed.

MAJOR-GENERAL WADDINGTON, COMMANDING SCINDE DIVISION.

QUESTIONS.

BOMBAY ARMY.

ANSWERS.

1.

I am not aware that there has been any particular change in the powers of Commanding Officers for some years past.

2.

The tendency of late years has been to restore to Officers Commanding Companies, the power too often usurped by the Adjutant.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 3.** Answered above (No. 1).
- 4.** The influence of Officers Commanding Companies is doubtless beneficially increased by the change I have referred to.
- 5.** This must necessarily depend on the authority and influence of the Commanding Officer and his Staff, supported by Officers Commanding Companies.
- 6.** The present powers seem adequate both in regard to summary punishment and by sentence of Courts Martial. The powers, however, should not be diminished by the interference of superior authority without grave and pressing necessity.
- 7.** The discipline and efficiency of a Corps mainly depend upon its Officers, and above all it is essential to have an able and judicious Commanding Officer.
- 8.** The influence of European Officers is most felt in the field. The men require leaders in action.
- 9.** The men might be employed in building their own Lines and on Military works, such as road-making, fortifications, &c. ; but with rates of working pay allowed in the Bombay Army, such labor would be very expensive.
- Eight Companies, of 80 Rank and File each would seem a suitable strength.
- 10.** At some stations the duty has been less heavy than at others; but it has not happened within my knowledge that Regiments could have been withdrawn from Military duty.
- 11.** Employment might be found for them on Military works and with advantage if the working pay (four annas a day) were reduced. The French Soldiers employed on the fortifications of Paris received two sous each daily.
- 12.** I would recommend a smaller number of European Officers specially selected, and a smaller number also of Native Officers, but some of them with more authority and higher pay, as in Regiment of Irregular Cavalry.
- 13.** Answered above.
- 14.** Taking the complement of European Officers for a Native Corps at four, viz., Commanding Officer, Second in Command,
(h)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Adjutant and Quarter Master, I would have them selected from the Regiments of European Infantry.

15.

Under the system pursued, this, I think, must often have been the case.

16.

No opportunities have occurred in the Bombay Army for such a comparison.

17.

As the number of European Regiments must be largely increased, the present complement of Officers of two Native Regiments might be posted to each ten European Regiments, which would allow of selections being made for the Native Regiments, without impairing the efficiency of European Regiments.

18 & 19.

Such a measure would not, in my opinion, be at all advantageous.

MAJOR-GENERAL H. G. ROBERTS, COMMANDING RAJPOOTANA FIELD FORCE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The power of the Commanding Officer has been greatly diminished by many causes difficult to trace; among them, however, may be mentioned the orders which oblige him to send in returns of every parade, punishment, &c., and in fact by various paper forms which so restrict and fence him in, that as to being real Commander of a Regiment he is a nullity; if capable of Commanding, he is the best judge of the amount of parade required, the proper punishment to inflict on offenders, otherwise he is not fit for Command, and should not be allowed to exercise it. The system of almost inviting men to make complaints is any thing but calculated to make men obey; they cavil at petty annoyances, they do not look up to the Commanding Officer as the fountain from which their well-doing must spring; his prestige is destroyed. Complaints are, or should be disposed of at the daily morning orderly room.

2.

Diminished.

3.

By the word discipline, I would infer order and strict obedience to orders and regulations, not to exercise and evolutions. In this light the contracting a Commanding Officer's powers has most certainly the effect of diminishing his influence.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4. The result of the diminution of influence of Officers Commanding Companies has been the same as stated in answer 3, and has decreased the interest Captains took in their men.
5. Certainly upon the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Companies and the Commanding Officer of the Regiment.
6. Increased.
7. By some measure which will always ensure the presence of experienced Officers in Command of Companies, and thus prevent the constant transfer of Officers from one Company to another, and which prevents them from gaining the thorough knowledge of their men, necessary to form a correct decision as to fitness for promotion, &c.
8. The same.
9. Each Corps should be 900 strong, which will admit of a proportion being absent on furlough, and still retain a sufficient amount for work ; let them be employed in the construction of any Military public works in the vicinity at a fair remuneration.
10. On the average of Guard and Escort duties of all Stations I think hardly so ; in some where duty is light certainly ; but on the whole average, giving three nights in bed, few could be spared from many Stations, *i. e.*, inclusive of the duties now taken by the Military, which might, with propriety, be exercised by Civil Corps.
11. Answered above in answers 9 and 10.
12. A full complement of each as at present, increasing the Europeans present with the Corps by some measure.
13. To European Corps.
14. I would not recommend a smaller number of European Officers with Native Corps.
15. Materially so.
16. I have had no opportunity of judging, few mutinies having taken place in the Bombay Army.
17. By the formation of a Staff Corps, and by increasing the pay of Officers Commanding Companies, so as not to leave so much

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

inducement for him to leave his Regiment, and by reducing the pay of the Staff.

18.

It would not ; but certain examinations in the Languages, Military Sciences, &c., might be adopted with diminution of pay till such examination was passed.

19.

I think not, by the application of some such Rules as detailed in answer 18.

MAJOR-GENERAL J. BELL, COMMANDING PEGU DIVISION.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I do not think the powers of Commanding Officers have been really diminished, though the Regulations now in force have apparently lessened them by giving Company Officers the entire control and responsibility of their Companies. Years ago the Regiment used to be managed almost entirely by the Commanding Officer and Adjutant. The Standing Orders for Native Infantry, as also the General Regulations require that Company Officers should command their own Companies and select men for promotion to the Lance Naickship ; but with the exception of Commanding Officers not being able to award any minor punishment to Havildars or Naicks, as was formerly the case, I am not aware that their powers are lessened ; but this, I think, should be altered, as I have shown in Para. 6 of these questions.

2.

Those of Native Corps have, I think, been increased as stated in the above question.

3.

I think the discipline of the Madras Army may be pronounced good, though I do not think the Officers are regarded with the degree of respect and *veneration* almost they were when I entered the Service. I attribute this more to the Natives having become more accustomed to Europeans generally than was formerly the case, and not to any change that has been in the discipline of the Army.

4.

Much advantage I should say. Officers are generally well acquainted with their men, and where they are continued with the same Company for any length of time, manage, by kindness and attention to their men's comfort, to gain their confidence. When insubordination is shown it will be generally found that the Officer is newly appointed to the Company, or is wanting in those necessary qualities.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

5.

Certainly, upon the authority and influence of Officers of Companies efficiently watched over by the Commanding Officer.

6.

At present Commanding Officers have no power to award any punishment to Non-Commissioned Officers, nor have Company Officers power to award knapsack drill. I think that Commanding Officers should have the power of placing a Havildar from fifteen to twenty steps lower down in the list without a Court Martial, and that he should have the same power with the Naicks, besides that of depriving the latter of his stripes, with the concurrence of the General Officer Commanding the Division. I am satisfied there is no Officer exercising the Command of Regiments who does not feel the inconvenience of not having the power of awarding any punishment whatever to those ranks short of bringing them to a Court Martial. The repeated instances of neglect on the part of both Havildars and Naicks when Commanding Guards, which have come under my notice, convince me of the imperative necessity there is for some rule which shall admit of summary punishment being awardable to those grades as well as the Sepoy.

7.

Less frequent changes of Commanding Officers. To this end it would, I think, be advantageous if Majors were removed according to their fitness for Command, instead of Lieutenant-Colonels to make way for them. I think further that duty should be lighter than it has been for many years; at least four nights in bed should be secured to all ranks. The tour of foreign service should also be less frequent than it is at present, being now about once in seven years. I have known duty at many Stations in India so severe as to disgust and wear out the men. In this Division the same evil has, I am sure, tended to destroy the health and constitution of many, and besides disgusting them, has added considerably to the Pension List, whilst it augments the difficulty of recruiting.

8.

The influence of the European Officer depends so much in his own character and conduct towards the men that it will, I should think, be much the same; only in time of War the men being away from their Country and families must be more associated with their Officers, when influence would at such times be more felt than in Garrison.

9.

I think 800 bayonets a convenient strength, and when not overtaxed with duty, they might be employed advantageously on any public works.

10.

I never remember it to have been so; not when duty has been heavy, unless in cases of emergency, and then they might, no doubt, have been employed for anything.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11. I think a full complement of both desirable.
13. Cadets should at once be attached to the branch of the Service to which they are to belong permanently.
14. I could not recommend a smaller number than the present strength.
15. In many instances most materially.
16. All the mutinies that I have known have had their origin in questions connected with pay, &c. I have never known a single instance of the Madras Army showing disaffection towards the Government for any other cause, and therefore the number of European Officers present would seem to have no effect either one way or the other.
17. I think it very desirable that Officers taken from their Corps for Civil employ, should be placed in a Staff Corps, taking their rank and pension as they would have had in their Regiments. The same also might be done with the Commissariat Department.
18. No; on the contrary I am decidedly of opinion that Officers should be encouraged to fit themselves for anything, and the greatest inducement to this is the hope of Staff employ, limited, as it now is, to numbers, and period of absence from the Corps on such duties.
19. Certainly it would.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR S. COTTON, K. C. B., COMMANDING PESHAWUR
DIVISION.
BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. I believe the powers of Commanding Officers have been diminished from various causes—

1st.—The facility with which Sepoys were able to appeal against their Commanding Officers, and the ready way in which these appeals were received and attended to by Officers in high command. It was quite notorious the manner in which Sepoys with grievances used to congregate at Simla to present their petitions to the Commander-in-Chief, and there have been numerous instances in which Sepoys dismissed by a Regimental Court Martial have subsequently been reinstated.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2nd.—The timid way in which corporal punishment and solitary imprisonment were introduced into the Native Army. These most necessary punishments have never up to the present time, been really carried out in the Native Army, and the Sepoys were not slow to take advantage of the indecision displayed in their limited introduction.

3rd.—The rigid adherence to promotion by seniority was another cause by which the power of reward was taken out of the hands of the Commanding Officer.

4th.—The incompetency of Officers in consequence of old age to Command their Regiments. In eight Regiments in the Peshawur Division, I had not three who were able to Command their Regiments efficiently.

5th.—I think the various acts of misconduct of the Native Army, all more or less bordering on mutiny on different occasions, were never dealt with sufficient severity, in consequence of which the Sepoy has not held the power of Government, much less the authority of his Military superiors, in that dread and awe so necessary to the preservation of discipline in a large Army composed of men who, under their own system of Government, have been ruled with rods of iron, and were unable to appreciate our leniency.

2.

The little power to punish, and the less to reward in the hands of the European Officers, generally, have rendered them so many cyphers in the eyes of the Sepoys.

3.

That there has been no discipline whatever in Native Regiments.

4.

The Officers have had no interest in their Companies, which they had not the means of controlling, and have generally neglected their men. Unable to reward the good or to punish the bad men, European Officers were neither respected nor obeyed in the way that discipline requires. It will be easily seen how little power remained in their hands, when it is mentioned that furlough and promotion—the two things most prized by a Native Soldier while in the Army—were given by a Regimental Gradation Roll totally independent of the European Officers of Companies.

5.

It ought to depend upon the proper control over the men of efficient Officers.

The distant authority of Head Quarters is unknown or respected by the Sepoy excepting in appealing against Commanding Officers.

QUESTIONS.

ANSW-----

6.

Considerably increased.

7.

That Native Regiments should always be cantoned alongside European Corps and be made sensible of the influence of the latter. Real discipline in the Native Army can only be maintained by the presence of the European Soldier.

8.

The influence of the European Officer is doubtless felt in his superior courage and intelligence without the aid of efficient Commissioned and Non-Commissioned Officers, but he has little power over his men. In action they may follow him, but he cannot control them. The want of discipline is here seriously felt, and is frequently the cause of disaster. The influence of European Officers, limited at all times, is perhaps less in times of peace.

9.

I have recommended, in my scheme for reorganization for the Regular Infantry, that 500 should be amalgamated with every European Corps. A system of instruction such as I would propose, would fully occupy the time of Officers and Men. The formation of camps of exercise during the cold weather, during which every description of Military field engineering should be learned and practised by the men, and this, combined with the necessary drill exercise and target practice for the remainder of the year, would, I believe, afford full occupation for all parties. The construction and repair of their own Barracks should, moreover, form a portion of the men's duties.

10.

Not with due consideration to the efficiency of the Army.

11.

Perhaps not under existing rules and customs ; but these should be abolished, and the Troops should be made to do any thing required of them. I see no reason why they should not be employed in Military works.

12.

In the Regular Infantry I would abolish Native Commissions, and have European Officers only ; in Irregular Corps, the strength of which, I have already said, I would much reduce, I would have a full complement of Native Officers, with a less number of European Officers.

13.

I think Cadets on appointment should be attached to Regiments in England or in Military Colonies or Garrisons abroad, such as Malta, Gibraltar, &c., where duty and discipline are much more rigidly carried on, and after a year's instruction and acquiring a knowledge of all parts of their duty, I would then send them to India to be posted to Corps whether Native or European.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

14.

I think all young Officers should have the ground-work above recommended. With this I consider them more qualified for their duties either in European or Native Corps.

15.

Yes, it is most seriously impaired.

16.

No ; as regards the mutiny there was no difference for the reason already explained, *viz.*, that the European Officers generally had little or no control over their men ; the increased number, under such circumstances, was of little benefit. I must, however, add that the case is widely different in action, where there is no comparison between the conduct of Native Regiments with few and those with many European Officers. This has not only come under my own observation, but has been remarked in all our campaigns.

The presence of a considerable number of European Officers is indispensably necessary to a Native Corps ; without them in action it becomes a disorderly rabble more dangerous than useful.

17.

Their vacancies should at once be filled up, and the Officer selected for Staff or detached employ should be placed on a Staff Corps. In my plan for re-organization I have recommended that all the Officers of the Infantry should be placed on a general list, by which means all would be more available for employ in the way considered best suited to the interests of the Service.

18.

If the Army is re-organized, as I have proposed, with a due proportion of Commanders and Staff Officers, and if Officers are selected with reference to their qualifications to fill the Commands and Staff appointments of the Army, I think there should be sufficient inducement in the Army itself for Officers to acquire a knowledge of languages and to improve themselves generally in professional knowledge.

I cannot but condemn the present system, which deprives the Army of its best and most intelligent Officers for employment in a Civil capacity, and in other duties totally opposed to those of their own profession. This must be most injurious to the efficiency of the Army.

19.

The Officers of the Army should be induced to study their own profession in all its branches, and by professional acquirements only they should be selected for Military Staff employ as above recommended. Under this system, the cutting off the hope of employment in the Civil Departments would improve the standard of Military acquirements and general efficiency of Officers.

(k)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The present great encouragement held out to Officers for leaving their Regiments to enter Civil employ, or to take up appointments for which they are not qualified, unsettles their minds and unfits them for their ordinary Military duties.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR J. HOPE GRANT, K. C. B., COMMANDING OUDE FORCE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers have been gradually reduced since 1806 until they latterly held no power at all, and the Native Soldiers were brought directly *en rapport* with Army Head Quarters; they saw that our system was to distrust Commandants, and finally the Sepoy viewed his Commander as an enemy to be appealed against on every occasion.

I have not the means of referring to the Orders which have caused this effect.

2.

Answered above.

3.

The result of withdrawing power from Commanding Officers was, the Soldiers got out of control, and was a great cause of the mutiny.

4.

The system is the same: the withdrawal of power from the European Officers is one of the main causes that lost us an Army.

5.

The discipline of a Corps depends always upon its Officers.

6.

The power of a Commanding Officer of a Native Regiment should be as nearly *absolute* as possible; he should hold full power.

7.

Be just, but do not pamper your Soldiers; make the Commander absolute; abolish the seniority system; look at a Sepoy as a Soldier of the State, not as a Brahmin, Sweeper, Syed or Shaikh, and give him all the reward he *merits*; study the character of the Natives, but do not give way to caste.

8.

I think in time of war.

9.

Do not have Regiments of more than 800, and make those who have nothing else to do, work about their Lines.

10.

So far as I believe, the Regiments were never too strong for the duties they had to perform.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11.

It would be an excellent thing to employ them at working, but they must invariably be employed under their own Officers exclusively. They ought also to hut themselves, clean and improve their Cantonments, and any other healthy occupation which would very soon become interesting, also when tending to their own comfort.

12.

1st.—Yes.

2nd.—Yes.

3rd.—Yes.

13.

I would attach Cadets first to European Corps.

15.

Undoubtedly it is.

16.

I cannot say.

17.

I would have Staff Officers to undergo an ordeal before taking up an appointment. The appointments of Deputy Assistant Adjutant General, Deputy Judge Advocate General, and Major of Brigade, should be filled by selected Regimental Officers ; all other Staff appointments by Officers from a Staff Corps.

18.

Answered in No. 17.

19.

I think so.

PUNJAB COMMITTEE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers have certainly been diminishing for many years, till it had become a standing complaint in the Regular Native Army ; but this seems to have been effected not so much by actual orders and measures, as by the changing practice of the Service by a gradual interference at Army Head Quarters with the internal economy and discipline of Regiments, and the consequent centralization of influence not in the Commandant of the Regiment, but in the Adjutant General and Commander-in-Chief. Rewards and punishments are the two great sources of a Commanding Officer's influence over his men, and both seem to have been almost taken out of his hands. The principle of seniority promotion has been so

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

hedged in, watched, and enforced, (even by such a professed Military Reformer as Sir Charles Napier, whose General Orders on the subject is, perhaps, the strongest on record) that practically the Commanding Officer had no discretion whatever, and promoted the senior in the roll rather than enter upon a vain struggle to prefer a better man. No doubt the Sepoys, as a body, liked this. It gave every man in the Regiment, whether fit or unfit, a vested right in the upper ranks to which a system of merit promotion would have admitted the most efficient. The one system only asked them to live, the other would call on them to exert themselves. The Regimental Commandant was interested in superseding the inefficient, and the inefficient found a readiness at Head Quarters to believe injustice had been committed. One or two such unsuccessful struggles, after better things, disheartened the most zealous Commanding Officer, who gradually lapsed into indifference, leaving the Regiment to the undisturbed enjoyment of its vested rights, its life without emulation, its poor opinion of the Colonel, and its reverence for the central institutions; nor was more discretion left to the Commandant in the matter of punishments. The authority given him by Article of War 112 is altogether inadequate to the control and discipline of a mercenary Regiment. His powers of summary punishment were so small as to be ridiculous; he could neither flog for insubordination nor dismiss for general bad character; he could not give extra duty to the negligent Soldier, nor refuse furlough to an habitual offender; he could not send a Non-Commissioned Officer to drill nor reduce him without formal trial, and he was even prohibited from confining one before trial, and required to put him simply under arrest. When to all these restrictions is added the facility of direct appeal, through the Post Office, by any Sepoy to the Commander-in-Chief, and even the reception of anonymous petitions, we can understand how such a system, in course of years, undermined the legitimate influence of the Commanding Officers of Regiments and gradually reduced them to the cyphers which they were found to be in 1857.

2.

We understand this question to refer to all the Regimental Officers below the Commanding Officers, and we believe that in European Corps the powers of such Officers have not been interfered with; but in Native Corps, in proportion as the Commandants lost their own power, so they and their Adjutants absorbed the powers of the Officers in charge of the Companies, who had really less influence than the Havildar Major, and ceased to take much interest in the Corps.

3.

A laxity of discipline throughout the Native Army, which made it ripe for mutiny on any difficulty. For years the Regi-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

mental Officers have been driven to coax instead of Command their men. The policy of Government indeed wore the same appearance, attributable, probably, to that sense of weakness which necessarily sprang from the inadequate European Force in the Country. So far, however, from this being a good reason for weakening the European Officers and strengthening the Sepoys, it was, in our opinion, the very reverse.

4.

The Sepoys lost respect for them, and the Officers lost zeal.

5.

Assuredly on the authority and influence of the Regimental Officers, whether on service or in quarters.

6.

Certainly increased ; there seems to have been in this, as in many other particulars of our Military policy, a growing forgetfulness of our real position in India and of our relations to a large mercenary Army evincing itself in an exaggerated protection of the Sepoy and a zealous depression of his European Officer. Late events have shown that both cannot Command, and we would strongly advocate making our own Countrymen the depositories of power as by far the lesser evil. Trust the European Officers with power, train them to its exercise, supersede them unhesitatingly if they prove unequal to the trust, and heavily punish them if they abuse it ; we may then hope to hear no more of mutiny.

7.

In answer 6, the strengthening of all the European Officers has been recommended, with a summary treatment of them if found inefficient. In answer 1 (and others) of the paper on " Military Codes and Discipline " (No. 2 Infantry) new Articles of War were sketched out for that purpose, and throughout these papers we have advised the substitution of the Irregular for the Regular system, and submitted many other suggestions which it is unnecessary here to recapitulate. We will now add some further particulars in which an improved discipline might be secured. The root of all discipline is efficiency of Command, and this can only be secured by a persistent course of selection of European Officers for the Native Army. No Irregular Regiment can be efficient without picked Native Officers ; but these can only be selected and controlled by a good European Commandant. It will behove Government, therefore, to exercise a close and firm supervision over the selection from the European Regiments, or otherwise, of Officers for the Native Army, and at first they should only be appointed on probation.

Indeed, it is to be hoped that efforts will be made to secure a really efficient Staff, by establishing in each Presidency a Military College, where any Officer who is zealous and ambitious may

(1)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

study the science of his profession. The germ of such an Institution already exists in the Thomason College at Roorkee, but on a totally inadequate scale.

Connected with the same subject of Officers capable of creating and maintaining discipline, we believe that no Army can be kept in working order without an "unemployed list," to which inefficient Officers, at any stage of their career, may be transferred both from the Staff and from the Line, and we would decidedly recommend the introduction into the Army of the Civil Service Rule, limiting the period of an Officer's continuance in the Service. No Civilian can serve more than thirty-two years, unless especially invited by Government to remain. Military Officers enter the Service two or three years earlier than Civil Officers, and their term could be proportionately increased. The Rule should, therefore, be that on the completion of thirty-five years' Service, every Officer must retire, unless invited to serve longer. It is believed that this measure would contribute greatly to the efficiency and discipline of the Army. Present incumbents should get five years' notice, but a premium of increased pension be offered to them to go at once, say £100 extra to a Colonel and Lieutenant-Colonel, and Majors in proportion. Above all, we would draw the earnest attention of Government to the necessity of selecting efficient Brigadiers and Generals of Division, and not allowing those offices which demand faculties both mature and unimpaired to be regarded as mere rewards for length of service. The Army is in truth nothing but an organization of mental and physical force, and it is the last institution in the State in which any thing weak or worn can be safely left; from the highest to the lowest every link in the chain of discipline must be equal to the strain it is to bear.

The only other points which occur to us as not having been touched on in other parts of these papers, are—

Firstly.—The propriety of relieving daily all Guards within the distance of a mile; and

Secondly.—The discontinuance, as far as practicable, of petty Guards detached on escort duty.

8.

In war, when the Sepoys look to their Officers, and value them more.

9.

We think that 800 Privates should be the maximum of an Infantry Regiment in time of war, and that in peace it might be allowed, by the gradual occurrence of vacancies, to fall to 700 or even 600 if the Service admitted of it, and whenever such a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

temporary reduction was made, a proportion of Non-Commissioned Officers should also be allowed to lapse. It is of great political importance to avoid masses of armed Natives, whether in a Station or an individual Corps. Masses give confidence and breed disaffection. Small Corps are the best both in the Infantry and in the Cavalry. As to occupation we do not know that they could be advantageously employed otherwise than in instruction, drill, regular exercise, guards, and escorts; but they should be constantly handled. No day should pass in any season of the year without a Regiment being under arms once a day if only for ten minutes.

10.

As far as numbers were concerned, no doubt there were many available for other than Military employment; but it would have been against the prejudices of the Sepoys to do any thing but Military duty.

11.

No, the men would have mutinied; in time of war they will throw up field-works, but even then they do not like it.

12.

This has been already answered in reply No. 16 of the Infantry Paper No. 3, in "Organization, Promotions and Rewards." The system specified in the third clause is the one we advise.

13.

To European Corps till they have thoroughly learned their duty.

14.

We would advise that every Cadet should first go to an European Regiment and there stay two years.

After two years or any number of years, if an Officer wished to qualify himself for a Native Corps or any other Staff appointment, and provided that he had passed an examination in Hindoostanee, (which would be a *sine qua non*) he should be sent to the Military College, and there go through a course of study in Vernacular languages and professional knowledge. Half-yearly examinations should be held, and the student allowed to accomplish the course and pass as rapidly as he could; but no Officers should be allowed to stay who could not pass in two years, and any Officer who having entered the College evinced no disposition to study, should be remanded to his Corps at once. After passing the College, the students would return to their Regiments. Their respective qualifications and fitness for particular Departments of the Staff should be formally reported to Government by the Inspecting Officer, and Government would then select as many as were wanted for Staff employ. Those assigned to Native Corps should "do duty" for one year on probation, after which they would either be perma-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

nently appointed to the Corps, or transferred to some other Department, or remanded to the European branch, according to circumstances. By such a system, a well-selected, highly trained, and efficient Staff would be secured for the Irregular Native Regiments.

But should there be no Military College, of course there would be no better way of training an Officer than by sending him (after two years with an European Regiment) to do duty with a Native Corps.

15.

No, it was not the paucity of Officers, but the bad system which ruined the Regiments. As a general remark, the Officers taken for the Staff were not superior *when taken* to those left, though they usually *became* so by more active employment in a sphere which gave more scope for exertion and discretion. The few Officers left with the Line Regiments ought, under any other system, to have found more to do, and more call upon their faculties, more room for usefulness; but the more Companies they got charge of, the more they saw that they had no power, and that all authority and hope and fear centred in the Adjutant and Adjutant General. Thus they lost heart and retrograded rather than advanced in zeal and efficiency.

16.

No, the mutiny seems to have been quite irrespective of the number of Officers.

17.

This must be admitted to be a very difficult question, involving as it does such important interests of Government, and a large body of Government servants; and after giving to it all the thought or deliberation which time admits of, we are not prepared confidently to recommend any plan as the best that can be devised; but we proceed to submit the conclusions at which we have now arrived.

The object in view is to secure to Government the power of selection for all Staff appointments, and still to leave the Regiments of the Line fully and efficiently officered. To attain this end we think no plan so suitable and simple as the general gradation list for the Army of each Presidency, which has been proposed by Brigadier-General Jacob, C. B.,* in the general working of which we concur, though we should be inclined to modify some parts of the scheme and to reject others, which will best be shown in the following recommendations.

* Observations on a scheme for the reorganization of the Indian Army, by Brigadier-General John Jacob, C. B., London Smith Elder & Co 1857.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Firstly.—That as proposed by General Jacob, the whole of the European Officers of the Cavalry* and Infantry and those of the Artillery and Engineers above the rank of Colonel be formed into one general gradation list, to be styled the “unemployed list.” All the Officers borne on it who may hold no special appointments will reside in India in such places as Government may direct, but will have no public functions to perform. The Officers of Artillery and of Engineers each to be borne in a separate list up to the rank of Colonel inclusive, and thereafter to be incorporated in the general list of the whole Army, the senior Colonel of Artillery or Engineers, when senior in the Army, being promoted to Major-General as vacancies may occur.

Secondly.—Rank in this list to be the only permanent rank ; all Regimental and other rank being temporary only, and to continue only so long as Officers may be serving with Regiments, or be otherwise employed in a Military capacity.

Thirdly.—In case of Officers being promoted for good service, &c., by the Queen, they are to take their places in the general gradation list according to the dates of their promotion, and are to enjoy every advantage exactly as if they had risen to such places by seniority only

It does not appear whether, in General Jacob's plan, these Officers, promoted by substantive Brevet, would come on the prescribed strength of the Establishment for the Line, as vacancies occur in the rank to which they have been promoted, or would be in excess of the ordinary strength. The former would be objectional, as taking the steps away from the Line and keeping up in an aggravated form the objection which has always existed against Brevet. The latter, therefore, is what we would recommend. Government might, *prima facie*, object to this as an increase of expenditure, but this objection vanishes when the great saving is considered which will be effected by the smaller number of Officers required by the Irregular system, and the great reduction there would be in the Establishment of the Field Officers. It is not at all likely that the number of Brevets would ever bring up the Establishment to its former proportions.

One of the objections to Brevet rank has been the loose way in which it has been given. If it carried with it substantive advantages the honor would be given with more discrimination.

* We would go further, and advocate that all Cadets should come out in the Infantry branches, when selections should be made for the Cavalry after a year.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Brevet should not be dealt out to every Staff or Commanding Officer who was present in a great action; but to such of them only as distinguished themselves in that position. It would then be more valued and less grudged. The spirit of no Army can be kept up without Brevet promotions for unusual services, and the more substantive they are, the more emulation they will excite.

Fourthly.—That there should be two rates of pay—one for unemployed, and one for employed Officers, as recommended by General Jacob, though we think some modifications in his scale might be made with advantage, as shown below:—

Numbers.	Rank of Officers.	Unemployed Monthly Pay.		Employed Monthly Pay.		Total Monthly.	
		General Jacob's.	Ours.	General Jacob's.	Ours.	General Jacob's.	Ours.
		Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.	Rs.
1	General	1500	1100	None.	None.	1500	1100
2	Lieut.-General	1200	1000	3000	2000	4200	3000
3	Major-General	1000	900	1000	1100	2000	2000
4	Colonel	600	600	600	600	1200	1200
5	Lieutenant-Colonel ...	400	400	400	400	800	800
6	Captain	300	300	300	With Europeans 200 With Natives 300	600	With Europeans 500 With Natives 600
7	Lieutenant	200	200	None.	100	200	300

N. B.—Command allowance of Rupees 400 per Regiment, the usual Company allowance, Office Establishments, &c., to be in addition to the above rates.

The pay proposed by General Jacob for Generals, and Lieutenant-Generals seems unnecessarily large and likely to induce Officers to remain in the Country who might otherwise retire. It is a great object to get younger men in the higher Commands of the Army. A distinction should, we think, be drawn between a Captain employed with Native Troops and one employed with Europeans. In the former case he is a selected Officer, and more depends upon his individual abilities. The Captain with an European Company would also get Command allowance, which the Captain with Natives would not.

We think Rupees 300 is not too much for a Lieutenant in active employ. If with an European Regiment, he would seldom or never get Command of a Company, and if doing duty with a Native Regiment of Irregulars, he fully deserves Command allowance.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Lastly.—We would go further than General Jacob, and add to the “employed” and “unemployed” rates of pay, a third rate or “subsistence allowance” of exactly one-half the unemployed rate for Officers who, from reason of incapacity or vice are thoroughly inefficient, yet cannot be brought under the lash of a Court Martial. A penance of six months or a year on subsistence allowance would bring many an useless Officer to his senses, and perhaps prove the saving of him.

Fifthly.—We refrain from dealing with the question of rates of pay to Officers, “when absent from India on leave to Europe, or elsewhere,” as these bring an Indian Army in contact with the Home Army, and can only be adjusted with reference to both.

Sixthly.—We cannot leave this matter of pay of European Officers without drawing attention to the general status of the Military Surgeons both in pay, rank, precedence and honorary distinctions. It is not too much to say that the efficiency of an Army depends upon the efficiency of its Medical Staff. As a question of policy, therefore, it would be good economy to so raise the status of this Service that the best European talent should be attached to it: while as a matter of justice it is obvious that their preparatory education is higher, and their duties more arduous, self-denying, and valuable to the State than those of almost any other branch of the Army. As far as possible, they should, on field service, keep out of fire, but practically this is impossible, and the returns of the late war, or any war will show how fully the Military Surgeons share the dangers of the Troops,* yet, as far as we have observed, only one Military Surgeon† has yet obtained any honorary distinction in the operations of 1857-58, and in the Official Army List of 20th January 1858, there was not one Surgeon in the Bengal Army who was a Member of the Order of the Bath. This exclusiveness is, we believe, peculiar to the British Army, and as it is very keenly felt by a most zealous and gallant body of men, it cannot too soon be remedied.

Seventhly.—This leads us to suggest a change in the present table of precedence between Civil and Military Servants, in which there is apparently both unfairness and anomaly. The principle

* While writing this the English Mail of 17th June has been received, containing a list of Officers honored with the Victoria Cross for service in the Crimea. Amongst them is Surgeon James Mouatt, C. B., for having voluntarily proceeded to the assistance of Lieutenant-Colonel Morris, C. B., 17th Lancers, who was lying dangerously wounded in an exposed situation after the retreat of the Light Cavalry at the Battle of Balaklava, and having dressed that Officer's wounds in presence of and under a heavy fire of the Enemy. Thus, by stopping a serious hæmorrhage, he assisted in saving that Officer's life.

† Dr. Tritton.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

which should guide precedence is, we think, the office held by an Officer, Covenanted or Uncovenanted, not his standing in the Service, and the following table will indicate the adjustment which we consider adapted to the changes in the Indian Service :—

Chief Commissioners of Provinces ...	To rank with Lieut.-Genls.
Sudder Boards, Secretaries to Supreme Government ...	} Major-Generals.
Financial & Judicial Commissioners ...	
Judges, Commissioners and Secretaries to Lieutenant-Governor ...	} Colonels.
Magistrates and Collectors, Deputy Commissioners, Secretaries to Chief Commissioners or to Boards, and Directors of Education ...	} Lieutenant-Colonels.
Joint Magistrates and Collectors, 1st Class Assistant Commissioners, Collectors of Customs ...	} Captains.
Assistant Magistrates and Collectors, Assistant Commissioners, Deputy Collectors of any description ...	} Subalterns.

Eighthly.—It is unnecessary to add that we entirely disagree with General Jacob in his proposal that “ a distinct and separate Civil Service be prospectively abolished.” It is true that some Military men display ability for Civil affairs ; but they are exceptions ; and as a rule men will be best fitted for that line in which they have been trained. It may be replied that the training of the young Soldier is the best training for the young Civilian ; but to this we cannot agree. The curriculum at a Military College lays the foundation for Military Science ; that at a Civil College, for judicial administrative duties, and as the ends differ, so do the means. There are some things common to both, like Languages, History and Mathematics ; but the two roads of learning soon diverge, and it would be as much out of place for a future judge to acquire the mysteries of *Vauban* as for a future Commander to devote himself to Law. If the Cadet be selected for the Civil Service at an early age within a year or so of his coming to India, the experiment may very probably succeed, for he is young and can acquire the groundwork he requires ; but he has derived no advantage from being a Soldier ; he was one only in name, and whatsoever professional knowledge he had acquired belongs not to the profession he has to pursue ; he must begin at the beginning, and go to School again ; if, on the other hand, he be transferred after several years, he may be an accomplished Soldier, but has missed the opportunity of acquiring that varied knowledge which alone can make him an able Civil Officer.

Again, it is one of the evils of our position in India that the mass of Europeans are in the service of the Government. The

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

class views of the Civil, Military and Uncovenanted Services fail to give us a sufficient variety of interest and feeling to impart vigour and health to public opinion, and to withdraw the purely Civil element would only aggravate this evil.

It would also banish that emulation which is now so beneficial to both the Army and Civil Service. In fact we can see many evils and no single advantage that would result from such a measure.

Ninthly.—With regard to General Jacob's proposal that "all candidates appointed to the Indian Service be educated at a Military College in England and reside at such College for at least two years, and not more than four years. The minimum age for admission to be fourteen, and the maximum, eighteen years. The residence at the College to be free of all pecuniary charge to the Cadet." We would certainly recommend that there be such a Military College in England which might be called the "Junior Military College"; but it is unquestionable that the system of direct appointments has worked well as an auxiliary to the Addiscombe College, often bringing into the Service, at a latter age, men of riper education; and we think it would be giving the Service more chances of getting efficient men if the following system were pursued—

Firstly.—Half the Cadets to be educated at the College with admission from the age of fourteen to that of eighteen, and to remain two years.

Secondly.—Half to be appointed direct from sixteen to eighteen years of age.

Thirdly.—All appointments to be obtained by competition, those to the College on entrance and direct ones on appointment to the Army.

Fourthly.—The College Cadets to pay £100 a year, with the exception of sons of servants of the East India Government, Civil or Military, who should be admitted at half rates.

Fifthly.—That a "Senior Military Collège" be established in India as described in answers 7 and 14 of this paper for completing the Military training of Staff Officers.

We believe that the system which has been roughly indicated in the above suggestions will meet the requirements of the case and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

secure the best interests both of Government and the Officers of the Army. The general gradation list secures that degree of conservation and equal promotion which must ever be popular with the majority of any Service. The principle of selection for employment secures for Government the abilities of its best servants in the most important posts, and throws open the highest offices to emulation, industry, and ambition, while the three gradations of pay enable Government to deal effectively with delinquents without absolutely ruining them, and will thereby carry public opinion along with such decisions.

The Junior and Senior Military Colleges ensure the means of obtaining a sound professional education to every Officer who desires to acquire it. The modified system of Brevet, while increasing the inducements to render gallant service, provides a check upon the abuse of the prerogative and diminishes the risk of unjust supercession. On the whole, a scientific and effective Staff will be produced without depriving the Line of its Officers, or the Officers of hope.

18.

Nothing could be more depressing and injurious to the Officers of the Army.

19.

How could it be otherwise? Few men pursue knowledge for its own sake alone.

POSTSCRIPT.

The papers connected with the Native Infantry of the future Indian Army, having now been disposed of, and their scope having afforded no opportunity of touching on the condition of the European Soldiery, we desire to add our hope that it may be improved, and our conviction, that unless it be so, difficulty will be felt in maintaining the largely increased Force of British Troops in India. To draw more recruits to the Army, the status of the Soldier must be put on a footing more consonant with the advancing civilization of the English Public, and foremost among measures of amelioration should be the removal, as far as practicable, of all restrictions upon the number of married Soldiers in a Regiment,* which is felt to be an intolerable interference with personal liberty and contrary both to good morals and real discipline. By the present rules only six wives are allowed in a Company of 100 men when in England, and twelve when the Regiment comes to India. The result is that many wives are left at home worse than widows, and many thousands of young men are withdrawn to foreign shores

* Sir John Lawrence and Brigadier General Chamberlain believe that not more than 25 per cent of married Soldiers would prove practicable. Lieutenant-Colonel Edwardes thinks there need, and should be no limit.

unmarried, increasing the number of unmarried women in the mother country with all the attendant evils to population and society.

It would be more expensive, doubtless, to provide passages and barrack accommodation for so many more wives; but it would be money well-spent in raising the character of the Service. Married Soldiers are more respectable, healthy, contented, and efficient; and if when their Regiments were ordered home they were allowed to volunteer, most of them would remain in India and be worth double the number of unacclimated Soldiers. It would save Government much expense of transport, and save many a man from being thrown upon his Parish. At the close of their Indian service they might be settled in the Hills, with Veteran Battalions, holding Hill Forts and Stations. Their sons would grow healthy, and be employed in Government Offices, Telegraphs, Civil Departments, Volunteer Horse, &c, while their daughters would make good wives for Soldiers. Another crying evil in the life of the British Soldier in India (as indeed in any part of the world) is spirit-drinking. It is probable that until the Soldiers themselves, by a higher tone of feeling derived from their own class at home, and from the kindly instruction of their Officers extended voluntarily from the Parade to the Barrack, come to see the evil of this habit themselves; there is not much to be hoped for from restrictive measures; but some modifications of the present practice might be found beneficial. In the first place there seems no necessity to give Rum to the Soldiers on board ship. Many a recruit here first learns the habit of drinking drams. Either Beer or Porter might be given, or else Grog, (that is Rum diluted with water) as is done to Sailors.

Secondly.—Grog, instead of raw spirits, might be sold at the Canteens and at a higher rate.

Thirdly.—Beer and Porter might be sold cheaper. Government has already done much in this direction lately by bringing good English Beer and Porter into the Canteens, and selling it under cost price. This was a good beginning. The next step should be to supply no raw spirits at all. In urging a change of this kind, we do not expect too much from its adoption, for we believe that no restrictions can avail to supply the want of moral discipline, and to impart this rests very much with the Officers and Chaplains. Ignorant and thoughtless as the present race of Soldiers are, we have seen what reforms can be effected among them by Officers like Oglander,* Havelock, or Hedly Vicars; and the reflection brings us

* The Colonel of the 26th Cameronians. Such was his influence, that about 600 of the men became "teetotallers" as it is called. Within a year of his death nearly all took again to drinking. The instance is some times with strange perversity quoted to prove the uselessness of trying to improve the Soldier. To us it seems to prove how easily they may be led to good by an Officer who will take the trouble.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

back to the necessity of aiming to provide the Army with well-educated and thoughtful Commanders.

It also brings us to another point which we wish to represent, and for which no other opportunity has appeared in these papers, viz., the present position of the Chaplains in India; there are two grades—

1st.—Full Chaplains on 800 Rupees a month.

2nd.—Assistant Chaplains on 500 Rupees.

The numbers of the junior grade have, from time to time, been greatly increased, while those of the senior grade have, we believe, remained the same. The consequences may be seen in the Official List, which shows that the last of the full Chaplains was fourteen years in gaining his promotion. The evil is gradually but surely increasing, and it is probable that those Assistant Chaplains who are now joining the Service will never be full Chaplains during the seventeen years of servitude for pension. This is an anomaly, and shows that the Ecclesiastical Establishment has out-grown the existing rules. It is understood that several Assistant Chaplains last year presented a petition to Government on this subject, the object of which was to be allowed a "time service" for promotion, every Assistant Chaplain becoming a full Chaplain after nine years' service, so that the number of Chaplains should not prejudice promotion. The petition is believed to have been hitherto unsuccessful, but seems so reasonable that it should find a place in any comprehensive review of the Indian Service. We would, however, recommend that instead of there being only one long delayed step in the Chaplain's service, there should be three shorter intervals as follows:—

Monthly.

Assistant Chaplains on appointment and for the	
first 4 years... ..	Rupees 500
After 4 years and up to 7 years	" 600
After 7 years and up to 10 years	" 700
After 10 years	" 800*

The distinction of full and Assistant Chaplains might be abolished; but instead of all Chaplains (full or Assistant) being independent of each other as now, we would strongly advise that where two Chaplains are stationed together, the junior should be subordinate to the senior. Indeed it is sufficiently apparent that from there being only one Bishop and one Archdeacon to the Bengal Presidency, there is as great a want of general visitation, control, supervision

* The financial effect of this would be a benefit of Rupees 7,200 in ten years to the Assistant Chaplains in comparison with the promotion asked for after nine years.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and adjustment of appointments in the Church as of organization to devise and carry out measures of social and Christian amelioration. The limits of the Presidency have been periodically extended, and it has now become necessary to add largely to the European Troops. The number of Chaplains, which was previously insufficient, will have to be increased. It is greatly to be hoped that the supervising machinery will also be enlarged.

In conclusion we will venture to urge that there is no branch of the Indian Service in which the principle of careful and conscientious selection is more imperatively required than in the appointment of Chaplains. The influence for good which a really earnest Clergyman can effect in an Indian Cantonment, is hardly to be over-estimated.

BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B., COMMANDANT-IN-CHIEF SCINDE
IRREGULAR HORSE AND POLITICAL SUPDT. ON THE FRONTIER.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 4.

At the end of the last century a new organization was introduced into the Native Indian Army, which was then in fact completely remodelled.

Up to this time each Battalion of Sepoys had been commanded by a Captain selected from an European Corps of the Indian Army; thenceforth the number of European Officers was increased nearly to the present complement, and then the rule of regulation commenced to supersede that of individual character. The change then commenced has continued to increase until regulation wholly superseded common sense and reason, and centralization destroyed every vestige of personal influence and individual power. It would be useless to allude to particular orders. Since the date above-mentioned, the system of centralization and blind regulation has been gradually but unceasingly growing to the perfection in which it was lately seen before the largest of our three Indian Armies fell to pieces.

All vital power, all good feeling, all personal attachment, all binding force of reason and moral sense had been eradicated from our Native Army. The outward appearance, the showy form, the mechanical discipline were greatly improved, but the ties which

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

formerly bound the Sepoy to his English Officer were completely destroyed, a tradition of them hardly remained, and on the least shake given from without, the whole fabric fell to pieces.

Our system had at last destroyed the commanding, the administrative, the organizing powers of our English Officers on the one hand, while it tended to make the Native Indian Soldiers less obedient, less inclined to submit to our rule, on the other.

5.

The real effective and only useful discipline of a Native Indian Corps, whether on service or otherwise, depends solely on the moral power and influence which the English Commander brings to bear on the Sepoy.

6.

The power of the English Commanding Officer should be very greatly increased. The Officers Commanding Companies should be Natives of India.

7.

Few European Officers to be appointed to Native Regiments, and those carefully selected for such appointments; full powers to Commanding Officers; abolition of regulation and centralization.

8.

The influence of the higher class of English mind, when fairly and freely brought to bear on the Oriental, is, at all times, absolute; but the effect of such influence will, of course, be most apparent when there is most to be done and most to be dared and endured.

9.

I think that 800 is about the best strength for a Regiment in time of peace. In war I would add two or more Companies, which should remain at Regimental Head Quarters, and from these, casualties to be supplied as often as circumstances might allow, all recruits being entertained at the permanent Regimental Head Quarters.

No occupation is ever wanting in a well-trained and well-instructed Regiment; continual exercise is requisite to perfect order.

10.

I do not think so to any great extent; but I have several times known Regiments to be so employed with advantage. Both the 21st and the 18th Regiments Bombay N. I., to my personal knowledge, built their own lines and houses for their Officers in Scinde, mixing the mud, moulding the bricks, and doing every species of work themselves.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

- 11.** Not without great increase of numbers; they have generally been fully employed on their ordinary Military duties.
- 12.** 1st.—Four European Officers are ample for each Native Regiment, the Commanders of Companies and their Subalterns being Native Officers.
3rd.—Yes.
- 14.** Officers for Native Corps should be appointed by careful selection from the general Roll of the Army.
- 15 to 17.** Questions 15, 16 and 17 are best answered, I think, by an extract from a published Work of mine given below.
- 18.** It would, I think, be fatal to whatever may remain of efficiency under the present organization; but the rule should be to select for Native Regiments, not from them.
- 19.** Answered above.

SCHEME FOR THE RE-ORGANIZATION OF THE INDIAN ARMY, BY BRIGADIER-GENERAL JOHN JACOB, C. B.

The Queen of England formally to assume the style and title of Empress of India, and to be proclaimed accordingly.

The Armies of the several Indian Presidencies to be henceforth styled the Royal Armies of India.

In each of these Armies the whole of the European Officers of the Cavalry and Infantry and the European Officers of the Artillery and Engineers above the rank of Colonel to be formed into one general gradation list, in which, under ordinary circumstances, all will rise by seniority.

Rank in this list to be the only permanent rank, all Regimental and other rank being temporary only, and to continue only so long as Officers may be serving with Regiments or be otherwise employed in a Military capacity.

In case of Officers being promoted for good service, &c., by the Queen, they are to take their places in the general gradation list, according to the dates of their promotions,

and are to enjoy every advantage exactly as if they had risen to such places by seniority only. This general gradation list to be styled the "unemployed list." All the Officers borne on it, who may hold no special appointments, will reside in India at such places as the Government may direct, but will have no public functions to perform.

A fourth Presidency, to be styled the North-West Presidency, and a fourth Army to be formed; our present Bombay and Bengal Armies together being divided into three equal parts for this purpose.

Ultimately the whole establishment of European Officers may probably be somewhat less than at present; but under the proposed arrangements the number of Officers in the whole general list of each Army can readily be adjusted in practice to meet the demands of the public service; when these shall have been correctly ascertained, no further changes will probably be requisite.

For an Army of the strength of the present Army of Bombay, the following Establishments might be proper:—

Battalions or Regiments.	Colonels.	Lieutenant-Colonels.	Captains.	Lieutenants.
Artillery 5	5	10	50	50
Engineers 4	4	8	40	40
Cavalry 3	3	6	30	30
Infantry 33	33	66	330	330
Total 45	45	90	450	450

Generals... .. 5	} The ranks of Major and Ensign to be abolished.
Lieutenant-Generals 10	
Major-Generals ... 15	

The several ranks of Officers, while unemployed in India, to receive pay as follows:—

General... ..	Rupees 1,500	per mensem.
Lieutenant-General	" 1,200	" "
Major-General	" 1,000	" "
Colonel	" 600	" "
Lieutenant-Colonel	" 400	" "
Captain	" 300	" "
Lieutenant	" 200	" "

These rates of pay to be allowed to Officers wherever residing by permission in India, and the like number of pounds per annum to be allowed to each when absent from India on leave to Europe or elsewhere.

The option of retiring on full pay of the rank attained to in the general list to be allowed after thirty years, and on half-pay, after twenty years.

Leave of absence to be granted at the discretion of the Local Governments.

Subscriptions to Military and all other Funds to cease to be compulsory.

A distinct and separate Civil Service to be prospectively abolished.

Officers, while unemployed or employed in Civil capacities, are not to be in any way subject to the authority of the Commander-in-Chief of the Army, or to Military rule or etiquette.

All candidates appointed to the Indian Service to be educated at a Military College in England, and to reside at such College for at least two years, and not more than four years.

The minimum age for admission to be fourteen, and the maximum eighteen years.

The course at the College to include full instruction in Mechanical and in Physical Science generally, and in Political Economy, also Riding, Rifle Practice, and Hardy Exercises.

The residence at the College to be free of all pecuniary charge to the Cadet, unless he declined proceeding to join the Service in India in due course, in which case, to cover all cost to the State, he should pay at the rate of £100 per annum for the period during which he has resided at College.

From the general list formed as above-mentioned, Officers are to be selected for every species of public employment, Civil and Military.

For each Native Infantry Regiment the establishment of English Officers may be as follows :—

1 Colonel	... ..	Rupees	600	per mensem.
1 Lieutenant-Colonel	... ..	"	400	" "
2 Captains, (to be Adjutant and Quarter-Master) each	... ..	"	300	" "

The pay assigned to each being in every case Staff pay, to be drawn in addition to the pay due to each according to his rank in the general list. But though an Officer may hold a lower rank in the general list than that which is assigned to his position in a Regiment or in other Military employment, the temporary rank is always to hold good for precedence and command during the period of employment.

For the Cavalry, the like establishment of Officers may be allowed, with one hundred Rupees extra pay to each rank, to cover the cost of horses and other expenses.

FOR A BRIGADE OF ANY STRENGTH.

						<i>Staff Pay.</i>	
1 Major-General	...	...	...	...	Rupees	1,000	per mensem.
1 Captain, Major of Brigade	...	...	...	...	"	400	" "

FOR A DIVISION.

1 Lieutenant-General	...	...	..	...	Rupees	3,000	per mensem.
1 Lieutenant-Colonel, Adjutant-General	...	.....			"	400	" "
1 Lieutenant-Colonel, Quarter-Master General...	...				"	400	" "
1 Captain, Aide-de-Camp	...	...	...	.....	"	300	" "
1 Major-General, Adjutant General of the Army	...				"	1,500	" "
1 Major-General, Quarter-Master General	...	.....			"	1,500	" "
1 Colonel, Deputy Adjutant General	...	...	..		"	500	" "
1 Colonel, Deputy Quarter-Master General...	.....				"	500	" "

Proper Office Establishment, &c, to be allowed to Commanding and Staff Officers, Company and Troop allowances and contracts as usual.

All Officers, when absent on leave beyond the Division in which they may be serving, are to receive unemployed pay only, and if other Officers act for them when absent even within the Division otherwise than on duty, the Officer acting for the absentee, is to receive his Staff pay in addition to his own.

Officers of the rank of Captain in the general list are to be considered eligible for selection to fill any of the Regimental ranks or other appointments. Lieutenants on the general list are not to be considered eligible for higher Regimental or other Military appointments than that of Lieutenant-Colonel.

At their own request, and with the approval of the Regimental Commanding Officer, any unemployed Officers may be attached to do duty with Regiments or Departments without extra pay.

The recommendations of Officers Commanding Regiments with respect to the appointment of Officers to fill vacancies in their Corps or to their removal therefrom to the unemployed list, in consequence of proved incapacity, &c., are to be attended to; all enlistments, discharges, promotions to, and reductions from all ranks, of Native Officers and Soldiers, are to rest with the Colonels of Regiments, and are to be signified by them with reasons, &c., if necessary, in Regimental Orders.

Articles of War for Native Indian Troops to be entirely abolished.

Colonels Commanding Native Indian Regiments are to have full Magisterial authority over all ranks of Natives of India in their Regiments, Followers as well as Soldiers; such powers to extend to the award and infliction of imprisonment with hard labor for period of seven years without the confirmation of higher authority being required; to

imprisonment for fourteen years, subject to the confirmation of the General Officer Commanding the Brigade ; to transportation and capital punishment, subject to the confirmation of the General Officer Commanding the Division.

Regimental Lieutenant-Colonels and Captains are likewise to exercise Magisterial powers under the control of the Colonels Commanding their Regiments, and to such extent as he may think proper to authorize.

In all cases involving the award of a graver punishment, than three months' imprisonment with hard labor, the infliction of corporal punishment above twenty-five lashes, or of a fine above 50 Rupees, regular proceedings of the trials are to be recorded in full, to be laid before the General Officer Commanding, when required.

Cases of less serious nature may be dealt with summarily, on due investigation, by the Commanding Officer at public Regimental Orderly Room. A record of all such proceedings is to be entered in a proper book kept for that purpose, and preserved among the Regimental records for the inspection of General Officers.

Colonels of Regiments are to be held strictly and solely responsible to their superior Officers and to the State, but not to the Native Indian Soldiers, for the propriety of all such proceedings.

Permanent Head Quarters to be established for each Native Indian Regiment, and complete Carriage for every Corps to be always kept up ready for a march at a day's warning.

For the European Infantry the establishment of Officers per Regiment may be—

1 Colonel	Rupees	600	per mensem.	
2 Lieutenant-Colonels, each	„	400	„	„
10 Captains, each	„	300	„	„
1 Adjutant	„	300	„	„
1 Quarter Master	„	300	„	„
10 Lieutenants, each	„	200	„	„

} To rank above the Lieutenants.

The Officers of Artillery and of Engineers each to be borne in a separate list, up to the rank of Colonel inclusive, and thereafter to be incorporated in the general list of the whole Army; the senior Colonel of Artillery or Engineers, when senior in the Army, being promoted to Major-General as vacancies may occur.

Unemployed pay to be the same for all Arms.

Employed pay, whether Regimental or Ordnance, &c., to be allowed as for the Cavalry.

Each Battalion of Artillery to have Field Officers and Staff as for an European Regiment, the numbers of Captains and Lieutenants being adjusted according to circumstances to the number absent on leave and the number required for the Ordnance Department and other Artillery Staff duties. All Artillery Officers in India to be considered as "employed" when not on leave.

In the Ordnance Department the rank and pay of the various grades to be adjusted as follows :—

Senior Commissary	As Colonel.
Senior Deputy Commissary	As Lieutenant-Colonel.
Commissaries of Divisions	As Captains.
Assistant Commissaries	As Lieutenants.
Commandant of Artillery, Major-General	1,100 Rupees per mensem.
Major of Brigade, Captain... ..	500 Rupees per mensem.
Inclusive of Horse Allowance.	

No difference of pay between Horse and Foot Artillery.

Engineer Officers attached to the Engineer Corps, or holding other Military appointments, to be on the same footing as Artillery Officers ; but the duties of Engineer Officers in India are generally purely Civil, and their salaries, &c., should be adjusted specially for each appointment.

In all appointments other than Military, Officers will receive their unemployed Military pay in addition to such emolument as may be assigned to them in their Civil capacities, and when absent on leave or on any account other than public duty beyond the range of their immediate superior, they will receive only the unemployed rates of pay.

REMARKS.

The cause of the late failure of the Native Army is inherent in our modern Indian Military system. We have, more especially since the great Madras mutiny in 1809, which was organized by the English Officers with their Commander-in-Chief at their head, sedulously persisted in separating the Sepoy from his European Regimental superiors.

We have endeavored to place him directly, *en rapport*, with Government and the Commander-in-Chief, who are generally as myths to the Native Indian Soldier! and have made him despise his own European Officers and cease to regard them as superiors.

This state of things acts and reacts on both parties, and perhaps the most fatal effect of long persistence in the system we have pursued is the actual degradation of the European mind, which follows on the stagnation which it produces.

Without due exercise, the strongest natural powers fade and disappear ; slavery unfits men for freedom, and the power of Commanding comes with the exercise of command.

The Natives of India are quite incapable of self-government ; they do not in the least understand what it means ; they cannot conceive that a subject can have any rights whatever not dependent on the favor of the sovereign ; they expect their sovereign to govern them absolutely and according to his own superior knowledge and ability, not according to their instructions.

We have never appeared to them to have acted as sovereigns in India ; we have, on the contrary, shown what must appear to the Asiatic to be marks of fear and of distrust of our own rights throughout our whole administration. We hold India as foreign superiors

only ; but we have been perpetually proclaiming to the Natives of India that they are equals, that we only rule as their representatives and by their sufferance, that they are not bound to obey us, and that we have no right to command them.

Our " Regulations," Civil and Military, are all to the same effect.

The English Soldier, as a free citizen, is on an equality with his Officer. He has rights as such which he well understands, and which he is able to make use of ; and a portion of such rights he voluntarily surrenders on entering the Army. Our Mutiny Act defines what portion of such rights he thus surrenders, and he retains all others.

The pre-existing equality is the very essence of the Articles of War.

But this equality is precisely what does not exist with respect to the Indian Soldier. He does not even pretend to such equality ; he understands nothing about it. In his ordinary condition, before enlisting as a Soldier, he must either be a despot himself or be subject to despotic rule. It is indeed only because the European Officer is a superior being by nature to the Asiatic that we hold India at all.

The Native of India enters our service without an idea beyond that of implicit obedience to his Officers being his duty. He cannot even imagine any other state of things if the Officers are to have any authority over him at all.

But the effect of our Regulations is such that, after entering the Service, he soon perceives that his Officers are quite powerless, and their demeanour, formed in the Regulation School, shows that they do not expect him to be unhesitatingly obedient.

Nothing can be weaker than this. Such a state of things must tend to develop the worst qualities of both parties, Native and European.

The Army is, therefore, not bound together by any strong internal force, and the least pressure from without causes it to fall to pieces.

Under the arrangements indicated above, it will ere long be discovered what each Officer on the general list may be fit for, and he may then be employed accordingly to the greatest advantage.

If on fair trial he appears to be totally useless, let him be removed and let him retire on full or half pay according to his period of service ; but in the variety of work required to be performed in India, this will rarely be requisite.

It is essential to the successful working of the organization here proposed that the Officers on the unemployed list should be fairly and even liberally paid.

The presence alone of a number of English Gentlemen in India is attended with much advantage to the English Government, and these should have the means of living respectably and of pursuing those studies and occupations which may qualify them for public employment in this country.

Under a system by which every man must feel that his standing and advancement in the Service and in Society depended wholly on his own industry, acquisitions

and cultivated natural talents, the greatest possible amount of mental power and moral growth must be developed, and while the numbers of Europeans in the public service in India might even ultimately be much reduced, their commanding power would be very greatly, almost infinitely increased.

Where cases of abuse of power occur, as occur they must and will, let them be dealt with individually; avoid, as much as possible, making general Regulations, which destroy all healthy freedom of action and mental development.

We should avoid striving too much after outward uniformity. The same just principles applied equally well and with equally successful result, by different men, may cause different arrangements with respect to unimportant details.

No two leaves on a tree may be exactly alike; but the same vital process has produced all from the same materials. To force all the leaves, or all men's minds into one mould must be equally fatal to vegetable life and to mental power.

Let the system be such as to tend to cultivate and to develop such power; let them apply their powers in the manner they find best adapted to produce the desired effect, and let them be strictly responsible for the results.

If Officers will not exert themselves, or if they have done their best in vain, and the results are unsatisfactory, such Officers are in their wrong places, and should at once be removed to the unemployed list, until work more fitted for their powers be ready for them.

The obvious objection to the organization proposed is the difficulty of finding properly qualified Officers for the higher positions; but it is certain that time will speedily remedy this; the School will form such Officers, and nothing else will do so.

We must expect to meet with some difficulties at first in remedying such long-continued and deep-seated errors; but if our principles of action be sound, their tendency in practice will be gradually to bring about the best possible state of affairs.

However the details may be arranged and carried out, it appears to be quite certain that until such principles as are here maintained be acknowledged and be acted on, the British Empire can never be in a sound or satisfactory condition.

I have studied the subject for a long series of years with all the patient research and observation, and with all the power of thought which I could bring to bear on it. I have had in practice opportunities of applying, on a tolerably extensive scale, the principles which I advocate, such as have fallen to the lot of few men living. These principles have never failed of success in working. They are of universal application, being founded on natural laws, and if carried out fairly in India, they must and would speedily render our Asiatic Soldiers quite as trustworthy as their European brethren in arms.

The goodness of the Sepoy depends on what his English Officer instils into him. The raw material has no power for good, and very little for evil. The Native Indian Soldiers are to us collectively exactly what our limbs are to our individual bodies; they are

the bones and muscles of the whole frame of which the European Gentlemen are the brains and nerves, and where the latter are healthy and vigorous, the former will always be perfectly obedient and strong only to do our bidding.

BRIGADIER G. FARQUHARSON, COMMANDING AT MOOLTAN.
BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. The powers of Commanding Officers have been decreased for years ; the decrease has been effected gradually by Sepoys and others being permitted to petition His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief, who have thereby got reinstated after having been once dismissed ; by individuals known not to have been recommended for promotion being made Native Officers. The utmost punishment a Commanding Officer can give, fifteen days' drill, is quite inadequate to keep up that *awe* in the Asiatic mind so necessary to secure perfect obedience.
2. In my experience of thirty-nine years' service, the powers of Commanding Officers have been much diminished, and with this an increased dread of responsibility has been entertained by Commanding Officers, which has tended to lessen their influence with the men, and their interest in the Regiment generally.
3. Though no doubt there were political causes for the mutiny, the system which existed in the Army precipitated and fostered it.
4. The power of Officers in Command of Companies has been less affected by the centralization system adopted at Head Quarters than that of Commanding Officers ; but this interference has also reached the lower grades through Commanding Officers, and the result has been proportionately hurtful.
5. On service the efficiency of a Corps depends wholly on the good feeling of the men to the State as subjects, and their confidence in their Officers as Soldiers. This is brought about by the discipline kept up, and the care and attention of the Officers to the welfare of the men. The distant authority of Head Quarters has very little influence with the Native Soldiery
6. Increased.
7. Give Commanding Officers Magisterial powers ; let them promote from merit as in the Punjab Corps ; authorize them to inflict corporal punishment at discretion and to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers to the ranks. Such Commanding Officers must be selected men, and all their acts subject to review by Inspectors of Native Troops, who should be appointed at the rate of one to every

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

fifteen Regiments, who again should submit periodical reports to the Commander-in-Chief and head of the Local Government of the Province in which the Troops are serving,—the latter with a view to keeping the Local Government acquainted with the tone and feeling of the Native Troops in the Province.

8. In war decidedly, when more Officers are required.
9. In time of peace keep a strength of 800 of all ranks or less; when war threatens, the increased strength necessary can be rapidly filled up. The thorough training of these men in all Military duties, among which should be included the making fascines and construction of rifle-pits, digging of trenches, building own lines, clearing own parades, as well as Battalion and Light drills, &c, &c., together with Cantonment and other Guards and Escort duties fully occupy the men.
10. At some Stations the men had too little to do. I consider 1,160 of all ranks too great a numerical strength for a Native Regiment in time of peace.
11. For Pioneer Corps only; to employ all the Native Corps kept up for Military purposes, or a portion of them, I do not think advisable; it is contrary to Native habits, and though the terms under which the men enlist, should embrace such a contingency, it should be used with discretion and kept for emergencies in the Field. We do not employ European Troops in public works at home. It would besides be an expensive system. If there are more Native Troops than are actually required, it would be much cheaper to discharge them and hire laborers for public works.
12. Nos. 1 and 2.—No.
No. 3.—Selected European Officers and a full complement of Native Officers. The many additional Officers that would be required in time of war can be easily given from the European Battalion of the Regiment to which the Native Battalion belongs, and for which provision has been made. The Officers, when first posted to a Regiment, to belong to the 1st or European Battalion and there trained. The Command of a Native Battalion to be no particular Officer's right.
13. To European Battalions of Regiments.
14. When trained to be removed at *own request*, if competent and selected, to Native Battalions, with a slight increase of allowances, and do duty with Native Battalion, when they would soon be

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

fitted for appointment to Adjutant or Quarter Master. In like manner the Medical Officer of the Native Battalion should be a selected Assistant Surgeon from the Regiment.

15.

It is the quality of the European Officers, not their numbers, that is of use in *awing* and *governing* the Native mind; but under the present system the efficiency is impaired by so many selected Officers being withdrawn.

16.

No difference has come to my notice.

17.

A Staff Corps for all Officers in Civil or Political employ, or on the Civil branch of the Army Staff, their places being filled up in the Regiments from which removed. The Officers of this Staff Corps to be withdrawn before the reorganization takes place, when Regiments should be retold off according to dates of Commissions of the Officers, and to make it fair to all.

The Officer's Staff Corps to be in Battalions as the Engineers now are, and promotion to go on according to strength.

Officers who have performed Military duty only to be entitled to off-reckonings, the high pay Civil Officers receive being a sufficient reward. Some prizes must be left to the Military, or the best men will, as a rule, strive for Civil employ only.

18.

No; on the contrary give every *assistance* and *encouragement* to Officers to qualify themselves in languages, sciences and special branches useful to the State. Knowledge is power. It will give the Officers greater moral power over their men, and improve the tone, the efficiency, and the character of Regimental Officers generally.

19.

Decidedly lowered, and have a most pernicious tendency.

BRIGADIER C. TROUP, COMMANDING AT BAREILLY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

They have been very materially diminished. I have no records to which I can refer, but may mention generally the following. The almost total abolition of the power of inflicting corporal punishment; the withdrawal of the power of summary dismissal of bad characters, and of those pronounced physically unfit for the Service by their Medical Officers; the almost compulsory promotion of seniors of grades; the withdrawal of the privilege of granting letters to Soldiers having Civil suits and of leave beyond that for a month to Officers or

(r)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Soldiers ; the restriction imposed by the recent Articles of War on the powers of Regimental Courts Martial ; the withdrawal of the power of franking Soldiers' letters ; the orders regarding good conduct pay and badges as recently altered, by which a bad man if he showed a clean sheet for one year, was necessarily rewarded ; the new rules for Courts of Request by which a Soldier could get immediately in debt in defiance of both his Captain and Commanding Officer the increased number of detached Guards ; the constant references required on every point ; the interference on the part of the different Departments, especially the pay and audit, all and each rendering the Commanding Officer and his Captains of Companies perfect cyphers without the means of rewarding good, or effectually and readily punishing bad characters. Over his European Officers a Commanding Officer had no control, being unable to reward or punish them ; his recommendations for Staff employ never asked for, and when offered, seldom attended to, and Officers of his Corps taken away, whom he could not have recommended had he been asked to do so and even against his protest, which resulted in the good man and Officer looking upon their Commanding Officer as a nonentity, and therefore ceased either to assist or please him in the performance of their various duties, feeling that he had no power whatever of advancing their interests by rewarding them for their exertions, whilst the bad set him at utter defiance, knowing that unless something very flagrant, that he was equally powerless to punish them for their misdeeds.

2.

Necessarily diminishes, as the powers of the Regimental Commandants have been restricted as regards both rewards and punishments.

3.

The results have been most detrimental. The good Officer and man was disgusted at finding that his Captain and Commanding Officer had not the means of rewarding him, and that there was nothing to be gained by showing his good character ; and the smart, intelligent Officer and Soldier was disgusted, because there was no opportunity given him of gaining distinction ; while the slothful, careless or bad knew that the Commanding Officer could do them but little harm, and that they might go to a very great extent without incurring permanent disgrace, and consequently defied him. Commanding Officers of Companies and Corps generally lapsed into a state of indifference, finding that those who followed the *laissez faire* system were considered the best Officers, as they gave the least trouble, and the men conducted themselves according to their natural disposition, certain that as long as they were not outrageously slothful or ill-behaved, each had good pay, must see his family in turn, and at the end of a specified period must get an increase of pay or promotion or

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

transferred to the Invalid Establishment, and consequently cared little or nothing for his Officer; the more so that their Officers for these reasons seldom mixed with them, and indeed, as a rule, cared little about their Corps, and were constant and urgent in their endeavours to get away from it.

4.

The same remarks apply to this as to the preceding questions. Indifference in the performance of their duties on the part of the Officers, except in a very few instances, which made the rest more glaring, and carelessness on the part of the Soldier. Latterly a mutual feeling of dislike were engendered, as neither could respect nor have any confidence in the other.

5.

The discipline of a Corps on service depends entirely upon the authority of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment, supported by the influence and authority of those in Command of Companies. As a rule, men have but little faith in things beyond their own experience, and guide their actions chiefly in accordance with the sentiments of those around them. Hence a Soldier is well or ill behaved according to the society he keeps, and is diligent or negligent as he finds his Captain disposed. He is trained, moreover, in times of peace to look to his Captains (at least he ought to be) for rewards, indulgences and punishments, and on service naturally turns to him for guidance, which he cannot and will not of a stranger, and such to him are the Head Quarters of the Army.

6.

Most assuredly increased under the present system. The Captain of a Company and the Commanding Officer of a Regiment are mere cyphers. In a Native Corps the Commanding Officer should be supreme over both the Europeans and Natives under him. He should be the source of all indulgence, rewards and punishments, and be able to invalid and discharge all Natives; from his dicta there should be no appeal on the part of a Native, except through the immediate European superior of the Soldier; certain rules being laid down for good conduct pay, promotions, discharges, pensions, &c.; if he acted contrary to them, he should be relieved of his Command. The Captains of Companies should be the initiators of all rewards, indulgences and punishments to be carried out by the Commanding Officer, who should follow out their recommendations so far as justice and the good of the Service allowed. Over Europeans, the Commanding Officers should have the power of granting all indulgences of leave, and alone be the medium of applications for Staff employ, which should never be complied with, unless he can give a recommendation, and no Officer should be withdrawn for Staff employ until he had completed five years' Regimental duty (exclusive of periods spent on

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

leave,) at the end of which time, should he be a candidate for Staff employ, he should proceed to the Head Quarters of the Division in which he is serving, for the purpose of undergoing a professional examination as one, in the languages, should he pass which, his name should be recorded, or he should be permitted to study for the particular employment he may have selected; but in no instance should this be done without a good character from his Commanding Officer, the character being confined to recorded facts and not be allowed to be given in general terms.

7.

Many suggestions have been made in the foregoing answers; but here I would sum up that a system of discipline should be adopted which would show the Soldier that his Commanding Officer, whether Captain or Colonel, had the confidence of his superiors, which can be done only by carrying out a set of well digested rules. A Soldier should feel, and likes to feel, that all his indulgences depend entirely on those that know him, and with him, as with others, the delay necessary to a reference takes away half the benefit, hence his great ambition should be to please, whilst he dreads his Captain, being assured that justice will be done him. For this it is absolutely necessary that the same rules should obtain for every Regiment, and that these Rules should be few, clear and simple, and altered as seldom as possible, such as to ensure an uniform rate of pay in all situations and pensions claimable after prescribed periods of service, certain and speedy punishment awardable by the Commanding Officer, modified only by his own known good character, leave and promotion given by the Regimental Roster, except where his bad character or qualifications should deprive him of the indulgence and reward; instructions in reading, writing, and arithmetic well grounded and not superficial, a clear understanding of all that is required of him, a knowledge that, while his conscientious scruples would not be interfered with, he must, on taking and while he retains the service of his masters, act as a Soldier and make his prejudices bend to the requisitions of the Service. At present the Pay and Audit Rules are so complicated that no one understands them; the pensions are claimable only on the medical opinion of perfect strangers; punishments and rewards are uncertain, and from their general ignorance they cannot understand what is required of them, and find that many of their European Officers are quite ignorant of their manners, and customs, and can, therefore, be easily imposed upon or demand of them what they have been told shall never be required, duties which make them outcasts at their homes.

8.

This will depend upon their training; if the influence gained over them by their European Officers be firm in time of peace, it will be increased in time of war as regards a good Officer, as service shows men to each other and draws out their real character.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

9.

Having previously stated that I consider that Corps of Native Infantry should have the full complement of European Officers, I shall reply to this with reference to the Native portion alone. A Native Regiment should never exceed eight hundred men in times of peace, these being divided into ten Companies of eighty Privates, with five Havildars, five Naicks, two Drummers, one Lascar and one Bhisty per Company, one of the Havildars being a Pay Havildar, one Drill Havildar, one Drill Naick, one Fife Major, one Drum Major, one Tindal and two Native Doctors for the Regiment, all to be trained to arms, and made to erect, repair and keep clean and in order their own Lines, materials being supplied to them. The men should be employed in learning or keeping up their knowledge of all the duties required of European Soldiers, of reading, writing and arithmetic in one or other of the Vernacular languages, of scaling, and the duties of Sappers and Miners, and in furnishing Military Guards, all Civil Guards and Escorts being supplied by the Police, who alone should be employed on Civil duties.

10.

Yes; but I consider the employment of Native Soldiers on other than mere Military duties as highly objectionable.

11.

Yes, under a proper system.

12.

1st.—A full complement of European Officers, *i e.*, one Colonel, one Lieutenant-Colonel, one Major and one Medical Officer for the Regiment, and one Captain, one Lieutenant, and one Ensign per Company, without any Native Commissioned Officers.

2nd.—No Native Commissioned Officers.

3rd.—Certainly not, a smaller number of European Officers.

13.

Cadets, on arrival, should at once be posted to the Native Corps to which they are to belong.

14.

I should hope that it may never occur that a smaller number of European Officers than the full complement, will be assigned to Native Corps, as their efficiency as superiors of Natives depends upon their being at once appointed to them.

15.

Very materially as at present carried out; but if an Officer be made to serve with his Corps for some five or six years, and the complement with Corps be maintained at the standard I have given in reply to Question No. 12 Part 1, the efficiency of the Regiment would not necessarily be affected, particularly should two European Non-Commissioned Officers per Company be sanctioned.

16.

None, and so long as the late and present systems last, it will be quite immaterial whether there be few or many European Officers present, as those Officers have no influence over their Men.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

By adding to each Corps such a number of European Officers as will provide for those required for Staff employ and leave, combined with the plan of causing every Officer selected for Staff and detached employment first serving not less than five years with his Regiment exclusive of periods of absence on leave.

18.

Under the Rules I have proposed, I think it would be highly disadvantageous to their efficiency as Regimental Officers.

19.

I most certainly think it would.

BRIGADIER W. HILL, COMMANDING HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

HYDERABAD CONTINGENT.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 7.

I find it necessary to embody my replies to these seven consecutive questions in the following manner. Of Infantry for the maintenance of discipline, a Commandant, Second in Command, and Adjutant. I have made minute inquiries in every Regiment, since I have Commanded, as to the mode of carrying on the duties of an Infantry Corps, and I have found that *practically*, the entire discipline of the Regiment is in the hands of the Commanding Officer. The Second in Command, with but few exceptions, has literally nothing to do, but to attend to his duties on parade.

As the Commandant draws a stipulated allowance for each Company in the Regiment, for repairs of arms, as well as for the supply of books and stationery for the whole Regiment, the interior economy of all the Companies may in fact be said to be in his hands also.

The Adjutant has his departmental books to keep, and though he receives the reports of the Regiment, and listens to complaints, nevertheless, generally, the Commanding Officer is mainly the only person to whom the Regiment looks to for every thing.

I commanded the late Gwalior Contingent, as well as the Hyderabad Contingent, and I have narrowly observed the practice pursued by Commandants in the manner in which Military discipline has been generally carried on, and I have found in both Contingents the practice has been for the entire Regiment to look up to the Commandant *alone*, which, doubtless, diminishes the power of the subordinate European Officers, and must render nugatory the respect and influence which, I believe, Government intended them to have, in supporting the Commanding Officers in the discipline of the Regiment.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

This must be defective in principle, for all the responsibility in a Regiment is in the power of one Officer, who regulates every promotion, alone grants leave, with the exception of a few days, and in himself rests all the interests of the men. There has been a very fair opportunity of forming an opinion of Irregular Regiments during the late mutinies in Bengal. A Regiment has frequently, from the exigencies of the Service, been brought down to one Officer, and sometimes to none at all. Officers from the Line are then transferred to a body of men, who *require to be known* before they *fully confide* in him; and when their confidence is obtained, I believe that few European Officers (who should be selected for the Irregular Service) will be found sufficient for the peculiar duties required of them.

I would suggest, for the improvement of discipline, that the complement of European Officers for the Infantry should be *four* in number, and not *three* as at present.

An Officer should have charge of each Wing of the Regiment; each should be answerable to the Commanding Officer for the discipline of his Wing.

All complaints should be settled by the Wing Officer, unless they are of a grave or serious nature, when he should report the same to the Commanding Officer of the Regiment, and he should have authority to grant leave of absence to the men of his Wing to the extent of one month, under the countersignature of the Commanding Officer. He should be authorized to punish men to the extent laid down in the present Regulations. Promotion should go in Companies, and Officers Commanding Wings should, on vacancies occurring, send in their Recommendation Rolls to the Commanding Officer, who will use his discretion in making the promotion, or should he consider it necessary, he would promote any other man in the Company to the vacancy, as in his judgment he thinks best.

Should a Wing Officer consider an offence requires a heavier punishment than that which is laid down for a Company Officer, he will use discretion in the punishment to be awarded. I believe, that discipline would be much improved if the above suggestions were sanctioned by Regulation. The Officers subordinate to the Commanding Officer would then have certain responsibilities delegated to them, and the authority of the Commanding Officer being held to be supreme throughout the Regiments, his influence would be more advantageously exercised than it is at present, and it would be a very desirable improvement in the Command of a Regiment.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers have sensibly diminished in the Madras Army.

The changes in the practice of the Service, combined with orders which have at times emanated from the Head Quarters of the Army, have decidedly withdrawn a great deal of that influence which was formerly possessed by a Commanding Officer, and it is very detrimental to his authority.

The following are some of the changes alluded to now. Commanding Officers are obliged to forward their Recommendation Rolls for promotion to the Commissioned grades, through the Divisional Authorities, to the Head Quarters of the Army, in lieu of direct as formerly.

This seems to indicate a want of confidence in the judgment and discretion of Commanding Officers, who naturally feel they are distrusted when making selections for promotion.

The powers of Commanding Officers have also much diminished by the limited punishment they are now authorized to inflict. Formerly also the European Regimental Staff Officers were selected by Commanding Officers. In 1856 an order was issued by the Commander-in-Chief, directing that on a vacancy occurring the names of the Officers should be submitted to Head Quarters of the Army with their qualifications. This practically gives the selection to the Commander-in-Chief, and completely sets aside the Commanding Officer. The Native Army likewise know perfectly well that petitions are received at Head Quarters, and it not unfrequently happens that these petitions are granted, which shows them that the authority of the Commanding Officer is not paramount, and this knowledge seriously undermines his influence, and consequently his power over his men.

This gradual increase of Head Quarters influence has the effect of deterring Officers from acting on their own judgment and responsibility. The evil which must eventually arise to an Army which is governed by this system is so forcibly described by Major-General Tucker, C. B., late Adjutant-General of the Bengal Army, in a recent pamphlet on the late mutinies, as to leave no room for doubting how badly the system must necessarily work.

He writes—"I was much struck, when I first succeeded to the post of Adjutant General, at the way in which numbers of older Officers in Command of Divisions, Districts and Stations, applied

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

to me both privately and publicly for advice as to how they had best act in such and such emergencies. I found that to rely on themselves was the exception ; that almost all seemed to wish to lean on authority before committing themselves to action ; in a word, a great bug-bear prevented their acting on their own judgment ; *that bug-bear was the dread of responsibility.*"

Major-General Tucker adds that he used his influence to combat this system. "He deprecated the reference of every petty detail for the opinion of the Adjutant General, and more broadly the system of centralization which had sprung up."

The European Officers have but little power over their men at present. The punishments they are now authorized to inflict are trifling, and they have but little influence over their men. The result of the diminution of power is to lead the men to look to others than their immediate superiors.

I conceive that the influence which a Commanding Officer ought to have in a Regiment, and which is indispensable to the satisfactory exercise of his Command, is materially diminished by the causes mentioned in Para. 1, and this state of things is most injurious to the discipline of the Native Army.

4.

A similar result is experienced by the Captain or Officer in charge of a Company, by the little influence he possesses at present among his men. He ought to be the only person his men should look to as being most directly interested in them.

Though an Officer in charge of a Company now recommends for Lance appointments, the Commanding Officer may select and appoint any man in the Regiment he considers most fit for that grade. This leads the men to look to the Commanding Officer instead of to the Company Officer, and the very link which it is important to keep entire between a Company Officer and his men is severed, and his influence is materially diminished.

The promotion to Lance Naick should be given in the Company in which the vacancy occurs, and this will prevent ill-feeling among the men, and they should be made to feel that their immediate superior is the proper person to look to for every thing they want ; and this will greatly increase his influence and power in his Company.

5.

There is no doubt that Officers Commanding Companies have great influence over their men on service from their being thrown more together than when in Garrison ; their interests are much more identified then, and the men look up to their Officers as their immediate superiors.

(i)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The moral influence also of the Commanding Officer over the whole Regiment is increased, and this sensibly acts upon the discipline in the Corps. The knowledge, however, that Commanding Officers have, that they are even then under the same strict scrutiny from Head Quarters, which is exercised over them when in Garrison, deters most Commanding Officers from so entirely depending upon their own judgment, and taking upon themselves that responsibility which alone can gain for them the confidence and respect of those under their Command, and ensure the good discipline of a Regiment.

6.

The power of Commanding Officers should, in my opinion, be decidedly increased.

When a Commanding Officer considers discipline requiring it, he should have the power of recommending, for the consideration of the Commander-in-Chief, the reduction to the ranks of Havildars or Naicks, for it is well-known to those who command that though a Non-Commissioned Officer may not commit himself in a way to try him by a Court-Martial, and reduce him, he may be otherwise quite unfit for his appointment, and the knowledge that a Commanding Officer could have such a Non-Commissioned Officer removed would have a most salutary effect among the grade of Non-Commissioned Officers in a Regiment. He should also have the power of inflicting the punishment of solitary confinement, extended to fourteen days, which is a punishment much disliked by Native Troops.

My opinion regarding the authority of an Officer in charge of a Company is expressed in Para. 4.

7.

The increased power suggested in the previous Para., and the alterations which I have recommended in the manner of admitting Sepoys to good conduct pay in Class 3 Para. 12, would, in my opinion, essentially conduce to the improvement of discipline in the Native Army.

When, however, recommending an extension of power to be delegated to an Officer Commanding a Regiment, and consequently an increase of responsibility, I conceive that should he evince a want of judgment and disqualification for Command, and an unfitness to be entrusted with the discretionary power I have suggested, he should be removed from his command on a clear representation to that effect of his non-competency.

8.

I have replied to this question in Para. 5.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

It is greatest in time of war.

9.

The strength at which Regiments are at present established is barely sufficient for the performance of the usual Military duties which devolve upon the Madras Army.

Regiments of the Line should not be employed as they now are ; treasure parties, escorts, and the like, which, from the want of Police Corps, have hitherto been performed by the Military.

The occupation which I would recommend for the Troops would be their employment upon Military works in their Cantonments, and occasionally instructed in raising field entrenchments which would be very useful.

10.

Never ; and in most Stations of the Army there are scarcely sufficient Troops for the performance of Garrison duties.

11.

No ! I would recommend a reconsideration of the Regulations for paying working parties, for the rates of pay for the Native Army are much too low, being one anna per day, except when working under fire, in presence of an Enemy. This is quite an inadequate remuneration for working parties, and it should be made more favorable to the men to get work done well and willingly.

12.

This question is to the same purport as Para. 16 of No. 3 class, and has already been fully answered there.

13.

There is no doubt the Cadets would learn their duties more thoroughly by being first attached to European Corps ; but this would be very likely to give many of them a distaste for serving with the Native Regiments, and should be avoided. As it is, many young Officers have a great dislike to the Natives.

I strongly deprecate the present practice of putting Cadets that are posted to Native Regiments under the Drill Havildar, as it is derogatory to an European Officer to be instructed by a Native in his drill.

The Cadets should be instructed in their drill by the Serjeant Major of the Regiment under the Adjutant.

14.

It will be seen, by my previous answers, that I do not recommend a smaller number of European Officers to a Native Corps.

15.

I have stated in Para. 16 of 3rd Class that the efficiency of a Regiment is greatly affected by a number of Officers being withdrawn for Staff employment.

16.

Not that I am aware of

QUESTIONS.

17.

ANSWERS.

It appears to me that in order to keep up the efficiency of the Army by having a sufficient number of European Officers with their Regiments, the only demands which ought to be made upon it should be to provide for the Head Quarters, General and Divisional Staff of the Army, and political appointments, also the Officering of Contingent Regiments and the Command of Military Police Corps.

1st.—I would recommend that the Commissariat Department should be a separate branch of itself under the head of the Civil Department of the Army, as it is in Her Majesty's Service, and Regimental Officers should not be employed in it.

2nd.—The Public Works Department, which draws very largely upon the Regiments of the Line, should be made over entirely to the Civil Engineer's Department, which can be supplied, to any extent, from England if a sufficient inducement is held out by Government.

Employment in the Public Works Department is most injurious to Officers; they are taken away so entirely from all Regimental duty; they become, in a few years, quite ignorant of the simplest details of their profession, and imbibe a disinclination for all Military duties.

3rd.—The Judge Advocate General's Department should be entirely abolished. These duties should be performed by Officers from the Line, appointed by the General Officer of the Division, by warrant, when their services are required for conducting trials.

There is no reason why the Advocate General of each Presidency should not undertake the duties now performed by the Judge Advocate General of the Army. This Officer of the Crown is frequently referred to now by the Government when legal opinions are required. This system works well throughout the Queen's Service.

4th.—I would recommend the Pay Department being left exactly as it is now, as the present system works so well in the Army, and so few Officers are required for this Department.

5th.—The number of Officers now in Civil employment, such as Commissioners and Assistant Commissioners of Districts, causes a very great drain upon the Army. The performance of these duties should be transferred to the Civil Service, or else that Officers now so employed should have the option either of returning to their Regiments or continuing in Civil employment and giving up the Service, when the vacancies in their Regiments could be filled up.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

I would suggest a distinction between Officers holding Political appointments and those who are Commissioners and performing Civil duties.

Political Officers might thus be permitted to remain in the Army as well as continue in their appointments.

I believe it to be absolutely necessary for the efficiency of the Army, that an entire change of system should be pursued with regard to Officers of the Army passing in the Native languages.

Unless the Officers are compelled to learn the language, they will not do so.

They will continue, as heretofore, to take no interest in their men ; and I believe that the reason Officers with Native Troops take so little interest in their men, and the men are so little able to judge of the character of their Company Officers, is mainly attributable to there being little or no verbal communication, and therefore there can be no sympathy between them.

I would recommend that every Officer, on entering the Army, should be obliged to study the language, and appear before a Committee at the expiration of one year ; examined as to the progress he has made, and report of the same sent to the Adjutant General of the Army.

At the end of the second year he should pass another examination, and if he has not acquired sufficient colloquial knowledge of the language to enable him to converse freely with the Natives, he should be obliged to leave the Army as is the case with young Civilians on entering the Service.

I would recommend that this plan should be adopted at once, as it appears to me of much importance to the Native Army.

I conceive that if the above proposals are carried out, the demand for European Officers for Staff and detached employment will readily be met without injuring the efficiency of Regiments,

18.

In my opinion certainly not. I believe that the only inducement young Officers have to study and qualify themselves for the higher branches of their profession, is the hope of ultimately getting on the Staff.

(u)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

It is a great mistake to suppose that Officers who are kept with their Regiments are necessarily good Regimental Officers, for it too frequently happens that the disappointment of not being employed upon the Staff makes them careless and indifferent to their commonest duties, and they become disgusted with constantly doing Regimental duty whereas the prospect of Staff employment is a great incentive to take advantage of every opportunity of improving their minds, and becoming acquainted with other branches of science which they would not otherwise cultivate.

It will be found generally that those Officers who have been on the general Staff of the Army are the best Officers, provided they have not been too much away from Regimental duty.

To guard against the evil I would suggest the strict enforcement of the orders of Government, limiting employment on the Staff to five years at one time except to Political Officers.

I regard this as one of the best measures for ensuring the efficiency of the Army, and I believe the only effectual way of preserving it, as Officers on the Staff would then find it necessary to keep up their professional knowledge. This would give every Officer in the Army a prospect of being on the Staff during some portion of his service if he qualifies himself for it.

I would recommend that no Regimental Officer should be re-appointed to the Staff until he has performed a certain term of Regimental duty. There can be no necessity for retaining an appointment beyond five years, and it should never be deviated from. The certainty of returning to their Regiments would lead Staff Officers to take a greater interest in their Corps than they now generally do, and the prospect of Staff employment will prevent Regimental Officers from being discontented.

19.

Most certainly it would in my opinion.

BRIGADIER J. STEEL, COMMANDING AT UMBALLA.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of a Commanding Officer have been gradually diminishing by the restriction imposed as to promotion and punishment and by a general assimilation of the Rules to those in Her Majesty's Service.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

2. The system of appeal and control from Head Quarters or to Senior Officers have diminished the power and influence of a Commanding Officer.
3. Maligners are too often allowed to continue in the Service till a higher rank is obtained by an appeal to Head Quarters. Every sort of exaggeration is resorted to, to obtain attention to their appeal, and success in one instance causes others to attempt similar practices.
4. To convey the authority and influence they ought to possess to the Adjutant of the Regiment and Havildar Major or other Native Staff of the Corps.
5. Upon the authority of the Officers of the Regiment and the greater chance of distinction and promotion from acts under view of those who can recommend them.
6. The power of Officers Commanding Companies should be increased as far as promotion and punishment are concerned. The order that men are not to approach their Officer except in full dress or accompanied by a Non-Commissioned Officer, imposes a restriction adverse to that confidence which ought to exist, and should be repealed except in particular cases of troublesome characters, as well as the order prohibiting Night Guards to Officers from their Companies. The principle of recent legislation seems to have been to separate the Officers from the Men.
7. If discipline means the non-observance of caste when cooking as regards themselves or Europeans, it pervades all classes of the respectable Hindoo. I am not aware of any remedy. I have been three times on board ship and in Java with every caste and class of Sepoy, but never found caste interfere with duty or discipline. The relief of guards in our large Military Cantonments has been adduced as an evil of that tendency that it ought to be daily, instead of weekly. It might, perhaps, be adopted, and would prevent the transport of bed and bedding. How it would affect the health of the men in some of our localities may be a consideration. No Officer should have charge of a Company till he has passed his examination.
8. Greatest in time of war; the men in Camp are more under the eye of their Officers, they see more of them and they have better opportunities of recommending themselves to their notice, and the Officers are more dependent on the kind offices of their men, which are never withheld.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

9.

There may be occasionally a paucity of Troops and heavy duty for Corps; but, as a general rule, I have never thought our Native Corps had too much duty. In time of peace they could take all Treasury Guards and Escorts so as to save the necessity of keeping up enormous establishments. I have never thought they ought to be kept together for the gratification of a Commanding Officer. The less duty they have, the more control they require.

10 & 11.

In reply to Nos. 10 and 11 I say certainly; but employment on public works should be the condition of their enlistment, or extra batta given as to the Pensioners for such performances on public works. It has often occurred to me that they might thus have been employed on the Grand Trunk Road in the Punjab or on our Canals. Had they been placed on duty on the road, and batta given to such as were willing to work, I have no doubt but all would have done so. In our earlier campaigns batta was given for working in entrenchments in presence of the Enemy, and their reluctance to do so on any subsequent occasion has been in consequence of the absence of such allowance. They have always opposed such reductions.

12.

Native Corps should have a full complement of European Officers as well as Native Officers; these latter, as I have said elsewhere, as the principal inducement to good conduct of all ranks.

13.

Nothing can be more disadvantageous than attaching Cadets for any length of time to European Regiments. They acquire ideas and opinions derogatory to the Native Army, which is not desirable of a Service to which they are to be attached.

14.

For any number of Officers I would attach them to Native Troops only; they will treat them with more confidence and consideration.

15.

I think not, except in the field, where leaders are required to give the Natives confidence.

16.

I do not think the number of Officers present has ever had any thing to do with disaffection in the Native Army. Promotion and allowances till the recent crisis, or the infringement of any usage on these points, have been the cause of dissatisfaction at any time shown by the Bengal Army. The orders of General Wemyss for the Bengal Volunteers to attend Church in Ceylon in 1805 did not cause any open discord. They attended twice before the Officer got the order cancelled. The attendance of Detachments of 39 Corps each with an Officer at Umballah, 20 at Sealkote, and 12 at

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Dum Dum, for Rifle practice, and their dispersal to their several Regiments, caused a union of action that could not otherwise have occurred, combined with the proceedings at Head Quarters on the subject.

17.

By Staff Corps, or by nominating ten Captains to each Regiment, with a portion of Lieutenants and Ensigns.

18.

Most disadvantageous as taking away every motive or inducement to honorable exertion from young men.

19.

Most certainly.

Note.—For further remarks, see Page 106 of Recruiting and Composition of Corps—Infantry.

BRIGADIER P. GORDON, COMMANDING AT BENARES.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Diminished with respect to promotions to the Non-Commissioned grades, Sir C. Napier's order requiring the reason for passing over any man to be assigned in Regimental Orders.

2nd.—With respect to promotions to the Commissioned grades, the Circular Order being unable to prevent the promotion of men whose qualifications and character are merely negative.

3rd.—With respect to discharges formerly for physical unfitness. Men might be discharged on a certificate from the Surgeon, by the Commanding Officer. Now this can only be done on the report of a Medical Committee, and with the sanction of the Commander-in-Chief. Act No. XIX of 1847 materially increased the power of Commanding Officers with respect to confirming and carrying out sentences of Regimental Courts Martial; but this, to the best of my recollection, is a solitary instance; the tendency in every other having been the reverse.

2.

The powers of the Officer Commanding the Regiment having been diminished, those of the other Officers have necessarily also been diminished.

3.

The result of the diminution of the powers and influence of Commanding Officers of Corps has, in my opinion, been very injurious, and of this I could give a forcible example from what occurred in my late Corps, the Regiment of Loodianah.

4.

To diminish the influence of good Company Officers must be injurious, and with good Commanding Officers of Regiments, good

(w)

ANSWERS.

QUESTIONS.

Company Officers must, as a general rule, follow as a natural consequence.

5.

Undoubtedly upon the authority and influence of Officers Commanding Regiments, assisted by the Officers Commanding Companies.

6.

Increased as regards the Commanding Officers of Regiments in particular ; the powers of efficient Company Officers ought also to be increased. Young, inexperienced Officers ought only to be vested with *half* powers, by which I mean that such Officers ought to be required to consult the Commanding Officer of the Regiment on all important cases to be clearly defined.

7.

Careful selection of Commanding Officers fully qualified to Command, and to teach their Men and Officers parade and all other duties.

8.

As the sole object of all training in time of peace is to be prepared for war, I don't quite understand this question ; at the same time the extent of influence exercised by an Officer over his men in time of war must depend on his having inspired them with perfect confidence in his skill and judgment in time of peace.

9.

The strength at which Regiments should be maintained must depend on the extent of duty they are to be required to perform. On active service in the Field I think the "Service Battalion" ought to be maintained at six hundred efficient men. The complement of the Reserve or Local Battalion to be the same. The strength of the first could, at any time, be augmented by drafts from the Reserve Battalion, to be replaced, if necessary, by recruits. For occupation after the Native Soldiers have been fully instructed in their duties as Regular Infantry, supposing it to be intended to maintain a Regular Native Army, I would teach them the duties of pioneers, and employ them accordingly on works near the Station, giving the usual working pay, every Regiment to be required, during the year, to do a stated amount of work according to the number of spare men off duty.

10.

On the contrary, the Bengal Native Infantry have been so much detached on Escorts, Commands, and on Station and other duties, that to keep a Regiment up to the mark on parade and other Military duties, has been very up-hill work indeed.

11.

No, not at most Stations in the Provinces. Not to have a relief of Guards in the Line used to be a very ordinary occurrence. In the Punjab, where large bodies of Native Troops used to be assembled, it might have been.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

A full complement of European Officers and no Native Commissioned Officers, as already explained in answering a former question.

13.

Cadets can just as well be instructed in a Native Corps as in only European Regiments. Young Officers drilled with European Regiments take a prejudice against Natives, which they seldom or never get over.

14.

The question implies that there are to be no regular fully Officered Native Corps with which young Officers can be instructed, and in this case, the drilling of all Cadets with European Corps would be unavoidable.

15.

Yes.

16.

What is here called a mutiny I call a rebellion. Of all the warlike classes in India, or rather in Hindoostan, and between the fully-Officered and under-Officered Corps, composed strictly of these classes, there has been no apparent difference; where there has been a difference it was owing to local circumstances, isolation or having been out of the way of temptation.

17.

Officers for Civil employment and for Departments requiring long training for the efficient discharge of the duties, ought to be struck off the effective list, and other Officers posted in their room from the Army gradation list.

18.

No, but on the other hand such absence from all Military duty ought not to be indefinite. An Officer returning to his Corps generally to Command, after an absence of fifteen, twenty and even thirty years from all Military duty, cannot fail to be ruinous to the efficiency of the Regiment eventually.

19.

Certainly, to declare Regimental Officers ineligible for extra detached employment would have such a tendency; the evils of the present system so generally complained of might be easily removed.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL J. COKE, C. B., COMMANDING AT MORADABAD.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Diminished to such an extent as to have been one of the principal causes of bringing about the mutiny. To enumerate the orders and measures, it would be necessary to search the General Orders from 1830 to 1856. The principal, I think, are abolition of corpora

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

punishment; power taken from Commanding Officers of discharging Soldiers whom they consider unfit to remain in the Service; reduction of Non-Commissioned Officers to the ranks; of promotion save by seniority; having men sent back to him who had been dismissed as unfit men and even by sentence of Regimental Courts Martial, on their presenting petitions to Head Quarters, and the general feeling engendered by these and other similar acts that the Commanding Officer was helpless to punish or reward.

2. If by Officers is meant Officers Commanding Companies in Native Corps, diminished in the same ratio as that of Commanding Officers of Corps. I know nothing about European Regiments.
3. One of the principal causes of the present mutiny.
4. Want of sympathy with their men, dislike to the Service, and an incessant desire to get away from the Regiment, either on Staff employ, or if that was unattainable, to get away on leave or resign the Service, or go to the Invalids, or do any thing to escape Regimental duty which, from their having no power and therefore no interest in the Corps, had become intolerably irksome.
5. The discipline of the Regiment is alone maintained by the power and influence of the Commanding Officer and the Officers Commanding Companies, and the reasons that Corps have so seldom mutinied on service are that the pernicious influence of Head Quarters is then partly in abeyance. Commanding Officers then take some of the requisite power into their own hands, and men are punished in a manner commensurate with their offences. Although the powers assumed by the Commanding Officer, when on service, are not what they ought to be, still it is sufficient to act as a check and keep men in order.
6. Increased in the manner before stated.
7. Full power to be given to Commanding Officers to reward, promote, punish, reduce to the ranks, and to discharge all men they may consider unfit for the Service. If European Officers are still to be kept in Command of Companies, to allow them to have the power they formerly held, viz., that their recommendation for promotion, punishment, discharge, &c., should be always attended to by the Commanding Officer without there being considerable reasons for non-compliance; but I do not recommend that European Officers be placed in Command of Companies.

The Commanding Officer to have power, as a Magistrate, to try his men for all crimes, murders excepted, which, after his investiga-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

tion, should be handed over to the Sessions. No Articles of War ; no oath. The Standing Orders of the Army and the Field Exercise are all that is required for drill and discipline ; but the Standing Orders that will suit Hindoostanees will not suit Seikhs and Pathans. Each Province should have its own separate Orders, which should be carefully compiled in the same way as the Standing Orders for the Regiment of Artillery, including all forms required for the Infantry, with plain rules and forms for the drawing pay of Officers and Men, so as if possible to protect the Army from the injustice of the Audit Office, which has been the cause of greater disgust to the Army than any other Establishment in India.

8.

In war, and for the reasons stated at No. 5.

9.

Native Troops should not be employed for any but legitimate purposes. By legitimate purposes I mean Police and their own discipline. It will not do, in my opinion to work Native Troops at road-making or other public works without the whole Army is made to do the same, and then they should be used as the Sappers and Pioneers are, paying them for their labor ; but I don't think this kind of labor would be found remunerative to the Government. I worked the 4th Punjab Infantry and a Police Corps in building the Fort of Bahadoor Kheil. This I consider legitimate work for Soldiers ; but it did not pay at the rate granted to the Sappers. Cooly labor was found to be cheaper. If Soldiers are used as Police Guards for Treasure, escorting the same, Jail Guards, escorting Prisoners, with their own work to render them useful Soldiers, it will be found that they have enough to do with the average call for service of the last twenty years. I am averse to employing Soldiers as laborers except on service.

The best strength for an Infantry Regiment is eight Companies of 100 men each. They are more handy in this manner and sufficiently within the compass of the voice ; but perhaps ten Companies of 80 men is better for the State, as this enables the Army to be more readily increased to 1,000 men per Regiment in time of war which, after deducting sick and squads left at the Depôt, is not by any means too strong.

10.

I think, as before stated, it might well have been employed on Police duties ; but since the extension of our Empire, and the triennial change of Station, which I consider unnecessary, I think our Native Army has been rather over than under-worked, and that this, to a considerable extent, rendered the Service less popular than it formerly was, when our Empire was of smaller extent. To march a Regiment from Peshawur to Barrackpore is a serious undertaking, and puts men to a very considerable expense.

(a)

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

11.

If the late Bengal Army had been ordered to labor at the public works, I think they would have mutinied, and I do not consider it desirable to employ the Army in the public works for the reasons stated at No. 9 question.

12.

I have before stated what I consider should be the complement of European and Native Officers to a Corps. All distinctions of Regular and Irregular should be abolished. European Officers to each Corps—one Commandant, one Second in Command, one Adjutant, one Quarter Master and from three to five Officers doing duty, but all mounted; two Native Officers to each Company to be held responsible for the conduct of their men; one Native Adjutant, one Native Quarter Master, not to be taken from the Company Officers but to be in excess to the establishment of two Officers per Company.

13.

Not a full complement as in the old Line Corps. Cadets, on their first arrival in the Country, should be sent to a Military College on 200 Rupees per mensem; such a place as Roorkee, where they should be kept till they have passed an examination.

For the Infantry.

Military drawing and surveying, to enable them to prepare Military Maps; sufficient fortification, to enable them to throw up field works, a bridge head, how to defend houses and buildings in the best manner; Infantry and Artillery drill with careful instructions in Rifle and Musketry drill, so as to enable them to teach their men when they join their Corps; gymnastic exercises, fencing, running, leaping and swimming, so as to render them active able-bodied Soldiers; languages, Hindoostanee, Punjabee or Pushtoo, according to the Provinces they are to be employed in. I think half the young Officers of the Army, on their first arrival in the Country, contracted habits of indolence, if not worse, which unfitted them for the service of the State in after life.

For the Cavalry.

The same as the Infantry, with the exception of the drill; but they should be taught not the Cavalry drill alone but equitation after the Native fashion, riding at a tent pin with the spear; firing from horseback at speed; native method of using the sword; to wheel, turn and stop his horse at speed, in fact to give the Officer perfect confidence in himself as a Horseman. I would here offer to the consideration of Government the benefit that would arise to the State if the four European Cavalry Corps which have been embodied were drilled after the principle laid down in Captain Nolan's Book of the 15th Hussars, mixed with Native instructions

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

as before described. The commencement that has been made in enlisting men of less height and weight is all in the right direction. It is impossible that horses of this Country can carry 16 or 17 stone and be of use as Light Cavalry ; 12 stone is the most that a horse can carry and be able to undergo long marches and great fatigue without entirely losing their condition, and above all things they cannot go the pace in the charges or pursuit. What appears to me to be necessary for this Country is a body of Cavalry that can inflict punishment on a broken enemy and pursue them fifteen or twenty miles after an engagement, following them up again for several days. Now it is notorious that our European Cavalry, with all their courage and gallantry, can neither do the one nor the other, as good Native Cavalry, if properly mounted and led, can do. The reason is that the weight of the European kills the horses, and from being trained to ride in masses, they are not individually good Horsemen nor able to manage them properly. Their swords are spoiled by the steel scabbards, and they are not trained to use them at speed. These new Corps, if properly trained and armed, would soon become all that is required, and as far excel the Native Horsemen in these points as the European courage excels the Native.

14.

Replied to in answer to question No. 13.

15.

Under the old system undoubtedly affected ; under the new, if adopted, there would be no cause, as I would never allow the Officers who have once joined a Corps to leave it except to exchange into the Cavalry, and *vice versa*, or if selected for political employ or Civil duties.

16.

I should think not ; but those Officers who were with Corps during the late mutinies will be able to give a better opinion than I can.

17.

I would have all Officers, on arrival in the Country, Artillery and Engineers excepted, sent to the Military College, which should be established in a good climate in the North of India, and as far as possible from any large town. Here all the young Officers should be classed for the separate services, according to their qualifications, for the Staff, Cavalry and Infantry, without regard to relationship. Those Cadets who could or would not pass the examination, to be removed from the Army.

The Military College would all depend on the man who was placed at its head. With such men as Lieutenant-Colonel Tombs, of the Artillery, Lieutenant-Colonel Reid, of the Sirmoor Battalion, Major Lumsden, of the Guides, Lieutenant-Colonel Wild, of the 4th Punjab Infantry, or Major Taylor, of the Engineers, for the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

first Military Governor, with the best masters procurable, European and Native, an establishment would soon be formed that would turn out able and efficient Officers in all branches.

18.

I have before stated that the only Staff that would thus be open to Cavalry and Infantry Officers is Civil or Political employ ; the same, of course, with Artillery and Engineers ; the other Staff of the Army to be selected from the Military College in which they would rise or remain stationery by their own efforts and abilities, provided interest did not interfere. The Staff would thus become divided. The employment of the young Officers in the Police would, I think, greatly tend to fit them for Civil employment when required. Political employ would be the great prize to stimulate men to exertion. I think, under these circumstances, with the training at the Military College, there would be no want of incitement to Officers to qualify themselves in a more efficient manner than at present for the service of the State.

19.

No I think not, but very much raised by the system proposed.

 GENERAL REMARKS ON THE 4TH HEAD OF INQUIRY.

A Native Corps should, in my opinion, consist of one Commandant, one Second in Command, one Adjutant, one Quarter Master, and from three to five European Officers doing duty, all mounted ; not to interfere with command of Companies, which should be in the hands of the Native Officers, not the imbecile fools of the old Army, but young men of good family, who should be entertained as Jemadars. The best Native Officer in the Corps should be Native Adjutant, and the next best Officer Native Quarter Master. There should be no European Serjeants. This is by no means to prevent able men from being promoted from the ranks. There should also be greater rewards open to distinguished Native Officers than there are at present, more especially as we continue to draw our Soldiers from the Northern tribes. All the great rewards to the Native portion of the Community have been in the gift of Civilians, and have therefore fallen on those who have been employed in a Civil capacity. This should not be the case. We seem to understand less than any nation how to reward Soldiers, probably from not being a Military nation and from having always been ruled by Civilians ; it seems to me that the greatest rewards should be given to those Soldiers who have fought and hazarded their lives for the Government. I do not mean by rewards a Sirdar Bahadourship on 60 Rupees a month, because I consider this no reward for men who have performed great services. The rewards I would suggest are the independent Command of Cavalry or Infantry Regiments on 4 or 500 Rupees a month, Jagheers of the same value. Soldiers thus rewarded would be more likely to be faithful in a rebellion than Moonsiffs, Sudder Ameens, Tehseeldars, &c., who do not seem to have been faithful in the last mutiny.

A few rewards of this description to the Soldiers excite the hopes of many ; numbers are thus compelled to exert themselves ; the Government obtains the benefit of their exertions. It was truly said by Wallomstein—“ That no gold was equal to the weight of a valiant Soldier, that great hopes followed great rewards, and the greater recompense produced both the best Troops and most skilful Officers.”

COLONEL P. M. MELVILL, SECRETARY TO GOVERNMENT, BOMBAY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

I am not aware of any orders or measures having been issued or adopted of late years for the purpose of modifying the powers exercised by Commanding Officers. The free exercise of these powers is a matter rather of practice than of rule, and will vary according to the views and opinions of Commanders-in-Chief and of Adjutants General and according to the personal characters of Commanding Officers themselves.

2.

Answered above.

3.

This depends upon the character of the Commanding Officer and the manner in which the power and influence belonging to his Command are required.

4.

The remarks made with respect to Commanding Officers of Battalions apply equally to the case of Officers in Command or charge of Companies.

5.

I consider that the discipline of a Corps on service depends upon the system established in Garrison, and that discipline in war and in peace depends upon the same principles.

6.

I am not aware of any fixed standard by which such powers can be measured.

7.

I am not prepared to suggest any in particular.

8.

I conceive it is, and ought to be the same.

9.

In times of the most profound peace, the Indian Government must maintain its Army even in a condition ready for war. It can never disarm. I do not think it will ever be practicable to employ the Regular Troops on public works ; but it would be very easy and very profitable to raise Corps of Pioneers to be united with the

(y)

ANSWERS.

QUESTIONS.

highly trained Sappers, who in war would be attached to the Regular Troops, and in peace could be engaged in making roads, building bridges, and other works of public utility.

10.

Numerically the Bombay Army, for many years past, has been barely equal to its Military duties.

11.

I think not.

12.

I think that every Native Corps should have a full complement of European and of Native Commissioned Officers according to the present scale.

13.

It is not of much consequence perhaps where Cadets are first attached.

14.

I cannot propose a mode of training for the duties of a Native Corps so simple or so efficient as a course of duty with the Corps itself. Depôts might be established; but they would most probably have an injurious effect on the character, moral as well as professional, of the Officers congregated within them.

15.

Undoubtedly; but not equally nor at all times the same.

16.

In the Bombay Army, there has not been an opportunity of drawing the comparison.

17.

For Staff employment, properly so-called, that is to say for the Military Staff of the Army, Officers may be taken from the Regiments without producing any injury to the efficiency of Regiments; but if to the proper Staff be added *detached* employment, that is to say, if Officers are drawn from their Regiments to fill appointments in Civil Departments of every kind, Surveys, Public Works, Educational Inspectorships and a variety of miscellaneous offices, then the drain becomes fatal to the efficiency of the Army. For this evil, which may really be called the disease of the Indian Army, various remedies have from time to time, been proposed.

Staff Corps and Staff lists and secondary promotion and other schemes have been devised; but no scheme has ever yet been accepted as particularly suited to the proposed end. The real remedy is, I conceive, in the substitution of Civilians for Soldiers in all offices where the duties are not of a Military character.

18.

It would be very disadvantageous to the general efficiency of Regimental Officers to cut off from them the hope of Staff employ-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

ment ; but it is not advantageous to lead them to seek employment beyond the limits, taken in their widest extent, of their proper professions.

19.

The standard of *professional* acquirements would not be lowered by confining the extra Regimental employment of Officers to the auxiliary Staff.

COLONEL E. GREEN, C. B., ADJUTANT GENERAL BOMBAY ARMY.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

-Diminished to a considerable extent. Within my experience a Commanding Officer could inflict three hundred lashes without reference to higher authority ; subsequently his power was reduced by flogging being interdicted unless the punishment had been confirmed by higher authority ; then the number of lashes was reduced, till flogging has become almost unknown in the Native Army ; thirty years ago it was almost the only punishment.

Minor punishments are much curtailed ; cross arm drill has been abolished, and the duration of punishment by drill, heavy and light, shortened. These matters are now much more than formerly under the supervision of Brigadiers, General Officers, and Army Head Quarters, and have been caused by orders that superior Officers shall make themselves acquainted with the working condition of the several Regiments.

2.

- Neither increased nor diminished.

More pains are taken in discriminating the degree of punishment. I think that in most Regiments Officers of both European and Native Corps have fully as much power as they possessed years ago. Commanding Officers are now obliged to be better acquainted with these subjects than they were formerly, and punishments are more under regulation.

3.

The diminution has caused a system of appeal and looking beyond the Commanding Officer, which has had an evil effect. The Commanding Officer should be all-powerful in the idea of the Sepoy. The well-meant interference of the superior Authorities has weakened this, and thrown too much upon them and Army Head Quarters, that responsibility which should be vested in Com-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

manding Officers, and which the knowledge of the important position they occupy would cause them to exert with due discretion and zeal.

4.

I am not aware of any increase or diminution.

5.

Upon the authority and influence of Officers in Command of Regiments and Companies, influenced, doubtless, by the Troops fully understanding that in all just and legitimate measures their Officers would be supported by the distant authority of Head Quarters.

6.

The power of Commanding Officers should be increased, and that of Commanding Officers of Companies enlarged if possible; but much must depend upon the mode in which the future discipline of the Army is to be maintained. The Native Articles of War and Defaulter Rolls are opposed to all such extension of powers, and by these means Commanding Officers are almost helpless, and in times of difficulty quite so.

7.

Magisterial powers to Commanding Officers answer admirably with Irregular Regiments, and should be generally introduced. Flogging should be ordered for theft, insubordination, and any disgraceful crime, added to imprisonment and expulsion.

8.

In time of war. The influence of the British Officer amongst Natives is most felt in times of difficulty and danger; all must depend, however, upon the individual character of the Officer.

9.

Regiments should not exceed 800 Privates of ten Companies, on the reorganization of the Army; perhaps 700 would be sufficient, and the men should be taught the use of the pick and the spade equally with that of the musket. Every man should be enlisted with the understanding that he is to assist in the construction of public works (nothing menial or degrading) and to go wherever ordered by sea or land.

10.

Seldom, if ever, under this Presidency.

11.

Not under the circumstances above stated.

12.

1st.—A full complement of European and Native Officers is not required in the Native Army. The one stands in the way of the other.

2nd.—Four European and a full complement of Native Officers.

3rd.—I have answered this in Clause 2. If it be determined that a full complement of Native Officers shall be maintained, we must proceed in their selection under a new system.

The ranks of Subadar and Jemadar should be open to the Native gentry of India, and a certain number of eligible men, having some stake in the Country, admitted to the Service with the understanding that they make themselves competent to Command. The Native Officers should be held responsible for their Companies in all respects. The Subadar to be the Captain, the Jemadar the Subaltern of the Company. Promotion from the ranks to be continued to those who merit it by being fully competent to Command a Company in all situations, having the payment thereof in all respects as the European Officer does now. Such a system demands selected European Officers with the Regiments and a departure from Regulations; but to make a thoroughly efficient and faithful Native Army, a complete reorganization must take place.

13.

Cadets learn their duty better with their own branch of the Service. Every thing in their instruction depends upon the Officer under whom they are placed.

14.

If fewer European Officers are assigned to Native Corps, the Cadets, as a general rule, should be attached to the European Regiments, and after a time selections made to do duty with the Native Infantry Corps; but the fewer idlers there are with these the better.

15.

I think not; a good Commanding Officer, with an efficient Staff, will keep a Regiment in perfect discipline, and this would more particularly be the case were the Native Officers men of superior character.

The great call made and want for European Officers is not for Regimental duty, but for the Garrison duties and Courts Martial (principally European) and Committees required to report on all manner of Departmental matters, which the Departmental Officers should be held entirely responsible for.

16.

Of the Bombay Army only one Regiment actually mutinied; in a second case, a partial outbreak was speedily put down by the great majority of the Corps; in a third an intended partial rising was reported by the Native Officers, and prevented by disarmament. In these three, the average number of European Officers was present.

17.

By doubling the number of Officers with the European Regiments, and placing the surplus in Battalions of Officers without men. From these selections could be made for the various descriptions of Staff or detached employ. Under the present system the moral force of the European character is destroyed in the Native Army, by a

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

number of idle Officers having no suitable employment, striving by every means to get away from Regimental duty. The situation of talented energetic Officers in such a position is deplorable, for in a well-conducted Native Regiment, more than an hour per diem cannot with utility be devoted to Regimental duty. On occasions of field service, the influx of the Staff absentees is in many instances most perplexing to a Commanding Officer, for years of Civil employ do not qualify an Officer to Command a Company or Battalion in the field.

18.

I think this would prove the ruin of the Army.

19.

Certainly, ambition and hope would die ; such a state of things it would be deplorable even to contemplate.

COLONEL H. P. BURN, SUPERINTENDENT OF ARMY CLOTHING.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers were much greater when I entered the Army in 1824, than they are at present. I have no means of stating the orders by which this change has been brought about, and shall, therefore, leave Commanding Officers of Corps to reply to this question.

2.

The powers of Officers have been diminished, I believe, both in European and Native Corps, in the same proportion as those of Commanding Officers.

3.

The result has been to render the Sepoy more independent of his Commanding Officer, and to loosen the bonds of discipline. Amongst an ignorant and bigoted race, prompt punishment should follow crime, and for this reason I would restore to Commanding Officers the power to inflict heavier punishments without reference to Station and Divisional Commanders. All punishments to be reported to the higher authorities as a check upon their undue severity or their unjust infliction. It will be well, for some time to come, to establish the old and inflexible maxim of Roman discipline that " a good Soldier should dread his Officers far more than the Enemy."

4.

Captains and Officers Commanding Companies have complained much, of late years, of want of power to reward or punish. The Commanding Officer, to be of any real use at the head of a Regiment, must be supreme.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

The Commanders of Companies should, therefore, be taught to look to him for any delegated authority he may find it right and proper to place in their hands.

A Commanding Officer should command through his Captains of Companies. They must not be set aside as mere cyphers. An orderly room should be established in the Lines of each Regiment, and all complaints heard and settled there as in European Regiments. A record of all complaints and the decision on them should be kept by the Adjutant, and a copy of it sent weekly to the Adjutant General of the Army. This would tend to show the state of discipline of the Corps and the fitness of the Commanding Officer in his Judicial capacity, it would also be satisfactory to the Officers Commanding Companies and their Non-Commissioned Officers, as it would ensure a proper hearing of their complaints.

5.

The discipline of a Corps on service depends entirely on the capacity for command of a Commanding Officer. A weak, vacillating or timid Commander will never have a good Corps at his Command. A firm, decided and bold Commander will always have a well-disciplined Corps under him and be well obeyed.

6.

The powers of Commanding Officers should be greatly increased, with the simple check over them of requiring a record and report of all that occurs. The powers of Officers Commanding Companies ought not to be defined by Regulation. Their duties must be defined; but any power that is delegated to them must be granted by their own Commanding Officer.

7.

I would give a Commanding Officer all the powers of a Magistrate, and would also allow him to dismiss men on proof of guilt.

8.

The influence of the European Officer is greatest in time of war.

9.

In time of peace a Native Corps might be reduced to eight hundred men, provided the duties required of it were not too heavy. The war establishment to be one thousand Privates. I don't see any real advantage to be found in employing them beyond the limits of their duties as Soldiers. If called upon to work as day laborers they must be paid for their work, and it would be dear at the lowest price as it would be given unwillingly. Artisans in India are not fitted for Soldiers; if they were, they might be employed in their several trades. An Indian Soldier is naturally lazy and indolent, and follows the profession in order to escape from labor. The real Soldier of India, the Chutree, is, by the rules of his order, exempt from labor.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

In the drilling season, the ordinary drill should include the construction of field works, and no recruit should be dismissed his drill without having gone through a regular course of instruction in the use of the pick-axe and shovel. This would do away with the prejudice against working in the trenches which existed in the old Bengal Army. If a man is employed as an artisan or laborer, he must be excused from all duty. He can't, in a climate like that of India, work by day and watch by night.

10.

The strength of the Bengal Army has never, in time of peace, been so great that it might have been in part employed otherwise than on their Military duties.

11.

Without an increase to the Army it would not have been practicable to employ the Troops, either European or Native, upon public works.

12.

I would apportion the European Officer to Native Troops, as suggested in a former reply. Every Corps intended for active service should have a full complement of European Officers with it and a full complement of selected Native Officers.

13.

Every Cadet, on first arrival in India, should be attached to a European Corps and fully instructed in his Military duties before joining his own Corps. He ought further to be required to continue his studies while attached to his Corps and to pass an examination in the higher duties of his profession and in Hindoostanee before entering on his duties as a Soldier. If Hazareebagh is to be a Station for Europeans, a College for Cadets might be established there, or it might be established at the nearest Hill Station for a European Regiment.

14.

Answered above.

15.

The efficiency of a Regiment is very materially affected by the withdrawal of Officers from the Corps for Staff employ, and what is perhaps the worst effect of the Staff system, every Officer not withdrawn is rendered a discontented and dissatisfied man.

16.

I can't answer this question from experience ; but a reference to the Army List shows that the only Regular Corps that have not been disarmed, the 21st, 31st and Kelat-i-Ghilzie Regiments, have very few Officers with them.

17.

I would meet the demand for Officers for Staff employ by establishing a Staff Corps, to which all Officers employed out of the line of purely Military duty should be removed. On appointment to the Staff, their place to be filled up in Corps in the ordi-

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

nary manner. I would divide the Staff Corps into grades like the other Regiments, and would give promotion in it after fixed periods of service, say—

As Ensign ...	...	...	...	3
Lieutenant ...	...	...	...	8
Captain ...	...	...	...	9
Major ...	...	...	...	5
Lieutenant-Colonel ...	...	...	...	7
Total ...	...	...	...	<u>32</u>

No Officer, under any circumstances, to remain on the effective branch of the Army after forty years' service. Colonels removed to the non-effective branch to receive a non-effective allowance (in lieu of their Colonel's allowance) of £300 (three hundred) a year. This sum to be given in addition to the pension and to be subscribed for by the Officers themselves by the payment of a fee or donation on promotion to each higher grade as in the Military Fund.

The scale might be fixed as follows :—

				Rupees
On promotion to Lieutenant	...	...	...	100
” ” Captain	...	...	...	500
” ” Major	...	...	...	2,500
” ” Lieutenant-Colonel	...	...	...	4,400
” ” Colonel	...	...	...	10,000
Total	...	..	..	<u>17,500</u>

In order to prevent any undue pressure on the finances of the State, the removals during the first few years to be limited in number. This would, in time, relieve the Army “of those old Indian Lieutenant-Colonels” to whom Sir Charles Napier ascribed the inefficiency of the Regular Corps of the Bengal Army as compared with the Irregular Regiments.

18.

I would not cut off the supply of Officers from Regiments for special Staff employ in the several non-Military branches of the public Service. Government has been well served by Officers thus withdrawn from their Regiments, and ought not, without good cause, to relinquish so fruitful a source of supply. By filling up the vacancies in Corps, as I have suggested in reply No. 17, many of the disadvantages of the present system could be got rid of.

19.

If there was no inducement to study such as the prospect of Staff employ holds out, the standard of acquirements amongst

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the Officers of the Army at large would, no doubt, be lowered. Very few, I imagine, at the early age at which Cadets come to India, would study for the sole sake of self-improvement.

COLONEL F. BERKELEY, C. B., COMMANDING H. M.'S 32ND LIGHT INFANTRY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1 to 4.

Can offer no opinion.

5.

Upon the regular supply of food and clothing, the authority and influence of Officers Commanding Companies, and the zeal, energy and common sense of the Commanding Officer.

6 to 11.

Can offer no opinion.

12.

3rd.—A smaller number of European Officers, and a full complement of Native Officers.

13.

I would attach them to European Corps until they have obtained colloquial proficiency in the language and know their drill.

14.

After having received a preliminary training in an European Corps, I would attach them as Supernumeraries to Native Corps until after they had passed the examination of O. H.; they then only should be eligible to be permanently posted to Native Corps, and receive the rank and pay of a Lieutenant, which, I conceive, should be the lowest rank in a Native Regiment.

15.

The efficiency of a Regiment must always be affected, if the establishment of Officers on which the proper working of the Regimental system was originally calculated, is much reduced.

16.

I can offer no opinion.

17.

I would place all the Officers of the Army, Engineers and Artillery, Cavalry and Infantry, on a gradation list according to the dates of their Commissions at the outbreak of the mutiny on a scale of pay to be fixed hereafter. I would then post the Regimental Officers to the respective Corps by seniority; the remainder would be available for Staff and detached duty, and to fill up vacancies. This to be the list by which all rank should be decided, not, however, to the exclusion of promotion for service in the field. An Officer so promoted would take his place in the list according to the date of his promotion.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

18.

No. There should be one or more Staff Colleges, through which alone Staff or detached employment should be obtained. If a Regimental Officer obtained permission to compete as a candidate for admission to the College and passed, he should immediately be removed from his Regiment and replaced from the gradation list. If he failed, he would return to his Regiment. The expenses of the College to be defrayed by Government.

19.

The general standard of acquirements amongst the Officers of the Army at large would be lowered very materially by any measure having a tendency to render Staff employ exclusive, and to debar the Regimental Officers from their chance of obtaining what are looked upon as the prizes of the Army.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL W. MAYHEW, ADJUTANT GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers of Native Corps of the Line have been very much curtailed since Lord William Bentinck's rule over the Bengal Army. A system of centralization of all business in the Department of the Military Secretary to Government has deprived, of real power or influence, every other branch of the Service. These changes have been brought about so gradually, and in so many different ways, that the process cannot easily be traced ; but the result is very manifest.

2.

The same cause has operated to the like effect throughout the Service.

3.

The diminution of power and influence of Commanding Officers has had a ruinous effect on the Native Soldiery. The Sepoy used to look up to his "Colonel" as the source of all reward and punishment, and as the only medium he had of communicating with the Government, of which he knew nothing, nor it of him, whereas he is now told that his Commander is unable to decide on most questions affecting his rights, and that all he can do is to refer them to that unknown and remote power which he does not understand, but dreads.

4.

Officers Commanding Companies have shared, in a very great measure, with their Commanding Officers in the loss of influence over their men ; attention to their wants, and punctuality in bringing forward their claims, still seems to many Captains the affection of their men ; but the necessity of appealing to a distant power, and

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

the uncertainty of the result, go very far to undermine their confidence in the only European they have to depend upon, and whose verdict they would gladly look up to as their law.

5.

The discipline of a Corps on service and everywhere depends on the authority and personal influence of its Officers, and the more they can exert both, the better will a Corps behave, whether in quarters or in the field. A Soldier naturally looks to his Captain first, and to his Colonel afterwards, to recognise any good conduct he may have displayed. He is necessarily unknown to every other authority, and can look for no reward at its hands.

6.

The powers of all British Officers, with whom the Native Soldiery come in daily contact, should be increased considerably, so as to show that the Government which both serve has confidence in those it has placed in immediate authority over its Native Military subjects.

7.

Discipline will very much be improved if the Articles of War be carried out strictly, and unchecked by the innumerable provisions which have, of late years, rendered them rather nominal than real. A more rapid distribution of justice will also tend vastly to infuse vigour into the system.

8.

The influence of an Officer over his men is created in peace time for exercise in war. Native Soldiers have no confidence in Officers of whom they know nothing, and to whom they are not personally attached, and to whom they cannot look up for support on the score of long association. Mere dash will seldom induce a Sepoy to follow an unknown leader into danger.

9 to 11.

I have before given as my opinion that the Native Officer should be reorganized on the Irregular system, and commanded by a few carefully selected Officers, capable of inspiring their men with confidence, and respect for the European character and authority, and to whom they could confidently look for speedy and undisputed settlement of their rights and deserts. Hitherto Corps of the Line have been ruined in discipline by the constant detachment of men in small bodies from Head Quarters for the innumerable duties for which Police Corps are alone adapted. They have consequently had, at most Stations, but little leisure for other employment, and I very much doubt whether it would have been practicable to employ them on public works. The same class of men enlisted heretofore readily in the Corps of Sappers and Miners and did not feel themselves lowered in general estimation by manual labor; but the system of the Service generally had become so opposed to such employment, that it would have been difficult to

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

introduce it. To work with the axe and spade should be one of the stipulations made with every Soldier admitted to the Service henceforth ; he has shown during the war how ably he can entrench against us.

12.

Answered before fully.

13 & 14.

All young Officers should serve the first year or two with an European Corps, and be perfectly instructed in drill ; they might then join a Native Corps, if they showed an aptitude for the Native languages and characteristics joined with temper and judgment.

15.

The quality, rather than the number, of the Officers present with a Native Corps has made it good or bad for the time being, and the reputation of a Regiment very generally changes with its Officers ; its best ones should not, therefore, be taken away for Staff employment.

16.

During the late revolt the best and most appreciated Officers have been killed first, to put a stop at once to all influence they might exert over the better disposed Soldiers ; but Corps with many and few Officers have mutinied equally.

17 to 19.

I have explained before how Officers can be made available for Staff employment, by withdrawing them from the Native Corps of the Line, on the strength of which they will be borne merely for the sake of general promotion on the seniority system. This arrangement would, at the same time, facilitate a change from Staff to Regimental duty, and *vice versa* without materially interfering with the efficiency of a Corps, or checking the very natural ambition of every Officer to be brought on the Staff of the Army after a fair period of Regimental duty ; and thus also would the standard of acquirements be kept up throughout the Service.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL J. D. MACPHERSON, OFFICIATING QUARTER MASTER GENERAL OF THE ARMY.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Commanding Officers over their men have been both increased and decreased within the last thirty years. I am unable to quote the precise orders, measures, or changes ; but I may state, in general terms, that in former days a Commanding Officer both punished and rewarded to a greater extent than he can do now. His powers of punishing were first decreased by the partial and then by the total abolition of corporal punishment—a measure which may be said to have left him without any adequate

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

means of enforcing discipline. To amend this, in some measure, he was, within the last few years, empowered to confine offenders for short periods, and flogging was reintroduced. Formerly he had the power of stopping a Sepoy's furlough if he disapproved of the man's conduct, if the man were in debt, &c. This obtains no longer, and there can be no doubt but that the attempts made to rule and govern the Sepoy as if he were a British Soldier have caused a great deal of hurtful and unnecessary interference with the Commanding Officer's authority, even in trivial matters. A Sepoy had his furlough stopped because he was in debt, and his creditors objected; his character was also indifferent;—he petitioned against this, and it was ruled in the department of the Judge Advocate that the Commanding Officer was not justified in stopping a mere debtor's leave. Very good law, but a very bad way of ruling a Sepoy.

2.

The general tendency of every measure or order has been to lessen the powers and influence of Commanding Officers of Native Corps over their men.

3.

The diminution of the powers of the European Officer has, of necessity, told against discipline. As a rule, the Bengal Sepoy will shirk every duty he can contrive to avoid. Against this the European Officer has ever to contend, and to diminish his powers could, therefore, have only one result.

4.

The influence of Captains or Officers in charge of Companies has depended more upon individual character than any thing else, for any real power they can hardly be said ever to have possessed.

5.

In a Native Corps, undoubtedly upon the European Regimental Officers or rather upon the Commanding Officer.

6.

I assume that for the future European Officers will be specially selected to serve with Native Corps with reference solely to fitness and qualifications.

In that case the powers of a Commanding Officer so selected should be greatly increased, as also under his orders those of his European Officers. He or his Officers under his orders should exercise summary jurisdiction in all cases of minor crime or breach of discipline, recourse being had to General Courts Martial only where grave offences have been committed.

7.

The Native Soldier should be taught to look to his Commanding Officer, and to him alone, as his lord or master. Minor Courts Martial should be abolished, and the Commanding Officer's authority should be interfered with as little as possible. His proceedings, or summary trials of offenders, must, of course, however, be subject to revision. It is an axiom "that every man is the better of being looked after."

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

8.

In war. He is then thrown more among his men, and has greater opportunities of making his influence felt.

9.

I would fix the strength of each Native Regiment at 640 Privates or eight Companies of 80 men each. They should all be enlisted as Pioneers, and required to labor as such when not required for purely Military duties. I would never have them idle if I could help it.

10.

Yes; I think so, particularly at the larger Military Stations.

11.

Undoubtedly, had they not been in a state of chronic mutiny and certain to resist any attempt to make them labor. Colonel J. S. Hodgson, than whom no Officer was better acquainted with the Sepoy, published a scheme (*See his Military Musings*) for the employment of the Native Army on public works, and it is quite possible that some few individual Officers might have succeeded in carrying it out; but the general conclusion is, I think, that it would have caused an outbreak.

12.

I would adhere to the Irregular system. A small number of European Officers (who should be specially selected) and a full complement of Native Officers, with an increase to the number of their grades. I would have Naib Jemadars and Naib Subadars, as well as Jemadars and Subadars. A Subadar has, at present, no further advancement to look for, and no motive for further exertion. This I would provide for by multiplying the grades, as above, in the Commissioned ranks, by raising the higher salaries and making the Service more valuable. The Hyderabad Contingent Cavalry, (rank Mussulmen all of them, I am told,) have been comparatively faithful during the rebellion. Their loyalty may be accounted for by the fact of their assamees being valued at Rupees 1,300.

13.

To European Corps.

14.

With the professional knowledge they would acquire in European Regiments, and a knowledge of the languages, they would not necessarily require any further special training. Some of our best Irregular Officers have been drawn from our European Regiments;—Colonel Edwardes, C. B., and the late Major Hodson, Major Daly, and others.

15.

Undoubtedly under the old system, because the best Officers of the Native Regiments were generally withdrawn, and the Native Officers were generally useless, or worse than useless.

16.

There has, I believe, been no difference whatever.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

17.

This will, I conceive, mainly depend upon the future organization of the Army. Many Officers advocate a Staff Corps. Our European Regiments do not, however, appear to have suffered materially from the withdrawal of Officers for Staff and detached employ.

18 & 19.

To deprive a man of any inducement to improve himself could never tend to his efficiency either as a Regimental Officer or any thing else, and any such measure must militate more or less against the general standard of acquirements amongst the Officers of the Army.

No. 701.

FROM

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL CUTHBERT DAVIDSON,
Resident at Hyderabad,

To

COLONEL H. M. DURAND, C. B.,
On Special duty with the Governor General,

ALLAHABAD.

Hyderabad Residency, 8th July 1858.

SIR,

IN transmitting the replies to the several queries contained in Paper No. 4, headed European Officers, I avail myself of your invitation to make a few general observations on the queries numbered 8 to 19, to which specific answers are not required to be entered.

1. I consider that the influence of a good and efficient European Officer is felt equally in time of peace and war.

2. A Native Regiment should never be numerically stronger than 800 men with a Reserve Company when on foreign service. I would employ the Native Army in every manner in which Soldiers are ordinarily used, and would never listen to excuses of caste or any thing of a similar nature when a Soldier's duty was to be performed. It only requires a little time and energy to get rid of a system of petting and persuasion which has been the ruin of one of the Native Armies.

3. The Hyderabad Contingent has been numerically small for the many Military duties required of it, so that it could hardly be employed on public works. So employing the Soldier is most legitimate, and with proper working money paid, any amount of labor might be obtained. The work should be paid for by the piece, and not by daily hire.

4. Native Corps have fought well both with a full complement and with a small number of European Officers, so there is no criterion to judge from. Then again the Native Troops have fought at times most devotedly under their Native Commissioned Officers alone. Inefficiency and decrepitude should be got rid of, and the Native Commissioned Officers selected in proportionate numbers from different castes. The grade will then be beneficial to the Native Army; indeed I doubt whether with any safety they could be dispensed with. For good and evil they have great influence with their men, although they often now-a-days deny it.

5. I would attach Cadets, in the first instance, to European Corps.

6. If a smaller number of Europeans are to be attached to Native Corps, they must be selected for their smartness, efficiency and knowledge of the Native character. The paucity of European Officers with a Regiment of Natives does not, in my opinion, cause its inefficiency, provided the Commanding Officer is vested with authority to cause the men under his Command to look to him for their advancement or degradation.

7. The system that has crept into the Native Army of Judge Advocates commenting on sentences of Courts Martial strictly legal, objecting to their severity, and in many instances causing them to be annulled, although confirmed by the Commanding Officer, operates most detrimentally on the discipline of Regiments. It is obvious that the character of the individual, or the motive by which a Commanding Officer may be induced to give effect to a sentence apparently severe for the specified offence, cannot be arrived at from the mere perusal of the proceedings.

8. All the acts of a Commanding Officer are brought before the Commander-in-Chief, and if the exercise of the full power with which he should be invested are injudiciously exercised, his removal from Command would be preferable to lowering his authority in the eyes of the men.

9. The employment of Regimental Officers on Staff duties enables Government to have a wide selection, and offers an honorable ambition for exertion on the part of the Officers. I think the desire to fit themselves generally for any employment under Government would vanish if Officers knew they had no hopes of any other occupation than Regimental duty. Such a Regulation would, therefore, necessarily narrow and confine the studies and exertions of every Officer in the Army.

I have the honor to be, &c.,

CUTHBERT DAVIDSON,

Resident.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1. No alteration has taken place.
2. No.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

3.

No answer required.

5.

The men should look to their immediate Commanding Officer ; too much interference from Head Quarters lessens the Commanding Officer in the estimation of the men.

6.

The power should be increased.

7.

The Commanding Officer should have the power of summarily dismissing bad characters ; his recommendations for promotion to higher grades should be attended to, and he should be invested with authority to reduce Non-Commissioned Officers to the ranks for misconduct.

To queries 8 to 19. *Vide* observations in transmitting letter, No. 701, dated 8th July 1858.

MAJOR G. W. WILLIAMS, SUPERINTENDENT OF POLICE BATTALIONS,
N. W. P.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

They have been greatly diminished, especially with regard to promotions and punishments.

2.

Regarding European Corps I know nothing.

3.

Sepoys formerly looked up with regard to their Commanding Officers, knowing that with them rested the power to reward and punish. A Native considers this to be true power, and finding their Officers did not possess it, regarded them with indifference.

4.

Officers Commanding or in charge of Companies, if men of character, had naturally some influence with their men, but little or no power over them.

5.

On the authority of the Commanding Officer undoubtedly, whose power, with certain limitations, should be paramount, for with Natives prompt and present adjudication has ten-fold more of effect than an uncertain and distant future.

6.

Commanding Officers should be entrusted with full powers, the abuse of which should cause removal from the Command. I would

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

have no Officers Commanding Companies ; the Commanding Officer should rule the whole.

7.

The restoration of flogging, which is positively necessary. My experience proves the far greater efficiency of this mode of punishment in subduing crime than any other.

8.

Greatest in times of war and hardship ; peace and idleness (generally speaking) tend to relax discipline and lessen the authority of the Officers over their men, whereas the exigencies of war constantly calling forth the exercise of authority on the one hand, and obedience on the other, confirms the men in habits of subordination.

9.

I premise that the Native Army are merely to perform the duties that the European Army cannot undertake, and are not to be frittered away, as formerly, in the performance of Civil duties, therefore I would limit them to the lowest number possible for the performance of the duties required of them. The Military Police, with fewer Men and Officers, have done double the amount of work the Native Army formerly accomplished.

10.

I imagined it was generally in excess, first from the paucity of European Troops, and then from a large portion of the Army being employed in Civil duties, such as guarding Cutcherries, Jails and Treasuries, furnishing Escorts, &c., the allowance that had to be made for the large number yearly absent on furlough. The Military Police now relieve them of all Civil duty and maintain the public tranquillity of their respective Districts.

11.

I would say yes, make it one of the stipulations of enlistment. The Military Police I would endeavour to keep fully employed, both Officers and Men, as idleness leads to mischief.

12.

I would Officer the Native Regiments as Irregular Corps.

13.

I would never attach Cadets to a Native Corps ; they ought to learn their duty first with European.

14.

Let them be first attached to European Corps, there having learned the usual routine of Military duty, select from amongst them men of ability, tact and good sound judgment, coupled with energy of habits and decision of character, all of which is needed to manage wisely and well a Native Regiment, the Command of which should be held out as an inducement to and reward for general efficiency in their profession.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

15.

My opinion has ever been that it was not by the number, but character of Officers, that the efficiency of a Regiment was affected, although, to some extent, discipline may have been injured by the removal of those drawn for Staff employ.

For as all looked forward to this and endeavoured to the utmost to obtain it, those who failed suffered their zeal and energy to languish, and from disappointment in the attainment of their wishes acquired a distaste for Regimental duty.

16.

The number of European Officers could make no difference in a Regiment inclined to mutiny. The Army was dissatisfied on the cartridge question. A mutiny breaking out in a large Station unpunished, the prevalent report spread like wild-fire that the British Government was at an end; our apparent defenceless state, the reports of unbounded wealth gained by the mutinous Regiments, caused the whole of the Bengal Army to follow the example of the Corps at Meerut.

17.

A Staff Corps for all Civil, Political and Police appointments, if formed of Officers already in the Service, would absorb a large amount certainly, and in all probability many others would wish to resign, yet on the proposed reduced scale of Officers for each Regiment, there would still, I imagine, remain sufficient for present demands, and perhaps an arrangement for granting separate Cadetships for Staff and Regimental vacancies for the future, would be the most advisable plan.

18.

Certainly.

19.

Any Officer who loves his profession would seek to qualify himself for the higher positions attainable in it; those who only strive to excel in hopes of gaining Staff employ would not much benefit the State either in that position or with their Regiment.

OUDE COMMITTEE.

BENGAL ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

Gradually diminished since 1800.

2.

Diminished.

3.

The mutiny probably owes much of its extent and virulence to the want of power on the part of the Commanding Officer to keep a firm hand over his men.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

4. The loss of our Army no doubt ranks this amongst other reasons for that loss.
5. Does and should always depend upon Commanding Officers.
6. Increased *ad libitum*.
7. Judgment in selecting Commanding Officers, and full powers given to those selections, including flogging.
8. In war.
9. Working the men at any necessary Military public work under their own Officers exclusively, and finding work for them, never allowing them to idle in time of peace, keeping them of minimum strength and small Companies, and working them well.
10. Certainly.
11. Certainly, but under their own Officers.
12. No, the irregular system is the best.
- 2.—No.
- 3.—Yes.
13. No Cadets in India ; train in England, or with European Corps in India.
14. Selected from full European Regiments.
15. Certainly under present system.
16. No difference, if there is a preference ; the Irregulars with few Officers mutinied last.
17. Have Civil employ Officers formed into a Staff Corps.
18. No, should be struck off when they leave for Civil employ.
19. Yes.

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR M. CUBBON, K. C. B., COMMISSIONER OF MYSORE
AND COORG.

Before answering these questions I would respectfully beg attention to the accompanying printed Copy of Sir Henry Russell's evidence before a Select Committee of the House of Commons in 1832, because it gives the clearest, and, with one mistake, corrected at the foot of the 4th page, the most accurate account (however incredible some of the particulars may appear) I have seen of the progress of the Native Troops on the Madras Establishment from a state of unsuspecting fidelity to that of general dissatisfaction and partial mutiny, and because in my opinion it seems to be in the highest degree desirable to bring the Madras Army back, as near as possible, to the condition in which it stood in the beginning of the present century, just before the changes Sir Henry adverts to were introduced.

M. CUBBON, *Lieut.-General,*
Commissioner of Mysore and Coorg.

SIR HENRY RUSSELL'S EVIDENCE

BEFORE A

SELECT COMMITTEE OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS.

Jovis, 19o die Aprilis, 1832.

THE RIGHT HON. SIR JOHN BYNG, IN THE CHAIR.

HENRY RUSSELL, ESQ., CALLED IN AND EXAMINED.

2227. You have been some time in India?—I have been 23 years in India.
2228. At what Presidency?—I belonged to the Bengal Presidency; but I was chiefly employed in a political situation within the limits of the Madras Army.
2229. When did you leave India?—In the year 1820.
2230. What were the situations you held?—I was originally an Assistant to the Resident at Hyderabad; and I afterwards myself held the situation of Resident for 11 years.
2231. It appears that in your evidence before the Political Sub-Committee, you have said that the greatest danger we have to apprehend in India is from our Native Army; the Committee are desirous to understand from you more particularly your reasons

for so thinking?—My reasons for thinking that the greatest danger we have to apprehend in India is from our Native Army are, that our Military Force is the sole and exclusive tenure by which we hold the Government, and that the fidelity of the Troops of whom that Force is composed is necessarily precarious; they are foreigners and mercenaries; they are attached to a Government that pays them well and treats them kindly, and they will generally follow wherever their Officers will lead them; but we have no hold upon them, through either national honour or national prejudices, and cannot expect from them what we do from English Soldiers fighting for English objects. They are peculiarly susceptible of being practised upon, and may be induced, either by our own mismanagement, or by the artifices of designing persons, to turn against us those very arms which now constitute our only strength.

2232. Will you state what is the particular danger you apprehend, and whether it is increased by any circumstances in our treatment or management of the Native Force?—We have already had two striking instances to show the nature of that danger in the agitation among the Sepoys in 1806, of which the massacre at Vellore was the principal feature, and in the insubordination of the European Officers in 1809. The system which has been pursued towards both those branches of our Army has been essentially erroneous: their vital importance, to the very existence of our power, has not been sufficiently considered. Towards the European Officers a short-sighted system of economy has been prosecuted, injurious in the first instance to the Army, and in its consequences to the Government; and with respect to the Sepoys, much of that care which ought to have been bestowed on securing their attachment, and improving the substance of their efficiency, has been wasted in a frivolous, vexatious attention to outward forms. My personal knowledge is chiefly confined to the Troops of the Madras Presidency. When I first went to Hyderabad, 30 years ago, there were at that Station six Battalions of Infantry and a Regiment of Cavalry. The Command of those Corps was, at that time, among the best situations that an Officer could hold, and it was consequently held by the best Officers. An Officer Commanding a Corps was then a person of importance; he had his Markets, his Commissariat, his Artificers, and followers of every description attached to his immediate Corps. His allowances were considerable, and enabled him to exercise hospitality towards his Officers, and to be liberal to his men. The first of those allowances that was taken away was, I believe, the bazar allowance, consisting of a duty levied on spirituous liquors, tobacco and other intoxicating drugs. This duty, in the General Bazar, which belong to the Officer Commanding the whole Force, produced near £5,000 a year; and in the Battalion Bazars, which belonged to the Commanding Officers of Corps, about £1,000. The reduction of this allowance was followed by that of the Tent contract, and of others of smaller amount, of which I cannot now recollect the particulars, and by degrees the advantages of a Command were reduced so low, that no Officer would take the Command of a Corps, whose character or pretensions enabled him to procure any other situation. It was in these reductions that the discontent of the Army first originated; and in 1803, when the Mahratta War began, that feeling was so strong, that I have no doubt if it had not been diverted by active employment, the same insubordination which showed itself in 1809 would have broken out at that time. The feeling began among the European Officers. What may be the case in an European Army I cannot say; but in an Indian Army it is impossible that discontent can prevail in any great degree, and for any length of time among the Officers, without ultimately producing its effect upon the men, though not designedly imparted, it must imperceptibly descend to them. The Commanding Officers had then lost much of the weight and importance they before enjoyed; they were no longer able to

keep up the same appearance, or exercise the same liberality towards their men, and were, consequently, no longer objects of the same consideration in their eyes. A spirit of reciprocal and general dissatisfaction grew up, which loosened the ties that bound the different ranks to one another, as well as to the Government. From the beginning of the Mahratta War, the Troops were for three years under canvas, they were exposed to unusual hardships, and when they returned to their Cantonments, instead of being allowed any indulgence or repose, they were teased and worried with a new, and I must say, a puerile system, which altered everything they had been accustomed to. Their drill was changed, their dress was changed, all the Regulations that governed them were changed; everything was to be done in a new and smarter way; and the old Sepoys, who had grown grey in the Service, had again to undergo the same process that they had passed through when they were recruits. The details of the Army had, for the first time in India, fallen into the hands of a school who thought that everything depended on show, and that no sacrifice was too great for the attainment of outward smartness and uniformity. A single specimen of the new orders that were issued at Hyderabad will enable the Committee to estimate the character of the whole Code. When any Sepoy on guard wanted to retire for a particular purpose, he was to be detained until a certain number had the same occasion, and they were then to be marched down under a Naick or Corporal, that even the calls of nature might be answered in Military order. They were forbidden to wear their marks of caste on parade; their whiskers were to be trimmed in an uniform manner; a leathern cap* was to be substituted for the turban they had previously worn; and there was no end to the silly compliances that were required of them. The disgust which such a system as this could not fail to excite is manifest. If any of the alterations enjoined were really worth the importance that was attached to them, they might have been accomplished, if the attempt had been made at any other time, or even at that time, with temper and discretion: but it was the fashion of the day to enforce everything with rigour, and the Sepoys were already in a frame of mind ill-suited to bear the trials they were exposed to. Advantage was no doubt taken by designing persons, who instilled suspicions into the Sepoys that our real intentions went far beyond their dress. They fancied that the prick and brush suspended from their belt bore some resemblance to the cross. The tight drawers reaching to the knee, which they had worn for years, were all at once suspected to be breeches; and the leathern cap was only a step in the process of changing the turban for the hat. Unhappily, we seemed to do everything to give a colour to those suspicions; and in spite of various warnings, we persisted in a course of measures by which we spread a general belief among the Sepoys that we intended to compel them to become Christians, and by which they were at length irritated to desperation. It was remarked that the fakeers, a class of religious mendicants, who are very numerous in India, and frequent the Stations of the Army in particular, were at this time unusually active throughout the Country. Some were actuated by religious bigotry, and some, no doubt, were employed by our political enemies, and it was afterwards ascertained that they had been busy in inflaming the alarm and discontent of the Sepoys, and spreading the disaffection from one Station to another. At Vellore, where only any extreme violence was perpetrated, the Sepoys were instigated by some of the members of Tippoo's family, who resided there, but they only took advantage of the disaffection; they did not create it; the feeling was universal. It showed itself at the same time at Hyderabad, and at various different and distant Stations; and if immediate steps had not been taken to rescind the obnoxious orders, and allay the general irritation, the whole Presidency would have

* Not a cap, but a new pattern turban and leather cockade — M. C.

partaken of the same calamity that happened at Vellore. It is neither easy, nor is it important, to distinguish the particular incident that produced the explosion. Among the variety of causes that were in action, any single one might have been inadequate to the effect. Discontent and disaffection had been growing for a length of time; by degrees the mine was charged, and any accidental spark was sufficient to inflame the mass.

2233. Will you state whether, in your estimation, the danger that you apprehend is greater or less now than at former periods?—Since that time our treatment of the Sepoys has been more judicious; indeed, I am not aware of anything in our present mode of treating them that requires to be changed. Our danger, I apprehend, is greater now than it was before 1806, inasmuch as it would be more easy to revive the same alarm in the minds of the Sepoys than if it had never before prevailed; and the sphere of it is enlarged with every extension of our Native Army. During our Wars with Hyder Ally, our Sepoys, in addition to other serious privations, were, I believe, a year and a half in arrear of pay. I doubt whether such an arrear now would not produce an insurrection.

2234. Does this danger, in your opinion, arise from feelings peculiar to the Army, or common to them with other Natives; and does it arise more from the Hindoos or from the Moslems?—To a certain extent, the feelings from which our danger arises are common to the Natives of every part of India, but they prevail more among the Mahomedans than the Hindoos, and more among the Madras than among the Bengal Sepoys. The Mahomedans are much more under the influence of religious fanaticism than the Hindoos, and are constitutionally of a more eager and irritable temper. The Northern tribes, from which the Bengal Sepoys are chiefly drawn, are both morally and physically, a much finer race than that from which the Madras Army is recruited. The Bengal Sepoys are born Soldiers, the Madras Sepoys are taught to be so; and considering what they are in their original condition, it is surprising what their Officers contrive to make of them. Among the Bengal Sepoys, Hindoos of the better class greatly preponderate. Among the Madras Sepoys, there is a much larger proportion of Mahomedans and Hindoos of the lower castes. Mutinies have been of less frequent occurrence among the Bengal than among the Madras Sepoys; and even when they have occurred they have been attended with less acrimony and violence.

2235. Can you state whether any symptoms or tendency to this state of things now appear or have lately appeared?—I am not aware that there is any peculiar indication of danger at the present time, or that there is any greater reason to apprehend it now than there must be at all times while we are obliged to rely on one part of the population for the means of keeping the remainder in subjection.

2236. In what way do you think that the danger, such as it is, can best be warded off?—The best means of warding off the danger consist, I apprehend, in a steady, uniform, conciliatory treatment both of the European Officers and of the Native Soldiers. Towards the European Officers, the great error that has been committed has been the reduction to so very low a scale of the allowances attached to the actual Command of a Corps. The allowances of the inferior ranks are necessarily of minor importance. A junior Officer is satisfied if he can live creditably on his pay; and as long as the allowances of the Commanding Officer are liberal, every Subaltern feels his interest in them, and knows that, if he lives, he will enjoy them in his turn. I have always thought, and

I still think, that it is an object of first-rate importance, in the treatment of the Army, to make the post of the Command of a Corps so advantageous in point of emolument as to render the best Officers in the Service willing and anxious to hold it. In our treatment of the Native Soldiers we ought, above all things, to avoid the most remote appearance of a desire to interfere with their religious customs or prejudices, and to hold out to them as many objects of ambition as we can with safety. Horse and palanquin allowances; situations such as that of Aide-de-Camp to General Officers; medals, grants of land, honorary distinctions and privileges of every kind are eminently useful. They are peculiarly gratifying to the Natives themselves, and can be attended with no inconvenience to us.

2237. Will you state to the Committee, with reference again to your evidence before the Political Sub-Committee, why you think the Native Officers are discontented?—The chief cause of the discontent which I think prevails among the Native Officers is, that when once they have attained the rank of Soubahdar, they have, generally speaking, nothing more to look to; having got all that they can get, they have no further inducement to exert themselves; they become first indolent, and then dissatisfied. There ought, as long as possible, to be some higher object kept in their view, to which, by diligence and fidelity, they may still attain. Honorary distinctions, such as I have just spoken of, are one obvious method of attaching them to the Service. The employing them more extensively in Military Command would perhaps have more effect in this way than any other measure. At present no Native can reach such a rank in our Army as will admit of his commanding an English Serjeant. But how far it may be safe to do this is a critical question, and requires most careful consideration. Though it promises advantage, it also threatens danger. There was a Native Officer on the Madras Establishment of the name of Mohammud Yoosuf, who was entrusted, in our early operations, with a considerable independent Command, of which he discharged the duties with judgment and fidelity; and if we raise the Natives to higher offices in the Civil Department it will be difficult to maintain the exclusion of them in the Army. But in this as in every other attempt to enlarge the field for the employment of the Natives, it must be remembered, that although they are calculated to improve their condition, they are so many steps towards the extinction of our own authority. If we both give the Natives power, and teach them how to use it, they will not much longer submit to our control. On this subject there is a preliminary consideration, which I am afraid we overlook. In what character, and for what purpose do we appear in India? If we are to act as mere philanthropists, and to consider only how we can best improve the moral and political condition of the Indian population, we may govern them as we would govern one another, and the sooner we can make them wise enough and strong enough to expel us from the Country, the greater will have been our success. If we go as subjects of England, for the extension of English power and the improvement of English interests, a different course must be pursued. We may govern them as kindly as we can; it is our interest as well as our duty to do so; but we must retain all substantial power in our own hands, and must remember that, be our objects what they may, the Natives of India can never stand upon the same level with ourselves; they must be either above us or below us.

2238. You seem to lament that the allowances of the European Officers in the Native Corps should have been diminished, and you mention the reduction of the bazar allowance; do you, upon the whole, think it would have been desirable to continue that allowance?—I do, I confine my observation exclusively to the Officers in the actual Com-

mand of Corps ; and though I have no doubt that the reduction of the bazar allowance, of the tent contract, and of other emoluments enjoyed by the Army, was supported by specious reasons, and had, in each case, its specific advantages at the time, I think that the ultimate consequences were not sufficiently considered, and that the attachment of the European Officers has been weakened and the efficiency of the Army impaired, by measures directed exclusively to economy.

2239. Did not the profit derived from the bazar arise from the consumption of spirits and opium and intoxicating drugs ?—It did, and so it does at present ; but the profit does not now go to the Officers.

2240. To what purpose does the money now go ?—To the Government. It passed through an intermediate process : in the first instance, it was thrown into a general fund called the bazar fund, of which the produce was divided periodically among Officers of a certain rank throughout the Army, but it was perfectly understood at the time that that was only a prefatory measure to a resumption of the duty by the Government themselves ; and accordingly, at the expiration of I think about two years, it was resumed, and is now received by the Government.

2241. While the profit of the bazar was received by the Commanding Officers of Corps, must not that have operated as an inducement with them to encourage the consumption of spirits and opium, and other drugs of that sort ?—In point of fact, I think it did not. I do not believe that drunkenness was at all more prevalent than it has been since. One strong reason why such should not be the case, was, that the conduct of the Commanding Officer was open to the inspection of the whole body of Officers collectively ; and such an abuse would not have been suffered by them to prevail to any extent.

2242. Had you any opportunity of observing the state of any Military body while the Commanding Officer received the bazar allowance ?—I lived as the only Civil Servant at a very large Military Station for about three years while that allowance prevailed.

2243. Did you reside there after it ceased ?—I did.

2244. Did you observe any difference ?—None whatever.

2245. Since when have you observed that the Command of a Native Corps has ceased to be an object of ambition with the European Officers ?—If it were necessary to draw any line, I should say that the Mahratta war, the operations connected with which lasted from 1803 to 1806, may be considered as the period of the alteration.

2246. Do you attribute the disinclination to be satisfied with the Command of a Corps to the reduction of allowances ?—Principally.

2247. Have not the Staff situations to which Officers in the Army are eligible very much increased in number ?—They have, I believe, in some degree ; but those situations, in point of value, are not to be put in competition with what the Command of a Corps formerly was.

2248. At present are not some of the Staff situations so advantageous as to make Officers prefer them to the Command of a Corps?—The reason of the preference I should rather say is, that the Command of a Corps is so little advantageous. There is no great advantage attached to the Staff situations. Military Officers, in some cases, hold political situations; that, for instance, of Resident at Native Courts, of which the allowances are considerable; but the Military Staff situations are attended with very little emolument.

2249. You have spoken of grants of land to Native Soldiers, have you ever observed that practice prevailing in any part of India?—I have never myself been in the part of India where it has prevailed, but I have understood that in the upper parts of Bengal it was usual formerly, and perhaps still is, to make grants of land to the Native Officers and Sepoys, instead of pensioning them at the expiration of a certain period of service; and I have been told that many prosperous villages were formed of the retired Sepoys who had had land so allotted to them.

2250. Should you think it desirable to adopt any such practice more extensively?—I think it is one of the measures that might be adopted with advantage. The great object is to give the Native Soldier something ulterior to look to, and to make him feel that he has something to lose if he behaves ill.

2251. Then you would make those grants of land in some degree dependent upon the good behaviour of the Native Soldiers?—Unquestionably.

2252. From your knowledge of the Presidency of Madras, do you think there would be any difficulty in allotting portions of land for such a purpose?—I should think none whatever. I should think there are many parts of the Territory dependent upon the Madras Presidency, where such a practice might be introduced with advantage.

2253. In the case you have mentioned, were the grants of land given to the Soldiers as well as to the Native Officers?—They are given to all persons having served for a certain length of time, and having maintained a certain character, the grant varying in value according to the rank that the individual may have attained before his retiring from the Service.

MADRAS ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

The powers of Officers Commanding Regiments and Companies began to be abridged with the introduction of the new system of discipline shortly after my arrival in India, greatly to the prejudice of subordination and respect for the European Officers on the part of the Native Troops. To my personal knowledge, Officers Commanding have been threatened by their men with a letter to the Adjutant General, and I know an instance of a Native Officer just returned from Madras causing it to be believed throughout the Regiment and Station, that his influence with the Adjutant

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

General had alone prevented the removal of his Major from the Command. The effect of this state of things on the temper of the Army may easily be supposed. But the most serious blow given to the cause of discipline was the establishment, in 1809, of a direct under-hand correspondence between the Adjutant General's Office and the Sepoys, who were thus encouraged to disregard their Officers and look up to Head Quarters only. This extreme system was discountenanced some years ago, when Sir Robert Vivian became Adjutant General, and much has been done since to weaken the evil. But however desirous the present Commander-in-Chief and the Head Quarters Staff may be to put an end to it, years must yet elapse before its demoralizing effects will cease to be felt throughout the Army. I do not allude to any particular orders, but to the general change in the system. In the words of Sir Henry Russell—"Their drill was changed, their dress was changed, all the Regulations that governed them were changed; everything was to be done in a new and smarter way, and the old Sepoys, who had grown grey in the Service, had again to undergo the same process that they had passed through when they were recruits. The details of the Army had, for the first time in India, fallen into the hands of a school who thought that everything depended on show, and that no sacrifice was too great for the attainment of outward smartness and uniformity."

2. Answered above.
3. Ditto ditto.
4. Ditto ditto.
5. Unquestionably upon the influence and authority of Officers Commanding Companies and the Regiment. The less interference on the part of Head Quarters the better, excepting in discountenancing unnecessary drill and duty.
6. Certainly, increased, and greatly increased.
7. I know of no measures so well calculated to improve the subordination and loyalty of the Native Troops as by restoring to Officers Commanding Companies and Regiments, the power which they formerly possessed, by abandoning the unavailing attempt to bring them up to the European standard of smartness in appearance and parade drill, by giving them lighter and less harassing work, and not exposing them to the expences and the suffering inseparable from frequent movement.
8. I am not aware that any difference exists in this respect.

ANSWERS.

QUESTIONS.

9.

The strength of Regiments would, of course, be regulated by the public exigencies : at present the question is not whether sufficient occupation can be found for the Native Troops, but whether Native Troops can be found for the various duties required of them.

10.

Never in my time.

11.

I am not aware that any inconvenience has practically arisen from the present organization of the Madras Army with regard to the establishment of European and Native Officers ; the complement of the former appears to have been fixed to meet the general requirements of the Service for Civil and Staff, as well as for Regimental duty. To abolish the Native Officers, would destroy the prospects and the temper of the whole Army.

13.

I think it desirable that the Cadets should be attached to a European Corps, or some institution ; and be well grounded in Military duties before they join Native Regiments.

15.

Not in the least, because Native Troops require little superintendence in Garrison, and in time of war, the Staff would generally be available for Regimental duty.

16.

I have not observed any difference in this respect.

17.

As is at present.

18.

I think the effect would be most injurious ; the lives of the ablest young Officers would be rendered almost objectless ; they would sink into indolence and vicious habits, and thus lose the respect of their men ; whereas, at present, the men of a Native Corps take great interest in the successful career of an Officer of the Regiment who has distinguished himself on the Staff or in Civil employment, and they speak of him with pride as belonging to them. The severance of kindly sympathy between the men of a Native Regiment and the Officers on detached employment is by no means so wide as is generally supposed.

19.

Certainly it would.

H. B. E. FRERE, ESQUIRE, COMMISSIONER IN SCINDE.

BOMBAY ARMY.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

1.

During the 24 years for which I have known many portions of the Bombay Native Army very intimately, the powers of Commanding Officers of Native Corps have been much diminished,

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and I believe, on the testimony of those who knew the Army before I did, that the diminution of powers of Commanding Officers had been progressive from a much earlier date. The Commanding Officer of former days was to his men a complete impersonation of the Government in all its functions and branches. This character has been gradually lost, till he is now, in four out of five Regiments, so comparatively powerless, that a clever man, even a Soldier in the ranks, may often successfully contend with, and thwart him, and bring him into contempt.

From fear of such a result, Commanding Officers habitually avoid, as far as they can, the responsibility of exercising such powers as they still retain, and refer to superior authority when there is no real necessity for so doing; so that, in practice, the loss of power is even greater than would be supposed from the simple action of the orders which have curtailed it.

An enumeration of the orders and measures which have conduced to this result, would embrace almost every one at all affecting the powers of Commanding Officers; for the tendency has been universal and constant, and has not been confined to the Military Department alone, but has pervaded our whole administration, Military and Civil.

It is, however, by no means, entirely the result of any orders or measures directly affecting the power of Commanding Officers. In former days, when communication was slow and uncertain, the Commanding Officer was always able, and was often forced to exercise an amount of despotic power far beyond what was granted by Regulation. The reverse is now the case, and every facility for travelling or sending letters has not only directly diminished the authority of Commanding Officers by facilitating appeal from it, but by encouraging him to refer, when he ought to act. The change is, in fact, only the result of the universal tendency of civilized administration in quiet times to centralize authority; a tendency which, in itself, is no doubt conducive to energy and vigour of administration, if the centralization be by individuals, and not, as it is almost invariably in India, by Departments.

This seems to me to have been our great and almost universal mistake. If there were a chain of men from the private Soldier to the Commander-in-Chief, each in his own rank subordinate to the one above him, the centralization would be true and natural. The authority and responsibility of every man in the Army would be clearly and unmistakeably defined, and the result would be, that subordination to a single will in every portion of the Army, large or small, which is the essence of Military discipline.

ANSWERS.

QUESTIONS.

But this has not been the course of our policy in India. We have multiplied independent departments till it is next to impossible to find any man who has authority over others, and is subject himself to no more than one authority above him ; and it is often most difficult to define the exact limits of the several concurrent authorities. Besides, the Commander-in-Chief, his Adjutant, and Quarter Master General, whose authority in practice is much greater than that of the mere administrative Staff of the Commander-in-Chief, the Regimental Commanding Officer has to do with a Civil Government, a Pay, and Audit Department, an Engineer, a Medical, a Clothing, an Ordnance, and a Commissariat Department, none of them completely responsible to the Commander-in-Chief, and some of them so far independent of him as frequently to be able successfully to defy his authority. Their relation to each other are often not very distinctly defined, and the result is a general hesitation to act, and a preference for referring and asking for instructions, which are utterly destructive of all vigour of administration and of sound discipline in the Army.

This is comparatively little felt in quiet times, and a certain fullness and punctuality of Returns and paper-work offer a fallacious compensation for the endless delays and real loss of power. But when any necessity arises for really active operations, the machine refuses to work. It is adapted only for regular course of post, quiet Officers, and a legion of clerks, and in any time of difficulty, like that of the past year, one of three things necessarily happens. *1st.*—Either a great disaster or some shameful mismanagement occurs ; or, *2ndly.*—With or without such preliminary, some man assumes, and the Departments submit to, a power of Command greater than the Regulations would grant him, and the machine goes on working under him as the supreme authority ; or, *3rdly.*—Which is perhaps the most common course, each department throws over-board more or less of its routine Regulation, the strong and energetic overbear the weak and apathetic, and after much unnecessary loss and enormous expense, a fresh system is extemporized, to endure for the period of active service, and be then superseded by the return to the old routine system.

There can be no doubt that many of our Army Departments have grown far beyond the proportions which are necessary, and that the Army would be far better administered if they were made ancillary to Regimental wants, and subordinate to Regimental authority. Let any one contrast the organization and *service* efficiency of a Bombay Troop of Horse Artillery, still more those of a Regiment of good Irregular Cavalry, with a Corps of Regular Cavalry or Infantry, and it will be speedily apparent how little the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

latter gain in service efficiency, for the greater amount of their dependence on the Clothing, Ordnance, Remount, and Commissariat Departments; and for the greater amount of trouble they give to the Pay and Audit, the Engineer, and Medical Departments.

All these Departments are among the greatest and least controllable sources of our heavy and increasing Military expenditure, and their reduction, within limits suited to our finances, appears to me not only possible, but essential to the existence of our Empire.

It seems to me that we must revert to our old system, centralize by individuals rather than by Departments, and as one step in that direction, adopt generally a Regimental organization, resembling that of the Irregular, in place of the Regular portion of our Army.

That is to say, we must make the Commanding Officer, not only the Commandant on Parade, but the authority through whom the men are not to be housed, clothed, and fed, horsed and provided with carriage; but made to house, clothe, feed, and horse themselves, and to provide carriage for themselves when it is required.

That this may be done and the *service* efficiency of each Corps enormously increased, and at much less cost to the State, has been repeatedly proved, not only by argument but in practice. The only difficulty is, that it will tolerate no really inefficient men in the chain between the Commander-in-Chief and the Officer Commanding the Regiment. I must admit, that in practice, and as the world goes, this is a great difficulty, but not, I think, by any means insuperable. There is no inherent difficulty in the selection of efficient Officers to command Regiments, and for all ranks above that grade; and the only real difficulty seems to me to lie in the appointment of the man, able, energetic, and self-denying enough, to commence the change, which must begin at Head Quarters, and which involves the sacrifice so difficult to a zealous and active man of the habit of minute interference, at first adding greatly to his labor, while he is compelling those in Command under him to think and act for themselves.

2.

Very much diminished, partly by changes in Regulation, which directly or indirectly curtail the powers of European Officers, but even more from causes which only incidentally affect them: *e. g.* the immense demand for Officers for Staff employ. This withdrew from their Corps many of the best Officers, and made others wish to leave, and often left Corps without any Company Officers of ability

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

and experience. Regiments, have, I think, often of necessity, become to a much greater extent than formerly what are called "Adjutant's Regiments," in which Company Officers have little, if any, real authority.

I think that frequent foreign service, and Sir Charles Napier's administration, while in Command of a very large proportion of the Bombay Army in Scinde, did much to check the degeneracy and loss of power of European Officers generally. (Though I think some of the remedies Sir Charles Napier proposed; *e. g.* an increase to the number of European Officers with each Native Corps were not well calculated to attain the object he had in view.) But no one has done more, both by his writing and example, to restore the European Officer to his proper position than General John Jacob.

3.

The diminution in the powers and influence of Commanding Officers of Corps has, as far as my observation goes, been most injurious in the Native Army, and from the effects I have witnessed in some extreme cases, I am only surprized that it has not been fatal to all discipline. I can only account for its not being so by the power of what it is the fashion to call the "traditions" of the service, and the extreme docility of the raw element of which the Army is composed. Still the change for the worse has been so marked, that I doubt not a very few years perseverance in the same course would be utterly and entirely ruinous to the discipline of the Army, and a catastrophe as extensive and fatal as has just occurred in the Bengal Army, would be inevitable.

4.

In some Regiments, Captains of Companies have, from accidental circumstances, and the absence of Captains on Medical Certificate and Staff, been almost unknown for years, and the influence of Officers in charge of Companies has, as above stated, generally decreased. The effect has been, I think, very bad; where Officers were left with the Regiments in nominal charge of Companies, and with little or nothing really to do. But I do not think that under any circumstances, the Company work of one or even several Companies of Native Infantry, is sufficient to afford adequate employment to an European Officer, and I would leave it all to Native Officers under European control. I believe Company Officers in the Madras Army have much more to do than in Bombay, but much of it is duty, not of a description to attract Officers in general, or to afford them such interesting employment as is essential in this country to prevent moral stagnation and corruption.

5.

The discipline of a Native Corps on service, or elsewhere, seems to me to depend mainly on the character and influence of the European Officers belonging to it.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

But I cannot see how the three authorities Commanding the Companies, the Regiment, and the Army, can be separated; nor how one can be weak and uninfluential, without impairing the powers of the other.

The question seems to me to imply some ambiguity in the use of the word "discipline," which it would be very desirable to remove.

I understand by discipline, not merely drill, or dress, or martial appearance on parade, or even a clean defaulter's roll, but an organization which subjects many men to the will of one,—which enables that one man to move the multitude as much as possible like one man, according to his single will, with the greatest practicable ease and celerity, and to concentrate their powers with the greatest possible amount of force on any one spot.

If this be the discipline aimed at, every Officer who contributes to it, as a channel of the supreme authority, from the Corporal to the Commander-in-Chief, is in his own degree equally essential to discipline. He simply transmits, according to his rank a greater or smaller amount of the supreme power, and can no more be dispensed with or impaired in power, without injury to the whole result, than a nerve can be rendered powerless at the shoulder without affecting the action of the hand. The Captain of a Company is simply the channel for Commanding so many Rank and File, the Regimental Commander, so many Captains, the General, so many Regiments; all are equally necessary to the working of the whole machine, and neither can be weakened without diminishing the power to direct and move, of which he is the channel.

But our system in India has been something very different from this. With a very few and rare exceptions for a quarter of a century past, our Commanders-in-Chief have been merely the heads of an office for conducting many of the details of the Military administration. It seems to me an abuse of terms to talk of their *powers*, for they exercise little but the power of checking action in others. Living at Bombay, Poona, or Mahableschwur, rarely, if ever, visiting any other station of the Army, with very few opportunities for knowing the Officers, and still fewer for knowing the men of the Native Army, they left the administration entirely to the Military Departments which would gradually have drawn to themselves the whole administrative functions of the Army, had not the posts been often filled by men who saw and lamented the inevitable tendencies of the system to which they belonged, and did their best to retard the evil which

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

they could not altogether prevent. The great and beneficial influence exercised by Sir Charles Napier was shown as a General of Division, not as Commander-in-Chief; and Lord Frederic Fitz-Clarence came too late in life to India, and did not live to turn to account the knowledge of his Army which he spared no pains to acquire. With a few such exceptions, I know of no Officer in high Command, since I came to India, who can say that he endeavoured to make the Army in any way a better Army than he found it, while during the whole period, the bonds which held men and Officers together, and which made them an Army, were gradually relaxed. Discipline under such circumstances can be no more than a form, and for the maintenance of what can survive such treatment, the Drill Master is probably a more powerful agent than Officers Commanding Companies or Regiments, or even than the Head Quarters of the Army.

6.

The powers of Commanding Officers of Regiments should, I think, be made as extensive as possible. As there should, I think, be no more than 3 or 4 European Officers with each Regiment there would be no European Officers of Companies.

7.

The improvement of discipline must, I think, begin with the highest class of Officers.

The Commander-in-Chief in India should be entirely exempt from all details of Commanding any Army, and his duties should be exclusively those of supervision and control. The Armies should be re-arranged so as to give to each Commander-in-Chief under him, not more than forty, or at most, fifty thousand men, and these men he should be required really to inspect and report on, manœuvring large bodies every year in time of peace, in temporary camps of exercise, and furnishing reports to the Commander-in-Chief in India. A similar system should be carried out by all Officers Commanding Divisions and Brigades. If the superior Officers did their duty, the improvement would speedily descend to the lowest ranks in the Army.

But it is absolutely necessary that all such superior Officers should be men capable of active service, and not, as is so often the case at present, men quite past work, appointed to command when they ought to be pensioned.

Native Regiments should have not more than four European Officers, all selected men, and should be as independent of the great Army Departments as our best Irregular Cavalry.

8.

No doubt, in time of war the Native Soldier learns his duty so easily, and gives so little trouble in garrison, that the

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

Officers and men are much less brought together in time of peace, but it is by his habitual conduct at all times, in peace, as well as in war, that the European Officer gains the influence which is so essential in time of war.

9.

I would regulate the strength according to the exigencies of the service, and the financial condition of the Country, keeping up the Officers and Non-Commissioned Officers at a fixed number, and reducing or augmenting the rank and file as required for service. I should think 600 men per Regiment ample as the ordinary peace establishment.

Recruits should be entertained and drilled at the permanent Head Quarters of the Regiments, which would always furnish a reserve Force. I would keep up in time of peace no more men than were really wanted for duty. In camps of exercise, they should be trained to throw up earth-works, and entrench, and hut themselves. But I think it a mistake to keep up a superfluity of Soldiers with an idea of habitually employing their labor on other than Military duties. Every facility should be given to European Soldiers to amuse and employ themselves off duty for their own personal benefit. But it is less necessary for Natives, and even in the case of Europeans, I would never make a duty of any but Military labor, including such as may be useful on service. It is desirable that the Sepoys should be well instructed in all such kinds of labor and esteem them as honorable as any other form of duty. This is, I think, the case generally with our Bombay Sepoys, and I have never heard of their refusing to work in trenches, &c., but it should, I think, be less optional than it is at present, and be made regular matter of instruction.

10.

In general, ever since I have known the Bombay Army, it has been hardly worked. I can remember few instances of the ordinary duty being light enough to spare many men to work away from their Lines. But a few might doubtless be spared generally in time of peace.

11.

Not, I think, to any considerable extent, nor so continuously, nor as regularly as to make their labor of much value. The Kura-chee Mole was begun by the men of a Recruit Depôt under Major T. R. Steuart, 8th Native Infantry, by order of General Farquharson; and I have known troops work for a time at other works near their own Camp and Lines, but I should think it difficult to make much permanent and habitual use of such labor without an Army far in excess of what we could now afford to pay for. It would be, I think, an excellent plan so to train men, that on service a good Corps of experienced Sappers could be at once selected from the Line.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

12.

I should say a full complement of Native Officers as at present, and not more than four selected European Officers, exclusive of the Surgeon, to every 600 men.

13.

An European Corps affords the best school for training Cadets into Officers in time of peace, and they may be advantageously trained there for as much as two years; no European should ever be sent to a Native Corps but as a Volunteer. On service an European Officer, however young, may, with advantage, at once be attached as a Volunteer to a Native Corps.

14.

I would, as a general rule, let the Officer Commanding the Native Corps, subject to the approval of the Commander-in-Chief, select his own Subalterns from among all the young Officers in the Army who had been discharged their drill, and reported fit for duty in an European Regiment. I would hold him responsible for their general conduct and efficiency, and he should answer for any neglect to report them if deficient, or otherwise unfit for their position. A Reviewing Officer, if the Review were more of a reality than it is, could never find any difficulty in estimating the Parade efficiency of every Officer of a Native Corps, nor ought the general of a Division to be ever at a loss in ascertaining the General character of each Corps under his Command, and satisfying himself that no unworthy, or unfit persons were among the Officers:

I would give liberal Moonshee allowance, and every encouragement to young Officers to make themselves perfect in the Native tongues. But I would have no test of language beyond what the selecting Officer thought necessary on admission to a Native Corps, nor subsequently beyond making the young Officer Command a Parade, and conduct an orderly room enquiry in presence of the Reviewing Officer whenever called on to do so. If he can talk fluently to his men, and readily understand, and be understood by them, it is all that is really required.

15.

The present system of taking Officers from Corps for Staff employments has long seemed to me most seriously injurious to the efficiency of Regiments; and I firmly believe, that the present system, if continued, must very speedily cause most fatal results. It is not, however, the number taken away which is injurious, but the system of selection, and its indirect consequences. In the first place, it is professedly the *elite* of the whole body which is taken. If the best men are thereby taken away, the Regiment of course loses its most useful members; but

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

whether the selection be bad or good, certain discontent is produced among those left behind, and the injustice is often very real.

It becomes still greater, and has a still more injurious effect on the Regiment, when the Officer who has been years away on Staff employment, is sent back during some war exigency to Command men he does not know, and perhaps to reap honors and rewards gained for him by a discipline which he has indirectly, and perhaps unconsciously done much to ruin, and the real maintainers of which he has superseded.

But the worst evil of all, is the general and all-pervading feeling, that Regimental duty is a thing to be escaped as speedily as possible, a badge of inefficiency, or ill-luck.

It is this feeling which seems to me the most striking feature of difference between the young Officers of the present day, and those I knew when I was young myself, and mixed much and intimately with them. There were then so few Civil Staff appointments, that the possibility of obtaining one, rarely entered into the calculations of a young Officer; the Army Staff was then more limited and accessible, as a rule, only to men of known efficiency as Regimental Officers. Young Officers then looked to their Regiments of necessity as their future homes, and made themselves as comfortable as they could, with little thought of leaving it. Their ordinary amusements were perhaps somewhat rougher than at present, but not worse calculated to form active men and hardy Soldiers, and those who devoted themselves to Native languages or literature, did it more from natural taste and as an amusement, than as any passport to employment.

At present, the grand object of almost every young Officer, from the time he joins, is to get away from his Regiment. He studies, not from taste or for amusement, but to "pass," and become fit for Staff employment, just as he would to complete his education and escape from school. Every thing connected with Regimental duty is irksome, as interfering with the studies which are to set him free.

Nothing can be more complete than the severance thus effected between the Native Soldier and his European Officers; and I never, of late years, conversed long with any old Sepoy, but he alluded to the change which had taken place in young Officers, as one which was generally observed and regretted by all classes of the Native Army. I am bound to add that the system has given to the State some of the best Civil Officers I know, but I believe they might have been obtained from the same source without any injury to their original branch of the service, and even this

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

solitary advantage of the system is now nearly neutralized by the fact that, between the number of Officers withdrawn, and the checks imposed in the shape of rules, placing a limit on the number to be absent at one time, it has very much ceased to be possible to select for Staff employment. The choice is no longer from the whole Army, but is often from among two or three Officers who have fulfilled the requirements, and belong to the two or three Corps which alone happen to have a superfluity of Officers of that grade present with the Regiment; and no one can now be in any way connected with the system without seeing constant evidence of its injurious effect on all Military spirit and proper professional feeling.

16.

As far as I have had an opportunity of judging, the number of Officers with a Regiment made little difference. All depended on their character, and the system of the Regiment, and the extent to which the Officers had retained the real command over their men. The Regiments, which I considered to have been most severely tried, from their material, (Hindoostanee, and especially Delhi Mahomedans) the temptation held out to them, and the absolute impossibility of coercing them, if they had misbehaved, and who passed the ordeal most satisfactorily, were the Regiments of Scinde Horse, and they had never more than two Officers with each Regiment, and for a great part of the time, but one. The Corps which behaved worst in this Province, had a larger than average proportion of European Officers present, and it was never difficult to trace the evil to causes quite independent of the number of the European Officers.

17.

I think General Jacobs' plan of a general Gradation List, is in itself the best I have seen, and I can see no possible objection to its prospective adoption. To meet present exigencies, many other ways might be suggested for attaining the same object, with even less disturbance of existing rights and usages.

I would begin by placing permanently on a Civil Staff List all Officers who have been in Civil employment for more than two years, who are specifically recommended by the heads of their Civil Departments for permanent Civil employment, and who are willing to give up all claim to active Military service, on the following terms.

Their names to be removed from the Regimental List as on permanent half pay, their promotion to be regulated by that of the Officer who stood next below them, and remaining in the Regiment, but to affect their rank only; pension for length of service as at present.

QUESTIONS.

ANSWERS.

All other Officers to return, as a matter of course, to their Regiments, after two years detached service.

I would then leave with each Native Infantry Regiment 4 selected Officers with increased pay, as Commandant, Second in Command, Adjutant, and Quarter Master. They should form the active list of the Regiment. The remainder, who were not provided with permanent or temporary Staff employment, should be given their choice to remain attached to their old Regiments, or to be transferred to European Regiments under such Regulations as would secure to them the same rank and advantages they would have had, if they had remained with their Corps on the old footing.

I do not see how any re-organization of the Bombay Army is possible which does not secure each Officer all the advantages he would have derived under the old system.

18.

I would make the post of Regimental Officer with a Native Corps one of selection, and feel certain, they would be more efficient Regimental Officers than at present. I think that numerous schemes might be devised for ensuring a higher general standard of qualification than at present, quite free from the objections to the present system.

19.

I think not.